



This is a digital copy of a book that was preserved for generations on library shelves before it was carefully scanned by Google as part of a project to make the world's books discoverable online.

It has survived long enough for the copyright to expire and the book to enter the public domain. A public domain book is one that was never subject to copyright or whose legal copyright term has expired. Whether a book is in the public domain may vary country to country. Public domain books are our gateways to the past, representing a wealth of history, culture and knowledge that's often difficult to discover.

Marks, notations and other marginalia present in the original volume will appear in this file - a reminder of this book's long journey from the publisher to a library and finally to you.

### **Usage guidelines**

Google is proud to partner with libraries to digitize public domain materials and make them widely accessible. Public domain books belong to the public and we are merely their custodians. Nevertheless, this work is expensive, so in order to keep providing this resource, we have taken steps to prevent abuse by commercial parties, including placing technical restrictions on automated querying.

We also ask that you:

- + *Make non-commercial use of the files* We designed Google Book Search for use by individuals, and we request that you use these files for personal, non-commercial purposes.
- + *Refrain from automated querying* Do not send automated queries of any sort to Google's system: If you are conducting research on machine translation, optical character recognition or other areas where access to a large amount of text is helpful, please contact us. We encourage the use of public domain materials for these purposes and may be able to help.
- + *Maintain attribution* The Google "watermark" you see on each file is essential for informing people about this project and helping them find additional materials through Google Book Search. Please do not remove it.
- + *Keep it legal* Whatever your use, remember that you are responsible for ensuring that what you are doing is legal. Do not assume that just because we believe a book is in the public domain for users in the United States, that the work is also in the public domain for users in other countries. Whether a book is still in copyright varies from country to country, and we can't offer guidance on whether any specific use of any specific book is allowed. Please do not assume that a book's appearance in Google Book Search means it can be used in any manner anywhere in the world. Copyright infringement liability can be quite severe.

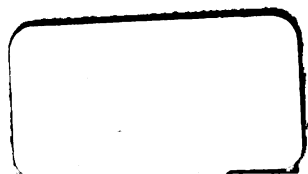
### **About Google Book Search**

Google's mission is to organize the world's information and to make it universally accessible and useful. Google Book Search helps readers discover the world's books while helping authors and publishers reach new audiences. You can search through the full text of this book on the web at <http://books.google.com/>

US 225500

The gift of  
JAMES F. CURTIS  
of BOSTON

HARVARD COLLEGE LIBRARY



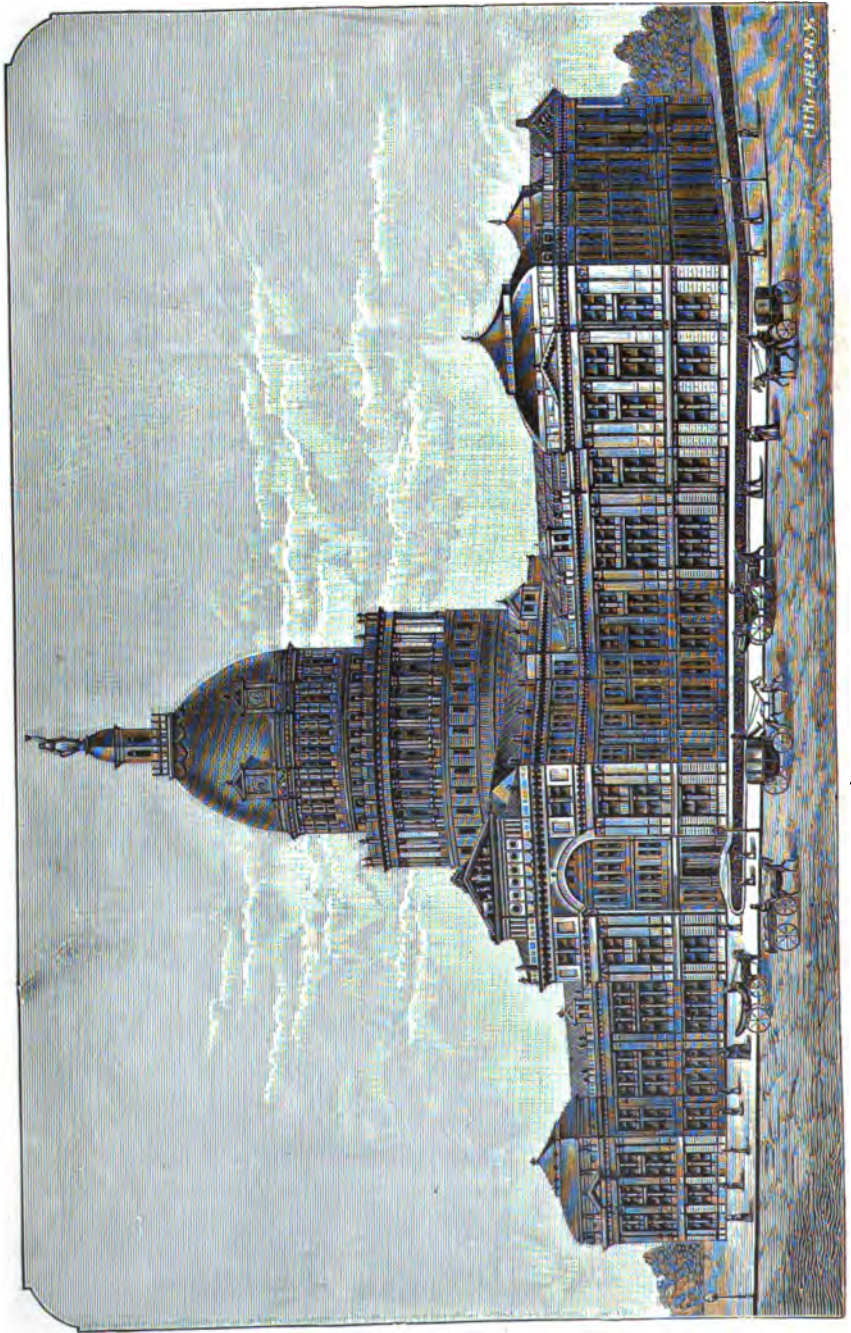












THE NEW STATE CAPITOL AT MADISON.



o p  
6/2.2  
A  
" PICTORIAL HISTORY

—OF—

T E X A S 1/2

FROM THE EARLIEST VISITS OF EUROPEAN  
ADVENTURERS, TO A. D. 1883.

EMBRACING THE PERIODS OF MISSIONS, COLONIZATION, THE REVOLUTION,  
THE REPUBLIC, AND THE STATE; ALSO, A TOPOGRAPHICAL DESCRIPTION  
OF THE COUNTRY; ITS RIVERS, MOUNTAINS, SOILS, MINERALS,  
AGRICULTURAL PRODUCTS, LIVE STOCK, POPULATION, RE-  
SOURCES. WEALTH, ETC.; TOGETHER WITH ITS INDIAN  
TRIBES AND THEIR WARS, AND BIOGRAPHICAL  
SKETCHES OF HUNDREDS OF ITS LEAD-  
ING HISTORICAL CHARACTERS.

—ALSO,—

A LIST OF THE COUNTIES, WITH HISTORICAL AND TOPICAL  
NOTES. AND DESCRIPTIONS OF THE PUBLIC INSTI-  
TUTIONS OF THE STATE. ASYLUMS. PENI-  
TENTIARY, SCHOOLS, CHURCHES.  
RAILROADS, ETC.

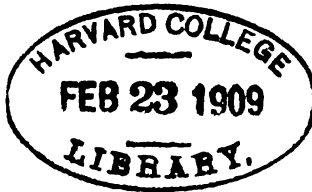
REVISED AND ENLARGED TO 1883.

—♦♦—  
BY REV. HOMER S. THRALL, A. M.  
—♦♦—

ST. LOUIS, MO.:  
N. D. THOMPSON & CO.  
1883.

(107)

~~12332.10.9~~  
US 22550.5



Gift of  
James F. Curtis  
of Boston

---

Entered according to Act of Congress, in the year 1878,  
By HOMER S THRALI,  
In the Office of the Librarian of Congress at Washington.

---



Yours truly,  
J. S. Thwall



## PREFACE.

---

Among the newer States of our American Union, there is probably no one about which so much has been written and published as the State of Texas. In 1857, Frederick Law Olmsted published a volume of 516 pages, entitled "A Journey Through Texas; or a Saddle-trip on the South-western Frontier." Mr. Olmsted mentions thirty-three bound volumes on Texas, by more than thirty authors. Seven of these were in two volumes each, making an aggregate of forty separate books, many of them large octavos of from four hundred to six hundred pages. Since that period the press has thrown off scores and even hundreds of publications—histories, biographies, descriptive pamphlets, addresses, etc. These have been scattered broadcast over the country by immigration agencies, railroad corporations, companies of land speculators, and others. The question arises, then, whence the necessity of another work on Texas? Partly because previous histories have been too brief in some particulars and too diffuse in others. Many of the descriptive pamphlets have been too highly colored; personal narratives too partial, and often defective in details; and the statistics too meagre and in some instances entirely unreliable. It needed another volume to give a complete history of the State down to the present time; and to condense, and classify, and give in a reasonable space the past history, present condition and prospective development of this, the great Empire State of the continent.

The design of the author is to give in the present volume a

true picture of Texas, its soil, its climate, its people and their institutions, its resources, its capabilities for sustaining a dense population—a population to be counted by the million. We say a *true* picture, so that the immigrant entering the State may learn what part is best adapted to the business in which he proposes to engage. To the hardy poor man who expects to make his living by honest industry, and to raise his family where they will enjoy the advantages of good schools and churches, probably no portion of the American continent offers such advantages as Texas. Here labor is always in demand at remunerative price; provisions are cheap; here is land for those who wish either to lease or purchase; tenement houses are furnished to farm laborers; and a permanent home may be acquired upon accommodating terms. A homestead once secured, the man soon finds himself in possession of teams and tools, of hogs and cattle, and is surrounded with home comforts.

In the departments devoted to history, special pains have been taken to give facts and dates, with such reflections as will enable the reader to understand the controversies in reference to the ownership of the country, and the various questions which have from time to time agitated the people, producing, in some instances, revolutions, and changes in the form of government. These events are generally related in chronological order, though in some instances that order has been deviated from, to complete the narrative of one event before entering upon that of another.

In the notes, the reader will find a complete list of the executives of the State, and the *personnel* of the various departments of the government; also the votes at the principal popular elections, showing the steady increase in the number of electors.

In the part devoted to the Indians may be found many interesting particulars of the aboriginal inhabitants of our prairies, and some thrilling incidents of frontier life and Indian warfare. It was not in accordance with the taste of the author to dwell long upon these harrowing scenes. Happily, such scenes now

seldom occur, and we have good reason to believe that we shall hear no more of these Indian raids, and the barbarities inflicted upon the pioneers of civilization.

We think the reader will find the biographical department especially rich in interest. Arranged in alphabetical order are the names of more than two hundred of the men who have figured conspicuously in Texas history. Space is accorded to each somewhat in proportion to his historical importance, though the sketches of men still living are very brief, and mainly confined to the mere facts connected with their public life.

The historical notes and topographical descriptions of the counties of the State, arranged in alphabetical order, are necessarily brief, but will give the reader a correct idea of their location, the character of the soil, and other particulars necessary for those seeking homes in the State.

In the miscellaneous department may be found a vast amount of information, condensed into a small compass—an account of our asylums, penitentiaries, educational institutions and churches—agricultural products and live stock—railways and commerce—statistical tables of wealth and population, etc.

In the preface to "Thrall's School History of Texas" issued by the University Publishing Company of New York, in 1876, the author said: "The history of Texas possesses a peculiar interest. The contests for the possession of the country; the grand old mission structures erected for the conversion of the natives; the numerous changes of government, give to our history an air of romance. In the summary of events in this volume, these interesting topics are only briefly noticed; but it is to be hoped this recital will stimulate many to a more thorough investigation into the heroic period of our history." The present volume is sent forth not to supersede the school history, but to supplement and complement it. The former has its place and is adapted for the purpose for which it was prepared—use in the school room; but the teacher who, with that volume, introduces his pupils to an

acquaintance with the elementary history of Texas, will need this to give the details and incidents in full which could not be incorporated in the smaller work.

In conclusion, the author returns his sincere thanks to the very large number of distinguished gentlemen—too numerous to mention—who have given him encouragement and assistance in his work.

H. S. THRALL.

SAN ANTONIO, TEXAS, *November 26, 1878.*



# TABLE OF CONTENTS.

---

## PART I.

### *GENERAL DESCRIPTION OF THE COUNTRY.*

#### CHAPTER I.

	PAGE.
Name.—Texas Claimed by both Spain and France.—Boundaries.—Area.	
—Characteristics of the country. - - - - -	17

#### CHAPTER II.

General Divisions of the State.—North Texas.—East Texas.—Middle Texas.—West Texas.—Northwest Texas.—Southwest Texas.—The Mineral Region.—The Pan Handle, or Staked Plains. - - - -	23
--	----

#### CHAPTER III.

Texas Rivers.—Their Names.—What Streams are Navigable.—Depth of Bars at Mouth.—Inland Navigation.—Water Supply.—Artesian Wells.—Water Power. - - - - -	56
--	----

#### CHAPTER IV.

The Mountains.—Altitude of Prominent Places.—Minerals.—Copper.—Lead.—Iron.—Silver.—Coal—Guano Caves, etc. - - - -	65
---	----

---

## PART II.

### *TEXAS UNDER SPANISH DOMINATION,—1685—1820.*

#### CHAPTER I.

Landing of La Salle.—Misfortunes.—Fort Saint Louis.—La Salle Assassinated on the Nechez River by his own Men.—Fort Saint Louis in Ruins. - - - - -	77
--	----

## CHAPTER II.

- De Leon, Governor of Monclova, in Texas.—Founds Presidio,—in 1690.**  
 —Succeeded by Domingo Teran.—Saint Denis on the Rio Grande.—  
 Correspondence Between De Alarconne and La Harpe.—Belisle on  
 the Coast.—Indian League. . . . . 87

## CHAPTER III.

- Mission Establishments.—First Mass.—Missions in Alphabetical Order.**  
 —Adaes.—Aes.—Alamo.—Concepcion.—La Espada.—Guadalupe.—  
 La Bahia.—La Trinidad.—Loretto.—Nacogdoches.—Orquizaco.—  
 Refugio.—Rosario.—San Fernandes.—San Jose.—San Saba. . . . . 92

## CHAPTER IV.

- Colonists from the Canaries at San Antonio.—Texas at the Opening of  
 the Nineteenth Century.—Nolan's expedition.—Difficulties Between  
 Spain and the United States.—War Imminent, but Averted by Mys-  
 terious Diplomacy. . . . . 102**

## CHAPTER V.

- Magee's Expedition.—Gutierrez' March to Goliad.—Death of Magee.—  
 Desperate Fighting.—The Victorious Republicans on the way to San  
 Antonio, gain a Splendid Victory on the Rosillo Creek—Shameful  
 Massacre of Spanish Officers.—Battle of Alasan.—Republicans De-  
 feated at the Battle of Medina.—And the Royalists Avenge the Death  
 of their Brother Officers. . . . . 112**

## CHAPTER VI.

- The Republicans at Galveston.—Aury.—Perry.—Mina.—Expedition to  
 Soto La Marina.—Lafitte the Pirate.—Long's Expedition.—Dispersed  
 in East Texas.—Rallies a Second Time at Galveston.—Takes Goliad.  
 —Sent by the Spanish Republicans to the City of Mexico, where he is  
 Mysteriously Murdered.—Mrs. Long Heroically Awaits his Return.—  
 Conclusion of the Period. . . . . 125**

## PART III.

**COLONIZATION UNDER MEXICAN DOMINATION, 1820—  
 1834.**

## CHAPTER I.

- Mexico Becomes a Republic.—Plan of Iguala.—Mexico Gains an Indis-**

	PAGE.
putable Title to Texas.—Colonization.—Keene.—Owen.—Moses Austin Obtains a Contract.—Dies.—Stephen F. Austin in Texas, Selects a Location for his Colony—Austin Aided by Hawkins.—Schooner Lively Lost.—Austin in the City of Mexico. - - - -	147
<b>CHAPTER II.</b>	
Colonization Law of 1823.—Of 1824.—Coahuila in 1825; and again in 1832.—San Felipe Laid Out; Land Office Opened.—In 1824.—Edwards' Grant and Fredonian Troubles at Nacogdoches.—The Edwards Contract Annulled by Governor Blanco. - - - -	152
<b>CHAPTER III.</b>	
Other Contracts.—Thorn.—Leftwich.—DeWitt.—DeLeon.—Austin's Second Contract, and others from 1825 to 1830.—Settlement on Red River.—In the Southeast—Galveston Bay Company.—In the Southwest. - - - -	165
<b>CHAPTER IV.</b>	
Civil Administration—Governors.—Land Commissioners.—Alcaldes Districts.—Ayuntamiento.—Political Chiefs of Departments.—State Congress.—Reflections on Colonization.—Almonte in the Province.—His Report—Disturbing Elements.—Taxation.—Slavery.—Texas Coveted by the United States. - - - -	169
<b>CHAPTER V.</b>	
Bustamente's Famous Decree.—Custom Houses.—Garrisons Established.—Bradburn's Arbitrary Proceedings at Anahuac.—The Texans pronounce for Santa Anna and the Constitution of 1824.—Fight at Velasco.—At Nacogdoches.—Peace Prospects in 1832. - - - -	178
<b>CHAPTER VI.</b>	
Hostile legislation.—Movement for a separation from Coahuila.—Convention of 1833.—Austin sent as Commissioner to Mexico.—Santa Anna deserts the Liberal Party.—Coahuila in a State of Revolution.—Austin in Prison.—Santa Anna's Ultimatum to Texas. - - - -	187

---

PART IV.

*THE REVOLUTION.*

CHAPTER I.

Santa Anna developing his New Policy.—Austin still a State Prisoner.—Citizens Disarmed.—Zacatecas resists the Usurper.—Frauds in

	PAGE.
Coahuila.—The Legislature dispersed by Cos.—Milam and Viesca Taken Prisoners —Republicans defeated at Zacatecas.—Santa Anna Dictator.—Parties in Texas.—Captain Thompson and the Schooner Corea.—Proscribed Patriots. . . . .	197

CHAPTER II.

Committees of Safety.—Austin's Return.—Candella at Goliad.—Conflict at Gonzales.—Goliad Captured by the Texans.—Austin in Command on the Guadalupe.—The Consultation —Provisional Government.—Austin Marches towards San Antonio.—Battle of Concepcion.—The Grass Fight.—The Executive Council. . . . .	205
---	-----

CHAPTER III.

A Navy Improvised.—San Antonio Invested.—Captured by the Texans.—Liberal Terms to the Vanquished.—Breach between Governor Smith and his Council.—Austin's Timely Advice.—Convention of 1836.—Declares the Independence of Texas.—Government <i>Ad Interim</i> .—Proposed Descent upon Matamoras. . . . .	219
--	-----

CHAPTER IV.

Santa Anna's Texas Programme.—Fall of the Alamo.—Fate of its Brave Garrison.—Urrea in the South-west.—Death of Grant, Morris, etc.—Ward and King at Refugio.—Goliad Evacuated—Battle of Colita.— <i>The Fannin Massacre</i> .—Reflections on the Conduct of the Campaign. . . . .	238
---	-----

CHAPTER V.

The Mexican March towards San Jacinto.—Houston's Retreat.—Camps in Mill Creek Bottom.—The Mexicans meet with Resistance at San Felipe, and Turn Down the River to Richmond.—Both Armies Cross the Brazos. . . . .	254
---	-----

CHAPTER VI.

The hostile Armies Approach Each Other.—Skirmish on the 20th.— <i>Battle of San Jacinto</i> , April 21.—Houston's Official Report.—Reflections. . . . .	261
---	-----

CHAPTER VII.

President Burnet at Galveston.—Retreat of Filisola.—Treaty with Santa Anna.—Feeling in East Texas.—Difficulties of the President and His Cabinet.—Attempt to Arrest the President.—Another Mexican Invasion Threatened.—Naval Operations.—Morfit's Report on Texas.—Election.—Meeting of Congress.—Constitutional Government. . . . .	272
---	-----

PART V.

*THE REPUBLIC, FROM 1837 TO 1846.*

CHAPTER I.

	PAGE.
Houston's Administration.—Congressional Proceedings.—Land Laws.	
The Navy.—Government Removed to Houston. . . . .	291

CHAPTER II.

Lamar's Administration.—Trouble at Nacogdoches.—A New Navy.— Austin Selected as the Permanent Capital.—New Colonies.—Republic of the Rio Grande.—Santa Fe Expedition.—Its Miscarriage and the Causes. . . . .	302
--	-----

CHAPTER III.

Houston's Second Administration.—State of the Public Finances.—Raids of Vasquez and Woll.—The Archive War.—Somervell in the South- west.—Mier Expedition.—Its Disasters.—The Snively Expedition.— Santa Anna's Proposal through Robinson.—The Navy. . . . .	319
--	-----

CHAPTER IV.

Jones' Administration.—Texas Prosperous.—Annexation Again Ag- itated.—England, France and the United States Interested.—Action of the Texas Congress.—The Convention Accepts the Terms, July 4th, 1846.—Vote of the People. . . . .	341
--	-----

PART VI.

*TEXAS AS A STATE, FROM 1847 TO 1879.*

CHAPTER I.

Henderson's Administration.—Courts.—Public Domain.—Texans in the Mexican War.—Horton Acting Governor—Wood's Administration.— Public Debt.—Santa Fe Again.—Bell's Administration.—The United States Propose to Buy Santa Fe.—Pearce's Boundary Bill.—Santa Fe Sold.—Disputes About Land in Peter's Colony. . . . .	357
---	-----

CHAPTER II.

Pease's Administration.—Debt of the Old Texas Republic scaled and settled.—Mexican Cart War.—Taxes Relinquished to Counties.— Political Parties.—Runnell's Administration.—Railroads.—Indian Reservations.—Cortina in Brownsville.—Houston's Administration. —Political Excitement.—Cortina Again.—Frontier Defence.—Hous- ton's Message to the Legislature.—Secession Convention.—Ordinance Passed.—Texas Unites with the Newly-formed Confederacy.—Hous- ton Deposed. . . . .	369
--	-----

CHAPTER III.

PAGE.

Clark's Administration.—Surrender of United States Property at San Antonio, and in the South-west.—Indians Hostile.—Warlike preparations on a Large Scale.—The Blockade.—Lubbock's Administration.—The State Prosperous.—Arizona Expedition.—Federals take Possession of Galveston.—Magruder in Command in Texas.—Recapture of Galveston by the Confederates.—Federals Repulsed at Sabine Pass.—Conscript Law.—Martial Law.—Cotton Orders.—Houston on Martial Law.—Murrain's Administration.—Fine Crops.—Federals in the South-west.—Fighting in Louisiana.—Cotton Orders Again.—Murrain vs. Magruder.—Confederate Armies Disband. . . . . 388

CHAPTER IV.

First Reconstruction.—Hamilton's Administration.—Registration of Loyal Voters.—Election.—Convention.—Hamilton's Message.—Throckmorton's Administration.—Governments in the Southern States Declared Provisional, only.—Sheridan's Order on Assuming Command.—New Registration.—Iron Clad Oath.—Throckmorton Removed.—Second Reconstruction Convention.—*Ab initio* Controversy.—Suffrage Bill.—Protest of the *Ab initios*.—Convention Dissolved.—Election. . . . . 409

CHAPTER V.

Davis' Administration.—Texas Delegates Admitted to Their Seats in Congress.—Martial Law Again.—State Police.—Frontier Protection.—Threatened Collision at the Close of his Administration.—Happily Averted.—Coke's Administration.—Country Prosperous.—Constitutional Convention.—Hubbard's Administration.—Lawlessness Suppressed. . . . . 420

---

PART VII.

INDIANS.

CHAPTER I.

Three Classes of Indians. 1. Pueblos.—Indians who Cultivate the Soil.—2. Nasonites, Cennis, Caddos, Wacos, Intrusive Tribes.—3. Nomadic or Migratory Indians, that Live by Hunting—Comanches, Apaches, Lipans, etc., etc. . . . . 445

CHAPTER II.

Battles in Chronological Order.—On Galveston Island, 1818-1821.—On the Colorado, 1822-1823.—Caranchuas Banished, 1825.—Fights from

	PAGE.
1826 to 1829.—Bowie's Fight in 1831.—Wilbarger Scalped in 1833.— On Red River in 1834.—Parker's Fort Massacre in 1836.—Mrs. Plum- mer's Captivity.—Cynthia Ann Parker's Captivity of Twenty-five Years.— . . . . .	451

## CHAPTER III.

Indian Affairs during the Republic.—Fight in Robertson's Colony in 1837.—Near San Antonio—1838.—Battle Creek, in Navarro County. —Attack on Morgan's and Marlin's Families, in 1839.—Expulsion of the Cherokees.—Bloody Work in the Council House, San Antonio, 1840.—Comanches Burn Victoria and Linnville, and are Defeated at Plum Creek.—Moore's Expedition to the Upper Colorado.—From 1841 to 1847.—Recovery of Miss Putnam, after a long Separation from her Family. . . . .	457
--	-----

## CHAPTER IV.

Number of Indians in Texas at Annexation.—Indian Reserves.—Pros- perous, but Soon Broken Up.—Dove Creek Fight.—Scalping of Mrs. Friend.—Texas now Free from Indian Raids. . . . .	467
---	-----

## PART VIII.

*BIOGRAPHIES.*

## A.

Allen, Ebenezer.—Allen, Houston Family.—Allen, John M.—Almonte, Don Juan N.—Anderson, K. L.—Archer, Branch T.—Arredondo, Joaquinde.—Austin, Moses.—Austin, Stephen Fuller.—Austin, J. Brown.—Austin, Henry.—Austin, John.—Austin, William T. . . . .	477
---	-----

## B.

Baker, Mosely.—Barrett, D. C.—Bastrop, Baron, P. N. Tut. — Baylor, E. B.—Bean, Ellis P.—Beaumont, Jefferson.—Bee, Bernard E.—Be- hale, Monseur De.—Bell, Josiah H.—Bell, P. Hansborough.—Ben- nett, Joseph H.—Billingsly, Jesse.—Bogart, Samuel A.—Borden, Gail Jr.—Borden, John P.—Borden, Thomas H.—Bowie, James.— Bradburn. Juan Davis.—Brenham, Dr. R. F.—Briscoe, Andrew.— Brigham, Asa.—Brown, Henry S.—Brown, John.—Bryan, Moses Austin.—Bryan, Guy M.—Burleson, Edward.—Burleson, Ed. Jr.— Burnet, David G.—Burr, Aaron.—Bustamente, Anastasio. . . . .	493
---	-----

## C.

Calder, R. J.—Caldwell, J.—Caldwell, M.—Callahan, J. H.—Cameron, Ewin.—Cameron, Dr. John.—Carson, Samuel P.—Castrillon, Gen-	
---	--

eral.—Castro, Henry.—Cazneau, William L.—Chalmers, Dr. John G.—Chambers, Thomas Jefferson.—Childress, George C.—Cole, John P.—Coleman, Robert M.—Chriesman, Horatio.—Coke, Richard.—Collinsworth, James.—Cook, William G.—Cook, Lewis P.—Cordero, Antonio.—Cortinas, Juan N.—Cos, Martin Perfecto.—Crockett, David. . . . .	519
D.	
Darnell, Nicholas H.—Davenport, Samuel.—Davis, Edmond J.—Davis, H. Clay.—Dawson, Nicholas H.—DeLeon, Martin.—Dimitt, Philip.—Duval, John C.—Duval, Thomas H. . . . .	529
E.	
Edwards, Hayden.—Edwards, Monroe.—Elisondo Don, Y.—Ellis, Richard.—Evans, Lemuel Dale. . . . .	581
F.	
Fannin, James W.—Fields, Richard.—Fields, William.—Flores, Manuel.—Fisher, S. Rhoads.—Ford, Dr. John S.—Franklin, B. C. . . . .	582
G.	
Gaines, Jas.—Galves, Don Jose Bernardo.—Gates Family.—Giddings, Giles A.—Giddings, J. D.—Giddings, John James.—Giddings, George H.—Giddings, D. C.—Gillespie, James.—Gillespie, R. A.—Grant, Dr. James.—Gray, William Fairfax.—Gray, Peter W.—Grayson, Peter W.—Green, Tom.—Green, Thomas Jefferson.—Gregg, John.—Grimes, Jesse.—Groce, Jared E.—Gutierrez, Bernardo. . . . .	540
H.	
Hall, Warren, D. C.—Hall, C. K.—Hamilton, James.—Hamilton, Morgan C.—Hamilton, Andrew J.—Hancock, John —Handy, R. A.—Hansford, John M.—Hardeman, Baily.—Hawkins, Charles.—Hawkins, Joseph H.—Hays, John C.—Heard, Wm. J. E.—Hemphill, John.—Henderson, J. Pinckney.—Herrera, Simon De.—Herrera, Jose Manuel.—Hewitson, Dr. James.—Highsmith, Samuel.—Hill, B. F.—Hockley, George W.—Horton, Albert C.—Houston, Sam.—Howard, George T.—Howard, Volney E.—Hubbard, Richard B.—Hunt, Memucan.—Hunter, Wm. L.—Hunter, John Dunn.—Huston, Felix. . . . .	549
I.	
Ingram, Ira.—Ingram, Seth.—Isbell, Wm. . . . .	570
J.	
Jack, Patrick C.—Jack, Wm. H.—Johnson, Frank W.—Johnson, Moses.—Johnson, M. T.—Johnston, Albert Sidney.—Jones, Dr. Anson.—Jones, Oliver.—Jones, Randal.—Jordan, S. W. . . . .	570
K.	
Karnes, Henry.—Kaufman, David S.—Keenan, Dr. C. G.—Kemper,	



	PAGE.
Samuel.—Kendall, George Wilkins.—Kerr, James.—Kinney, H.— L.—Kuykendall, Abner. . . . .	578
L.	
Labadie, Dr. N. D.—Lafitte, Jean.—Lallemand, General.—Lamar, Mirabeau B.—Lasalle, Robert.—Lathrop, J. T. K.—Lester, John S.—Lewis, Ira A.—Lewis, Wm. P.—Lipscomb, Abner S.—Linn, J. J. . . . .	580
M.	
Manchaca, Antonio.—Margil, Father.—Martin, Wylie.—Maverick, Samuel A.—McCulloch, Benjamin.—McHenry, John.—McFarland, Thomas S.—McKinney, Collin.—McKinney, Thomas F.—McLeod, Hugh.—Menefee, Wm.—Mexia, Juan Antonio.—Milam, Benjamin R.—Millard, Henry.—Miller, Dr. James B.—Mina, Xavier.—Moore, Commodore E. W.—Moore, Dr. Francis, Jr.—Moore, John H.—Mor- gan, James.—Murrah, Pendleton. . . . .	587
N.	
Navarro, Jose Antonio.—Neighbors, R. S.—Neil, John C.—Newell, John D. . . . .	596
O.	
Odin, Bishop J. M.—Ochiltree, Wm. B.—Oldham, Wm. S.—Owen, Clark L. . . . .	596
P.	
Padilla, Juan Antonio.—Parker, Isaac.—Patrick, George M.—Pease, Elisha M.—Parmer, Martin—Peebles, Dr. R. R.—Perry, Henry—Per- ry, James F.—Pillsbury, Timothy—Potter, Robert—Powers, James— Putnam, Mitchell. . . . .	597
R.	
Rains, Emory—Reagan, John H.—Riley, James—Roberts, Samuel A.— Robertson, Sterling C.—Robertson, Dr. Jerome B.—Robinson, James W.—Robinson, John C.—Robinson, Joel W.—Roman, Richard Roes—Ross, Reuben—Royall, R. R.—Runnels, Hiram G.—Runnels, Hardin R.—Rusk, Thomas Jefferson—Russell, Wm. J. . . . .	599
S.	
Santa Anna, Antonio Lopez de.—Scurry, Richardson.—Scurry, Wil- liam R.—Seguin, Don Erasmo.—Seguin, Juan N.—Shackleford, Dr. John.—Shaw, James.—Sherman, Sidney.—Smith, Dr. Ashbel.— Smith, Ben. Fort.—Smith, Erasmus (Deaf.)—Smith, Henry.—Smith, James.—Smith, Thomas I.—Smyth, George W.—Somervell, Alexan- der.—Stapp, Darwin M.—Sterne, Adolphus.—Stewart, Dr. C. B.— Sutherland, George.—Swisher, James G. . . . .	611

T.

Tarrant, E. H.—Teel, Henry.—Teran, J. Mier y.—Throckmorton, J. W.—Toledo, Don Alvarez.—Torry Family.—Travis, Wm. B.—Turner, Amasa. . . . . 625

V.

Vanzant, Isaac. . . . . 629

W.

Walker, Samuel H.—Waller, Edwin.—Ward, Thomas William.—Watrous, John C.—Webb, James.—Wharton, Wm. H.—Wharton, John A.—White, S. Addison.—Wilbarger Family.—Williams, Augustus W.—Williams, Robert H.—Williams, Samuel M.—Williamson, R. M.—Wilson, James C.—Wilson, Robert.—Wood, George T. . . . . 629

Y.

Yoakum, Henderson.—Young, William, C. . . . . 635

Z.

Zapata, Antonio.—Zavalla, Lorenzo de. . . . . 635

---

PART IX.

*HISTORY—COUNTIES.*

Contains a list of all the counties, alphabetically arranged; with historical notes, brief descriptions, etc., etc. . . . . 641

---

PART X.

*MISCELLANEOUS ITEMS,*

Alphabetically arranged.—AGRICULTURAL PRODUCTS.—Cotton, Corn, Oats, Potatoes, Sugar and Molasses, Tobacco, Wheat, etc.; Reports from the Agricultural Department, Washington. ASYLUMS.—Blind, Deaf and Dumb, Orphan, Lunatic. BUILDINGS.—Public, Capitol, Supreme Court, Land Office, Treasury Building, Governor's House. CHURCHES, their History etc.—Catholic, Baptist, Christian, Episcopal, Methodist Episcopal, South, and M. E. Church, Protestant Methodist, African Methodist, Presbyterian, Presbyterian Cumberland. Census Statistics. COMMERCE.—Debt, State Education, its history in the State, Illiteracy, Scholastic Population, by Counties. SCHOOLS—Agricultural College, etc. LIVE STOCK.—Cattle, Goats, Horses and Mules, Sheep. PENITENTIARY—Its history; provision for a second. POPULATION at different Periods. RAILROADS—History and Progress of Railroads in the State; their Stations. Statistics of Wealth at different Periods, Assessed Value of Property, Taxes, *ad valorem* and Poll in all the Counties, for 1877. Telegraph Lines. . . . . 723

## LIST OF ILLUSTRATIONS.

---

	Page.
REMNANT OF THE OLD FORT OF THE ALAMO.....	Frontispiece.
COLORADO RIVER, MATAGORDA COUNTY.....	35
SCENE ON THE CANADIAN RIVER.....	43
SCENE ON BRAZOS RIVER, NEAR MARLIN.....	53
FERRY, COMAL RIVER.....	63
SCENE ON THE MISSISSIPPI IN THE TIME OF LA SALLE.....	78
INDIANS.....	83
LA SALLE'S MAP OF TEXAS.....	86
MISSION OF SAN JOSE.....	93
INDIAN HORSEMEN.....	103
CYPRESS CREEK, NEWTON COUNTY.....	113
TRINITY RIVER, SCENE NEAR LIBERTY.....	123
LAFFITE.....	133
THE OLD CONCEPCION MISSION, NEAR SAN ANTONIO.....	143
CATHEDRAL DE SAN FERNANDO.....	153
BOWEN'S BEND, SAN ANTONIO RIVER.....	163
SANTA ANNA.....	173
FORT ON THE WESTERN BORDER.....	183
STEPHEN F. AUSTIN.....	193
MEXICANS.....	203
SAM HOUSTON.....	213
EDWARD BURLESON.....	223
RUINS OF THE SAN JOSE MISSION.....	233
GROUND PLAN OF THE ALAMO.....	240
STORMING OF THE ALAMO.....	243
SCOUTING.....	253
HOUSTON DICTATING ORDERS TO ADJUTANT HOCKLEY.....	263
BATTLE GROUND OF SAN JACINTO.....	269
DAVID G. BURNET.....	273
A MEXICAN JACAL.....	288
OLD CAPITOL, HOUSTON.....	293
MIRABEAU B. LAMAR.....	303

	Page.
THE TOWN OF SAN ANTONIO DE BEXAR, TEXAS, 1840.....	313
DAVID CROCKETT.....	323
URSULINE CONVENT, SAN ANTONIO.....	333
ANSON JONES.....	343
INDIAN WAR DANCE.....	353
SCENE NEAR FORT MASON.....	363
E. M. PEASE.....	373
ELLIS P. BEAN.....	383
F. R. LUBBOCK .....	393
STERLING C. ROBERTSON.....	403
CADDO CHIEF.....	413
PLACIDO, CHIEF TONKAWAS.....	423
EDMUND J. DAVIS.....	433
COMANCHE WARRIOR.....	443
A CHIEF OF THE KIWAS.....	453
BATTLE CREEK FIGHT, NAVARRO COUNTY, 1838.....	463
TRADING WITH THE INDIANS.....	473
RICHARD COKE.....	483
RICHARD B. HUBBARD .....	493
HOUSTON AND SANTA ANNA .....	503
TOM GREEN.....	513
THOS. F. MCKINNEY.....	523
JOHN CALDWELL.....	533
O. M. ROBERTS .....	543
THOS. J. RUSK.....	553
SIDNEY SHERMAN.....	563
THOS. WM. WARD.....	573
R. M. WILLIAMSON.....	583
HOUSTON PIERCED WITH AN ARROW.....	593
MONUMENT ERECTED TO THE HEROES OF THE ALAMO.....	603
PIONEER SUNDAY SCHOOL.....	613
CAPITOL AT AUSTIN, IN 1870.....	623
RUINS OF LAFITTE'S FORT.....	633
COURT HOUSE, PARIS.....	643
COURT HOUSE, SHERMAN.....	653

	Page.
SCENE ON COMAL RIVER.....	663
COURT HOUSE, DALLAS .....	673
VIEW OF SAN ANTONIO, IN 1878.....	683
COURT HOUSE, AUSTIN.....	693
METHODIST CHURCH AND PARSONAGE, CORPUS CHRISTI.....	703
GOVERNOR'S MANSION, AUSTIN.....	713
COURT HOUSE, FORT WORTH.....	723
MASONIC TEMPLE AT PALESTINE, I. & G. N. R. R.....	733
VIEW OF AUSTIN FROM THE DEAF AND DUMB ASYLUM.....	739
TEXAS MILITARY INSTITUTE, AUSTIN.....	745
OLEANDER GROVE, TEXAS.....	751
LAND OFFICE OF TEXAS, AUSTIN.....	757
MARKET HOUSE, HOUSTON .....	763
VIEW OF SAN PEDRO SPRINGS, SAN ANTONIO.....	769
FORMER MILITARY HEADQUARTERS, SAN ANTONIO .....	775
COMAL RIVER NEAR NEW BRAUNFELS.....	781
VIEW OF COMMERCE STREET, SAN ANTONIO .....	787
MASONIC HEADQUARTERS OF STATE, HOUSTON.....	793
POST OFFICE, GALVESTON.....	799
CORNFIELD, BRAZOS BOTTOM, ROBERTSON COUNTY, I. & G. N. R. R.....	805
TREMONT STREET, GALVESTON.....	811
STATE INSANE ASYLUM, AUSTIN.....	817
EPISCOPAL CHURCH, PALESTINE .....	823
SPANISH FANDANGO.....	829
RAILROAD BRIDGE, BRAZOS RIVER NEAR HEARNE, I. & G. N. R. R.....	835
ARANSAS BAY .....	841
COLORADO RIVER BRIDGE, AUSTIN, I. & G. N. R. R.....	847
BIRD'S EYE VIEW OF HOUSTON.....	853



PART I.  
GENERAL DESCRIPTION.





## CHAPTER I.

**NAME—TEXAS CLAIMED BY SPAIN AND FRANCE—BOUNDARIES—AREA—GENERAL CHARACTERISTICS OF THE COUNTRY.**

**T**HE name of Texas was derived from an Indian tribe belonging to the great Caddo family. The country now known as Texas has, at various periods, borne different names. In old maps that on the north is called Texas, or New Phillipines; while that farther to the west is marked as Coahuila or New Estremadura. For more than a century the territory was claimed both by France and Spain. The Spaniards were the first occupants. In 1522 De Narves traversed the country from the Rio Grande to Mobile. Again, in 1537, De Nisa visited the Rio Grande, entering the village of Isleta, then inhabited by Puebla Indians; and in 1540 Coronado took formal possession of the village, in the name of the Spanish crown. Under the ministrations of the missionaries, the inhabitants readily embraced the Christian faith. In 1585 another company of missionaries, under Espejo, took possession of El Paso and Santa Fe.

The claim of the French was based upon the landing of LaSalle, with his colony, on the coast, in 1685. On the old French maps Texas is put down as a part of Louisiana. The old Spanish maps, however, claimed it as

belonging to New Spain. In those old maps, the different provinces of New Spain are marked as follows: The east line of New Mexico reaches to the Pecos River, including part of the present counties of Tom Green and Crockett. The Medina river is marked as the east line of Coahuila, though a narrow strip attached to Texas extended to the mouth of the Rio Grande. In these old maps the Calcasieu is put down as the boundary near the coast, and the Hondo, a tributary of Red River, near Natchitoches, as the line between the possessions of the French and Spanish crowns.\*

The ownership of Texas had not been fully settled, when, in 1803, France sold Louisiana to the United States. The latter government wanted both Texas and Florida, neither of which Spain was willing to surrender. Finally, in 1819, February 22, an agreement was entered into between John Quincy Adams, on the part of the United States, and De Onis, on the part of Mexico, by which Spain transferred Florida to the United States, and the latter gave up her claim to Texas. At the period of the Texas revolution the northern boundary was still undefined; several large settlements on the south side of Red river were claimed both by Arkansas and Texas. In a final adjustment in 1849, in which G. W. Smyth represented Texas, and J. W. Overton the United States, the most of this disputed territory, including portions of Bowie and Red River counties, were conceded to Texas.

At the period of annexation the boundaries of the re-

\*By a royal charter, dated Sept. 14, 1712, Louis XIV granted the whole of Louisiana to Anthony Crozat. Mr. Yoakum and other historians have asserted that this grant included all the country to the Rio Grande; whereas the language of the charter included only the country watered by the Mississippi and its tributaries.

public, as estimated by Mr. Smyth, the Commissioner of the General Land Office, were as follows :

The distance from the mouth of the Rio Grande along our coast to the mouth of the Sabine.....	375	miles
From mouth of Sabine, by the river, to 32d parallel.....	299	"
Up Sabine river to Red river, due north.....	108	"
From point of intersection with Red river to 100th degree of longitude west.....	620	"
On the meridian of 100th degree due north to Arkansas river....	250	"
Along Arkansas river to source of Rio Grande.....	640	"
<hr/>		
Entire eastern and northern boundary.....	1,915	"
From source of Rio Grande to its mouth.....	2,240	"
<hr/>		
Making the entire boundary of the Republic.....	4,530	"

By the sale of Santa Fe, in 1850, Texas parted with 98,360 square miles of territory ; equal to 56,240,640 acres.

Texas is bounded on the south by the gulf of Mexico ; on the east by the Sabine river, up to the thirty-second parallel of north latitude ; thence due north to Red river, thence along said river to the meridian of one hundred degrees west from Greenwich ; thence due north to the intersection of parallel of thirty-six degrees, thirty minutes, north latitude ; thence due west to the meridian of one hundred and three degrees west from Greenwich ; due south to the thirty-second degree of north latitude ; thence along said line to the Rio Grande ; (these lines separate Texas from Louisiana, Arkansas, the Indian Territory, and New Mexico.), thence down said Rio Grande to its mouth, separating Texas from Mexico. According to Disturnell's treaty map, published in 1850, Texas had, after the sale of Santa Fe, 237,321 square miles of territory, equal to 151,885,440 acres. Later estimates from our own land office give the State 268,684

square miles ; this exclusive of Greer county. It extends from about twenty-five and one half degrees to thirty-six and one half, north latitude, and from ninety-three and a half to one hundred and seven degrees of longitude west from Greenwich. Its greatest extent from north to south is nearly one thousand miles, and it is but little less from east to west.

Texas, thus situated on the Gulf of Mexico, stretches half-way to the Pacific Ocean, in a climate where snows are almost unknown, and lies right in the track along which the vast commerce from the East to the West must ultimately flow. The great continental railway is destined inevitably to traverse this territory, and some of its eastern termini must be at some of its seaports.

In those portions of the State devoted to agriculture, a large proportion of the land is susceptible of cultivation, and immense bodies are as rich and fertile as can be found on the continent. This is true, not only of the alluvial bottoms, but also of a considerable proportion of the prairie lands of the interior.

Writers speak of the stock region ; of the sugar belt ; of the cotton belt, and the wheat region ; but in truth every kind of stock, such as horses, mules, cattle, sheep, goats, hogs, etc., do well in all parts of the State, and can be raised with profit anywhere by giving the necessary attention to them. So of the soil products. Every arable acre of ground in the State will produce corn, cotton, sorghum, potatoes, Irish or sweet, peaches, grapes, etc. Sugar from the ribbon cane may be profitably cultivated anywhere south of the thirtieth parallel of north latitude ; and wheat, rye, oats, apples, etc., anywhere north of that latitude.

The coast counties for a distance of fifty to one hundred miles interior are quite level, but beyond, the coun-

try becomes rolling, with alternate gradual elevations and depressions, and this inequality of surface increases as we proceed towards the northwest, until it finally becomes hilly and then mountainous in some of the northwestern counties. In fact the whole of Texas is an inclined plane, with a gradual descent from the northern or western boundary to the Gulf. Austin and San Antonio are six hundred feet above the Gulf surface, and the country farther north is still more elevated. The highest of the mountains do not, however, exceed two thousand feet above their base.

It seems to be a general impression with people abroad that Texas is unhealthy; that the climate is excessively hot; and that foreigners especially run a great risk in coming to a State so far south. Nothing can be more remote from the truth, as thousands of foreigners from all parts of Europe can testify. The temperature in Texas in the hottest days of summer is nearly always several degrees below the greatest heat at the North, and while many deaths in most of the Northern cities occur every year from sun stroke, there is not, perhaps, a well authenticated instance in Texas of a single death from this cause. But a comparison of the range of the thermometer there and here removes all doubt on that subject. In winter the difference in temperature between Texas and the Northern States is still more manifest, the severity of the cold being many degrees greater there than here. The fact is established beyond doubt that Texas has the most uniform, equable and mild temperature of any State in the Union, neither the heat or the cold being so excessive, and, other things being equal, this exemption from the extremes of heat and cold is *prima facie* evidence of a more healthful climate. But this evidence is corroborated by experience, for although certain diseases are prev-

alent in many parts of Texas, yet the general health of the country is not surpassed, if equaled, by any other State, while for salubrity of the climate all Western Texas is proverbial. The whole sea coast, for more than a hundred miles interior, is fanned by a most delightful and health-giving breeze from the Gulf during all the summer months.

It is true that in the heavily-timbered bottoms, and on the margins of the sluggish streams and lowlands, people are liable to chills and fevers and other malarial diseases; but these generally yield readily to proper treatment. The interior, especially of Western Texas, is annually visited by thousands of invalids seeking health; and those who come before disease has fastened itself too firmly upon the system are generally greatly benefitted.

## CHAPTER II.

GENERAL DIVISIONS OF THE STATE—NORTH TEXAS—EAST TEXAS—MIDDLE TEXAS—WEST TEXAS—NORTHWEST TEXAS—SOUTHWEST TEXAS—THE MINERAL REGION—THE PAN HANDLE.

FOR convenience in describing our great State, we divide it into districts. I. North Texas. II. East Texas. III. Middle Texas. IV. West Texas. V. Northwest Texas. VI. Southwest Texas. VII. The Mineral Region. VIII. The Pan Handle or Staked Plains.

I. NORTHERN TEXAS.—This includes a double or triple tier of counties on the south side of Red river, as far west as the counties of Wise, Montague, Erath, etc., some thirty counties or more.

An area of about twelve counties of the eastern part of this division would more properly have been included in the division of East Texas, as it much more nearly corresponds in all its characteristics with the entire body of timbered country lying east of the Trinity than with any part of the prairie to which this division attaches it. The two subdivisions can not be described together, as they are as different from each other as day from night in every characteristic.

This eastern body of country, generally denominated Northeastern Texas, is one of the most interesting and important subdivisions of the State, whether considered with reference to its population, its capacities for agricultural production, or its location with regard to the necessi-

ties of trade and travel, and the consequent construction of thoroughfares. An imaginary irregular line drawn from the town of Clarksville, in Red River county, through the northwest corners of Titus Wood, and Van Zandt counties, and the southeast corner of Kaufman county to the south line of this division, will sufficiently indicate the western or outside line of this subdivision.

All east of this is a timbered country, and presents the same general features. The face of the country is rolling and hilly. The soil is generally sandy, mixed with loam in varying quantities in different localities, and productive in porportion to such admixture. The exceptions to the sandy soil are the ferruginous red soils, quite productive with plenty of rain; the post-oak flats, and swamps along the streams, the latter two valueless for cultivation but covered with fine timber. The streams are sluggish and discolored, and the low bottom-lands which border them are subject to overflow; but many of them are covered with cane and various grasses, which afford fine shelter and food for stock, especially horses, which keep fat the year round without food or attention, but are liable to the contingent dangers of an overflow, in which numbers are sometimes lost. The most productive lands lie between the sand-hills and the swamps, and frequently up to the margins of the smaller creeks, and are a kind of irregular second bottom. They will produce, the season being favorable, a bale of cotton or forty bushels of corn per acre, while the upland sand-lands will produce about one half that amount, but are preferred by many on account of the greater ease with which they can be cultivated, and the advantage they have in wet seasons. These lands are in some places underlaid with a stiff clay at the depth of a foot, while in other places in the same field one may dig forty feet through sand alone.



The timber of this section is very valuable, especially the pine, which abounds; extensive steam saw-mills being found in the pineries of these counties, from which lumber is hauled on wagons more than two hundred miles westward to supply the constantly increasing wants of the prairie section. The other timber is mostly post-oak, interspersed with hickory, black-jack, etc. The bottoms abound in all kinds of oaks, ash, hackberry, and many other kinds of timber.

Water in this section is abundant and generally good—entirely freestone. Springs, pure as crystal, are frequent, breaking out from the base or sides of the sand-hills, and good water can generally be obtained, by digging, at from twenty to thirty feet; the exceptions to this being in the post-oak flats, where good water is scarce, either above or below the surface.

Immediately west of this imaginary line commences the great prairie region of Northern and Middle Texas. The "divide," or water-shed between Red river and the Gulf of Mexico is distant from a half to forty miles from the former. Along Red river is a border of a rather rugged country from one half to twelve miles wide, mostly covered with timber, and abounding in springs of water; but mostly with a thin sandy soil adapted to small farmers, except the Red river bottoms, which are extensive and exceedingly fertile, and subject to occasional overflows. South of this fringe of timber, and with a northern front of from Lamar to Clay County, (one hundred and fifty miles on an air-line,) inclining westward on its eastern border, as before laid down, lies the great prairie, extending to the south line of this division, its unity broken only by the timber borders along the streams and by the two very remarkable bodies of timber called "THE CROSS TIMBERS," which are worthy of a brief description.

The "lower cross timber" is a body of timbered country embracing, at its northern extremity, the eastern half of Cooke county and western edge of Grayson, and being about fifteen miles wide. Running southward, it passes, gradually becoming narrower, through the east parts of Denton, Tarrant and Johnson, and west part of Hill county, to the Brazos river at Fort Graham. This body of land is rolling and sandy, and assimilates very nearly to the timbered section before described; but this is generally of a poorer soil than that, and abounds less in springs and water as a rule. The timber is the same, except there is no pine, and the growth is shorter as we go westward. The soil is adapted to the growth of corn, cotton, sweet potatoes, etc., but not to small grains nor grasses, nor to stock raising, except in the eastern section.

The "upper cross timber" begins on Red river, some thirty miles above the lower, and is about the same width, running south through the middle of Montague county, near the south line of which it breaks up, the eastern portion running through Wise and Parker counties, while the western extends irregularly, and frequently in patches and *mots* or small groves, through Jack, Young, Palo Pinto and Erath, affording abundant timber (such as it is) to those counties. This timber is, on the uplands, almost exclusively post-oak and black-jack, and is short and scrubby. In the bottoms, pecan, ash, hackberry, cottonwood, etc., are common.

The entire prairie east of the upper cross timber is a beautiful and very gently rolling country, scarcely broken by rocks, stumps, gullies, or anything else which could impede or interfere with the progress of gang-plows, reapers and mowers, or any other agricultural labor-saving machinery, whether propelled by steam or other power. Indeed, the cultivation of wheat has for years been

done by the use of such implements, propelled by horse or ox-power.

Near the south line of Montague and Clay counties commence the "mountains," which though not so "stuck up" as their distant relations, the Alleghany, Blue Ridge, Rocky Mountains, etc., which hold their heads much higher, are still fully entitled to the appellation of mountains; as, though only moderate hills in point of altitude, they are mountains in character, with rocky precipices and ledges and spurs, and abounding in the necessary number of wild beasts and rattlesnakes. Many of these mountains are isolated mounds or cones, either perfect or truncated, rising from a base of table land, on which, in many places, travel by wagons is easy through the entire range to the level prairie on the other side. Some of these hills and ridges are covered with timber, while others are bald and bare. This range is from thirty to sixty miles wide, and extends southwardly to near San Antonio, the cities of Austin and New-Braunfels being on its eastern border, and the rivers of San Marcos, Guadalupe and San Antonio break out from its base. But this is out of our present latitude. Between these mountain ridges are many valleys of great fertility and beauty, some of them large enough for farms of 640 acres, arable land, but most of them smaller. Much of the prairie adjacent to this region is covered with stones, so as to render it unfit for cultivation, but furnishes material for building and fencing, which, in the absence of good timber, will be much used as the country is settled. These mountains, further south, are covered with cedar in many places, which is the most valuable fencing timber known. This mountain country forms the western line of settlement along its whole extent.

II. EAST TEXAS includes about twenty counties, lying

between the Trinity river and the State line on the east, and extends from the southern boundary of Northern Texas to the Gulf of Mexico. This is the great timber region of the State. Immense tracts are covered with the finest forests of pine, and other valuable timber growths. The counties bordering on the coast, and as far inland as Liberty, are generally flat, and considerable portions of this region are prairie, and admirably adapted to stock raising. Numerous rivers and creeks traverse all parts of East Texas. Many of these are navigable, and furnish means of transporting their lumber to market. Further inland the surface becomes, first gently undulating, and then hilly; but still heavily timbered, and possessing a rich soil. During the early period in our history the red lands, as they were called, in Nacogdoches, San Augustine and adjoining counties, were considered equal to any in Texas.

III. MIDDLE TEXAS lies below Northern Texas, and embraces all the territory to the Gulf between the Trinity and Colorado rivers. It has some twenty-five counties. This has been called the garden of Texas. For fertility, the alluvial bottom lands of the Brazos, the Colorado and other rivers and creeks of this division, have been compared to the delta of the Nile. The coast region is flat, and stretches out into broad and beautiful prairies, intersected with a perfect network of creeks and bayous, along which are skirts of valuable timber. In the tier of counties bordering on the Gulf is found the best land for the production of sugar in the State; while in the more rolling counties of the interior, cotton is the staple product. This district has the two large commercial cities of Galveston and Houston, and Austin, the State capital.

IV. WEST TEXAS.—In common language, West Texas

includes all west of the Colorado river ; but in this division we include the country between the Colorado at Austin on the north-east, and Bexar county on the south-west ; and the Colorado and San Antonio rivers to the Gulf. This division has about twenty counties. It has Indianola as a sea-port, and the old cities of Victoria, Goliad and San Antonio. The physical features are very similar to those of Middle Texas, already described.

V. NORTH-WEST TEXAS.—This includes about forty counties lying north of Bexar, and extending to the western line of Kimble county, and thence to the Red river, including the county of Greer, and all eastward to North Texas. The general description of the western division of Northern Texas answers as well for this division. It is a region of vast extent, and inexhaustible, though as yet undeveloped resources, mineral and agricultural. No portion of our great State is filling up so rapidly, and no country on the globe offers greater inducements to immigrants.

VI. SOUTH-WEST TEXAS.—This includes all the country south of Crockett county, between the San Antonio and Rio Grande rivers, to the Gulf ; about twenty counties. Corpus Christi and Brownsville are the principal cities. The following description of this division is taken from the Texas Almanac of 1868. It is from the pen of ex-Governor E. J. Davis, who was, for a number of years, judge of the Brownsville district :

“ A sketch of the history, climate, topography and productions of that part of the State termed South-western Texas, being the country between the Rio Grande and San Antonio rivers, and south-east of the road from San Antonio to Eagle Pass, on the Rio Grande, embracing about thirty thousand square miles, is what I propose to give you.

“Its history is not interesting. After the establishment of San Antonio, (named Bexar by the Spaniards and Mexicans,) a great many years seem to have elapsed before any permanent settlements were attempted in the country between that port and the towns and garrisons of the Spaniards west of the Rio Grande. The first, I believe, in point of time, was that of Barrego, who shortly before the middle of last century planted a stock-raising hacienda at the place called ‘Dolores,’ on the Rio Grande, twenty-five miles below Laredo. He received at this place from the King of Spain a large grant of lands, some seventy-five leagues. This hacienda was afterward destroyed.

“In the year 1757, the town of Laredo was founded. This place was a sort of “Presidio,” where the citizens were armed occupants of the soil, and it proved the only permanent settlement of the Spaniards on the lower Rio Grande. After the establishment of Laredo, ranches and haciendas were gradually extended over the country between the Nueces and Rio Grande, and during the first quarter of this century very extensive herds of cattle and horses and flocks of sheep were pastured on and between those rivers. The remains of the stone buildings and the wells and water-tanks are still to be seen. The troublous times following the attempts of the Mexican people to separate from Spain invited the savage tribes of the North—which had been kept in better subjection under the system adopted by old Spain than they have ever been since—to make raids upon the frontier settlements. The Texas revolution and subsequent border warfare gave the finishing touch to this country, and when our troops, under General Taylor, marched from Corpus Christi to the Rio Grande, in 1846, there was not an inhabitant to be found between that river and the Nueces. It had the appear-

ance of a desert to the officers and soldiers of that army, unused as they were to these treeless pampas. The herds of cattle and horses, left to take care of themselves, had become wild, and greatly increased, and "mustangs," grazed over these plains in almost countless numbers.

"In the year 1850, the re-population of this country fairly commenced. The 'mustangs' were killed or caught and tamed, and this 'so-called' desert has been steadily filling with a hardy and active race of stock-raisers.

"The climate of this country is very similar to that of the same longitude as far north as Kansas and Colorado. It is decidedly an unfavorable climate for agriculture, and unless some system can be devised for irrigation, the main dependence must always be upon the flocks and herds. It is unseasonable, but this is not so much for want of rain, because, on taking the average fall of rain for a number of years through the district, it is shown that we have ample supplies for all purposes, could they come at the right time and in proper quantities. In the usual planting season of the year, from the first of January to the end of May, we have our dry season. Often it happens that scarcely enough rain falls during those months to 'wet a pocket-handkerchief,' while, on the other hand, the torrents that are let down on us during the other months will give us an average of twenty-five to thirty inches of water throughout the year. 'When it rains, it rains' in this country; sometimes with a quantity and suddenness only equalled, I suppose, in the mountains of California and Nevada. There are no mountains, or even respectable hills, in Nueces county; yet several instances have occurred of a flood of water rolling down a narrow ravine with such rapidity as to take off a flock of sheep, and in one instance the shepherd with it.

“ If it should ever be possible to utilize this water in some, as yet, undiscovered way, this country would be the finest in the world. The climate, owing to the dryness of the winter and spring, is as healthy as could be desired. Perhaps something may be done by making tanks on a large scale, and thus collecting the surplus rains for use in the dry seasons. One of these has been made by Hipolito Garcia, the owner of the Hacienda called ‘Arendado,’ in Zapata county. He has, by throwing a dam across a ravine, created quite an extensive lake, capable not only of supplying water for his thousands of cattle, sheep and horses, but of being used for irrigating purposes.

“ But our wet and dry seasons are not distinctly defined, nor are the rains equally distributed over the whole of this region. Sometimes general rains fall during the dry season; and on the other hand, it happens that we do not in the wet season have the usual share. It is also noticed that more rain falls in the neighborhood of the San Antonio valley, and near the Gulf coast. The rule is, that less rain falls as you proceed north and west.

“ In other respects, our climate is such as might be expected in this latitude. While it is exceedingly hot on the Rio Grande, the thermometer in summer sometimes going up to  $110^{\circ}$  or even  $114^{\circ}$  in the shade, still a constant strong breeze and invariably cool nights render the climate rather pleasant, even in the hottest part of summer. Near the coast, the heat is very much tempered by the Gulf, and at Corpus Christi or Brownsville, the heat rarely goes above  $90^{\circ}$ .

“ In some respects the peculiarities of the surface of this district are singular. Near the mouth of the San Antonio river, and thence down to Corpus Christi bay, we have the usual low and flat ‘hog-wallow’ formation,



which prevails generally along the coast of Texas, at from ten to forty miles from salt water. At Corpus Christi bay the high lands of the interior come down to the bay, and part of the town of this name is built upon a bluff near fifty feet above the water level. I believe this is the highest land anywhere on the Gulf coast within the territories of the United States. About twenty miles southwest of Corpus Christi commence the famous sands which border the Laguna Madre down to the 'Sal Colorado.' These sands are quite remarkable. Extending in a northwesterly direction from the coast, they reach within twenty miles of the Rio Grande. They lie across the country in a wedge shape, of which the base lies on the Laguna. In many places these sands form bare hills, rising fifty to a hundred feet above the surrounding grassy plains; and being of a light yellow color, are landmarks of the country and visible at great distances. The sands have evidently been formed by the prevalent southeasterly winds, which have blown them across from Padre Island. Like similar formations in England and other parts of the world, where history aids the observer in accounting for them, it is likely that they constantly progress inland under the influence of the south-east wind, and will probably reach or cross the Rio Grande in course of time.

"After we leave the sands, going towards the Rio Grande, we come into the alluvial bottoms of that river. The Sal Colorado, which appears on the maps as a river, is in reality an outlet of the Rio Grande during high water. The bottoms of this river are, on the west side, from thirty to sixty miles wide as low down as Brownsville. They decrease gradually up to Edinburgh, ninety miles from the coast, (in a straight line,) where the first hills come to the river.

“ This district, after leaving the coast-country just described, becomes rolling and gradually hilly. On the extreme north-west, it borders on the outlying hills or mountains of the ‘ Staked Plain,’ (Llano Estacado,) but within its limits there are no very high elevations, though the general level of the north-western part is nearly one thousand feet above the sea. There is a distinctly marked range of hills crossing the territory from north-east to south-west, which deserves special notice, not only because it presents an interesting natural feature of the country, but because of the indications of valuable minerals found in the range, of which more will be said hereafter. This range commences in the western side of Karnes county, at the place called ‘ Rocky.’ It passes across the Nueces a short distance above Oakville, and strikes the Rio Grande a few miles below Carriza, in Zapata county. The ‘ Zancajo’ hill (or mountain) in Duval county is part of the range; and in the southern part of that county, and in Zapata county, it presents quite a marked feature, and is called by the Mexicans ‘ La Sierra.’

“ On the Rio Grande, from the commencement of the hills, the country is much more broken than anywhere east of it. From Rio Grande City (Ringgold) up to Eagle Pass, as your road winds along the river, high mountains, the offshoots of the Sierra Madre of Mexico, are never out of sight on the western horizon.

“ As was said at the beginning, this is not an agricultural region. In nothing is the increasing dryness of the climate, as you proceed west and south, more noticeable than in the growth of vegetation. The cyprus, magnolia, dogwood, and other trees of a moist and temperate climate, common in Eastern Texas, pretty much disappear on the Colorado. The pine reaches the river near Bastrop, and the cedar is seen on the hills north of San Antonio. But



**COLORADO RIVER, MATAGORDA COUNTY.**



none of these trees are found in the country I am describing. Post-oaks and live-oaks are found between the San Antonio and Nueces rivers, and the latter is common in the 'Sands' south of Corpus Christi, but they go no further southwest. I believe the only trees on the Rio Grande which are indigenous to Eastern Texas are the ash, elm, cotton-wood and hackberry. The eastern man who goes southwest will find another system of vegetation gradually supplanting that to which he has been accustomed. The mesquite-tree, which in the desert can send its roots far down in search of moisture, with its bright pea-green leaves, becomes a prominent feature of the landscape. The 'Spanish Bayonet,' an endless variety of the cactus, and a dozen or more species of scrubby, thorny shrubs, known under the general designation of 'chaparral' the products of a climate of great droughts, form in many parts an almost impenetrable jungle. On the Rio Grande the ebony tree becomes common, and is a handsome tree when full grown. There is also found a very ornamental and graceful tree called the 'Tepajuaque,' which is nowhere found north of the Rio Grande valley.

"All the trees and vegetation, and even the native animals, birds, and insects, seem especially adapted to a dry climate.

"But if this country is too dry for planting purposes we are compensated in another way. Many years' experience has shown that Texas is the best stock-raising State of the Union, and for the same business this country is certainly the best part of Texas. The very dryness of the climate, in preventing the growth of trees to shade the soil, enables fine and nutritious grasses to abound. It is the paradise of horses, sheep, and cattle. I have spoken of the numbers of cattle and horses that formerly ran wild under the name of 'mustangs.' There is little doubt

that the present numbers of tame animals are even greater; but still there is room for more, and probably South-western Texas will alone one day export a half-million of beeves. Of the health and fecundity of the sheep, an instance within the knowledge of the writer will give a fair idea. A friend living in Webb county commenced raising sheep with two hundred and fifty ewes in the winter of 1854-55. In the year 1860 he sold out three thousand head, the result of this flock. He followed the Mexican plan of breeding twice a year.

“In so extensive a region it is reasonable to presume that valuable mines must exist. However, very little scientific investigation has yet been made, and therefore little is known of this—perhaps less even than of other regions not so near the centres of civilization.

“On the Rio Grande it is well known that several beds of coal, of an inferior quality, exist, and have been worked. It is reported that extensive beds of coal (equal to cannel) have recently been discovered on the Nueces river. The locality of these beds has not been divulged, but the report has it that they are situated at from one hundred to one hundred and forty miles from Corpus Christi.

“In the range of hills called ‘La Sierra,’ of which I have made mention, indications of silver and lead have been found in several places. The writer has in his possession a very rich specimen of lead ore which was found in this range, about eighty miles from Corpus Christi. If it should develop that there are indications of silver or lead in sufficient quantities to pay for the working, their proximity to a sea-port will be an important consideration. I believe that neither silver nor lead has anywhere else within the United States been found so near the coast.

“I suppose most people in Texas are aware of the great natural salt-works along the margin of Corpus Christi bay

and Laguna Madre. During the late war, Texas was altogether supplied from here. The Laguna Madre (so called by the Mexicans because of the many smaller lagunas that open up into the interior from it,) as it will be seen from the map, is a bay between Padre Island (so named from 'El Padre Balli,' who owned a rancho on it in ante-Texas times) and the main-land. This laguna is about one hundred and twenty miles long and from three to six miles broad, and very shallow, not averaging more than eighteen inches deep. In the spring and summer months the prevalent winds drive the water of the Gulf in a steady current up the laguna from south to north. Passing over this long and shallow flat, under a burning sun, the water evaporates rapidly, and when it reaches the northern part of the laguna, it is intensely salt. From the mother laguna the winds drive this salt water slowly up the innumerable smaller lagunas that make up from it into the main-land. These are generally from three to six inches deep, and in many instances very broad. Here the evaporation continues, and during the dry weather of spring and summer the salt crystalizes and settles on the bottom in great abundance. Nature seems to have provided here, on her usual gigantic scale, works for the making of salt by solar evaporation. The process, as will be perceived, is a good deal the same that men have adopted on the coast of France, Key West, Turk's Island, etc., to procure salt from the same source. The quantity that can be raked up in this locality during the summer varies according to the depth of fall rain. Some seasons it will form about as fast as it can be raked, and the quantity is only to be limited by the capacity for gathering it. To speak within carefully considered bounds, I believe that in an average dry season *ten millions* of bushels can be collected within fifty miles of navigation on Corpus

Christi bay, and that it can, at present prices of labor, be placed on navigation at ten cents per bushel.

“Besides these lagunas, there are some salt lakes and ponds between the Nueces and Rio Grande, which are not connected with the Gulf. The most noted of these is the celebrated “Sal del Rey,” (Salt of the King, so called because of the laws of Spain giving salines to the king,) in Hidalgo county, about thirty-five miles from the Rio Grande, and sixty miles from Brownsville. The salt in this, and probably the other lakes of the sort, seems to come from the earth in springs. The “Sal del Rey” has been a favorite resort of the Mexicans for salt. It has for several generations supplied the greater part of Northern Mexico with that article, and is apparently inexhaustible. The lake is about three miles in circumference.”

VII. THE MINERAL REGION.—The large scope of country composed of the counties of Crockett, Tom Green, Pecos, Presidio, and El Paso, has been denominated the mineral region of Texas; though as yet its mineral wealth lies undeveloped in the mines. We give a description of this with the following.

VIII. THE PAN HANDLE, OR STAKED PLAINS, lies north of Tom Green county and between New Mexico and the Indian Territory. The Legislature of 1875 laid out and gave names to fifty-four counties in this region. In the early maps of North America, a vast region in the heart of the continent was designated as the “Great American Desert.” That great desert has steadily retreated before the advancing tide of population. The southern rim of it reached Texas. It is conjectured that in 1734, when the fathers from Santa Fe visited San Saba to establish a fort and mission, they set up stakes, with buffalo heads on them, so that others might follow their route. This gave the name of *Llano Estacado* to the



plateau crossed. In the map prepared for Yoakum's history of Texas, and published by Redfield in 1856, there is this note: "From the head waters of the Red Brazos and Colorado rivers to the Rio Pecos is a desolate and sterile plain from 100 to 200 miles in width, elevated about 4,500 feet above the Gulf of Mexico, without water or timber and with a scanty vegetation." Notwithstanding this is described as such an arid region, all the great rivers, from the Canadian on the north to the Pecos and Rio Grande on the south, have their sources in springs found in canons penetrating this plateau; or from underground streams, from the same source, issuing out at the surface, as at San Marcos, San Antonio and other points. Since the close of the Civil War this region of country has been penetrated by buffalo hunters, and by parties of soldiers in pursuit of Indians. The best and most reliable description yet given to the public is found in the report of Lieutenant-Colonel W. B. Shafter, who, in 1875 made a pretty thorough reconnoissance of the hitherto *terra incognita*. Colonel Shafter started from Fort Concho, in Tom Green county, two hundred and fifteen miles northwest of San Antonio. We copy from his report:

"Commencing at Fort Concho, the valley of North Concho for sixty miles is well adapted to grazing, having sufficient wood for all necessary purposes and good running water the entire distance.

"Rendlebrock's spring, twenty-five miles north of the North Concho and sixty-five miles from the post, is a large spring of running water, and in the country about it there are large mesquite flats, well timbered, with plenty of grass, and good shelter for stock in the winter.

"The wagon road to Fresh Fork of Brazos, *via* Rendlebrock's spring, leaves the North Concho forty-two miles above the post of Concho, crossing to the valleys running into the Colorado.

“From Rendlebrock’s spring, to where the wagon road strikes the Fresh Fork of the Brazos, the country passed through is slightly rolling, covered with excellent grass, considerable mesquite timber of small growth, (from six to twelve feet high), and having several streams and springs of good water, with one or two (the Brazos and Double Mountain Fork) salty at the point where crossed by the road, though both are fresh near their heads. The canon of the Fresh Fork of the Brazos is nearly fifty miles in length and from one-half to two and a half miles wide, through which flows a stream of excellent water the whole distance. After reaching the plains, the water is good for about twenty-five miles and then becomes salty at its junction with the Brazos. The grass in all the region of the country is excellent, and sufficient wood for fuel is easily obtained. I believe that corn could be grown the whole length of the canon without irrigation, except in unusually dry seasons.

“From about half way up the canon the road crosses to the head of Double Mountain Fork of the Brazos, which flows through a canon similar to that of the Fresh Fork, parallel with it and about thirty miles distant, and extends about the same distance into the plains.

“The country between these streams is high table land, with scarcely any timber and but few mesquite roots. Large circular depressions, filled with water for part of the year, occur frequently, and the whole country is covered with luxuriant grass, affording pasturage for immense herds of buffalo, and would be sufficient to maintain thousands of cattle and horses that could water, when the rain-water holes dried up, in the Fresh and Double Mountain Forks of the Brazos.

“From the head of Double Mountain Fork to Casa Amarilla the distance is forty-two miles, almost due west,



**SCENE ON CANADIAN RIVER, HUTCHINSON COUNTY.**



the country being similar in all respects to that just described. Casa Amarilla is a large alkali and salt lake, of from one-half to three-quarters of a mile in width and about three in length, situated in a depression of the plains and draining the country for several miles in all directions. There are two dug springs at the base of the bluff on the southern side, and about a half mile further south, at the head of a ravine, a large tank of fresh water that I believe is fed from springs, as I could not perceive any diminution in it after using it for two days with my whole command. Six miles directly north of this lake are some large pools of living water, with plenty of wood. This would be an excellent place for sheep or horses.

“Six miles west of Casa Amarilla is a large alkali lake, circular in form, about three-fourths of a mile in diameter, having some fine large springs in the bank, good grass, but no timber or roots. This lake is called by the Mexicans ‘Quemas,’ and is supposed to be very near the line of Texas and New Mexico.

“The trail from Quemas to the Pecos (twenty miles above mouth of Azul, in New Mexico) passes for about twenty miles over high table land, with occasional rain-water holes, then about twenty of deep sand, then forty-seven of high hard prairie, without water but covered with luxuriant grass, then twenty of very heavy sand, and about twenty of hard, high rolling country bordering the Pecos.

“From this point, on the Pecos to Horsehead crossing, the distance is 157 miles, the wagon road keeping near the river. The country bordering on the Pecos for several miles has only tolerable grass, and the bluffs are covered with sharp flint rocks, with considerable small growth of brush and Spanish daggers.

“From Pecos Falls to lower end of White Sand Hills

the distance is about twenty miles, a little east of north, one-half the distance hard prairie and the balance heavy sand.

“The White Sand Hills consist of a range of low hills of very white sand, without vegetation, and almost impassable, except for horses; at least double teams would be required to draw lightly loaded wagons through them. They present, from the distance of a few miles, the appearance of hills covered with snow. They extend northwest and southeast for about twenty-five miles and are almost five miles in width, the south end distant from the Pecos about twenty miles, the north end about forty at the nearest point. Water in almost unlimited quantity can be had by digging in the small depressions at the bases of the hills at a depth of two to four feet.

“I have twice visited these sand hills this summer, and once in 1871, and every time found considerable water on the surface. There are also quite large willows and cottonwood trees growing in them, a sure indication of living water. The country east of the sand hills to Mustang and Sulphur Springs, distant sixty miles, is high rolling prairie, covered with fine grass, has no known living water, but abundance during the rainy season, in small lakes.

“From the head of the North Concho two large wagon roads into the plains have been made by my command, one going up the right-hand valley to Big Spring, thence *via* Sulphur Springs, Tobacco creek, and head of Colorado (Moo-cho-ko-way) to Cuates and head of Double Mountain Fork of Brazos; the other takes the left hand valley and goes *via* Mustang Springs to Five Wells, Laguna Sabinas and Laguna Cuates.

“From Five Wells there are two wagon roads to Monument Spring, in New Mexico, and one from there to Dug

Spring, twenty miles due south and thirty-two miles from the Pecos.

“ From head of North Concho to Big Spring the distance is thirty miles, country hard rolling prairie, road hard. Big Spring is a very large spring of excellent water, situated in a rocky gorge between two very high hills. Considerable mesquite timber in the vicinity, and plenty of excellent stone for building.

“ Sulphur Springs lies thirty miles nearly west from Big Spring, country rolling, except five or six miles of quite heavy sand, water excellent, and, as at Big Spring, in inexhaustible quantities by any amount of stock that can be fed within reach of them. At this point the road turns almost due north, and passes through a magnificent grazing country for twenty miles to Tobacco creek; this is a small stream of but few miles in length, rising in the edge of the plains, near where the road strikes it, and running nearly east. Two miles farther north is another large branch, and from there on for twenty miles there are several small running streams and springs, one of them being the head of the Colorado—these streams forming what is known as the Moo-cho-ko-way country. The water is excellent and inexhaustible; considerable mesquite timber—sufficient for all necessary purposes of settlers, and stone convenient for building. All of the valleys through which streams flow can be irrigated to some extent. I do not think there is any doubt but corn could be raised without irrigation nearly every year. As a grazing country it is unsurpassed by any portion of Western Texas from the Gulf to New Mexico and Indian Territory.

“ From the head of Colorado to Laguna Cuates is thirty miles, over a high slightly rolling hard prairie covered with good grass, but very little wood above ground and

mesquite roots scarce. During the rainy season there are many large lakes of water

“Laguna Cuates are two large very salt lakes situated in a depression of the plains; they are, together, about three miles long and one and one-half wide. Near the edges of them are several springs of good water. At this place I dug two large holes in the bank, about twelve or fifteen feet square, which soon filled to a depth of two or three feet. By digging I do not think there is any reasonable limit to the water that could be obtained.

“Laguna Blanco is a similar lake, eight miles east of Cuates, having also fresh water springs.

“Six miles south of Cuates are two lakes, separated but a few hundred yards, the one very salty and the other fresh, both evidently never going dry.

“About all these lakes there are great quantities of mesquite roots, sufficient to furnish fuel for any population the country could support.

“From Cuates to head of Double Mountain Fork the distance is thirty-two miles, nearly due north, country high hard rolling prairie.

“Taking the left hand valley, two miles above head water on the North Concho, a large wagon road leads due west, over rolling hard prairie, to Mustang Springs, distant forty-two miles. Six and a half miles further west, and on the wagon road, are several other springs. The water at both these places is in great abundance, hundreds of buffalo watering at them daily, not exhausting them. Plenty of mesquite roots for fuel, and good grass and shelter in ravines.

“From Upper Mustang Springs to Five Wells the distance is thirty-four miles, northwest, over a high level prairie, with numerous large sink holes, or ponds, filled for several months in the year with water.



“The Five Wells are situated in a ravine about one-eighth to one-half of a mile in width ; the length is not known. It was examined for several miles each way without finding any other water, except a few small salt lakes. These wells are within a few yards of each other, are about six or eight feet deep and from four to ten feet in diameter, with three to four feet of water. Watering about five hundred animals for three days did not, apparently, at all diminish the water ; grass excellent and plenty of shelter for stock in ravines ; mesquite roots for fuel not very large or abundant.

“Laguna Sabinas, thirty-two miles due north from Five wells, is an alkali or salt lake, nearly six miles long and four wide, with plenty of good water in numerous wells or rather *dug* springs in a ravine at the north end, and several large wells at the south end, of slightly brackish water but fit for use of men and animals. Water can be found by digging anywhere near the edge of the lake ; grass in vicinity excellent, and plenty of wood (roots).

“From the north end of the lake are two large wagon roads, one going nearly due east to head of Tobacco creek, distant thirty-five miles. About five miles of the road heavy sand, the balance high hard prairie. The left hand road runs nearly northeast thirty-two miles to Laguna Cuates, high prairie and sand about equally distributed at intervals of three or four miles. About the bluffs of Laguna Sabinas are found a few small cedars ; stone for building in the bluffs.

“From the Five Wells there are two wagon roads, one running a little south of west, the other a little north, to Monument Spring, in New Mexico, distant by the left hand road sixty-three miles and by the right sixty-six ; the latter being the preferable route on account of less sand and much better water. By the left hand road it is

all heavy sand, except three short stretches, of a couple of miles each, to an alkali lake, distant from Five Wells thirty-six miles. This lake is situated in a depression of the prairie with hard ground all around it, extending several miles on the south and west; water permanent and, though quite strongly alkali, can be used from holes dug in the bank; better water is obtained, though none of it is good. Grass excellent and very luxuriant; wood (roots) in abundance. The lake is circular in form and one-eighth of a mile in diameter. From this lake to Monument Spring, distant twenty-seven miles, the country is rolling, about half hard prairie, the balance light sand.

“By the right hand road, going west from Five Wells, the distance to the first of Ward’s wells is twenty-four miles, about sixteen of it heavy sand, the rest hard. These wells are situated in a ravine (from one-fourth to three-fourths of a mile in width) or narrow valley, extending northwest and southeast, through the centre of the plains, for at least fifty miles, bordered on each side by from one to three miles of hard prairie, making a strip of prairie from two to six miles in width. There are about fifty of these wells, in the first valley, in a space of one and one-half miles. Wells are from four feet deep at the western end to fifteen at the eastern, and having from two to four feet of water, of excellent quality and affording water for several thousand horses or cattle. Grass excellent, and wood (roots) in abundance.

“Three and one-half miles on the road, west of the first wells, in a similar ravine which joins the long one, are found about twenty more wells, and two miles south, in a third ravine, are several more; these last are off the road about a mile. This appears to have been a favorite resort of Indians, as shown by deeply worn trails, old lodges and heads of cattle. No sign of buffalo so far west as this, the line of sand from a few miles south of Quemias to

Laguna Rico and Sabinas and thence through Five Wells and Mustang Springs to head of Main Concho being their western limit.

“From the second spring, to Monument Spring, distant thirty-seven miles, a little south of west, the road runs most of the way over rolling prairie, with about fifteen miles of not very heavy sand.

“Monument Spring is so named from a monument I had built on a hill southwest and one and one-fourth miles distant from the spring. This monument is of nearly white stone, about eight feet in diameter at the base, four at the top, and seven and one-half feet high. It can be seen for several miles in all directions.

“Monument Spring is a very large spring of excellent water, furnishing enough for several thousand head of horses. The country to the north is, for fifty miles, hard high prairie, to the south and west sandy; grass, in all directions, of luxuriant growth, of the finest quality found on the plains; wood abundant (roots) for fuel, and good building stone in the hills near by (limestone).

“Twenty miles due south are Dug springs, three in number, situated in a small valley of salty grass. The wells are a few yards apart, about six feet deep and four in diameter, having a depth of three or four feet of water and furnishing enough for about one thousand horses per day. My command, of about three hundred animals, watering all at one time soon exhausted the springs, but in an hour or two they were full again. Plenty of wood in this vicinity, and tolerable good grass close by; within easy grazing distance it was excellent.

“From Dug springs to the Pecos the distance is about thirty-two miles, one-half of the way heavy sand and the rest hard rolling hills. There is no wagon road to the Pecos, but a very plain and deeply worn Indian trail, running almost due west until near the Pecos, when it

turns southwest, striking that stream just above the mouth of the Azul or Blue river, at a shallow, rock-bottom crossing, where the water in ordinary stages is not over fifteen inches deep.

“From Mustang Springs to Centralia the distance is fifty-four miles, without water on the trail of Lieutenant Geddes, except one salt lake thirty-five miles north and twenty-five west of Central station. At this lake water might be found by digging. Southeast of Central station, and eighteen miles from it, a fine spring of water, hitherto unknown, was found by Lieutenant Geddes, which will, undoubtedly, cause a change in the road across the plains to the Pecos. From this spring to Howard's wells and the Pecos the country has never been scouted; on the trail followed by Lieutenant Geddes no other permanent water was found until he reached Howard's wells, on the San Antonio road. From this point west to the Rio Grande the country is least known of any in this Department and is the most difficult to scout in, as it has, so far, been found impossible to take wagons along; and from the country being cut up by very deep and rocky ravines and all the hills covered with a kind of miniature Spanish dagger, making it very difficult and painful traveling for horses. There is, undoubtedly, plenty of water, and this country has always been a favorite resort for the Apaches and Lipans. Lieutenant Geddes discovered several good springs of water on his trail and reports that his command did not suffer at all from want of water. My experience, father west and near the Rio Grande, was the same in the fall of 1871, when I was, at no time, more than a half day without water, either in springs or rock tanks.

“The various scouts have shown how easily the plains can be traversed, in almost any direction, and to all the large watering places there are plain wagon roads that will show for years.”



**J. W. THROCKMORTON.**



## CHAPTER III.

**TEXAS RIVERS: THEIR NAMES—WHAT STREAMS ARE NAVIGABLE—DEPTH OF BARS; INLAND NAVIGATION—WATER SUPPLY—ARTESIAN WELLS—WATER POWER.**

**B**EGINNING at the northern, or northeastern boundary of the State, Red river, Big Cypress and Lake Soda are navigable during the rainy seasons, and a regular trade is carried on upon these with New Orleans. On the old Spanish maps the Red river is called Naugdoches, from an Indian tribe on its banks.

The Sabine is the eastern boundary of Texas from the Gulf of Mexico to the 32d parallel of latitude. It has at its mouth a depth of from five to seven feet of water; but such is the nature of the bottom that it could very easily be deepened to a much greater depth, and this is now being done by the General Government. It is navigable during portions of the year for a distance of three hundred miles from its mouth. It was called by the Spaniards, Adaes, after an Indian tribe. In 1718, De Alarconne, in his controversy with La Harpe, calls it Rio de San Francisco de Sabinas. (Sabine means juniper tree.)

The Angelina and Neches rivers enter Sabine lake. Boats ascend the former some 400 miles during the wet season; and the latter about 250 to Thouvenin landing.

Trinity. The Indian name of this river was Arkokisa; a corruption from Orquisaco, an Indian tribe, Lasalle

called it the river of canoes, because he had to procure canoes from the Indians to cross the swollen stream. It empties into Galveston bay, and has a depth of three feet at its mouth. Steamboats have ascended it 900 miles to Dallas.

San Jacinto (Hyacinth) river forms a junction with Buffalo Bayou at Lynchburg, and empties into Galveston bay. Buffalo Bayou is navigable to Houston, ninety miles from Galveston. In 1876, Red Fish and other bars were deepened, and boats drawing from six to eight feet, now ascend the bayou to Clinton, six miles below Houston.

The outer bar at Galveston has a depth of water varying from ten to thirteen feet, which is being increased by a system of jetties made by gabions.

The Brazos has from five to eight feet at its mouth. Boats have ascended 600 miles to the falls, near Marlin. In 1854 a canal was cut from near the mouth of the river into Galveston bay. If tradition is to be credited, the Spaniards gave the name of Colorado to this river; but the names were interchanged. The Indians called it Tockonhono. In crossing this stream La Salle lost one of his men, supposed to have been seized by an alligator, and he gave it the name of *Malign*.

The San Bernard has a shallow entrance, but it is navigable for twenty or thirty miles.

Old Caney Creek has been navigated some seventy miles. In 1864 a channel was opened from near its mouth into Matagorda bay.

A bar at the mouth of the Colorado, and a raft in the channel, interfere with its navigation. In 1847, a steamboat built above the raft ascended the river 600 miles, to the falls above Austin. The Indian name was Pashohono. Tradition says a party of Spanish adventurers after nearly perishing for water, came suddenly upon this stream and



called it Brazos de Dios (Arm of God). La Salle called it the River of Canes, from the quantity of cane upon its bank. It flows into Matagorda bay.

The Navidad was called by LaSalle Prince's River, and its confluent, River of Beeves (Lavaca, or Cow), is navigable thirty miles to Texana. It empties through Lavaca bay into Matagorda bay. Pass Cavallo is the outlet of Matagorda bay, and has a depth on the bar of from eight to eleven feet. Bellin's map, in 1750, gives eighteen feet on the bar, up to Dog Island.

The Guadalupe river is shallow at its mouth, where it enters Espiritu Santo bay. It has been navigated seventy miles to Victoria. In old maps this bears the name of its principal affluent, the San Marcos. Its principal western branch is the San Antonio, which is sometimes called the Medina, one of its tributaries.

The Nueces (Nuts) river is navigable for small vessels up to the neighborhood of San Patricio. Aransas Pass has a depth of from six to ten feet. In 1874 the Corpus Christi ship channel was opened, permitting steam-ships to reach the wharf at Corpus Christi.

The Rio Grande, which forms the boundary between Texas and Mexico, is navigable 500 miles to Comargo. This stream has three names. At Santa Fe it is called the Del Norte; and at Reinosa the Rio Bravo. There is a depth of from four to five feet at its mouth; but the principal shipping point is through the pass at Brazos St. Jago, which has a depth of from six to nine feet.

The following estimate, made by a competent engineer, shows with what ease and at how small a cost inland communication might be opened along the entire coast of Texas:

From Rio Grande river into waters connected with Point Isabel, one mile solid digging; from thence through

the Laguna del Madre into Corpus Christi Bay, 100 miles with three feet depth of water; from thence into Aransas Bay, sixteen miles, with an average depth of three feet water; from thence to Matagorda Bay, forty-eight miles, good for six feet water; thence through Matagorda Bay to Caney Creek, forty-five miles, eight feet depth of water; from Caney Creek, seven miles solid digging, into San Bernard lake and river; from San Bernard river to Brazos river, ten miles solid digging; thence through canal and West Bay into Galveston Bay, thirty miles, with four feet depth of water; thence through Galveston Bay and through East Bay to East Bay bayou, with from six to nine feet water for twenty miles, and the last five miles three feet water and soft mud, making in all twenty-five miles; from thence through East Bay and Elm Bayous, ten miles; thence seventeen miles solid digging to Taylor's Bayou down which to Sabine Lake, eight miles.

**WATER SUPPLY.**—A good portion of Texas has an abundance of springs and living streams of water; and in most places in the State good water can be obtained at a depth varying from fifteen to one hundred feet. But in others where water can not be had by digging, or when it is unsuitable for use, owing to mineral substances with which it is impregnated, a water supply is secured by tanks. A dam is thrown across a ravine having a moderate fall, and the earth is scraped out down to the hard clay. Large reservoirs are thus constructed, and filled by the rains, which being protected from stock, furnish an abundant supply of good fresh water.

**ARTESIAN WELLS.**—The scarcity of water in Western Texas induced the United States Congress, in 1856, to make an appropriation of \$100,000 for boring artesian wells in the arid region between the Nueces and Rio

Grande rivers. Lieutenant John Pope was detailed to execute the work of boring. At one of the wells, good water was found at the depth of a little over two hundred feet; but it did not rise to the surface. On the Pecos river a well was bored eleven hundred feet, but without success. At Corpus Christi water flowed to the surface, but it was unsuitable for use. In 1858 a well was commenced on the Capitol Hill, at Austin. At the depth of twelve hundred feet a weak stream rose to the surface and flowed off. Like the stream at Corpus Christi, this was so impregnated with mineral substances as to be useless. In 1873 some obstructions occurred and the water ceased to flow. Near Terrell, in Kaufman county, a number of wells have been dug of only ordinary depth, and the water rises to the surface. A few miles from Fort Worth a well was bored to the depth of four hundred and fifty feet; at which a great abundance of water was found, which rose to within about twelve or fifteen feet of the surface. There is an artesian well near Graham, Young county, only one hundred and ninety-seven feet deep. A bold stream flows out from the top.

RAINS.—As a general rule the more western counties of the State are most liable to suffer from drouth. But experience has shown that this objection is becoming less from year to year, as the country becomes more settled and more under cultivation. The prairie fires that formerly so often swept over the western plains, destroying every shrub and preventing the growth of timber, have become far less frequent and confined to comparatively narrow limits. Hence there are now thousands of acres in nearly all the western counties growing up in mesquite and various kinds of timber, where a few years ago there was not a shrub to be seen. This growth of timber is believed to be one principal cause for the more regular falls of rain,

for in all parts of the world the growth of timber has long been recognized to have this effect, and in many countries the growth of forest trees has been encouraged by government as a means to secure the more regular fall of rain. To this cause is generally attributed the fact that the counties on the San Antonio river, and others in the west, are now far more exempt from drouths than formerly; and it is now believed by many that the crops there are no more liable to suffer from too little rain than they are from too much in most of the States. In all other parts of Texas the seasons of rain are much the same as in other States, and crops are liable to as few casualties as in any other part of the world. In one respect Texas has an advantage over any country we have seen, for as a general rule deep plowing and early planting will secure fair crops in nearly all parts of the State with very little rain, and sometimes with none at all. This advantage is owing to the fact that our planting season commences a month or two earlier than in other States on account of our mild winter, and also to the fact that our soil has nearly everywhere a substratum of clay and is very retentive of moisture with deep plowing.

**WATER POWER.**—Comparatively little use has, as yet, been made of the immense water power of Texas. It is true that but few sites suitable for mills and machinery are found on the sluggish streams in the low, flat country. There are some good locations on the head waters of the tributaries of the Trinity and San Jacinto rivers. Mill-sites may be found in almost all the rolling counties of Texas, where almost all of the small streams have them. Many are found in Bell county, on the tributaries of Little river, and at such springs as Salado. An article in an old almanac describes the water power of West Texas :

“ Beginning with the Colorado, we find it having a fall of

six hundred and fifty feet from Austin to the coast. Between those points there are many places where its power may be made available by the judicious employment of capital. This is particularly the case at Columbus, where the river, at its approach to town, makes a bend, and after running round several miles, returns to the lower part of the town, leaving a comparatively narrow neck between the two points. A suitable dam to turn the water into a canal, would give a large fall at its entrance into the river. At some future time Columbus will be largely engaged in profitable manufacturing. I am not familiar with the topography of the river from that point to Austin, but the probability is that there are many other available localities for machinery. From Austin to the head of the river, and its tributaries which flow through the mountains, many admirable sites for machinery are found.

“Passing west from the Colorado we come to the San Marcos. It is formed by an immense spring at the town of San Marcos, where the water gushes out of the mountain from several springs, forming a volume constituting a considerable river. Near the spring there is a fine site for machinery. The falls continue for fifteen or twenty miles, affording many fine mill sites.

“From Gonzales, where the San Marcos enters into the Guadalupe, up to Seguin, there are several points on the river capable of being made available for machinery; but from Seguin up to the head of the river, and especially from Seguin to New Braunfels, we have a magnificent water power. At Seguin commences a series of falls of from two to nine or ten feet perpendicular height. Between the two points, a distance of fifteen miles, there is a descent of eighty feet. Nearly all of these falls, which occur at intervals of from one to three miles, may be utilized. At Braunfels, where the Comal Spring issues from the mountain in a

volume sufficient to form a considerable river, there is a water power easily commanded sufficient to make it a second Lowell. From that point to the head of the river there is a large amount of fine and available water power.

“Still further west we come to the San Antonio river, another permanent current stream abounding in valuable mill and factory sites. Beginning at the town of Goliad, there is a fall or rapid, where the river passes over a rocky formation, presenting a fine site for machinery. Goliad is forty or fifty miles from the coast. From that point to Colonel Skyles' place, below the Conchester crossing of the river, in the upper part of Karnes county, there are available points where the water power may be used to advantage. From the lower part of Colonel Skyles' place to the Conchester crossing, a distance of three miles, there is a fall of about thirty feet. There are, besides some rapids, three several falls; one perpendicular of six or eight feet; the other two are slopes, and would require a low dam to control the waters, and are, one eight and the other eleven feet high. They are formed by beds of sandstone of excellent quality. The stone is in layers of convenient thickness for quarrying, and in inexhaustible quantity. Nature seems to have designed the locality for an immense manufacturing city. From that point to San Antonio there are various sites for machinery. Still further west, the head waters of the Neuces, Frio and other streams rising in the mountains afford ample power for large factories. These streams extend to the Rio Grande.



**FERRY, COMAL RIVER.**





## CHAPTER IV.

MOUNTAINS—ALTITUDES—MINERALS—COPPER, LEAD, IRON, SILVER, COAL, ETC.  
—CUANO IN BAT CAVES.

**M**OUNTAINS.—In the old maps a good many mountains were laid down ; as the Tehuacana, in Limestone county ; Colorado Mountains, above Austin ; Guadalupe Mountains, in Kerr county ; Pack Saddle and other peaks, in Llano county ; and other elevations, dignified with the name of mountains. Later maps still mark some peaks as mountains ; as Double Mountain, at the northwest corner of Jones county ; the White Sand Hills, in Tom Green county ; Chenati and some other peaks, in Presidio county ; and Eagle Mountains, in El Paso county. The mountains of Texas, in a mountainous country, would be called hills, though some of them rise to a respectable height.

Thousands of invalids annually visit Texas for their health. To such, the question of altitude is one of considerable importance ; and we give the altitudes of leading points in different parts of the State. But we will state, that even the flat, coast region is so swept by delightful sea-breezes that it is pleasant and healthy. But as we penetrate the interior, and gain a greater altitude, the atmosphere becomes more pure and stimulating. The highest spurs of what is called the Guadalupe range are about 5,000 feet above the sea level.

Red river, at the mouth of the Big Wichita, has an

elevation of about 900 feet ; San Antonio, 600 feet ; Austin, 600 ; Castroville, 767 ; Fort Duncan, 800 ; Fort Lincoln, 900 ; Fort Inge, 845 ; Fort Clark, 1,000 ; Round Rock, 1,145 ; Fort Chadburn, 2,120 ; Phantom Hill, 2,300 ; Fredricksburg 1,500 ; Valley of the Pecos 2,350 ; Jacksboro, 2,000 ; El Paso, 3,750 ; highest point on the San Antonio and El Paso road, 5,765 ; Llano Estacada, about 2,400 ; Fort Worth 629 ; Dallas 481 feet.

**MINERALS.**—So far, the geological surveys of Texas have been very meager and superficial. The office of State Geologist was created in 1858. In 1859, B. F. Shumard commenced operations, as State Geologist ; but was superseded in that office the next year by Dr. Francis Moore, Jr., who had hardly commenced field-work when the war broke up his operations. John W. Glenn held the office for a short time in 1873 ; and S. B. Buckley, in 1874. The following summary is from the pen of Prof. A. R. Rossler, who was assistant geologist under Dr. Shumard :

“ **COPPER**—Copper, covering as it does a large area of country, is almost inexhaustible, and will afford a vast fund of wealth for generations to come. A large portion of the counties of Archer, Wichita, Clay, Haskell, Territory of Bexar, counties of Pecos and Presidio—extending to the Rio Grande—is filled with immense hills of copper ore, some of which has been thoroughly tested and will yield on the average 55.44 per cent. of metal ; though some particular localities have produced specimens even as rich as 68 per cent., containing, besides, some silver, oxide of iron, etc.

“ The first intelligence I received of the existence of this unexampled deposit of copper ore, was through M. D. Bullion, of Hunt county, Texas, who sent me a small piece of this ore in an envelope, for examination, with the

remark, 'If this stuff is of any account, I can load up five hundred wagons, without digging, from a 320-acre tract.' Upon examination, I found it to be a highly interesting specimen of copper glance, (nearly a pure sulphuret), containing 55.44 per cent. of metal. Its geological connections are of the highest interest and proved that this metalliferous tract is a portion of the Permian formation, which stretches from Kansas down into Texas, and is the only example of this formation in the United States

"In 1870, after traversing the cretaceous and carboniferous series northward of Weatherford, Parker county, I was very agreeably surprised by a grand panorama of outcropping of this formation. This system (Permian), is extensively developed in Russia, between the Ural Mountains and the river Volga, in the north of England, and also in Germany, where it is mined for its treasures of copper, silver, nickel and cobalt ores. In Texas the ore is found on the hillsides and also on the surface, giving no trouble for mining or drainage. Four persons in ten hours took out six thousand pounds, averaging sixty per cent. Coal, timber, limestone, soapstone, and all the requisites for building furnaces and smelting ores are in the vicinity, and the projected line of the Southern Pacific railroad passes over the locality. At present, mining operations cannot be safely prosecuted, owing to the proximity of bands of prowling Indians.

"The hills which I have traced throughout Archer, Wichita, Haskell and Clay counties, are nearly barren—towering above the most beautiful and fertile Mesquite prairies, fringed by the finely timbered bottoms of the tributaries of Red River, and are exceedingly picturesque.

"Explorations of the copper veins, over the summits and sides of the hills, justify the conclusion that within the extent of one degree of longitude along the Little

Wichita River, hardly a tract of 160 acres could be found without large accumulations of ore upon the surface. The vein lodes are parallel with the strata, but there is sufficient evidence that they partake of the nature of true veins.

“MANGANESE, COBALT, NICKEL AND BISMUTH.—Leads of manganese, cobalt, nickle and bismuth are often met with. The copper ore contains only 25 per cent of impurities, is far superior to the ferro sulphuret of copper or copper pyrites generally worked for in England, and in native copper ore as found at Lake Superior. It easily smelted, and the strata in which it is found is more easily excavated than any other in which copper ores occur.

“LEAD AND SILVER.—These two metals are always associated together in this State. The calciferous sandrock—which is the lead-bearing rock of Missouri—abounds in Texas, and the varieties found in it here are carbonate of lead, sulphuret of lead and molybdate of lead. The former two always contain such large quantities of silver as to be considered silver ore. A sample from a three feet vein in Llano county, gave a yield of 286 ounces of silver and 74.45 per cent. lead. It is the carbonate of lead in combination with the sulphuret, and owing to the large percentage of the former will be very easily reduced. The indications are very favorable for a very large quantity and excellent quality of ore. At present, lands in this section of the State are of very little value notwithstanding the abundance of minerals and timber. With a well developed mining industry established here, no other country could compete with this region, so far as regards fuel, construction timber and materials for building and sustaining a railroad. There are about 10,000 acres of vacant land, and the lands already located can be had for a trifle—the rocks of which are silver and gold bearing.

“The examination of shafts to a depth of fifty feet, chisel and drill marks, and other unmistakable evidences, leave no doubt that the Spaniards formerly worked these mines, and remains of the ore worked, show it to have been very rich.

“IRON.—The iron deposits of Northwestern Texas are of the most remarkable character, equalling in extent and richness those of Sweden, Missouri, New Jersey and New York. They include almost every variety—magnetic, spathic, specular and hematite ores. The largest deposits magnetic iron ores occur in Mason, Llano and more Western counties. Immense loose masses of ore lie scattered over the surface, which have been upheaved by igneous agencies from unknown depths below. Most of these are in true veins. As no true metallic vein has ever been traced downward to its termination, the supply is inexhaustible. The analysis of an average specimen gave 96.890 per cent. of per-oxide of iron, with 2.818 per cent. of insoluble silicious substances—proving it to be a magnetic oxide, which will yield 74.93 pounds of metallic iron to 100 pounds of ore.

“The prevailing rocks are red feldspathic granite, gneiss, quartz, talcose and chloritic shists. Granite ridge surrounds the deposits, and veins of quartz traverse it in all directions. The limestone of the paleozoic and cretaceous rocks are in the immediate vicinity, from which materials for flux can be easily obtained. A most remarkable development of hematite and limonite occurs on the waters of Red River. It is found in regular layers of from fifty to sixty feet in thickness. Associated with these ores are various oxides of iron, suitable for pigments of red, yellow and brown colors distributed, forming regular layers of several feet in thickness. The largest amount is on vacant lands—subject to location by certificates.

“**COAL.**—The coal-bearing rocks of Texas occupy an area of not less than 6,000 square miles, embracing the counties of Young, Jack, Palo Pinto, Eastland, Brown, Comanche, Callahan, Coleman, and extending to the Territory of Bexar. The rocks contain the characteristics belonging to the coal measures of Missouri and other Western States. In general appearance, this coal resembles that from Belleville, Illinois. The analysis gives, fixed carbon, 52 per cent.; volatile matter, 36 per cent.; ashes, 3 per cent.

“This coal cokes with a great flame, without changing its form, and the development of this valuable mineral is destined to be of the greatest importance to the State.

“**ANTHRACITE COAL**, lighter and more brittle than the anthracites of Pennsylvania, has been found in various parts of the State, but I had no opportunity to visit the localities.

“Lignites, Tertiary, and other coals of more recent origin, occupy an area of some 10,000 square miles—in connection with the true coal formation—on many points of the Rio Grande, in Webb, Atascosa and Frio counties. They are mostly soft, sulphurous and ashy, but superior to German brown coals.

“**ASPHALTUM.**—Asphaltum has been found in Hardin, Travis, Burnet, Llano and many counties on Red River. The earth for some distance around certain acid springs is charged with it, and may be employed for the purpose of illumination. For pavements, roofing and other uses, this material is too well known to require further mention.

“**GYPSUM.**—In the northwestern portion of the State is the largest deposit of gypsum known to exist in the world, spreading over two hundred miles on the upper Red River and its tributaries. This will be of great value as a fertilizer. Some of the specimens are as transparent as the purest glass, easily split into thin layers.

**“SALT.**—There are a great many salt springs and salt lakes in this formation. Salt is manufactured in the great laboratory of Nature by solar evaporation. The most important locality producing almost an inexhaustible amount of salt, is Sal Del Rey, the greatest Salt Lake in Hidalgo county, and at the Horsehead crossing on Pecos River, Pecos county. The salt here is ready formed, and need only be shoveled up and taken to market. The water is so strongly impregnated that the human body cannot be made to sink in it. The salt is very pure and fit for table use, without refining.

“Petroleum springs occur over a space of about fifty square yards, in Hardin county, and it is highly probable that larger supplies may be obtained by boring. The surface indications are certainly as favorable as those of the now famous oil wells of Pennsylvania and northern Ohio, prior to the discovery by deep boring. Extensive quarries of marble, roofing slate, grindstone, soapstone and asbestos, with a large class of metallic substances usually present in highly metalliferous regions—such as alum, cobalt, nickel, manganese, arsenic, etc.—are abundant.”

**GUANO.**—It is only a short time since this important article of commerce has been discovered in Texas; and though only a few caves have been examined, there can be no question but there is an inexhaustible supply of guano concealed in our mountain caves. One has been found in Bexar county, twenty miles northeast of San Antonio, containing many acres; forty feet under ground, with an unknown depth of Guano. Another immense deposit exists in a cave eight miles south-west of Bandera; and another in Williamson county, three miles from Georgetown. There can be no doubt that a thorough geological survey of our State will develop inexhaustible mines of wealth.

The following is from a newspaper published in the county in which the cave mentioned is located :

“The *Uvalde Umpire* describes the famous bat cave in that county, and the operations of the Texas Guano Company, formed about nine months or one year ago, by Mr. Huertzall, of Galveston, for the removal of the guano. The *Umpire* says :

“The company have been making very satisfactory headway, removing from three to ten tons each day, which they immediately ship to Galveston, thence to Scotland, where use is made of it for different purposes, but principally in the manufacture of ammonia and other medicals. The mountains where the bat cave is situated are about twenty miles north of Uvalde. Near the top of one of the highest in the range are the several openings of the cave. These entrances are facing north, the largest being about fifty feet in width, and twenty in height, the others being smaller, decreasing to a size not large enough to allow a man to get through. The cave increases in dimensions inside, and extends a considerable distance beyond where the workmen are engaged removing the guano, at a point 450 or 500 feet from the entrance. There is a tramway constructed upon which are run cars or carts, with a carrying capacity of about one ton each. The motive power is a ‘jack,’ run by the same engine used in the operations of drying. The drying operation is a very ingenious construction, originated by Mr. Huertzall. It is an iron cylinder about 3 1-2 feet in diameter, resting upon a stone foundation, and directly beneath it is placed the fire; in this cylinder runs a shaft to which are attached a number of small arms or paddles. The revolving of this shaft and paddles causes the guano to pass entirely through the cylinder, after which it is sufficiently dry to pack for shipment. It is expected that an improvement



will be made in all the machinery used, so as to enable them to prepare 20 or 30 tons per day for shipment. It is supposed that the amount of guano in this cave is so great that, at the present rate of removing it, it will be years before the more accessible portions of it are removed. It would be utterly impossible for one to make even a fairly correct estimate of the number of bats inhabiting the cave; but that an idea may be given, we would state that for more than three hours they were passing out in a flock or continual flying procession, occupying the entire width of the openings of the entrance."



PART II.  
TEXAS UNDER SPANISH  
DOMINATION.

---

FROM 1685 TO 1820.



## CHAPTER I.

LANDING OF LA SALLE—MISFORTUNES—FORT ST. LOUIS, ON THE LAVACA RIVER—LA SALLE ASSASSINATED ON THE NECHES RIVER BY HIS OWN MEN—FORT ST. LOUIS IN RUINS.

ALTHOUGH Spanish adventurers had, during the latter part of the sixteenth and seventeenth centuries, passed through the interior of Texas, historians usually begin its history with the landing of the French under La Salle, on its soil, in the year 1685. After having descended the great river of the continent, and having planted the standard of France at its mouth, La Salle returned to France to procure the men and means for planting a colony at the mouth of the Mississippi in order to open a new route for commerce between France and her Canadian colonies. He was successful in his application at the court of Louis XIV. The king granted all that the great discoverer desired, and in a manner suitable to the importance of the enterprise and the dignity and munificence of the greatest of French kings. A commission was issued, giving him authority to establish colonies in Louisiana, and placing him in command of the expedition. A squadron of four vessels was provided and furnished by the king. The *Joil*, a frigate of thirty-six guns; the *Belle*, of six guns, a present from the king to La Salle; the *Amiable*, a ship of some two hundred tons burden; and a small vessel, the *St. Francis*, carrying munitions. Beaujeau, who commanded the *Joil*, was also commander or sailing master of the squadron, but under



**SCENE ON THE MISSISSIPPI**  
In the time of La Salle.

the direction of La Salle, except in the business of navigating the ships at sea, until they should arrive in America. There were seven missionaries, one hundred soldiers, thirty volunteers, and mechanics, girls, etc., making about three hundred in all. Among these were two nephews of La Salle.

The squadron sailed from Rochelle, July 24, 1684. Disputes arose between La Salle and his naval commander on the outward voyage, which was a tedious one. The *St. Francis* was captured by the Spaniards. Land was discovered on the 26th of December, which they supposed to be the coast of Florida, and this induced them to change their course to the south-west. La Salle had miscalculated the latitude of the mouth of the river, and had been driven too far west by the winds. According to Joutel, the historian of the expedition, a landing was first effected near Corpus Christi, early in January, 1685. Becoming satisfied that they had passed the mouth of the river, they re-embarked, and sailed up the coast, making an occasional landing, until February 13, (says Joutel—other accounts say 18th,) when the *Belle* crossed the bar at Pass Cavallo, into a bay named by them San Bernardo—since Matagorda. On the 20th, the *Amiable* was lost in trying to enter the harbor. Two temporary camps were established; one on Matagorda Island, near the present light-house, and the other on the main-land, up towards Indianola. At first the Indians were friendly and hospitable, but difficulties arose between some of the privates and inferior officers and the Indians, and on the 5th of March, Ory and Desloges were killed by them.

After landing, the Naval Commander became more and more quarrelsome, and finally, in a pet, sailed with the *Amiable* for France, taking with him her crew, and a considerable portion of the ammunition and supplies

intended for the colony. La Salle was thus left with but one small vessel, the Belle, and in the summer she was sent across the bay on an excursion, and was lost near Dog Island. This left the colony without the means of leaving the country by water. They crossed the bay to secure a better location for a permanent fort, and entered a river, which, from the number of buffaloes on the banks, they named Las Veches, or river of Beeves. (Joutel calls the buffaloes wild cattle, and the deer wild goats.) The summer was occupied in erecting the necessary buildings, and removing the stores to the new fort at Dimitt's Point on the Lavaca River; with occasional excursions in various directions, in hopes of finding the great river. The company now consisted of about 180 persons.

In January, 1686, leaving Joutel in charge of the fort, La Salle, with twenty companions, started upon an excursion to hunt for the Mississippi River. He traveled as far as the Brazos River, where he had the misfortune to lose one of his men, who was either drowned or devoured by an alligator. Becoming satisfied that he was entirely too far to the west, he returned to the fort, having lost five of his men.

While in Canada, La Salle had in his service a faithful lieutenant, De Tonti, the iron-handed. (He had lost one of his hands in battle, and had substituted one of iron.) De Tonti had been instructed by La Salle to descend the Mississippi River to the mouth of the Arkansas, and establish a fort, and collect supplies for the colony he was bringing out from France.

Believing that his lieutenant would be found at the designated place, La Salle, about the last of April, with twenty companions, started, intending to discover the river at the point occupied by his faithful De Tonti. The



streams were swollen, and progress was difficult, but he finally reached the villages of the friendly Nassonite and Cennis Indians, on the Trinity and Neches Rivers. While camped on the latter stream, he and his nephew were prostrated by a fever. When they had sufficiently recovered to resume their journey, they found that the improvident hunters had nearly exhausted their ammunition, and it would be necessary to return to their fort for a fresh supply. Between deaths and desertions, La Salle now had but eight of the twenty men with whom he started. These, with five horses procured from the Indians, reached the fort in August. They found the number in the fort also greatly reduced, so that there were now but thirty-four remaining alive.

Again, on the 12th of January, 1687, La Salle, with seventeen companions, started to the northeast. This time he took Joutel, leaving the fort with seventeen persons, including seven women, in charge of Sieur Barbier, who had just married one of the maidens brought out from France. In giving dates and the route of travel, we follow the journal of Joutel, though he tells us that he is not certain as to many of them. On Joutel's map there is a place laid down, called *Bucon*, about where the Texana and Victoria road crosses the Lavaca River. This is the point where La Salle camped on the night he left the fort. The next day they crossed a plain two leagues, to the Prince's (Navidad) River; this they found swollen, and for two days traveled up its west bank. On the third day, by felling a tree, they succeeded in crossing their baggage. On Skull Creek they found an Indian village; (probably Tonkawas) the French called it Habemos. On the 21st they crossed the river of Canes, (Colorado, about Eagle Lake). Heavy rains delayed them, and they crossed the river of Sand Banks, (San

Bernard) on the 26th. On Joutel's map are laid down successively, though under French names, Skull Creek, New Year's Creek, the Maligne, or Brazos River; the Eure (San Jacinto), River of Canoes, so called because in his former voyage, La Salle had to procure canoes to cross it (the Trinity), the Neches, the Angelina and the Sabine. The streams between the San Bernard and Red Rivers are marked as having unknown mouths. In La Salle's first trip he had buried some provisions near his camp on the Neches River. These were found, but in a condition unfit for use, and they halted for a few days to procure a fresh supply. A party was sent out to kill meat. Some of the party had previously manifested a quarrelsome and insubordinate disposition. The leader of this party was Duhaut, who had persuaded Heins, a former buccaneer, Liotot and two others to join him in the conspiracy. It so happened that the five conspirators were out with the party killing and drying meat. They had a special spite towards Moragnet, La Salle's nephew. La Salle dispatched his nephew and two others to the camp for dried meat. Duhaut and Moragnet quarreled about some nice bits of meat, which the hunters claimed as a special perquisite, and Duhaut determined upon revenge. That night, while the most of the men were asleep, Duhaut, Heins and Liotot, with their axes, killed Moragnet and his friend Saget, and La Salle's faithful hunter, Nika, who had followed him from Canada. The conspirators next resolved upon the death of La Salle, and an opportunity to execute their purpose was soon afforded. He, uneasy at the long absence of his nephew, with Father Ansatase, the priest, and two Indians for guides, went to hunt the party, and after a few miles travel he found the bloody cravat of Saget, and saw buzzards flying in the air. He concluded the hunters were not far distant, and fired his gun. The conspirators



**INDIANS.**



heard it and supposed it was La Salle. Duhaut and L'Archeveque, seeing La Salle approaching the place where they were, stopped, and Duhaut hid himself in the grass. Just as La Salle inquired of the other where his nephew was, Duhaut, from his concealment, shot the great captain in the head. He fell in the arms of the faithful priest; he never spoke, but pressed the father's hand in token of recognition, and expired. The good father, with his own hands, dug his grave and erected over it a rude cross. The chief conspirators did not long survive. Duhaut was shot by Hiens, and Liotot by Rutel, a Frenchman who had been lost during La Salle's first journey, and had now rejoined his companions. Joutel, who succeeded to the command, with six companions, after some delay, resumed their journey. Crossing Red River, June 16th, and pursuing their journey, they were gratified, on the 20th of July, by the sight of the French flag, floating over the fort erected by the faithful De Tonti at the mouth of the Arkansas River.

Soon after the departure of La Salle's party from Fort Saint Louis, that place, so weakened, fell before the blood-thirsty Caranchuas,\* though it is said that De Leon the

\* Jacob Grollet and John L'Archeveque, who were subsequently taken from among the Indians by De Leon, gave the following account of the destruction of the fort. The Indians referred to were another band of Caranchuas, or possibly a band of the Lipans, from the west. The two Frenchmen made in substance to the Governor the following statement: "That while the Indians in the vicinity of the fort appeared to be friendly with the French, and they had no reason to suspect any bad intentions or treachery from them, and at a time when the French were scattered about the bay constructing their fort, which they had named Saint Louis, and engaged in other peaceable pursuits, they were surprised and assailed by a large body of Indians, who had been watching them for some time, and all were killed except five, who only owed their salvation to the promptitude of their flight to the friendly Asinais."



## CHAPTER II.

DE LEON GOVERNOR OF MONCLOVA, IN TEXAS—FOUNDS PRESIDIO ON THE RIO GRANDE IN 1690—SUCCEEDED BY DOMINGO TERAN—ST. DENIS ON THE RIO GRANDE—CORRESPONDENCE BETWEEN D'ALARCONNE AND LA HARPE—BELISLE ON THE COAST—INDIAN LEAGUE.

THIS expedition into Texas by the French was soon known in Mexico. The Count of Monclova became viceroy in November 17, 1686, and one of the first acts of the new administration was to take measures to dislodge the colony of La Salle. A military post was established in the interior, named for the new viceroy, Monclova, and Captain Alonzo De Leon was appointed to the command, with the title of Governor of Coaquila, (afterwards spelled generally Coahuila). After settling affairs to his satisfaction, at Monclova, De Leon started to dislodge the French from their post on the Lavaca river. With one hundred men he left Monclova in the spring of 1689, and arrived at the ruins of the old fort, April 22d. He penetrated the country as far as the villages of the Cenis Indians, and recovered a few of the colonists of La Salle, and humanely returned most of them to their own country. Having been informed of the murder of La Salle, and that one or two of the conspirators were still among the Indians, he captured them, and they were condemned to the mines for life. In 1690 De Leon again visited Texas. He founded the mission of San Juan Bautista, on the Rio Grande, at

Presidio, and projected the mission of San Francisco, near the old fort of La Salle.

In 1691 he was superseded in the command by Domingo Teran, who became very much interested in Texas, and traversed the country as far as Red river. He projected quite a number of settlements and missions; but his plans were frustrated by the hostility of the Indians.

In 1712, Louis XIV, of France, granted to Anthony Crozat, September 14th, the Louisiana country, watered by the Mississippi and its tributaries. Two years later, Crozat, who was a merchant, sent Huechereau St. Denis on a trading expedition to the Rio Grande. When St. Denis returned through Texas, the Spaniards sent Domingo Ramon, with a few soldiers and friars, to establish "missions."

In 1718, war was declared between France and Spain. Early in the spring of 1719, St. Denis and La Harpe collected a small force and invaded Texas, driving the Spaniards from the mission establishments in the east, and penetrated the country as far as San Antonio. Here they were met by the new governor, the Marquis De Aguayo, who had nearly five hundred soldiers, and was prepared to maintain Spanish authority in the province. St. Denis retired to Natchitoches; but La Harpe remained among friendly Indians, on the Neches river. In the meantime, De Aguayo had been superseded by Don Martin D'Alarconne, as Governor of Texas. When D'Alarconne learned that La Harpe was in the Indian village, he addressed him the following note:

"MONSIEUR: I am very sensible of the politeness that M. De Bienville and yourself had the goodness to show to me. The orders I have received from the king, my master, are, to maintain a good understanding with



the French of Louisiana; my own inclinations lead me equally to afford them all the services that depend upon me. But I am compelled to say, that your arrival at the Nassonite village surprises me much. Your governor could not be ignorant that the post you occupy belongs to my Government, and that all the lands west of the Nassonites depend upon New Mexico. I counsel you to advise M. De Bienville of this, or you will force me to oblige you to abandon lands that the French have no right to occupy. I have the honor to be, etc.,

DE'ALARCONNE.

*"Trinity River, May 20, 1719."*

To this the French commander sent the following reply:

"MONSIEUR: The order from his Catholic majesty, to maintain a good understanding with the French of Louisiana, and the kind intentions you have yourself expressed towards them, accord but little with your proceedings. Permit me to inform you that M. De'Bienville is perfectly informed of the limits of his Government, and is very certain that the post of the Nassonites depends not upon the dominions of his Catholic Majesty. He knows, also, that the province of Las Tekas (Texas), of which you say you are Governor, is a part of Louisiana. M. de La Salle took possession in 1685, in the name of his most Christian Majesty; and since the above epoch, possession has been renewed from time to time. Respecting the post of the Nassonites, I cannot comprehend by what right you pretend that it forms a part of New Mexico. I beg leave to represent to you, that Don Antonio De Minor, who discovered New Mexico in 1683, never penetrated east of the province, or the Rio Bravo. It was the French who first made

alliance with the savage tribes in this region ; and it is natural to conclude that a river that flows into the Mississippi, and the land it waters, belongs to the king my master. If you will do me the pleasure to come into this quarter, I will convince you I hold a post I know how to defend. I have the honor to be, etc.,

DE LA HARPE.

“*Nassonite*, July 8, 1719.”

The above correspondence gives the gist of the controversy between France and Spain in reference to the ownership of Texas. It happened, fortunately for the French, that during the same year in which the above correspondence took place, D'Alarconne, not having been re-inforced, as he requested, so that he could expel the French from East Texas, resigned his office and returned to Mexico. And the same year, another company of French, under Mons. Belisle, in sailing for the mouth of the Mississippi, landed, as La Salle had done before them, in Matagorda Bay. (See Belisle). Belisle having thus formed an acquaintance with Texas, and a league with some of the civilized Indian tribes, was sent back in 1721, by the enterprising De Bienville, to plant a French colony on the waters of Matagorda Bay. After a feeble effort to maintain a settlement, the project was abandoned, and with it the French claim to Texas.

In 1768, France transferred her Louisiana possessions to Spain ; but in 1800, Spain retroceded the country to France ; and in 1803, Bonaparte sold it to the United States. After the latter Government obtained possession, the claim to a part of Texas was again revived under the right acquired by its occupancy by La Salle.

While these disputes were pending, the settlements of the French in Louisiana, and of all the Spaniards in

Texas, were threatened with utter extermination by a formidable Indian league, in 1729. The numerous and powerful tribe of Natchez, in conjunction with kindred tribes in Louisiana, succeeded in enlisting the Comanches and Apaches in the attempt to drive from the country at once, both the Spaniards in Texas and the French in Louisiana. Fortunately this plot was disclosed to Saint Denis by some of his friends among the Indians. He immediately mustered a small force and entered the territory of the Natchez and defeated them before they had time to rally for a fight. At San Antonio, Governor Bustillos was engaged in introducing and settling the new families from the Canary Islands, and the Indians were troublesome and defiant until 1732, when he organized a military expedition and entered their territories and chastised them.

## CHAPTER III.

MISSION ESTABLISHMENTS—FIRST MASS—MISSIONS IN ALPHABETICAL ORDER—  
ADAES, AES, ALAMO, CONCEPCION, LA ESPADA, GUADALUPE, LA BAHIA, LA TRIN-  
IDAD, LORETTO, NACOGDOCHES, ORQUIZACO, REFUGIO, ROSARIO, SAN FERNAN-  
DES, SAN JOSE, SAN SABA.

THE period in which the Spaniards occupied Texas—  
1690 to the Mexican Revolution in 1820—has been  
not inappropriately called “The Mission Period.” The  
discovery of the American Continent opened to the crowded  
population of Europe a new door for enterprise; and  
they were not slow in entering it. The adventurers who  
first visited this country had two objects in view. The  
first was to add to the dominions of their respective sov-  
reigns; and the second, to extend the Christian religion.  
The establishment of missions accomplished both these  
purposes—possession of the country was secured, and  
provision made for the conversion of the aborigines.  
Our knowledge of the history of these grand old struct-  
ures in Texas, is very meager; but we give in a condensed  
form all the facts accessible.

In 1690, Alonzo De Leon, as we have seen, when on  
his route to Texas, founded on the Rio Grande the Mission  
and then the Presidio of San Juan Bautista. Having  
arrived in the neighborhood of La Salle's abandoned  
fort, he projected a mission to be called San Francisco,  
after the founder of the order of Saint Francis. The first  
mass was celebrated by the fathers accompanying De  
Leon, on the 25th of May, 1690. The mission was never  
built.



MISSION OF SAN JOSE.



“ In 1691,” says Mayer, page 218, “ the province of Asinai, or Texas, as it was called by the Spaniards, was settled by some emigrants, and visited by fourteen Spanish monks, who were anxious to devote themselves to the conversion of the Indians, and a garrison and mission were at that time established.” The location of this establishment can now hardly be identified. The Indians were troublesome, and frequent removals took place. We quote again from Mayer: “ Alarconne, the Governor, early in 1718, crossed the Medina, with a large number of soldiers, settlers and mechanics and founded the town of Bexar, with the fortress of San Antonio, and the mission of San Antonio Valero.” This was not the first settlement of the neighborhood, as Margil and Saint Denis found a considerable population there in 1714. Bexar was so named for the Duke of Bexar, then Viceroy. “ Alarconne,” says Mayer, “ pushed on to the country of the Cennis Indians, where having strengthened the missionary force, he crossed the river Adaes, which he called the Rio de San Francisco de Sabinas, and laid the foundation of a fortress within a short distance of the French fort at Natchitoches, named by him the Presidio de San Miguel Arcange de Linares de Adaes. These establishments were reinforced during the next year, and another stronghold was erected on the Orquisacas,” (probably the Trinity or San Jacinto).

These Texas missions were conducted by monks of the order of Saint Francis, from the colleges of Quaretero and of Zacatecas. In the west, locations were selected capable of irrigation. Large tracts of land were given to the mission, and as soon as practicable substantial stone buildings were erected. Among those buildings was, first, a chapel for worship, which also answered for a fortress in case of danger. A considerable area was

inclosed with a stone wall, and buildings erected for the accommodation of the priests, the soldiers, and such domestics as might be necessary to cultivate gardens and attend to the domestic animals. The task assumed by the missionaries was not a light one. Father Marat, in 1712, complained that "it was necessary first to transform these Indians into men, and afterwards to labor to make them Christians."

It is difficult to fix accurately either the location or date of these early establishments. The buildings first erected were frequently temporary and removals often took place. Then, one projected a mission, and some one else established it. New invocations and new names were also given. For convenience, we will name the principal missions in alphabetical order.

**ADAES**—*Our Lady Del Pilar (of the Baptismal Font or Parish)*.—As we have seen, Mayer attributes the foundation of this mission to De Alarconne. Other authorities ascribe its foundation to Ramon, in the time between 1715 and 1718. It was erected into a Presidio in 1781. Besides holding the country against the French, its object was to convert the Adaes, a small band of Caddo Indians. It was never very prosperous as a mission. Monsieur De Pages, who visited it in 1768, describes it as then consisting of "forty houses" besides the church. In 1790 it was entirely broken up, and the few Christian Indians transferred to San Antonio, and a labor of land known as the *Labor de Los Adaenis* assigned them, near the church of the Alamo. In 1805, when Bishop Feliciano Maria visited the Sabine in company with Governor Cordero, he baptized two hundred neophytes in the old church. That was probably the last time it was used for worship.

**AES**—*Our Lady de Los Dolores*,—was established in



1716, or 1717, for a small tribe of Indians near San Agustine on Aes or Ayish Bayou. It was broken up in 1772 and a few Indians removed to San Antonio.

**THE ALAMO.**—The most important of these missions is that of Alamo; this has been not inaptly called the Thermopylæ of Texas, as here Travis and his heroic band re-enacted the part performed by the brave Spartans nearly twenty-three centuries before. The name and location of this mission were frequently changed; it was commenced on the Rio Grande in 1700, under the name of San Francisco Solano; in 1703 it was removed to a place called San Ildephonso; in 1710 it was transferred back to the Rio Grande; about the year 1716 or 1718, probably at the suggestion of Father Margill, it was removed to San Antonio and located at the San Pedro Springs under the name of San Antonio de Valero, from Saint Anthony of Padua and the Duke of Valero, then Viceroy of Mexico; in 1732 it was moved to the Military Plaza in the city, and in 1744 transferred across the river to its present location, when it took the name of Alamo—Poplar Church. The corner stone of the building was laid with the usual ceremonies, May 8th, 1744; a slab in the front wall bears date 1757; it ceased to be used as a parish church in 1793.

**MISSION CONCEPCION LA PURISSIMA DE ACUNA.**—*Immaculate Concepcion de Acuna*,—from Juan de Acuna, Marquis of Casa Fuerta, Viceroy in 1722; this, in a tolerably good state of preservation, is situated on the left bank of the river about two miles below the city. The foundation stone was laid March 5th, 1731, by Captain Perez and Father Bergara; it was never very prosperous, and had been discontinued as a mission parish when visited by Pike in 1807.

**ESPADA**—*San Francisco de La Espada*.—Mission of

Saint Francis of the sword—intimating that those who founded this establishment belonged to the church militant, who had to wield the literal, as well as the spiritual sword. It was first located on the Medina River, but owing to the frequent attacks of the Apaches, for greater security it was removed to the San Antonio. This was in 1731; it was completed in 1750. Portions of the walls and the sword-shaped tower are still standing.

GUADALUPE—*Victoria; Our Lady of*—in Victoria county, was probably projected by Ramon, in 1714. Its object was to found a Presidio, and open ditches for the irrigation of the river valley. Extensive ruins still remain in what is called Mission Valley.

LA BAHIA—*Del Espiritu Santo*—(Mission of the bay of the Holy Spirit) at Goliad, was commenced about the year 1718, though the place was visited by De Leon in 1687. Domingo Teran, who founded so many of the Texas missions, projected this. Bishop Odin is authority for the statement that the mission on the east side of the river, and since known as Aranama, was the original Espiritu Santo Mission, while that on the west side was called La Bahia. The former was for the Aranama Indians, while the latter was for the Caranchuas. The old Goliad Mission Church is still used.

LA TRINIDAD.—It is supposed that this mission was projected, and the foundation laid, in 1691, by Governor Teran and the party of monks that entered the country with him that year. This mission possibly gave its name to the Trinity River. It was situated a little below the town of Alabama. Owing to trouble with the Indians and the overflow of the river, the establishment was soon abandoned for one near Nacogdoches.

LORETTO, *Our Lady Of*.—A mission by this name was projected by Ramon, upon the San Bernardo (Matagorda) Bay, about 1721. The enterprise was soon abandoned.

**NACOGDOCHES**—*Our Lady of*.—The foundation of this mission was laid by Ramon, July 9, 1716, but in consequence of the disturbances between the French and Spanish, the Indians were, in 1772, transferred to San Antonio. A small garrison was, however, generally kept at the place, to watch the movements of the French at Natchitoches. In 1778, was laid the foundation of a stone house, for the garrison, which still stands.

**ORQUIZACCO**—*Our Lady of*.—was established for the benefit of a small tribe of Indians of that name, on the San Jacinto river; founded in 1715 or 1716, and abandoned in 1772, and the Indians removed to San Antonio.

**REFUGIO**—*Our Lady of*.—was founded in the town of the same name, in 1790 or 1791. This was the last establishment of the kind undertaken by the Franciscans in Texas.

**ROSARIO**—About 1730, a mission of this name was started a few miles from Goliad.

**SAN FERNANDES**.—Was not exactly a mission, but a parish church built in San Antonio, or San Fernandes, in 1732. In 1868 it was rebuilt as a cathedral; a portion of the old walls in the rear of the new building forms the sacristy of the present church, occupied by the Spanish-speaking population of San Antonio.

**SAN JOSE DE AGUAYO**.—From Aguayo, governor of Texas in 1720. This, on the right bank of the river about four miles below San Antonio, was commenced in 1718 and completed in 1771; it was the most elegant and beautiful of all the Texas Missions. A celebrated artist by the name of Huicar was sent out from Spain, who spent years in carving the statues and other ornamental work of this building. About ten years ago the dome and portions of the arched roof fell in; vandal hands have defaced the statue of the Virgin Mother and Child, and

that of Saint Gregory and other figures, and beautifully carved work in the front. After the secularization of the Texas Missions in 1703, by Pedro de Nava, this mission was discontinued and the land distributed to the Indians. The next year there were reported, Christian Indians, men 27, women 26, boys 11, girls 14, widows 6, total 84; Pagans, men 6, women 5, 1 boy and 3 girls, total 15; in all 99. This church was visited by Lieutenant Pike in 1807; at that time it had hardly enough Indians to perform household duties. It soon afterwards ceased to be occupied as a place of worship. Standing in solitary grandeur upon a beautiful plateau, it is annually visited by thousands who can but admire this monument of the zeal and enterprise of the Franciscan fathers of the last century.

**SAN JUAN CAPISTRAN.**—Is about six miles below San Antonio, on the east side of the river. It was established in 1731, but was never very prosperous and is now in ruins. The ruins, however, speak volumes for the skill of the architect who designed and the laborers who erected the edifice.

**SAN SABA.**—This mission, located in Menard county, on the river to which it gave its name, was founded in 1734, by a company of fathers from Santa Fe. The mission was doing well, and the fathers were encouraged to hope for the speedy Christianization of the numerous and war-like tribes of Comanches, who maintained friendly relations with the ecclesiastics. But in 1752, a silver mine, called *Las Almagres*, was discovered in the neighborhood of the fort. This drew to the place a number of miners and adventurers, some of whom quarreled with the Indians, and at a time when the few soldiers were absent from the fort. The exasperated savages fell upon the defenseless missionaries and put

them all to death, not sparing even the domestics. This was a sad blow and an ungrateful return for the self-sacrificing labors of the fathers.

Besides the establishments we have mentioned, other ruins are found in various parts of the State; but even the names of these old missions are now unknown. At the head of a canon of the Nueces river in Edwards county, thirty-five miles from Uvalde, there is a large stone building, with many evidences of its having been once occupied. The missionaries probably shared the same fate with their brethren at San Saba. This was in the territory occupied by the Apaches. Eight miles below these old ruins, in the valley of the Nueces, in Uvalde county, there is another old establishment in ruins, and others in different places; some of which had been so far completed as to give evidence of having been occupied, while others were destroyed by the Indians before completion.

In 1794, Don Pedro de Nava, then Governor of Texas, secularized all the missions in the province, thus transferring their control from the monastic orders to the secular clergy.

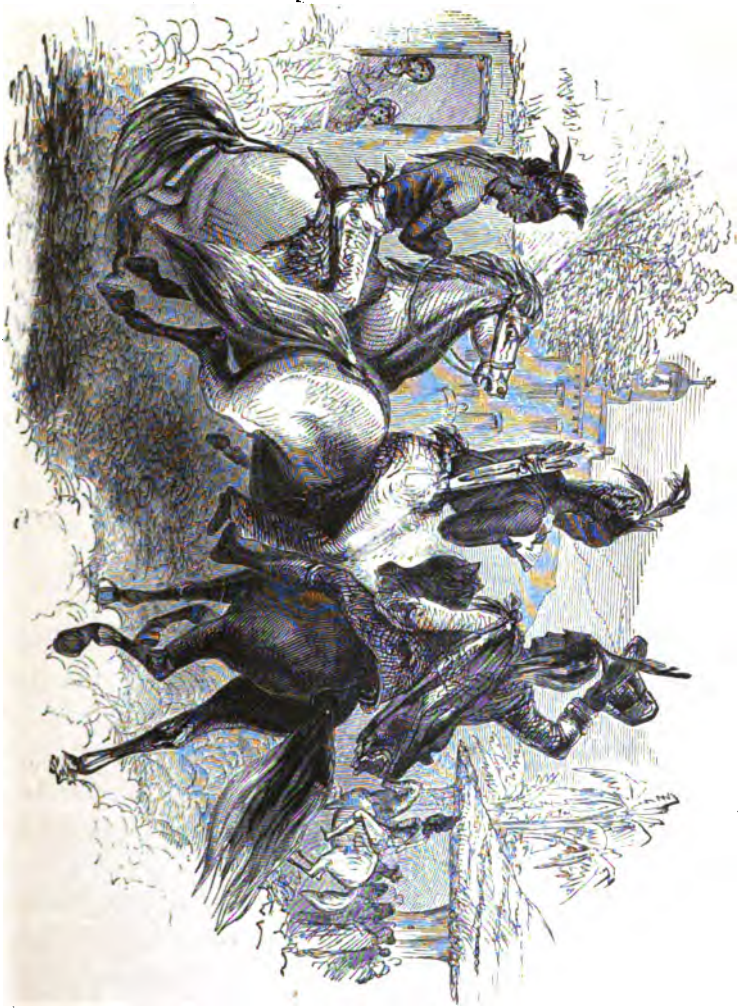
## CHAPTER IV.

COLONISTS FROM THE CANARY ISLANDS ARRIVE AT SAN ANTONIO—TEXAS AT THE OPENING OF THE NINETEENTH CENTURY—NOLAN'S EXPEDITION—DIFFICULTIES BETWEEN SPAIN AND THE UNITED STATES—WAR IMMINENT—AVERTED BY MYSTERIOUS DIPLOMACY.

THE first attempt to introduce colonists into Texas was made by the Marquis of Casa Fuerta. Before he became viceroy, he had visited Texas and formed a high opinion of the capabilities of the country. Mainly through his influence the king was induced to defray, from the royal treasury, the expense of transporting families to the new settlement on the San Antonio river. If Mr. Kennedy is correct in his statement, these were pretty expensive colonists. It took \$72,000 to bring sixteen families from the Canary Islands to Texas. Among the families who then came were those of Rodrigues, Manchaca, Atoche, Delgado, Arocha, Travyosa, Cavalla, Mueto and Flores. The Navarros were from Corsica; Veramendis and probably the Seguins and La Garzas, from Mexico. The village took the name of San Fernandes, from Ferdinand III of Spain.

OPENING OF THE NINETEENTH CENTURY.—As we have seen, the zealous Franciscans were heroically engaged in the good work of Christianizing the Indians. The large number of magnificent buildings and ruins, still scattered through Texas, are perpetual monuments of their zeal and fidelity. But they were not remarkably successful. The Indians often proved intractable; and internecine

INDIAN HORSEMEN.



the province. But he passed higher up the country, and entered by way of Red River. He had with him fourteen Americans, five Spaniards and one negro servant (some accounts say two). When this party arrived in the neighborhood of the Tehuacana Hills, in what is now Limestone county, they halted and erected a block-house, and built pens, and prepared to capture mustangs.

Musquis, the Spanish commander at Nacogdoches, ordered to capture Nolan's party, left his post on the 4th of March, 1801, with sixty-eight regular soldiers, and thirty-two volunteers. He crossed the Trinity on the 11th, and guided by Indian spies, reached the neighborhood of Nolan's camp on the 20th. He had a small cannon, which was so planted as to bear directly upon the block-house. Two of the Mexicans in Nolan's ranks deserted to the enemy, one of them carrying off Nolan's rifle. Before this, two of the Americans having learned that Nolan intended to make war upon the Spaniards, abandoned the party and reported Nolan's design to the authorities at Nacogdoches. A short conference was held between the two commanders, when Nolan retired to his block house and prepared to fight. He was killed by the first discharge of the enemy's cannon. Bean succeeded to the command, and kept up the fight for several hours. Finally, the little party surrendered as prisoners of war, under the promise of good treatment, and of being liberated at Nacogdoches and sent to the United States. Instead of being released and sent home from Nacogdoches, they were put in irons and sent to San Antonio, the first Americans seen in that city. From the latter city they were marched across the Rio Grande, and kept in prison many weary years. Three made their escape; one died in prison, and after they had been six years prisoners, an order came from the King of Spain, to have



every fifth man hung. The order was, to execute only those taken in arms against the royal authority. Three of the men were not in the house during the fight. There were but nine left, and the humane judge decided that only one should be executed. The nine agreed to throw dice, the one throwing the lowest number to be the victim. The lot fell on Ephraim Blackburn, who threw but four, and he was immediately executed. The survivors were sentenced to ten years hard labor. Bean was the only one who ever revisited his native land. (See Bean).

Among the Spaniards there was a growing hostility exhibited towards the Americans. The policy of their government was exclusive. Philip II. had declared that nothing but Spanish commerce should float on the Gulf of Mexico, and on the land absolute non-intercourse was proclaimed. Salcedo, the commander at Monterey, said if "he had the power he would stop even the birds from flying across the Sabine." By a tacit understanding, the Aroyo Hondo, a tributary of Red River about half way from the Sabine to Natchitoches, had been recognized as the boundary between the Spanish and French possessions, though the old Spanish maps extend their territory to the Calcasieu River. Between the United States and Spain there were other unsettled questions besides those relating to boundaries. After the purchase of Louisiana, the former revived the claim which France had asserted to Texas.

We need not enumerate the other irritating, unsettled questions. In his message, at the opening of Congress, in December, 1806, President Jefferson said: "With Spain our negotiations for a settlement of difficulties have not had a satisfactory issue." As a precautionary measure, Mr. Jefferson had ordered Major Porter, of the

army, to take possession of the old French post at Natchitoches. Soon afterward the Spaniards threw a force across the Sabine into the old Spanish post and mission of Adaes. About the same time the Spaniards began concentrating troops on the right bank of the Sabine. Early in the spring the garrison at Natchitoches was reinforced by the arrival of Lieutenant Kingsbury from Fort Adams, with four field pieces, and three companies of infantry. Early in June, Generals Herrera and Cordero, with twelve hundred veteran Spanish soldiers, reached Nacogdoches, whereupon Governor Claiborn called out the militia of Louisiana, and General Wilkinson hastened towards the Sabine with all the available forces from New Orleans. Negotiations had failed; the two powerful nations were concentrating their armies prepared to fight; the commanders were defiant, and both nations were waiting in anxious solicitude for the commencement of hostilities.

And now occurred, on the banks of the Sabine, without the interposition of any civilian, one of the most important and most mysterious diplomatic adjustments that this continent has witnessed. Herrera and Wilkinson met in secret council. It was conjectured, apparently, not without reason, that Wilkinson was cognizant of the movements of Aaron Burr; further that he had promised Burr his aid. Two secret messengers of Burr were said to be in Wilkinson's headquarters. The two generals met, and instead of provoking each other to battle, entered into the treaty of "the neutral ground." They agreed that a narrow strip of country between the Arroyo Hondo and the Sabine should be respected as "neutral" and occupied by neither government until a definite treaty fixed, permanently, the boundary between the two nations. The next morning the following order was issued by Wilkinson:

“ MORNING ORDER, EAST BANK OF SABINE, }  
 November 6th, 1806. }

“ His excellency, General Herrera, the military chief immediately opposed to this corps, having agreed to withdraw his troops to Nacogdoches, and to prohibit their re-crossing the Sabine River pending the negotiations between the United States and Spain, the objects of this expedition are accomplished, and the camp will be, of course, evacuated to-morrow or next day, and Colonel Cushing will lead the troops to Natchitoches.

“ Signed,

WALTER BURLING, *Aid-de-Camp.*”

This sudden termination of the campaign was not satisfactory to the American soldiers. There was a suspicion that General Wilkinson had acted dishonestly, in reference to the project of Burr. “ It was impossible,” says Monette, “ for him to divest himself of the suspicion that settled over him that he had extorted money from the Spanish Governor by exciting his fears as to the powerful invasion contemplated by Burr, and which could be arrested only by the most energetic intervention of the American commander-in-chief, with the whole of the army and means at his disposal. His troops retired indignantly from the Sabine, many of them fully convinced that they had been robbed of their anticipated laurels by the cupidity of their commander, who had entered into dishonorable negotiations, and that money, and not the sword, had terminated the campaign.”

It was boldly asserted at the time, and has been often repeated, though an investigation failed to verify the assertion, that Herrera agreed to give Wilkinson \$300,000 for his influence in defeating the scheme of Burr; and further that \$120,000 was paid at the time, having been

transported from San Antonio on mules. Ten days later, Burling was dispatched to Mexico on a secret mission; rumor said it was to receive the other \$180,000.

The scenes which followed the retreat from the Sabine, when viewed from our present stand-point, have a strangely ludicrous aspect. The reader will please remember that, at this time, about the only force under the control of Burr was a few score of men and boys encamped on Blennerhassett's Island, near Parkersburg, West Virginia; and that the arms of this company consisted, mostly in implements of husbandry; and that they were preparing to descend the river in flat boats, and open a new plantation for Burr and his unsuspecting, but dishonored friend, Blennerhassett, on the lands purchased from Baron de Bastrop by Burr.

On arriving at New Orleans, Wilkinson commenced the most vigorous preparations for defending the city against Burr. He prepared a flotilla to meet the flat-boats of the latter up near Vicksburg; and dispatched Lieutenant Swan to Jamaica to detach the commanders of the British navy at that station from the Burr movement. He put the forts near New Orleans in a thorough state of defence, and supplied them with a great quantity of ammunition and munitions of war. He called out the militia of Louisiana and Mississippi; and proclaimed martial law. He arrested and held in military custody every one suspected of sympathy with Burr; and especially every stranger from *Ohio*, where Burr was supposed to have unbounded influence. The whole country was patrolled by Wilkinson's guards, and every one who could not give a satisfactory account of himself was thrust into prison. A true and life-like description of these scenes must be reserved for the pen of some future Cervantes. Albeit, Wilkinson was not another knight of *La Mancha*. He

had been in actual war; had proved himself a brave and gallant soldier; nor was he carried away with groundless fears. His views were clear, and his mind well-poised. All this bluster was not to defeat Burr; but to affect De Nava at Monterey and his royal master in the halls of the Montezumas. It was useless. The viceroy refused to listen to Burling, and referred him, for the payment of the money, to the intendant at Vera Cruz, for which place he ordered him immediately to depart. Upon his arrival there, the intendant refused to furnish him with anything but a guard, and ordered him to take passage immediately for New Orleans. The arrest of Burr, *and the return of Burling*, produced a wonderfully tranquilizing effect, not only upon the commander, but also upon the New Orleans public. (See Burr, Wilkinson and Herrera, in biography.)

## CHAPTER V.

**MAGEE'S EXPEDITION—BERNARDO GUTIERRES—MARCH TO GOLIAD—DEATH OF  
MAGEE—DESPERATE FIGHTING—THE VICTORIOUS REPUBLICANS, ON THE  
WAY TO SAN ANTONIO, GAIN A SPLENDID VICTORY AT THE ROSILLO CREEK  
—SHAMEFUL MASSACRE OF SPANISH OFFICERS—BATTLE OF ALASAN—  
REPUBLICANS DEFEATED AT THE BATTLE OF MEDINA—WHEN THE ROYAL-  
ISTS AVENGE THE DEATH OF THEIR BROTHER OFFICERS.**

THE "neutral ground" became the favorite resort of a band of lawless freebooters, who lived by depredating upon caravans. It was an important part of the duty of the soldiers stationed at Natchitoches to protect travellers and traders in passing through this dangerous territory. Lieutenant Augustus W. Magee, a graduate of West Point, was one of the officers employed in this work. At this time, the Republicans in Mexico had been defeated and many of them driven into exile. Bernardo Gutierrez, who had been engaged with Hidalgo in the revolutionary movements in Mexico, had taken refuge at Natchitoches. In long interviews between Magee and Gutierrez, the former conceived the idea of reviving the project of Burr; rescuing Texas from Spanish domination, and organizing a republic. He enlisted a number of the leading "heroes" of the neutral ground, who, with their followers, were ready for any enterprise that promised excitement and booty. With the assistance of John M'Farland and Samuel Davenport, who had been Indian agents, an alliance was formed with some of the Indian tribes in the neighborhood. Bernardo secured the co-



**CYPRESS CREEK, NEWTON COUNTY.**





operation of the Spanish Republicans in the East. A considerable force was thus assembled, ready to enter the province. As they confidently expected the assistance of the Mexicans in the West, it was thought best to give Bernardo the nominal command, though all recognized Magee as the real leader. The staff officers were Kemper, Perry, Ross, Slocum and Dr. Forsyth. The captains were, Gaines, Luckett, Orr, M'Kim, Taylor, etc. There was, at that time, a strong prejudice against the native Spaniards, hitherto the governing class. These were called, in derision, "Gachupins." One of the rallying cries of the newly-organized party was, "Death to the Gachupins!" They assumed the name of "The Republican Army of the North."

About the middle of June, Bernardo, with the advance party, numbering 158 men, crossed the Sabine, and had a skirmish with the Spanish guard, near the bank of the river. Two of the Republicans were killed, and three wounded; but the Spaniards were driven in disorder to Nacogdoches, and evacuated that place on the arrival of Gutierrez.

In the meantime, Magee had resigned his commission in the U. S. Army, visited New Orleans, and, with the help of Davenport, succeeded in collecting a good supply of munitions of war. To secure enlistments, each soldier was promised \$40 per month, and a league of land.

There is a great discrepancy in statements as to the number in the Republican army when it was reorganized on the banks of the Trinity river. Yoakum, following M'Kim, makes the number nearly eight hundred; while M'Lean, who was in the expedition, fixes the number at three hundred. We have chosen the smaller as the more probable number. At the Trinity, the party was reinforced by two additional companies, under Captains

Scott and M'Farland. When they took up the line of march for the West, their supplies were "ten or twelve beeves, and fifteen mules, loaded with flour and military stores."

They crossed the Brazos in October, and arrived at Goliad on the 7th of November. The Mexican garrison, instead of offering resistance, joined the Republican ranks. A few days later, Governor Salcedo and General Herrera arrived with troops from San Antonio. Herrera had a small park of artillery, and having placed his guns in position, on the 20th of November made a furious assault upon the town. This was gallantly met by the Republicans. After some further unsuccessful attempts to take the place by assault, the Spaniards contented themselves with merely keeping up the siege. The Republicans occasionally sallied out for provisions. In one of these was fought the battle of the White Cow, as they were after a cow of that color for food. In one of these skirmishes the Republicans lost a few of their horses. They had not calculated on the possibility of being closely confined in a little fort, and a number of them, including Captains Davenport and Scott, resigned and returned to their homes on the Sabine. Most of the new Spanish recruits deserted, and about the first of February, 1813, Magee died of consumption.

After the death of Magee, Samuel Kemper was elected commander of the Americans. Bernardo still held the nominal command of the whole. On the 10th of February, the Spanish made another desperate attack upon the beleaguered garrison; and at one time succeeded in getting into the town. But the Republicans had possession of the old Mission. From this they dashed out, and in a hand-to-hand fight drove the Royalists from the place. In this fight, the Republicans had eight killed

and thirty wounded. The Spaniards lost 100 killed. (This number is given in the account of Col. M'Lean, late of San Antonio, who was in the fight. Yoakum places the loss of the Spaniards at 200).

After this failure, the Spaniards raised the siege and retired to San Antonio. They were soon followed by the exultant Republicans. This was on the 16th of March. Their force now consisted of 270 Americans, 200 Mexicans and 30 Coshattie Indians. On the route they were reinforced by Captain M'Farland with 300 Lipan and Tonkawa Indians. (These are the figures given by Hall and M'Lean; Yoakum, following M'Kim, makes the number of Americans 800. The probability is, that men were constantly arriving and departing, and the numbers were never very accurately known).

Salcedo and Herrera prepared to meet the foe outside of the city. They sent out all of their available force to a thicket on the Rosillo creek, nine miles below the town. They had a park of artillery, but the Republicans, anticipating an attack, marched in the order of battle, and when the Royalists opened fire upon them, returned it so effectually, and charged so vigorously upon the thicket, that the Spaniards soon left the field and retreated in disorder to the city. It is said the officer in immediate command was so mortified that he killed himself rather than return in disgrace. In history this is known as the battle of Rosalis, or Rosalio, and there is great confusion among writers as to the place and the particulars of the fight. The time, too, ranges from the 1st of March to the 4th of April; and as to numbers engaged, the Spaniards are variously estimated at from 1500 to 2500, while the number of the Republicans ranges from 500 to 1200.

On the 2d of April, according to Spanish authority, the

Republicans entered this city. Seventeen prisoners, found in the Alamo, were released, who at once joined the ranks of their deliverers. The public stores, arms, provisions and military chest, furnished a grateful supply to the needy adventurers in the Republican army. Each soldier, besides his wages, received a gratuity of fifteen dollars, a suit of clothes, and an order for two horses or mules out of the public *caballada*. The Indians were supplied with two dollars worth of vermilion, together with presents to the value of one hundred and thirty dollars, and sent away rejoicing. The Mexican soldiers were paroled, and the officers reserved for a sad and horrible fate.

After arriving in San Antonio, Gutierrez was among his own countrymen, and began to exercise a real as well as a nominal authority. He organized a governing junta composed of some of the leading Republicans in the city. Captain Delgado, to avenge the death of his father, induced the junta to pass a secret decree for the execution, by drum-head court martial of all the Spanish officers held as prisoners of war. He well knew the Americans would never sanction such an act of barbarity, and the prisoners were marched out of the city under pretence of sending them to the coast to be forwarded to New Orleans. When near the Rosillo battle ground, by order of Delgado, who had them in charge, they were halted, stripped and their throats cut. The late Col. J. A. Navarro gives the following account of this slaughter: "Some of the assassins, (Delgado's company), with brutal irony, whetted their knives upon the soles of their shoes in the presence of their victims. The day following the assassination, I myself saw this band of murderers, led by their commander, Antonio Delgado, halt in front of the government buildings; I myself heard them inform

Bernardo Gutierrez that the fourteen victims had been put to death. The following list comprises the victims: *Spaniards*—Manuel de Salcedo, Governor; Simon de Herrera, Governor of New Leon; Geronimo Herrera, Lieutenant Colonel; Juan de Echeverria, Captain; Jose Groscochia, Captain; Francisco Pereira, Captain; Jose Mateos, Captain; Juan Ignatio Arambido, Captain; Gregorio Amado, Lieutenant; Antonio Lopez, citizen. *Mexicans*—Miguel de Areos, Captain; Louis, his son, Lieutenant; Francisco, his son, Ensign; Juan Caso, Lieutenant.”

The execution of these prisoners of war was so displeasing to the Americans that Kemper, Ross, Hall and a number of others left in disgust and returned to the United States. Those who remained elected Perry as their commander. But these soldiers, intoxicated with their success, indulged in various unsoldierly excesses in the city, but they were not long permitted to remain idle.

Early in June another Spanish army appeared in the neighborhood, under the command of Don y Elisondo. So unexpected was the approach of this new army, that a company of Republicans, out grazing their horses, were captured; and Elisondo might then have marched without opposition into the city, but he halted on the heights of the Alasan and commenced throwing up rude breast-works. He sent in a friendly message to the citizens, advising them to surrender to the royal arms. As an inducement to this, he proposed to parol all the Americans, and permit them to depart to their homes. He probably thought this the safest way to dispose of men who, in battle, might prove dangerous foes. But these brave men had no idea of leaving the city as paroled prisoners without a fight. The Mexicans, who at first were disposed to submit to Elisondo, changed their minds when he demanded

seventeen of the leading citizens as prisoners. They probably conjectured that these men were to be put to death to avenge the murder of Herrera and his companions. While they amused Elisondo with the hopes of a bloodless triumph, they rallied their disorganized bands, and, under the leadership of Gutierrez, Perry and Manchaca, silently, on the night of June 4th, (McLean says June 8th,) marched out to attack the unsuspecting Spaniards. It was near daybreak when they assaulted Elisondo's fortifications. They succeeded in entering his works, and tore down the Spanish flag, and unfurled their own tri-color in its place. The Spaniards rallied and retook the breast-works. For four hours the battle raged with great fury, but finally the Royalists were driven from the field with a loss of about three hundred killed and as many wounded. The Republicans had five killed and thirty wounded.

After this fight Gutierrez left San Antonio and retired with his family to the Sabine. He was succeeded in the command by the famous General Toledo. Toledo re-organized the civil administration, and did all in his power to reduce the army to a state of discipline, no easy task with such a class of adventurers. He well knew that the Royalists would not surrender a city of such importance as San Antonio without another effort for its recovery.

The next general sent to capture the city was Arredondo, commander of the eastern internal provinces at Monterey. The new commander, with his army of about four thousand men, halted on the Medina river, southwest of the city, and threw up fortifications. He arranged them in the shape of a horizontal  $\triangleright$ , with the open end towards the city. To meet this force Perry had about three hundred Americans, and Toledo and Man-

chaca about six hundred Mexicans. On the march to the battle-field, Perry, according to McLean, was joined by his old commander, Kemper, in company with Judge Bullock and six or eight other Americans. The battle was fought August 18th. The Republicans were rushing forward with great impetuosity, when Toledo saw that they were entering into the trap set by Arredondo, and ordered a halt. The men, not understanding the reason for the order, continued to press on. They displayed a heroic courage, and would probably have won the day, but in the midst of the fight, Musquis, one of the captains in their ranks, deserted with his whole company to the enemy. Thus deserted and betrayed, these brave men were finally thrown into disorder and compelled to retreat. The retreat soon became a rout. The fugitives fled towards the Sabine, and were hotly pursued by their relentless foes. The pursuing party was cavalry, under the command of Elisondo, still chafing under his recent defeat. All who fell into his hands were incontinently butchered. Seventy or eighty of these unfortunate men were overtaken at the Spanish Bluff, on the Trinity River. They were marched to an island of timber, at the junction of the San Antonio and La Bahia roads, where a deep trench was dug for a grave, across which a piece of timber was placed. After tying the prisoners, ten at a time, they were placed on this piece of timber and shot, their bodies falling into the trench. Among the victims of this butchery were Colonel Manchaca and Captain Antonio Delgado.

“Two days after the battle,” says Mr. Yoakum, “Gen-Arredondo, having his wagon loaded with wounded and dying, marched in triumph into San Antonio. Here commenced a scene of barbarity which that place had never before witnessed. Seven hundred of the peaceable

citizens were seized and imprisoned. Three hundred of them were confined during the night of the 20th of August in one house, and during the night eighteen of them died of suffocation. From day to day others were shot without any form of trial. The cruelty of the Spanish commander went even further. He had a prison for females. It was tauntingly called the *Quinta*. Here were imprisoned five hundred of the wives, daughters and other female relatives of the patriots; and for being such, they were compelled daily to convert twenty-four bushels of Indian corn into the Mexican cakes called *tortillas*, for Arredondo's army. After thus having satisfied his appetite for blood and revenge, the Royalist commander found an opportunity, about the 1st of September, to collect and bury the bones of Salcedo and his staff. By this time Elisondo had returned from the Trinity, driving before him on foot the widows and orphans of those he had there slain. The property of the patriots was all confiscated."





**TRINITY RIVER, SCENE NEAR LIBERTY.**



## CHAPTER VI.

THE REPUBLICANS AT GALVESTON—AURY, PERRY, MINA—EXPEDITION TO SOTO LA MARINA—LAFITTE, THE PIRATE—LONG'S EXPEDITION—DISPERSED AND DRIVEN FROM EAST TEXAS, LONG RALLIES A SECOND TIME AT GALVESTON—TAKES GOLIAD—IS SENT BY THE SPANISH REPUBLICANS TO THE CITY OF MEXICO WHERE HE IS MYSTERIOUSLY MURDERED—MRS. LONG HEROICALLY AWAITS HIS RETURN—CONCLUSION OF THE PERIOD.\*

THOUGH the Republicans had been totally defeated in Texas, a new organization, under Morelos, had taken place in Mexico. One of the measures adopted by the new party included the occupancy of the coast of Texas; one of the most important points on which was the island and harbor of Galveston. Here a glance at the earlier history of this locality may not be amiss.

We think it more than probable that La Salle, in hunting for the mouth of the Mississippi River, visited Galveston in 1685-6.

It is likely that the next visitant to the island were the irregular seamen, the buccaneers and fillibusters, who, in the latter part of the eighteenth and the beginning of the nineteenth centuries, preyed upon Spanish commerce in the Gulf of Mexico.†

\* Sketches of most of the men mentioned in this chapter will be found in their appropriate place in our Biographical section.

† Buccaneer was derived from bucan, dried meat, as these men lived principally upon dried meat and fish. In the map of Joutel there is a place on the Lavaca River, marked as Bucan, because there the French killed buffaloes and dried the flesh. As to the word fillibuster, DeQuincy says: "This word is constantly spelt by our own and the American journals as fillibustiers or fillibusteros; but the word of nearly two centuries back, among the old original race of sea robbers, French and English, that made irregular war upon the Spanish shipping and maritime towns, was *fibustier*."

Galveston afforded a good harbor and a safe retreat to this class of famous freebooters, and was with them a favorite place of resort.

On old maps the island has various names. On the map in the possession of the Galveston Historical Society, it is called San Louis, the name said to have been given by La Salle. On that map, Matagorda Peninsula is marked as Isle de Calabras—Snake Island—a name often applied in other maps to Galveston. On another old map the eastern end of the island is called Punta de Calabras, from its fancied resemblance to the head of a snake. The name by which the island is now called was from the Count de Galves, a governor of Louisiana under Spanish rule, and afterwards Viceroy of Mexico. While the Spaniards never conceded that the French had any claim to Galveston, yet when Louisiana was under Spanish dominion, Galveston was reckoned a part of Louisiana. It was during this period that we find the present name first used. Gayarre, in his history of Louisiana, in giving the population of the different parishes for the year 1788, gives the population of Galveston as 268.

The first attempt to occupy the island by any recognized government was by the struggling Republicans of Mexico during the period of her Revolution. Don Jose Manuel Herrera was the minister of the Mexican patriots to the United States. He spent most of his time in New Orleans, where he became thoroughly informed of the advantages of Galveston as a naval station for the Republicans, and he took measures to occupy it. He sailed to the island on the 1st of September, 1816, taking with him Commodore Louis de Aury with a squadron of twelve or fifteen small vessels. Aury was of French origin, but had been an officer in the navy of New Granada, stationed at Carthagena. He had the reputation of a brave, skillful and

humane officer. On the 12th of September a meeting was held on the island, and a government organized. Aury was chosen civil and military governor of Texas and Galveston island. He took the oath of fidelity to the Republic of Mexico; the several branches of public administration were arranged; the Republican flag raised, and Galveston declared a port of entry of the Mexican Republic. The vessels of Aury were at once dispatched to prey upon Spanish commerce; and they were so successful that they soon almost banished the Spanish flag from that Gulf which Philip II. had threatened to convert into a Spanish lake.

On the 24th of November, the party on the island was reinforced by the arrival of Xavier Mina, with about 200 men and a few ships. Mina was a native of Navarre. In 1808 he abandoned his studies in the University of Saragossa, and became a guerrilla chieftain against the French. He won distinction, and acquired the title of Captain General of Navarre and Upper Arragon. Having been captured and imprisoned, he succeeded in making his escape, and sought refuge in England. He found friends among some of the English nobility, and a special friend in Gen. Scott, of the United States army, then in London. He at first intended to attempt the conquest of Florida, in conjunction with Toledo; but Toledo having deserted to the Spaniards, Mina sailed for Galveston, intending from this point to make a descent upon the coast of Mexico. Mina threw up a mud fort west of the point occupied by Aury, and active preparations were made for his contemplated expedition to Mexico.

While Aury and Mina were occupying the island, Perry had taken possession of Bolivar Point with about 100 men. That enterprising officer, after escaping from the disastrous battle of Medina, in 1813, had returned to

Louisiana, and at once commenced his preparations for another campaign against Mexico. While several of his associates were indicted in the United States District Court for a violation of the neutrality laws, Perry escaped, by fixing his encampment west of the Sabine.

This comparatively large number of men was well supplied with provisions and other necessaries by the captures of Aury's privateers. Avowedly, they only depredated upon Spanish commerce; but, unfortunately, Aury had taken into his service some men of desperate character, who made captures of any vessels found in the Gulf. Among the captures were a number of slaves; and the slaves were smuggled into Louisiana, in violation of the laws of the United States, which denounced the slave-trade as piracy. This induced the Collector of Customs of New Orleans to write to Mr. Crawford, the Secretary of the Treasury, at Washington, as follows: "I deem it my duty to state that the most shameful violations of the slave act, as well as our own revenue laws, continue to be practiced with impunity by a motley mixture of freebooters and smugglers at Galveston, under the Mexican flag, being, in fact, the re-establishment of the Barrataria band, somewhat more out of the reach of justice. The establishment was recently made there by a Commodore Aury, with a few small schooners from Aux Cayes, manned in a great measure with refugees from Barrataria, and mulattoes." Another letter to the Treasury Department says of Aury that "his principal dependence for men was upon one hundred and thirty brigand negroes, a set of desperate and bloody dogs." After the fall of Napoleon, Generals Lalleman and Ricaud of his staff, with about one hundred officers, entered Texas, ascended the Trinity River and erected a fort, intending to cultivate the vine. Not succeeding to their

satisfaction, some of these officers enlisted in the service of Aury. Notwithstanding the efforts of the New Orleans custom officers to break up the slave trade at Galveston, it was still carried on, as the ships of Aury often captured slavers. The customary price of the negroes was one dollar per pound. Among the most noted of the slave traders, were the three brothers by the name of Bowie, John J., Rezin, and James, the hero of the Alamo. In 1818-19, the latter was conveying a lot of seventy negroes up to Alexandria when they made their escape. He followed them to the Colorado River, but was unable to re-capture them. They probably fell in with the Indians and found protection. And this may account for the fact that in Western Texas an Indian is occasionally found of decided African features and color. Debow's Review is authority for the statement that the three Bowies made \$65,000 in their speculations in negroes.

The forces at Galveston consisted of those of Aury, who enjoyed the title of civil and military Governor, with between three hundred and four hundred men; Mina with two hundred more, and Perry with about one hundred on Bolivar Point. Each commander was independent, and somewhat jealous of the others. Perry and Mina wished to invade Mexico; but to this Aury objected, being content to maintain himself at Galveston. In March, 1817, one of the privateers brought word of the defenseless condition of the town of Soto La Marina, about sixty miles up the Santander river, and Aury consented to assist in its capture. The expedition sailed from Galveston on the 15th of April; Yoakum says on the 6th. The expedition turned out disastrously. After landing and taking possession of the town, the three commanders disagreed, and in disgust, Aury, with the boats, sailed for the Texas coast. Finding Galveston Island

occupied by Lafitte, he landed at Matagorda, but soon afterward abandoned the Texas coast. Perry, believing the force left too small to effect anything, with about fifty companions, started back to Texas by land, a distance of five hundred miles through an enemy's country. He reached Goliad in safety and might have passed on into the United States, but he determined to capture the small garrison at that place. While negotiating for the possession of the town, a troop of cavalry sent in pursuit by Arrendado arrived, and he was thus attacked in front and rear. After fighting until his men were all killed, Perry fell by his own hand; at least that is the common report. It is not impossible that he and a portion of his men shared the fate which befell the heroic Fannin at the same point, twenty years later.

Mina, after having been abandoned by his companions, gained some splendid victories. On the 8th of June he gained one at Valley de Mais. At Peotillos, on the 17th, he defeated an army of 1,700, but lost sixty of his own. On the 18th he captured a garrison of three hundred men at Real de Rinos. But his force was gradually wasted away by continual fighting, and the Republicans of the country, did not, as he expected, rally to his standard. He was finally overpowered at Venadito on the 27th of September, and shot at Remedios, by order of the Viceroy Apodaca, November 11, 1817.

When the expedition left for Soto La Marina, there were some thirty or forty persons left on the island. Some of these had formerly been associated with Lafitte. Six of the most influential of those remaining met on board the schooner "Carmalita," belonging to Bartholomew Lafou, late of New Orleans, and organized a government. L. Derieux was appointed Governor; John Ducoino, Judge of Admiralty; Richard Espaonol,



Notary Public and Secretary; A. Pirenneau, Major du Place, and Rousselin, Collector. Some others having arrived on the 20th, another meeting of about twenty persons was held on the schooner "Jupiter" for ratifying the new government. At this meeting Lafou was Secretary, and Jean Jannet was appointed Marine Commandant. This organization was professedly in the interest of the Republican party in Mexico. But unquestionably their main object was the plunder of Spanish commerce in the Gulf of Mexico.

It was probably as late as September, 1817, when Lafitte reached the island and assumed command. Jean Lafitte was a Frenchman by birth, the eldest of three brothers, who all became seafaring men. Visiting South America, he at Carthagena fitted out a privateer, and commenced his semi-piratical career. In a visit to Charleston, South Carolina, he became involved in a love affair, and had a quarrel with a rival, whom he killed in a duel. About the year 1811, he took possession of the island of Grande Terre, afterward Barrataria, on the coast of Louisiana. They so preyed upon commerce, and demoralized the trade of New Orleans, that the Governor of Louisiana ordered them to disperse. As they paid no attention to his order, Governor Claiborne offered a reward of \$500 for the head of Lafitte. Lafitte, not to be outdone in that species of generosity, returned the compliment by offering a reward of \$15,000 for the head of the Governor. The Barrataria establishment was broken up in June, 1814, by Commodore Patterson of the United States navy. During the war with Great Britain the British Government proffered Lafitte a commission as post captain in the British navy; but while the pirate chief had not decided what course to pursue, Bean landed at the island, having embarked in one of

Lafitte's vessels on the coast of Mexico. As Bean knew General Jackson well, Lafitte concluded to accompany the latter through the swamps to New Orleans, to Jackson's headquarters. By enlisting in Jackson's army, and fighting bravely in the great battle of January 8th, Lafitte won the confidence of Jackson, who secured for him a full pardon from President Madison. But at the close of the war he returned to his former haunts on the gulf, and re-commenced his piracies. When he arrived in Galveston he was in the prime of life, a well-formed and handsome man, about six feet and two inches in height, strongly built, with large hazel eyes, black hair, and generally wore a mustache, dressed in a green uniform and an otter-skin cap. He was kind to his men, but a born commander. To strangers visiting the island, he exhibited a princely hospitality. He at once rebuilt the village formerly occupied by Aury, and called it Campeachy. His own house was the most conspicuous in the village and was painted red. The village was towards the east end of the island; a location since known as Sacarac, from the timber landed there. The "Americans," says Littell's Living Age, "call timber ships, sacaraps."

Lafitte bore a commission from the Republican party in Mexico, as Governor of Texas; his men gave him the title of Lord of Galveston, where he exercised almost absolute authority. Among his more conspicuous lieutenants, Latham was an Englishman; Jim Campbell, Churchill, Franks, Roach, Lambert, Brown and Francis were Americans. The two last named were hung by Lafitte for depredating on American commerce. Marotte, Jean Batista, Rio-Martin, Pluche, Girol and Felix were Frenchmen, who had probably entered Texas with Lallemand. Some of the men had their wives, or females claimed as such; Lafitte had a Creole mistress, and there



**LAFITTE.**



were occasional balls and other festive scenes in which this mixed multitude participated. Lafitte's favorite ship was the "Pride," a foretopsail schooner, captured from the slavers. She mounted fourteen guns, and was always accompanied by two felluccas, and an armed boat, the Calebra. These buccaneers sometimes quarreled among themselves. On one occasion, Jim Campbell charged Marotte with concealing a box of gold watches taken in one of their prizes. When Lafitte was informed of the theft, he took up the quarrel, and when Marotte gave him an impertinent answer, a challenge passed between them. The two were preparing for a duel, when Marotte confessed the theft. Lafitte so far pardoned him as to spare his life, but expelled him from the island, thus illustrating the honor among that class of men. On another occasion, the crew of the "Pride" were preparing for a mutiny. Lafitte, who was surrounded with informers, was notified of the intended mutiny, and was so thoroughly prepared, that at the first sign of an outbreak, he killed five or six of the men, and reduced the others to subjection.

In 1819, James Gaines visited the island in the interest of General Long, in the hope of enlisting the co-operation of the pirate-chief in Long's expedition; but Lafitte, warned by the fate of Mina and Perry, while he expressed a sympathy with Long, did not join his enterprise. It was while Gaines was on the island that the battle of the "Three Trees" was fought. Some of Lafitte's men had taken forcible possession of a Caranchua squaw, and the Indians, for revenge, killed some of the buccaneers. It was said a party of 300 of them were encamped near the Three Trees. Lafitte marched against them with two pieces of artillery and 200 men. Fighting continued for two or three days, when the Indians, after suffering severe

loss, abandoned the island. While Gaines was enjoying the generous hospitality of the island chief, some rich Spanish prizes were brought into port, and the "doubloons were as plentiful as biscuits." As an illustration of how little was known of the location of Galveston island, we may state that Long had also dispatched Randal Jones to intercede with Lafitte. But Jones went *via* the Brazos River, supposing that the island was at the mouth of that stream. Jones was at the mouth of the Navasot, preparing to descend, when the party was attacked by the Mexicans. Lafitte's men, in spite of his remonstrances, depredated upon the commerce of the United States, and that government sent Lieutenant Kearney with the brig Enterprise, to break up the piratical establishment. Lafitte remonstrated; but when he found that Kearney was in earnest, he discharged most of his men; and taking Lieutenant Cochran and about sixty men on the Pride, he bade a final adieu to the coast. Lafitte died at Sisal, Yucatan, in 1824. Cochran afterwards entered the Mexican navy, and rose to the rank of Commodore.

LONG'S EXPEDITION.—Dr. James Long was a native of Tennessee; in 1812, was a surgeon in Jackson's army; after the close of the war, married Miss Jane Wilkinson, resigned his position in the army and became a planter. In 1819, he was active in getting up a public meeting in Natchez, for revolutionizing Texas and Americanizing the province, and subscribed liberally to the scheme. It was then expected that Gen. Adair, of Kentucky, would lead the expedition; but that gentleman declined, and Long was selected as commander. With seventy-five men, Long left Natchez, June 17th. Recruits continued to arrive, so that by the time he reached Nacogdoches, Long found himself at the head of about three hundred men. At that place he organized what he called a legis-

lative council, consisting of Horatio Bigelow, (who started a newspaper, the first in Texas), Hamlin Cook, Stephen Barker, Jno. Sibley, Samuel Davenport, John C. Burnett, J. Child, (afterward on the Supreme Bench in Mississippi), Bernardo Gutierrez, and Pedro Procillo. The independence of the country was proclaimed, and steps taken to survey and dispose of the public lands. During the month of July, Mrs. Long reached Nacogdoches, having left her two children with her sister, Mrs. Calvitt, at Alexandria, (the youngest child died soon after having been left). Mrs. Long traveled on horseback, in company with Randal Jones.

General Long, evidently, did not anticipate serious opposition on the part of the Spanish authorities. He wished to occupy a large scope of country, and hoped to establish an extensive and lucrative trade. With this view, he scattered his small force from Red river to Galveston bay, entirely too much for mutual support. On the 20th of July, Major Cook was sent to Pecan Point, to secure the co-operation of the citizens. Maj. Smith, who entered the country by water, was stationed with forty men at the Coshattie village, on the Trinity river. David Long, with another company, was sent to the Robinson crossing of the Trinity; Captain Johnson, to the falls of the Brazos, and Captain Walker to the mouth of the Navasoto river at Washington.

Long deemed it of great importance to secure the assistance of Lafitte, and sent first James Gaines to Galveston, and then started for the same place himself. When he reached the Coshattie village, he heard of the approach of the Spanish army, under Colonel Perez, and at once dispatched couriers to the various companies, to concentrate at that point. His wife also sent him word that, owing to the drunkenness of Major Cook, who had

returned from Pecan Point and assumed command, the soldiers at Nacogdoches were very much demoralized. It was now too late to remedy the blunder of scattering his small force. On the 11th of October, Captain Johnson was surprised at the falls of the Brazos, and himself and ten of his men captured. The Mexicans reached the mouth of the Navasoto on the 15th, when Walker, with his small company, hastily retreated towards the Coshattie village, leaving their baggage to the enemy. The fort on the Trinity was next attacked, and David Long, brother of the General, was killed. When news of these disasters reach Nacogdoches, a panic seized the population, and all fled towards the Sabine for safety. Long reached the place just after it had been evacuated. He had sent word to his wife to retire to the house of a mutual friend for safety. When the General reached the house he found it deserted. Fortunately, both himself and wife safely reached the American side of the Sabine. The party at the Coshattie village retreated down the Trinity in boats to Bolivar Point.

Long, undaunted in spirit, hastened through the swamps, recrossed the Sabine, and joined his few remaining followers at Bolivar Point. To secure assistance, in an open boat he made his way along the coast to New Orleans. There he met with encouragement from General Ripley and other old friends. He also met Pelacios and Milam, who were preparing for a descent upon Vera Cruz. Having secured some recruits and munitions of war, he returned to the Texas coast, reaching Galveston the very day that Lafitte, in his favorite ship, the *Pride*, sailed out of the harbor for the last time. Gen. Long's object was the occupancy of Texas, and the establishment of a government over the country. He did not contemplate an invasion of the country west of the Nueces, which was then the western boundary of the province.



Long's first object was the capture of Goliad, so that he could have some claim to the control of the country. During the summer of 1821, with fifty-two men, in an open boat of Captain Williams, and with two pirogues, he started down the coast, towards Goliad. \*

Long landed at Muskeet Point, and on approaching Goliad, the small garrison retired, and he took peaceable possession. In the meantime, Mexico had revolutionized and become Republican; and three days after Long took possession of the town, three hundred cavalry, belonging to the Republic of Mexico, appeared at the place. It seemed incongruous to fight, and Long was persuaded to lay down his arms, and enter into peaceable relations with the new comers. After being disarmed, Long's men were treated very much like prisoners of war. The General was sent forward, under a guard, to Laredo, where his soldiers, after a few weeks, joined him. At Monterey, they were kept eight months, when Long was again sent forward and his companions saw no more of him. After reaching the city of Mexico, at the solicitation of Joel R. Poinsett, American Minister, Long was liberated. A few days afterward, when stepping into an office to transact some business, he was shot dead by a soldier. The motive for this act of barbarity has never been disclosed. Some, without any sufficient apparent grounds, have surmised that Pelacios, dreading the influence of Long in Texas, where he was to be the Governor, had the brave General put out of the way. After Long had left his men, they were sent to Saltillo, where they were joined by Milam, who had been betrayed and arrested by Pelacios. When they reached the city of Mexico, they were first drafted

\*Yoakum gives Long a much larger force; but the numbers here put down were furnished by John M'Henry, one of the party, who still lives in Victoria county.

into the Republican army, but afterward, at the solicitation of Mr. Poinsett, released and sent to Norfolk, Virginia, in the United States ship John Adams.

Mrs. Long had been left at Bolivar Point, with her child and a negro girl, with a few men to guard the fort. The men became impatient at Long's delay; their stock of provisions was low, and they threatened to leave the heroic woman in her lonely fort on the beach. She remonstrated: "You may all leave me," said she, "but I will never go from hence. My husband said he would soon return. If I die, he will at least see my bones, and know that I, at least, was faithful to him." In spite of this pathetic appeal, her guard left her with her child and negress. Her provisions gave out and she suffered intensely during the winter of 1821-22. To add to her critical situation, during this trying time, another child was born, which, however, did not live long. When the Caranchuas threatened to attack her fort, she fired the cannon and kept them off. In the spring of 1822 a vessel, having some of Austin's colonists, entered the harbor of Galveston. From them she learned the sad fate of her husband. Subsequently, she kept a hotel in Brazoria. From that point she went to Richmond, and opened a plantation on which she still lives. For more than sixty years she has borne the name of her cherished and honored husband, and will carry it to the grave.

CONCLUSION OF THIS PERIOD.—We have now reached the close of the period of Spanish domination in Texas. As in all the provinces of Spanish America, the government was strictly personal, and liberal or despotic, as the whim or caprice of the commanding officers might dictate. The highest military officer, next to the viceroy, was the intendant. Texas was at the beginning of the present

century attached to the intendancy of San Luis Potosi. This officer was also called the commander of the eastern internal provinces. His headquarters were at San Luis Potosi, Monterey, or at Monclova. In 1801-11, Nemicio Salcedo was the commander. From 1812 to the close of the period, Joaquin Arredondo.

From 1691 to 1725, Texas was united with Coahuila and the following persons filled the office of governor: 1691, Domingo Teran; 1714, Don Gaspar de Anaya; 1718, Don Martin De Alarconne; 1720, Marquis of San Miguel de Aguayo; 1723, Fernando Perez de Almazan. After this, Texas had a separate Governor, whose headquarters were at San Antonio. In 1725, Melchior de Madiavilia y Arcona, was governor; 1731, Juan Antonio Bustillos y Cavallos; 1734, Manuel de Sandoval; 1736, Carlos de Franquis; 1738, Prudencia de Oribio de Bastera; 1740, Justo Boneo; 1756, Jacinto de Barrios y Jaurequi; 1762, Antonio de Martos y Navarrete; 1770, Juan Maria, Baron de Ripperda; 1778, Domingo Cabello; Rafael Pacheco; 1790, Manuel Munoz; 1803, Juan Bautista el Guazabel; 1806, Antonio Cordero; 1810, Manuel de Salcedo; 1813, Christoval Dominguez; 1818, Antonio Martinez.





**THE OLD CONCEPCION MISSION, NEAR SAN ANTONIO.**



## CHAPTER I.

**MEXICO BECOMES A REPUBLIC—PLAN OF IGUALA—MEXICO GAINS AN INDISPUTABLE TITLE TO TEXAS, IN 1819—COLONIZATION SCHEMES—KEENE—OWEN—MOSES AUSTIN OBTAINS A CONTRACT—DIES—STEPHEN F. AUSTIN SELECTS A LOCATION IN TEXAS FOR HIS COLONY—AUSTIN AIDED BY HAWKINS—SCHOONER LIVELY LOST—AUSTIN IN THE CITY OF MEXICO.**

WE do not propose to take our readers into the labyrinths of Mexican politics, or even to record the oft-recurring revolutions of that unhappy country. But Texas was under Mexican domination, and of course was more or less affected by all the changes of government; and this was the period in which Mexico threw off her dependence upon Spain and took her position among the independent nations of the earth. Hidalgo was the first to unfurl the Republican banner in Mexico. This was in 1812; and though he failed, Morelos and others kept up the organization of a party, struggling for deliverance from the Spanish yoke. Spain herself was now passing through the trying ordeal of a change of dynasty, and the Republicans thought it a favorable moment to strike for Mexican independence. Fortunately, Agustin Iturbide, the ablest of the loyalist generals, gave in his adhesion to the movement. At the suggestion of Iturbide, a conference was held with Guerrero and other Republican leaders at Iguala, a small town about sixty miles from Mexico, on the road to Acapulco. The result of this interview was "the Plan of Iguala," proclaimed February 24, 1821. This plan was somewhat modified after the arrival of O'Donohue, the newly-appointed Viceroy,

but in fact, the Plan of Iguala terminated the Spanish dominion in Mexico.

Another change favorable to the settlement of Texas had taken place. For more than a century the country had been in dispute, claimed by both France and Spain; and after France sold Louisiana to the United States, that government had revived the claim of France. The United States also wanted Florida. The ministers plenipotentiary of the countries met. Spain was represented by De Onis, and the United States by John Quincy Adams. A treaty was entered into February 22, 1819, by which Spain sold Florida to the United States, and the latter relinquished all claim to Texas.

When the United States achieved her independence, she proffered a home to immigrants from all parts of the world. Her unexampled prosperity had its influence upon her southern neighbors. Even before the independence of Mexico, her rulers began to entertain projects for the colonization of unsettled portions of the country. To Edmund Keene, the English statesman, was given the right to settle with colonists 21,000 square leagues of the best land in Texas. This project failed. The next to apply for a colonization grant was Robert Owen, the Socialist and Communist, who wished, in this wilderness, to test the practicability of his Socialistic system. But as none but Roman Catholics were tolerated in Spanish America, this application was, of course, unsuccessful; and New Harmony, Indiana, witnessed the failure of Owen's experiment.

The survivors of the ill-fated expeditions of Magee and Long had given glowing descriptions of Texas; and the liberal disposition of the Mexican authorities made it a favorable time for planting colonies of Anglo-Americans in this inviting field. Moses Austin, a citizen of Missouri, who had moved into that country when it belonged to Spain, resolved to become the founder of a Texas colony. To



make the necessary preparations, he visited San Antonio, the capital of the province. He was at first coldly received by Governor Martinez, and even ordered to leave the province under pain of arrest. While crossing the plaza, after leaving the governor's office, Austin fortunately met Baron de Bastrop, with whom he had previously formed an acquaintance. Bastrop, who was one of the Alcaldes of the municipality, at once espoused the cause of Austin; and through his influence, the governor was induced to give the colonial project his sanction. With the aid of De Bastrop, Austin succeeded in getting the signatures of all the officials of the city to his application, which was forwarded to Arredondo, the commander of the eastern internal provinces. Not doubting the success of his application, Austin returned to Missouri to make arrangements to introduce his colonists. He was much exposed, and suffered many hardships in his return journey; he reached home in feeble health, and soon afterward died, leaving an injunction for his son, Stephen Fuller Austin, to carry forward his plans.

While the elder Austin was in Mexico, his son Stephen was in New Orleans, maturing plans for co-operation with his father in his Texas scheme. Arredondo readily gave his assent to the colonial project of Austin, and Messrs. Veramendi and Seguin, two prominent citizens of San Antonio, were appointed commissioners to meet Austin at Natchitoches, and introduce him into his future colony. Stephen Austin, having heard, at New Orleans, of the arrival of these commissioners in East Texas, started to meet them. On his way he heard of the death of his father, and that the whole enterprise now rested upon himself. The commissioners had no hesitation in recognizing the authority of the younger Austin, who at once prepared to enter the province. It was late in the summer when they reached San Antonio. Austin was cordially received

by Governor Martinez, and his gentlemanly manners made a most favorable impression upon all the officers in the city. After inspecting the country, he selected for occupancy the rich lands of the Colorado and Brazos rivers, and returned to Louisiana to bring in his first colonists. On reaching New Orleans he secured some pecuniary assistance from Joseph H. Hawkins, Esq., a former schoolmate at Transylvania University. The schooner *Lively* was purchased, and laden with supplies for the Texas colony. She sailed from New Orleans, for the mouth of the Colorado River, November 20th, 1821, and was never heard of afterward.

On the day the *Lively* sailed from New Orleans, Austin started by land for Texas. At Nacogdoches he was joined by ten companions, and the party reached the bank of the Brazos December 31st. The next morning they crossed over, and named the stream found on the west side of the river, New Year's Creek. As Austin passed through Nacogdoches, he left some blank permits for colonists, and an agent to fill up the blanks. There were some conditions in this first contract not incorporated in the subsequent laws. The colonists must profess the Roman Catholic faith; must be citizens of Louisiana; must take an oath of allegiance to Ferdinand VII, and pledge themselves to protect and defend the institutions of the Spanish monarchy; and must bring certificates of good moral character. The printed form before us was granted to the Gates family, and is the property of the venerable Amos Gates, of Washington county. It bears date Nacogdoches, December 27, 1821, and was signed by Austin "as civil and military commander of the colony forming on the Brazos and Colorado rivers, in the province of Texas, under the government of New Spain." In this permit it is stated that each man shall receive 640 acres of land; his wife 320; and each child 160 acres. To the master was given eighty acres for each slave introduced. Austin was to incur all the

expense of procuring a patent, and the colonists were to pay him twelve and a half cents an acre for their land.\*

Austin hastened to the coast to meet the *Lively*. For three months he waited and watched, but hearing no tidings of the vessel, he finally gave it up for lost, and with his brother, John Brown Austin, he went to San Antonio. There he learned that it would be necessary for him to visit the city of Mexico, to secure the sanction of the newly inaugurated Republican Government. Though he had made no preparation for such a trip, he committed the management of his colony to Josiah H. Bell, and started upon the long and perilous journey.\*

\* This pay for land refers only to the first colonists. Under subsequent contracts the colonists themselves paid the Government dues, and the empresario received his pay in premium lands. It was a section of land—640 acres, that Austin petitioned for, for each family. The commandant misunderstood him, thinking he wished a *sitio*, an amount equal to a small county. He told Austin that that was too much; but he would give each one a league, and the empresario of course agreed to that proposition, as it was so much better than he had asked; but after all it was hard on the colonists. They could have paid twelve and a half cents an acre for a section of land, but when it came to paying that price for a league, it was more money than a poor man could readily command.

## CHAPTER II.

COLONIZATION LAWS—LAW OF 1823—OF 1824—OF COAHUILA IN 1825, AND AGAIN IN 1832—SAN FELIPE LAID OUT AND LAND OFFICE OPENED IN 1824—EDWARDS' GRANT AND FREDONIAN TROUBLES AT NACOGDOCHES—THE EDWARDS CONTRACT ANNULLED BY GOVERNOR BLANCO.

SUCH was the unsettled state of Mexican affairs that it became necessary for Austin to remain for a whole year at the capital, before a government sufficiently stable was formed for him to effect the object of his mission. In the meantime, he had thoroughly studied the language and institutions of the country, and formed the acquaintance of its leading citizens. He had given special attention to the subject of colonization; and it is believed the laws enacted at that and subsequent periods on the subject, were drawn at his suggestion. As these colonization laws are of great interest, we give a synopsis of the more important ones.\*

### 1. THE COLONIZATION LAW OF 1823, BY THE MEXICAN EMPIRE.

This guaranteed the protection of liberty, property, and civil rights to all foreigners professing the Roman Catholic apostolic religion. It promised the distribution of the lands to them, recognizing the general right of any one to contract with the government for the introduction and settlement in the country of at least two hundred families. These contractors were called *empresarios*, and for the introduction and establishment of each two hundred families the *empresario* was entitled to receive from the government a title to three *haciendas* and two *labors* of land; but he was obligated to populate and cultivate them within twelve years from the date of concession, under pain of losing all rights of property therein. The premium was never to exceed nine *haciendas* and six *labors*, and the proprietor was, at the end of twenty years, to alienate two-thirds of the land so acquired. The colonists themselves so introduced were entitled to—if

\*This synopsis was prepared for the Texas Almanac of 1868, by N. C. Raymond.



**CATHEDRAL DE SAN FERNANDO.**



their occupation was that of farming—not less than one *labor* (177 7-10 acres;) if engaged in the pursuit of stock-raising, not less than one *sillio* (league, 4,488 English acres) of land. This quantity, however, might be augmented by the government itself, or by its authorities, if specially authorized, “agreeably to the conditions and circumstances of the colonists.” There were a number of other provisions in the law by which the terms and conditions were liable to be varied, both as to the contractor and the colonist.

## 2. THE NATIONAL COLONIZATION LAW OF 1824.

This law made it the duty of the legislatures of the several Mexican States to form colonization laws, or regulations for their respective States, subject, however, to the paramount authority, the constitutional act, general constitution, and the regulations established by the act under consideration. By this law was forbidden the colonization of any lands within twenty leagues of the limits of any foreign nation, or within ten leagues of the coasts, without the *previous approbation* of the general government. The general Congress was estopped until the year 1840 from prohibiting the entrance of any foreigner as a colonist, “unless imperious circumstances should require it, with respect to the individuals of a particular nation.” Mexican citizens as *empresarios* were preferred in the distribution of lands. We insert Article 12 in full:

“It shall not be permitted to unite in the same hands with the right of property more than one league square of land suitable for irrigation, four square leagues in superficies of arable land without the facilities of irrigation, and six square leagues in superficies of grazing land.”

Here is the origin of what are commonly known in Texas as the eleven league claims.

This law “guarantees the contracts whtch the *empresarios* make with the families which they bring at their own expense, provided they are not contrary to the laws.” In accordance with this law and the subsequent laws passed under its authority, the territories of Mexico,—Texas being then an integral part—were colonized.

## 3. THE COLONIZATION LAW OF COAHUILA AND TEXAS OF 1825.

We introduce the preamble of this law in order to show more fully the *animus* of its enactment:

“Decree No. 16. The Constituent Congress of the free, independent and sovereign State of Coahuila and Texas, desiring by every possible means to augment the population of its territory, promote the cultivation of its fertile lands, the raising and multiplication of stock, and the progress of the arts and commerce; and being governed by the constitutional act, the federal constitution, and the basis established by the national decree of the general Congress No. 72, (the national colonization law of 1824,) have thought proper to decree the following law of colonization.”

This law invited all foreigners who had come to any of the Mexican territories under the law of 1824, to settle in Coahuila and Texas, and prescribed the manner in which they, or those then within the State, should avail themselves of the opportunity presented of acquiring land under the

law. The *empresario* contracts authorized by the national decree No. 72 were recognized as well as its other provisions; the inchoate rights accruing under it being more particularly regulated by immaterial conditions and prescriptions of form in their perfection. The settlers were required as an acknowledgment to "pay to the State for each *sitio* of pasture land thirty dollars, two dollars and a half for each *labor* without the facility of irrigation, and three dollars and a half for each one that can be irrigated, and so on proportionably, according to the quantity and quality of the land distributed." Here is the origin of the payment of what is commonly known as "government dues," which is still required by the State of Texas upon a certain class of land certificates.

We introduce articles 45 and 46 of this law by way of incidental information upon two other subjects:

Art. 45. The government, in accord with the respective ordinary ecclesiastics, will take care to provide the new settlements with the competent number of pastors, and, in accord with the same authority, shall propose to the Legislature for its approbation the salary which the said pastors are to receive, which shall be paid by the new settlers.

Art. 46. The new settlers, as regards the introduction of slaves, shall subject themselves to the existing laws and those which may hereafter be established on the subject."

Instructions were issued in 1827 by the executive department of the State of Coahuila and Texas, to the commissioners for the partition of lands among the colonists who had established, or who might establish themselves under this law. These instructions were merely directory as to the duty of the commissioners in their official capacity.\*

#### 4. THE COLONIZATION LAW OF 1832, PASSED BY THE CONGRESS OF COAHUILA AND TEXAS, WHICH REPEALED THE LAW OF 1825.

This law, without changing the policy which seems to have controlled the government in the acquisition of population through her schemes of colonization, prescribed more definitely than any previous law the manner

\*To the above we will add, that in the instructions to land commissioners, they were required to lay out towns on four league tracts, with water and timber to which all the population had access and an equal right—streets to be broad—to cross each other at right angles—and suitable plazas were designated, to be forever set apart to the public use for court-houses, churches, schools, etc. All mines, salt lakes, etc., were reserved from location, and were to be accessible to the public under certain restrictions. The wisdom of this is seen in the result of permitting the salt mines in El Paso County to become private property. Again, no one man could acquire a title to more than eleven leagues of land, and before the expiration of twenty years must alienate two-thirds of it. We have no restriction now, and as a result we read of cattle kings and queens, fencing in royal domains. As an illustration: Forty-seven persons own two-thirds of the land of Nueces County. W. Kennedy owns 186,286 acres, valued for taxation at \$94,943; and Richard King owns 183,435, assessed at \$130,127.



of final consummation of rights to land in Texas, though the quantity granted by it to the colonists was neither increased nor diminished, with the exception of the quantity to single men, who became entitled by its provisions to one-fourth of a league, (1,107 acres). There was no limitation as to the colonists. They might be introduced from any country, though the object seems to have been to settle Texas with Americans.

The sale of lands to *Mexicans* was authorized in quantities not to exceed eleven leagues, upon certain conditions, to-wit: The introduction of stock, the payment of part of the valuation into the treasury, etc., etc. The price varied from fifteen dollars to two hundred dollars per league.

All rights to land in Texas previous to the declaration of her independence in March, 1836, were therefore acquired under the authority of these statutory enactments, or by virtue of the authority of the Spanish Government before the independence of Mexico, or by authority of the Mexican Government afterward, each exercising the right of eminent domain.

As an inducement to immigrants, a provision was inserted in the law, exempting all colonists from taxes, tithes, etc., for six years. In Austin's permit, as we have seen, masters were encouraged to bring their slaves; but in acts of subsequent legislation slavery was discouraged, the sale of slaves prohibited in the province, and all children of slave parents declared free at fourteen years of age.

Notwithstanding Austin's long absence from Texas, his colony continued to fill up, though there were some fears that he would fail with the new government. As a preliminary measure, Austin had opened a farm on Red river, where a large amount of provisions were raised for his colonists on their way to the Brazos. A good many who had started for the colony, stopped on Red river until they should learn the result of his mission to the city of Mexico. When that was announced, these families hurried forward. His first contract for three hundred was soon filled. Finally Austin succeeded in placing the colonization laws in such a shape that he could safely return to his colony.

On his way back he, at Monterey, met a most flattering reception from General Le Garcia, commander of the eastern internal provinces. Le Garcia directed him to lay out a town for the residence of the public officials, and to call it San Felipe de Austin. What was still more import-

ant for the interests of the rising colony, Baron de Bastrop was appointed commissioner to issue titles to the immigrants. The town was laid out and the land office opened in July, 1824. Owing to the rambling disposition of the colonists, they had scattered from the San Jacinto on the east, to the Navidad on the west, and from the gulf coast up to the old San Antonio and Nacogdoches road. Ferries had been established at the principal crossings of the rivers, farms opened, stores accumulated, and the colonists were becoming comfortably fixed to live.

**EDWARDS' GRANT.**—In Mexico Austin met a number of gentlemen seeking empresario contracts; and among them General James Wilkinson and Hayden Edwards. Owing to previous transactions with the Spanish authorities, they were a little reluctant to grant the request of the former commander on the Sabine, but Mr. Edwards was a man of culture and wealth, and readily obtained his request. His grant was under the general colonization law, which Austin had succeeded in getting through Congress. Edwards' contract was for eight hundred families, to be settled in the neighborhood of Nacogdoches. It bore date April 18, 1825. The location proved exceedingly unfortunate. Nacogdoches had been settled a long time by a roving and migratory class of people, some of whom had obtained an unenviable notoriety as "heroes" of the neutral ground. There, too, a prejudice had grown up between the Anglo-American and Mexican citizens. When the families introduced by Edwards selected their headright land and commenced improving, some older claimant would appear and lay claim to his home. The courts were appealed to, but the Alcaldes had been elected by Mexican voters, and invariably decided in favor of their constituents. Indeed, the first serious difficulty grew out of an election for Alcalde. Chaplin, the son-in-law of Edwards, received the largest number of votes, but Norris, the candidate voted for by the Mexicans, was counted in. Some Mexicans of

very disreputable character, were engaged in forging old land titles. Of this Edwards complained to the political chief, Saucedo, but he obtained no satisfaction. We give an instance from Yoakum: "Before Edwards had made his contract, a man by the name of Tramel had emigrated from Pecan Point to Nacogdoches. After he had reached the latter place, he learned from the Alcalde that that functionary had received orders from Governor Trespelacios to place some one at the crossing of the Trinity to keep a ferry on the old San Antonio road. Tramel agreed to occupy the post, and with the order of the Alcalde, removed to the ferry and settled himself. He subsequently sold out to another person, who still kept up the ferry. Ignatius Sertuche, a Mexican, and the only surviving inhabitant of the old town of Spanish Bluff, below the old ferry, was starving, together with his family. The occupant of the ferry invited him to move up to the crossing, and he would supply his family with food. Sertuche, finding the situation pleasant and profitable, managed to dispossess the occupant. The facts being made known to Edwards, he took steps to repossess the true occupant. This was all repeated to the political chief, and Sertuche was again placed at the ferry. The only reason given by Saucedo for this arbitrary act was, that Sertuche was a Mexican, and entitled to the preference." Yoakum adds: "In several other instances, these invidious distinctions were made, and Americans who had come into the country and wrought improvements, were compelled to give place to Mexican favorites of Sepulvida and Norris, the Alcaldes during the years 1825-26." "The Americans," says Foote, who was an intimate friend of Edwards, "were dispossessed of their homes, fined and imprisoned."

During the summer of 1826, Hayden Edwards visited the United States to bring on more colonists. In his absence his brother, Benj. F. Edwards, had charge of the colony. Learning that serious charges had been forwarded

to Governor Blanco, affecting his brother, Benjamin Edwards wrote to the Governor, denouncing the charges in pretty severe terms. In answer to this epistle, Blanco, on the 20th of October, sent a reply of which the following is a translation of the concluding paragraph: "In view of such proceedings, by which the conduct of Hayden Edwards is well attested, *I have decreed the annulment of his contract, and his expulsion* from the territory of the Republic, in discharge of the supreme orders with which I am invested. He has lost the confidence of the Government, which is suspicious of his fidelity; besides it is not prudent to admit those who begin by dictating laws as sovereigns. If to you or your constituent, these measures are unwelcome and prejudicial, you can apply to the Supreme Government; but you will first evacuate the country, both yourself and Hayden Edwards; for which purpose I this day repeat my orders to that department—in the execution of which, as they will expel all evil-doers, so they will extend full protection to those of worth, probity and useful skill, that have settled therein, and are submissive to the laws and constituted authorities." This is signed BLANCO. and certified by Juan Antonio Padilla, Secretary of State.

When this executive decree reached Nacogdoches, Hayden Edwards had returned. He had expended several thousand dollars in bringing colonists to the country, and of course felt chagrined at this arbitrary and illegal proceeding. Some of his colonists, too, had expended considerable sums in rendering their homes comfortable. And notwithstanding the statement in the decree, that citizens would be protected in their rights, the old Mexicans trumped up claims to all the improved lands; and Norris, the Alcalde, issued orders to put them in possession, while James Gaines, his father-in-law, had organized a company of regulators to enforce their fraudulent claims.

The Indians also, who had settled in the neighborhood, under the provisions of the colonization law, were dissatis-

fied, as no provision had been made to give them titles to their land. The most influential chiefs of these tribes were Richard Fields and John Dunn Hunter, both half-breeds. Under the excitement of the moment, the Edwards party entered into a league with the dissatisfied Indians, forming an alliance offensive and defensive. They first declared their independence of the United Mexican Nation, and next divided the territory of Texas between them, giving the Indians in the country, and to enter the territory, all the country north of a point a little above Nacogdoches, and westward to the Rio Grande; and the whites, the coast of Texas. Slavery was to be established in both. This was duly signed on the 20th of December. The following names were appended to this declaration: Hayden Edwards and Harmon B. Mayo, on the part of the Americans, and Richard Fields and John Dunn Hunter, on the part of the Indians. The allied parties assumed the name of *Fredonians*, and proceeded at once to organize a legislative committee, composed of the following members: Americans—Martin Parmer, President; Hayden Edwards, F. B. Ligon, John Sprow, B. F. Thompson, Joseph A. Huber, B. W. Edwards and H. B. Mayo. Indians—Richard Fields, John Dunn Hunter, Ne-Ko-Lake, John Bags and Kurtoke. Learning that Col. Bean, the Mexican Indian agent, at Fort Teran, was preparing to resist their movements, the Fredonians took possession of the old stone house at Nacogdoches. Bean, however, awaited the arrival of reinforcements from San Antonio. One of the first acts of the legislative body was to depose the Alcalde Norris. Norris hastily collected a few friends, and on the 4th of January, 1827, entered the town and took a position behind some other buildings. Here they were attacked by about twenty Americans and Indians from the fort, and driven off, with a loss of one killed and several wounded. After this action, B. W. Edwards was elected commander of the Fredonians.

The Fredonians had miscalculated the spirit of Austin's colonists. They expected, from them, a hearty co-operation. In this, they were sadly disappointed. Again, they had been deceived as to the feelings among the Indians. True, Fields and Hunter were faithful to their treaty, but Bean had detached the great body of the tribe from the alliance, and the result was, that both the faithful half-breeds were assassinated by the Indians whose welfare they were laboring to promote. When news of the organization of the Edwards party reached Bexar, Saucedo dispatched Colonel Mateo Ahumada with 200 soldiers, to suppress the insurrectionists. At San Felipe he was reinforced by a company of Austin's colonists. Seeing the hopelessness of maintaining the Fredonian cause against such odds, Major Edwards and his party retired across the Sabine.

Ahumada, on reaching Nacogdoches, took possession of the place, and captured a few of Edwards' partizans. It was fortunate for them, that Colonel Austin was along; otherwise they would have shared the usual fate of prisoners, captured by the Mexican soldiers. As it was, they were at Austin's solicitation released. This clemency, so unexpected, brought to Ahumada a letter from B. W. Edwards, of which the following is an extract: "Your kind, your friendly and generous deportment towards my friends and fellow soldiers, while prisoners of yours, entitles you and the officers under your command to the expression of my thanks, and has insured to you and them a distinction in our hearts, that will ever separate you from the rest of your countrymen who have oppressed us." (See sketches of Edwards, Fields, Hunter, etc.)



**BOWEN'S BEND, SAN ANTONIO RIVER.**





## CHAPTER III.

OTHER CONTRACTS—THORN—LEFTWICH—DE WITT—DE LEON—AUSTIN'S SECOND CONTRACT, AND OTHERS FROM 1825 TO 1830—SETTLEMENT ON RED RIVER—IN THE SOUTH-EAST—GALVESTON BAY COMPANY—IN THE SOUTH-WEST.

THE prosperity of Austin's colony, and the favorable provisions of the general colonization law, induced a number of persons to apply for empresario grants. On the 15th of April, 1824, three applications were filed for contracts. Frost Thorn proposed to introduce 400 families; Robert Leftwich, 800; and Green DeWitt, 400. And on the 27th of April, S. F. Austin took an additional contract for the introduction of 500 families. October 6th, Martin DeLeon took a contract for forty-one families.

In 1826—January 12th, Benjamin R. Milam took a contract for 200 families; March 9th, Arthur G. Wabell took a contract for 400 families; May 27th, Stephen J. Wilson for 200; December 22d, Joseph Vehelin & Co., for 300; December 22d, David G. Burnet, for 300.

1826—November 14th, John L. Woodbury, for 200.

1827—May 21st, John Cameron took a contract for 100 families; and on the 20th of November, S. F. Austin added 100 families to his previous contracts.

1828.—February 9th, John Cameron took a second contract for 299 families; February 23d, Exter & Wilson, for 100 families; November 17th, Joseph Vehelin & Co., for 100 additional families.

1829—February 6th, John Dominguez, for 200 families; March 12th, Lorenzo de Zavalla for 500 families; and April 30th, Martin DeLeon for 150 additional.

In 1830, Thomas J. Chambers and J. A. Padilla took a contract, February 12th, for introducing 800 families.

The granting of so many contracts proves conclusively that the legally constituted authorities were anxious to see Texas settled. The boundaries of these grants were not very accurately defined ; and some of the empresarios failed to even make an effort to introduce their quota of immigrants. Austin, alone, succeeded in nearly filling all his contracts, introducing more families than all the other empresarios. His later contracts authorized him to settle a colony above the old San Antonio road, on the east side of the Colorado River ; and also on the littoral coast leagues, that had been previously reserved from location. The Leftwich grant was also in the jurisdiction of the Brazos department. Leftwich had brought out a few families, when he returned to Tennessee to make arrangements to complete his work, where he died. A company called the Nashville Company was organized, and Sterling C. Robertson and Alexander Thomson came out with some families to settle the colony. Robertson had difficulty with some of the Mexican officials at Nacogdoches, and in 1831, the authorities revoked the privileges of the Nashville Company, and the same territory was assigned to Austin & Williams. Mr. Robertson visited Saltillo in 1834 and procured a renewal of his contract, and was successful in settling his colony. (See Robertson, S. C.)

There were three contracts in the upper part of the jurisdiction of Nacogdoches : Filisolas', Milam's and Wabell's. Milam, in conjunction with Wabell, introduced a number of families who became permanent settlers, on the south side of Red River. The Federal Congress had given him a headright league, which in consequence of his invaluable services to the Republican cause had been increased to eleven leagues. Milam located his land, and started a ranch, but unfortunately he went too far to the east, and when the boundary line was run, found his land in Miller county,

Arkansas. He abandoned that location for one farther west.

Higher up on Red River, and outside of any regular jurisdiction, were the grants of Cameron, Exter & Wilson and Woodbury. At an early period one of these English companies sent a party of surveyors across from Santa Fe, to survey and sectionize the land preparatory to settlement. The party established an initial point on the Brazos River, and started north, surveying and marking off the land on each side of their base line. But the Indians were found hostile, and when the surveyors reached the Canadian River and the Wichita Mountains, they were finally driven off, and the colonists never came to occupy the land.

The contracts of Burnet, Vehelin, and Zavalla, in the lower part of the municipality of Nacogdoches, passed into the hands of some New York capitalists, who, in the language of Burnet, converted it into a Wall-street speculation. It is possible the purchasers did not fully understand the privileges and restrictions of empresarios. At any rate they formed "the Galveston Bay Company," and issued scrip for 6,210,300 acres of land. The scrip was worthless in Texas, where every immigrant was entitled to a league of land; but in New York it sold for from one to two cents an acre. It is said this company expended \$50,000 in preparations to settle their colony. They selected the town of Anahuac for their headquarters. When Bradburn become commander at Anahuac, and exercised his despotism, the population fled, and the bubble of the "Galveston Bay Company" exploded.

Three of the grants were in the jurisdiction of Goliad: DeLeon's, Powers' and McMullin & McGloine's. Mr. DeLeon was already in his colony, having established a ranch at Victoria, on the Guadalupe River. The colonists introduced by McMullin & McGloine were mostly Irish, and settled on the Nueces River, forming the county of San Patricio. Powers introduced a few families on the bay of Copano.

DeWitt's colony was in the Bexar jurisdiction. This grant was on the Guadalupe River, and formed the nucleus of DeWitt and Gonzales counties.

Milam's second grant was on the San Marcos River. Beale was interested with him, and the contract was sold to the Baring Brothers of London.

The accompanying map will give a tolerably accurate idea of the location of the different colonies, the old thoroughfares, the location of different towns, rivers, etc., and the three departments into which Texas was divided in 1834.

Beside these colonies in the province of Texas, of which the Nueces was then the western boundary, in 1833-4, an English colony was attempted on a creek named Las Moras, and a village laid out, ominously named Dolores. The English immigrants, unused to a frontier life, did not long remain in the dolorous settlement.

## CHAPTER IV.

CIVIL ADMINISTRATION—GOVERNORS—LAND COMMISSIONERS—ALCALDES' DISTRICTS  
—AYUNTAMIENTOS—POLITICAL CHIEFS OF DEPARTMENTS—STATE CONGRESS—  
REFLECTIONS ON COLONIZATION—ALMONTE IN THE PROVINCE—HIS REPORT—  
DISTURBING ELEMENTS—TAXATION—SLAVERY—TEXAS COVETED BY THE UNITED  
STATES.

HAVING given a list of the colonial grants, and brief notes of the progress of settlements, we will now turn our attention to the civil administration of the country. Under Mexican rule the government was personal. The Governor was appointed by, and responsible to, the federal executive; still subordinate, however, to the military commander at Monterey. The following is a list of the Governors of the province: In 1822, Trespelacios; 1823, Luciana Le Garcia. Up to this time Texas was a province by itself, and the Governor resided at San Antonio. By the Constitution of 1824, Texas was temporarily attached to Coahuila, and Saltillo became the capital. In 1825, Rafael Gonzales was Governor; 1826, Victor Blanco; 1828, Jose Maria Viesca; 1831, Jose Maria Letona; 1834, Francisco Vidauri y Villasenor. The military commanders at Monterey were, in 1820, Anastasio Bustamente; in 1822, Phillip Le Garcia; 1830, Mier y Teran.

In Austin's colony, the people enjoyed all their rights and privileges for a number of years, without molestation. For six years they were exempt from taxation; the government gave them a liberal grant of land, and those dissatisfied with their first locations were permitted to change. Austin exercised the functions of civil and military ruler, and up to 1828, those of Superior Judge. Samuel M.

Williams, the secretary of the colony, and the various surveyors and the land commissioners afforded to the colonists every facility for locating and securing titles to their land.

Under the general colonization law, the land commissioner was an important functionary. He not only issued land titles, but established ferries, organized new Alcaldes' districts, and inducted the new officers; laid out towns, and in conjunction with the empresario, exercised a general supervision over the colonies. \*

Under Spanish rule, San Antonio, Nacogdoches and Goliad had enjoyed the rank of "Presidios," or county seats. In 1822, during Austin's absence in Mexico, two Alcaldes' districts, those of the Brazos and the Colorado, were formed in his colony. These had increased to seven in 1827. In 1828 all the Alcaldes in a municipality met three times a year and held a general court, called an Ayuntamiento.

Texas, from its great distance from Saltillo, was practically without a governor; and on the first of February, 1826, the office of political chief was created and Manuel de Saucedo appointed to the office. The chief received a salary of \$800 a year; and was invested with both civil and military power. He could, at will, suspend the functions of civil officers; arrest persons suspected of treasonable designs; and call out and command the militia. Saucedo was succeeded by Ramon Musquis. In 1834, two "Departments"

\* The following were the principal Land Commissioners in the colonies: In Austin's colony in 1824, Baron de Bastrop; 1828, Gaspar Flores at Nacogdoches in 1829, Juan Antonio Padilla, and in 1832, Francisco Maderio. At a later period, George W. Smyth. Before any commissioner was appointed, the Alcaldes issued titles that the courts duly recognized; and at a later period the Alcaldes at Liberty granted titles. Ferdinand De Leon was commissioner for De Leon's colony; Jose Antonio Navarro for Bexar district, and for Milam's colony on the San Marcos River; Jesus Vidauri for Power & Hewitson's colony; Charles S. Taylor for Zavalla and Vehelin's colony; George A. Nixon, for Burnet's, and William H. Steele, for Robertson's colony. In Austin's later contracts, he was empowered to issue titles in the absence of a commissioner.

were formed, Bexar and Nacogdoches; the line separating them was the dividing ridge between the San Jacinto and Trinity rivers. John N. Seguin was chief at Bexar, and Henry Ruiz at Nacogdoches. The next year the department of the Brazos was formed, and Henry Smith and James B. Miller were each for a time, political chiefs, at San Felipe.

When three departments were formed, a law was enacted providing for a Supreme Court, and for a District Court in each department. Thomas J. Chambers was appointed judge of the former, but never organized his court. David G. Burnet, judge of the Brazos district, was the only one who ever held a court.

During this period the law-making power was lodged in a representative body called the Congress of Coahuila and Texas. The members were not elected directly by the people, but by electors chosen for that purpose. Popular elections were always held on Sunday. To be eligible to a seat in Congress, the candidate, if not a native, must have resided eight years in the country; and must have an income of \$1,000, or be worth \$8,000.

By her population, Texas ought to have had four delegates in this body; but the law gave her but two, and it is questionable if she ever had more than one member at a time. The action of Congress was frequently inimical to Texas, especially one of its last acts, a fraudulent sale of about four hundred leagues of Texas land.\*

REFLECTIONS ON TEXAS COLONIZATION.—The history of frontier expansion in the United States shows that it is no easy task. In Texas the difficulties were very great. It was remote from other settlements—in a foreign country, with a government and institutions entirely different from those of the North; and the country was pre-occupied by Indians. Considering all these circumstances, the success

\*The following were Texas members of this Congress: Baron De Bastrop, Jose Antonio Navarro, Erasmo Seguin, Stephen F. Austin, James B. Miller, Oliver Jones, and Jose Antonio Vasques.

of Austin and others in introducing Anglo-American colonists, was wonderful. If we inquire into the grounds of this success, we shall find it in the character of the men. They were brave, hardy, industrious men, self-helpful and self-reliant. They asked no favors of the government, and that government let them severely alone. Their stout arms cultivated their farms and protected their homes from the incursions of the savages. Volumes might be written, detailing instances of individual bravery—of hardships cheerfully endured by old and young, male and female colonists.

In 1834, Santa Anna sent his trusted lieutenant, Almonte, to examine Texas and report upon its progress. This report furnishes the most reliable data we have of the wealth and population at that time. Kennedy says of this report:

“The statistics of Almonte form the proudest testimonial to the labors of those fearless and persevering spirits who first rendered the golden globe of Texas tributary to the enjoyments of civilized man.”

We give some extracts from Almonte's report:

“In 1806 the department of Bexar contained two municipalities; San Antonio, with a population of 5,000 souls, and Goliad with 1,400—total 6,400. In 1834 there were four municipalities, with the following population respectively:—San Antonio, 2,400; Goliad, 700; Victoria, 300; San Patricio, 600—total 4,000. Deducting 600 for the municipality of San Patricio, an Irish settlement, the Mexican population had declined from 6,400 to 3,400 between 1806 and 1834. The department of the Brazos, (Austin's and DeWitt's colonies) have the following municipalities: San Felipe, 2,500; Columbia, 2,100; Matagorda, 1,400; Gonzales, 900; Mina, 1,100—total 8,000; 1,000 of whom are negroes.”

Let the reader observe that while the Mexican population of Bexar district had fallen off nearly one-half, the Anglo-American population had grown from nothing in 1820, to 7,000, exclusive of the negroes.

“The department of Nacogdoches contains four municipalities and four towns. Nacogdoches has a population of 3,500; San Augustine, 2,500; Liberty, 1,000; Jonesburg, 2,000; the town of Anahuac, 50; Bevil, 140; Teran 10; Tenaha, 100—total 9,000, of whom 1,000 are negroes.”





**SANTA ANNA.**



Almonte estimates that the department of the Brazos had 25,000, and that of Nacogdoches 50,000 head of cattle. The amount of the whole trade of Texas for the year 1834, he estimates as follows :

DEPARTMENTS.	IMPORTS.	EXPORTS.	TOTAL.
Bexar....	40,000	20,000	60,000
Brazos.....	325,000	375,000	600,000
Nacogdoches.....	265,000	205,000	470,000
Contraband trade by water..		270,000	1,400,000 -

Mr. Almonte estimated the whole population in 1834, at 36,300 ; of whom 21,000 were civilized and 15,300 Indians. Of the latter, 10,800 were represented as hostile and 4,500 friendly. Mr. Kennedy suggests that Almonte's estimate was too low, and that the Anglo-American population at that time amounted to 30,000, exclusive of the negroes.

**DISTURBING ELEMENTS.**—One of the most difficult questions to adjust between the government and its people is that of Taxation ; how the government is to be sustained with the least pressure upon the pockets of the people. Colonists entering Texas were permitted to introduce all family supplies, and agricultural and mechanical implements free of duty, and for six years no taxes were to be paid. From the foundation of Austin's colony, up to 1830-31, Texas had been free from custom houses and tax collectors. This exemption of so large a portion of the State impoverished the treasury at Saltillo so that many offices remained vacant because there was no money to pay the salaries. Every available resource was resorted to to increase the revenue ; even the cock-pits were taxed for the support of the government. The Texans enjoyed their exemption and appreciated it. It is, perhaps, due to truth, to state that they were not anxious to see assessors and collectors of taxes. In 1828, Mr. Austin had advised the Ayuntamiento of San Felipe to assess a tax to build a jail ; but that body had refrained from exercising such an unwelcome authority. The period when many of the colonists

were by law exempt from taxation had now expired, and in 1830 the government took steps to collect taxes. This was not unreasonable, and the people would not have objected but for the means adopted to enforce the collection. With the revenue officers came armed bands of soldiers, under officers clothed with dictatorial powers—powers which the liberty-loving Anglo-Americans distrusted. To collect reasonable, legitimate taxes, such troops were unnecessary.

The subject of negro slavery furnished another irritating question. In his first contract, Austin was authorized to introduce slaves, and even to give their masters an additional tract of land for each one so introduced. This, however, was contrary to the general policy of Mexico, and the Constitution of Coahuila and Texas, promulgated March 11th, 1827, abolished slavery in the State. Through the influence of Austin, this was so far modified in its application to his colonists, that negroes were still introduced, under the name of Peons; the most of them having been passed through the custom-house at New Orleans, so that their masters, if they found it necessary to do so, could re-convey them to the United States. Almonte, who says these negroes were introduced under special arrangements, (*Convenios particulares*) estimates that in 1834 there were 2,000 in the province. There were probably twice that number. When Guerrero, in 1829, was invested with absolute power, he abolished slavery. The next year, President Bustamente prohibited the further introduction of slaves. These decrees did not set the negroes free, or arrest their introduction into the colony. Indeed, a few African negroes had been smuggled in. This induced the Convention of 1833 to pass a resolution strongly denouncing the African slave trade. Many of Austin's colonists were from the Southern States of the American Union, and the more wealthy had brought their house servants and agricultural laborers with them; and

they were exceedingly jealous of any interference with their domestic institutions.

These irritating questions were not all on one side. The steps taken by the Fredonians at Nacogdoches had excited the suspicions of the Mexicans. Though they reposed unbounded confidence in Austin, they distrusted some of his colonists; especially those who called and controlled public meetings, in which the measures of the government were freely commented on.

Again, the United States had manifested an undue solicitude to gain possession of our fair province. Although the treaty negotiated by John Quincy Adams and De Onis, in 1819, had conceded Texas to Spain, when Mr. Adams became President, in March, 1825, one of the first acts of his administration was, through Mr. Clay, Secretary of State, to instruct the American Minister in Mexico to procure the re-transfer of Texas to the United States. Two years later this proposition was repeated, when Mr. Poinsett was authorized to offer a million of dollars for the country as far as the Rio Grande, or a half million for that east of the Colorado river. These offers were rejected, and after General Jackson became President, Mr. Van Buren, Secretary of State, renewed them; this time proffering four millions of dollars for the territory east of the dividing line between the waters of the Rio Grande and the Nueces. If that could not be obtained, a proportionate sum was to be offered for the territory east of the Lavaca, or Colorado, or the Brazos rivers. None of these offers were for a moment entertained by the Mexican government. As most of the colonists in Texas were from the United States, the Mexicans were suspicious that they wished to return to their allegiance to that government, even if it required the transfer of the country which they had settled.

## CHAPTER V.

**BUSTEMENTE'S FAMOUS DECREE—CUSTOM HOUSES—GARRISONS ESTABLISHED—  
BRADBURN'S ARBITRARY PROCEEDINGS AT ANAHUAC—THE TEXANS PRONOUNCE  
FOR SANTA ANNA AND THE CONSTITUTION OF 1824—FIGHT AT VELASCO—AT NACOG-  
DOCHES—PEACE PROSPECTS IN 1832.**

IT was evidently the intention of Bustemente to thoroughly Mexicanize the population of Texas. On the 6th of April, 1830, he issued a decree prohibiting any further immigration into Texas from the United States. This was followed by another, and still more odious one, directing that Mexican *convicts* should be transported to Texas, thus virtually converting the province into a penal colony. Teran, an uncompromising centralist, was appointed commander of the eastern internal provinces. Custom houses were to be established at San Antonio, Nacogdoches, Copano, Velasco and Anahuac, at the head of Galveston Bay.

To effect the complete subjugation of the colonists, about a thousand soldiers were sent to the province, and distributed at such points as their services might be needed. These soldiers were many of them discharged convicts, and enlisted vagabonds, and were to be supported by the money collected from customs, and by taxation. Their officers were of the same stripe with Bustemente and Teran, and were supposed to be willing to carry out the measures of their superiors. Piedras was the ranking officer, and had the largest force. He was at Nacogdoches, apparently, to prevent any further immigration from the United States; and when Alexander Thomson arrived with a number of families for Robertson's colony, he interposed every obstacle in the way of the further progress of these families. Pie-

dras had 320 men ; Bradburn, at Anahuac, 150 ; Ugartechea, at Velasco, 120 ; Bean a still smaller force at Fort Teran, on the Neches ; and there were companies at San Antonio and Goliad. Bradburn was the first to manifest a directly hostile spirit. His arbitrary acts are thus summarized in a pamphlet published in 1832, by T. J. Chambers : " He introduced martial law for the citizens ; he took from them their property without their consent and without consideration ; he had many of them arrested and imprisoned in the fort of Anahuac ; and his troops, who were guilty of robbery and stealing, were by him protected from punishment." To specify a little more minutely, his arbitrary acts : He, in 1831, arrested Madero, the commissioner sent to issue land titles to the colonists on the Trinity. It was said Madero was giving titles to those prohibited from entering Texas by the decree of April 6th. Again, he abolished the municipality established by Madero at Liberty, in the midst of a population, and erected one at Anahuac, a town laid out by Teran, when he visited Texas in 1830. But Bradburn found it difficult to thwart the will of the people. The officers he appointed to constitute the Ayuntamiento, left Anahuac, and sought refuge in Austin's colony. Again, by the joint act of Bradburn and Ugartechea, all the ports of Texas, except Anahuac, were closed to commerce. This was intended to concentrate all business at Bradburn's headquarters. But Anahuac was outside of Austin's colony, and was inaccessible to vessels drawing over six feet of water. This was a severe blow to the citizens of the Brazos, who carried on a larger trade by water than all the rest of Texas. " An indignation meeting," says Burnet, " was promptly held at Brazoria, and Dr. Branch T. Archer and George B. McKinstry were appointed a committee to wait on Colonel Bradburn, the senior officer, and demand the abrogation of the order. Bradburn equivocated, and required time to consult his superior, General Teran, then at Tampico. The committee were not to be cajoled ; they

demanded an instant revocation and it was granted. It was probable, therefore, that the injurious order was based on the sole authority of the two subalterns."

Bradburn appears to have taken a delight in annoying the Texans. Having failed in his attempt to close all the ports in Austin's colony, he next essayed to set the negro slaves free, and proclaimed himself their special guardian, protecting those who threw themselves into his fort. Among the negroes who there sought refuge were some from Louisiana. These were demanded on the authority of a requisition from the Governor of that Commonwealth. Bradburn refused to surrender them, alleging that they had enlisted as soldiers in the Mexican army. His next act of oppression was to send a file of soldiers and arrest and imprison certain citizens—among them Patrick C. Jack, William B. Travis, Monroe Edwards and others; and though there were no formal charges against them, he threatened to send them to Vera Cruz for trial. Tidings of these outrages flew through the country, producing the most profound alarm and indignation. Numbers flocked towards Anahuac, both from the Brazos and the Trinity rivers. They met, to the number of about sixty, and effected a military organization; Frank W. Johnson being elected first, and Warren D. C. Hall second in command. When approaching Anahuac, a small party of Bradburn's soldiers were encountered and made prisoners. This was early in June. A deputation of the citizens was sent to Anahuac, to intercede for the release of the prisoners. At first this failed, and when a collision between the citizens and soldiers seemed inevitable, a liberal Mexican officer, Colonel Souverin, proffered his services as mediator. The Texans then had nineteen of Bradburn's soldiers, and Bradburn had seventeen citizens under arrest. At the instance of Souverin, it was agreed that the Texans should release their prisoners immediately, and that Bradburn would discharge the citizens under arrest on the following morning. The soldiers



were released and sent into the fort. But Bradburn, having heard of the approach of Piedras from Nacogdoches, violated his plighted faith and kept his prisoners. The citizens then resolved, at all hazards, to take the fort, and dispatched John Austin and William J. Russel to Brazoria for a cannon.

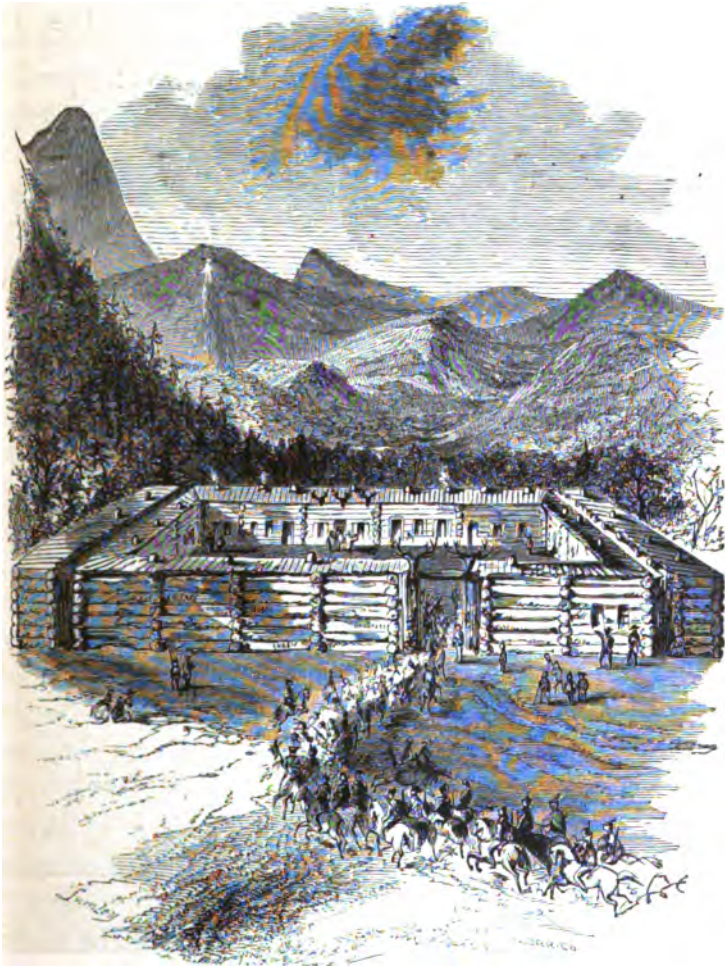
At this juncture of affairs, news arrived that Santa Anna had pronounced against Bustamente, and in favor of the abrogated constitution of 1824. On the 13th of June, 1832, a meeting of about one hundred citizens was held at Taylor White's, on Turtle Bayou. This meeting declared for the new movement of Santa Anna, looking upon him as the representative of Republicanism and popular liberty. No doubt the influence of Santa Anna's agent, Souverin, was felt at this meeting.

At this juncture, and while the Texans were waiting for the return of Austin with the cannon, Piedras, with a part of his command and a band of Cherokee Indians, arrived in the neighborhood. He sent an officer to the Texas camp, to know their object. Commissioners were appointed to confer with him, and an accommodation was soon had. Piedras proved himself a gentleman. Bradburn was relieved from command, and sent to New Orleans; and the prisoners in the fort unconditionally released.

As we have stated, Captain John Austin was sent from Anahuac to Brazoria for a cannon to assist in the capture of Bradburn's fort. Although the difficulties there had been adjusted, that was not known on the Brazos. Brazoria county was the most wealthy and populous in the province, producing more cotton and carrying on a more extensive trade than all the other districts. Bradburn's order, closing their port, had rendered them justly indignant, and at a meeting in the town of Brazoria as early as May 11th, a proposition to capture the fort of Velasco had failed by only one vote. Ugartechea, the commander, had, however, promised to remain neutral in the contest with Bradburn,

and had thus rendered himself popular with the people. But when Austin asked permission to transfer the cannon from the town of Brazoria, and by his fort, in a vessel, Ugartechea refused. Austin at once called for volunteers to capture Velasco and its garrison. One hundred and twelve men responded to this call. The fort was garrisoned by 125 soldiers, and protected by artillery. At Brazoria, Austin placed his cannon, with a few men, on a small sail vessel under command of Captain William J. Russell, and started it down the river, while most of the men went by land. The vessel moored near the bank, within easy range of the fort. Arrived at the mouth of the river, Captain Austin separated his men into two companies, commanding one himself, and placing the others under Capt. Henry S. Brown. The latter took a position near the beach, where he was partially protected by a pile of drift wood. Under cover of darkness, Captain Austin, carrying plank with which to erect palisades, advanced very near the fort and threw up temporary breastworks. About midnight, June 25th, the battle commenced, and continued till daylight, when a shower of rain damaged the ammunition of the Texans. The breastworks not affording sufficient protection, Austin changed his position. In the meantime, every Mexican whose head appeared above the parapet was picked off by the riflemen. When Ugartechea found it difficult to induce his men longer to mount the parapet to fire his gun, he boldly mounted it himself, and stretched himself up to his full height. The Texans were so struck with this exhibition of personal heroism, that they spared his life. In a short time afterward, a white flag was hoisted and the fort surrendered.\*

\* In this engagement the Mexicans lost 35 killed and 15 wounded. Loss of the Texans, 8 killed and 27 wounded. Among the killed was Aylott C. Buckner, a noted Indian fighter from Buckner's Creek, on the Colorado. The mate of the vessel was killed, while lying in his berth. He was a poor man, and a non-combatant, and the planters raised a subscription for the benefit of his family. Among the Texans wounded was Henry Smith, afterwards Governor. James P. Caldwell, Edwin Waller, and Robert H. Williams, who lost an eye.



**FORT ON THE WESTERN BORDER.**



During the month of July, succeeding these events, Colonel Jose Antonio Mexia, one of Santa Anna's officers, arrived with four vessels at the mouth of the Brazos, bringing with him our member of Congress, Stephen F. Austin. The object of Mexia's visit was to place Texas in thorough accord with the new Republican departure of Santa Anna. At the same time, the political chief of the department, Don Ramon Musquez, visited San Felipe. At a session of the Ayuntamiento, after a full canvassing of the subject, that body, while denouncing "the tyrannical and illegal acts of Colonel Bradburn," solemnly declared their adherence to the principles of the Republican party headed by Santa Anna, and disclaimed having in view any other object than to contribute in sustaining the constitution, and the true dignity and decorum of the national flag. This satisfied Mexia, and he returned to Matamoras; but before his departure he addressed a letter to Piedras, inviting him to join the Republican party.

Though Colonel Piedras had acted nobly at Anahuac, he was a monarchist, and in principle opposed to Republicanism, and he utterly refused to adhere to the party of Santa Anna. At a public meeting of the citizens of Nacogdoches, a committee, consisting of Isaac W. Burton, Philip A. Sublett and Henry W. Augustin, was appointed to confer with him. He still proved obstinate, and the citizens then proceeded to organize a military company for his capture. The first conflict took place near the old stone house, which, after a severe fight, was captured by Captain Bradley and Lieutenant Looney. A body of Mexican cavalry, sent to recover the house, was repulsed with severe loss in this encounter. Don Engarnacion Chirino, Alcalde of the town, who had warmly espoused the Republican cause, was killed. At nightfall Piedras threw his ammunition into wells, and left the place, retreating to the west. The next day a party of Texans intercepted the retreating foe at the Angelina River. At the water's edge the Texans fired, and killed

Lieutenant Marcos, the officer in command of the advance party. Piedras knew that most of his men sympathized with the Republicans, and to avoid the effusion of blood, turned over the command to Major Medina, who, with his men, at once pronounced for Santa Anna. In this engagement the Mexicans lost about forty killed, and a like number wounded. The loss of the Texans, three killed and five wounded.

The three most important garrisons sent to Texas by order of Bustamente had now been disposed of. Both soldiers and citizens harmonized in the movement inaugurated by Santa Anna for the restoration of the constitution of 1824. There was no longer any use for soldiers in Texas, and Colonel Souverin, who had become commander at Anahuac, collected the men formerly composing the commands of Bradburn, Ugartechea and Piedras, and sailed for Tampico, to assist in the revolution against Bustamente.

“Thus ended,” says Edwards, “the warlike commotions of these colonies, On the 2d of September, 1832, just as the inhabitants were informed that their greatest arch-enemy, General Teran, and his troops, on their way from Mexico to Matamoras, had been surrounded by the Liberal forces of General Montezuma—and that too, on the identical plain where the injudicious Iturbide lost his life—Teran, having determined within himself neither to unite with the Liberals nor submit to them as a prisoner, retired to a private place and fell on his own sword—appearing, to those who found him still alive, as inexorable in the hour of death as he was uncompromising in political life.” “Texas,” says Burnet, “now breathed one enthusiastic feeling of admiration for Santa Anna as the undoubted hero and main support of the Federation,” an opinion which subsequent events materially modified.

## CHAPTER VI.

HOSTILE LEGISLATION—MOVEMENT FOR A SEPARATION FROM COAHUILA—CONVENTION OF 1833—AUSTIN SENT AS COMMISSIONER TO MEXICO—SANTA ANNA DESERTS THE LIBERAL PARTY—REVOLUTION IN COAHUILA—AUSTIN IN PRISON—SANTA ANNA'S ULTIMATUM TO TEXAS.

IN April, 1832, the Legislature at Saltillo, doubtless by the direction of Bustamente, repealed the liberal general colonization law, and promulgated another, based upon the decree of April 6th, 1830, excluding Americans from the State. By the new law, none but Mexicans could become *empresas*. But the influence of the Texas delegation was so far felt, that a law was enacted creating new municipalities, and allowing the people to elect their officers.

When Texas was, in 1824, attached to Coahuila, it was understood that the arrangement was only temporary, and as soon as Texas had a sufficient population, it was to be erected into a State of the Mexican Federation. Her population was now equal to that of the smaller States. Her people were in perfect accord with the Government under Santa Anna, and it was thought the time was favorable for a dissolution of its unnatural connections with its trans-Rio Grande sister. In October, 1832, a number of leading citizens held a consultation at San Felipe, and advised the election of delegates to meet and form a constitution for a separate State.\*

\*In this movement the people of Bexar perfectly harmonized with those of Austin's colony. A memorial was sent forth from San Antonio urging the measure, signed by Jose de La Garza, Angel Navarro, Jose Casiano, Manuel Ximenes, Juan Angel Seguin, Jose M. Sembrano, and Ignatio Arocha. At Brazoria, a public meeting of those favoring the separation was called, and presided over by Henry Smith. Among those participating were L. Rainey, S. Bowen, C. D. Sayre, A. G. Miles, J. Calvit, Sterling McNeill, Dr. Council, J. H. Polly, J. W. Cloud, P. Smith, P. R. Splane, Oliver Jones, Dr. Parrott and David Randon.

The election for delegates was held in March, 1833, and the Convention met in San Felipe in April following. William H. Wharton was elected President and Thomas Hastings, Secretary. We have no means of knowing the exact number of delegates, as their proceedings were never published, and were probably lost when San Felipe was burned in 1836. Among the more important committees, Sam Houston was chairman of the one to draft a Constitution, and David C. Burnet of the one to draw up a memorial to the General Government. The Constitution may be found in Edwards' history. It is Republican in form, and secures the right of trial by jury, and is very much like the constitutions of the States of the North American Union, with modifications to adapt it to the situation of the Mexican Federation. The memorial prepared by Burnet may be found in Yoakum's history. It is a long and very able document. We copy a paragraph relating to the evils of a continued connection with Coahuila :

“That conjunction was in its origin unnatural and constrained, and the longer it is continued, the more disastrous it will prove. The two territories are disjunct in all their prominent respective relations. In point of locality, they approximate only by a strip of sterile and useless territory, which must long remain a comparative wilderness, and present many serious embarrassments to that facility of intercourse which should always exist between the seat of government and its remote population. In respect to commerce and its various intricate relations, there is no community of interests between them. In point of climate and natural productions, the two territories are equally dissimilar. Coahuila is a pastoral and a mining country, and Texas is characteristically an agricultural district.”

For these and many other reasons, the memorialists pray that Texas may be erected into a separate State. Three commissioners were selected to proceed to the city of Mexico, to lay the Constitution and Memorial before the Congress and the executive authorities of the nation. Stephen F. Austin was the only one who undertook the journey.

Immediately after the adjournment of the Convention,



Austin started for the city of Mexico to fulfill the objects of his mission.\* (See Austin.) He found Farias, the Vice-President, occupying the place of Santa Anna, who had retired to his hacienda to mature his plans for abandoning the Republicans, forming an alliance with the Church party, and overthrowing the Constitution and establishing a central despotism. Though Austin failed in his main purpose, he succeeded in having modified the oppressive edicts of Bustamente against Americans. After several months delay, and ineffectual attempts to secure a separate government, he finally started home; was arrested at Saltillo, and taken back to the city and thrown into prison, where he languished for nearly two years; part of the time deprived of the light of day and of the use of books and papers.

Texas was comparatively quiet during the early months of 1834; but Coahuila was in a state of revolution. The Legislature had transferred the seat of government from Saltillo to Monclova. To this the inhabitants of the former city objected, and on the 10th of July, *pronounced* against the State government and elected Jose Maria Goribar, Governor. The Ayuntamiento of Monclova, in conjunction with some members of the Legislature, elected Juan Jose Elguezabal, Governor. The rival parties were preparing for war, when commissioners from each met and agreed to refer the question in dispute to Santa Anna, who ordered a new election.

Santa Anna now began to give serious attention to the situation in Texas. On the 5th of October, 1834, he convoked a meeting to consider the Texas question. It was

\* No complete list of the members of the Convention of 1833 can be found. We subjoin a partial list: Stephen F. Austin, David G. Burnet, Sam Houston, W. H. Wharton, Henry Smith, Ira R. Lewis, Oliver Jones, Gail Borden, Jr., R. M. Williamson, Jesse Grimes, F. Bingham, James Kerr, Jared E. Groce, John D. Newell, R. B. Royall, George Sutherland, and Eli Mercer. The commissioners sent to Mexico were, besides Austin, J. B. Miller, William M. Wharton, or, as Kennedy says, Erasmo Seguin, in place of Wharton.

composed of his four Secretaries of State, the three representatives from Coahuila in the Federal Congress, three of his confidential generals, Lorenzo de Zavalla and Stephen F. Austin. The latter strenuously urged the separation of Texas from Coahuila. This was bitterly opposed by Victor Blanco and the other members from Coahuila. After a three hours' discussion, Santa Anna resolved

1. "That he would meditate maturely the decree repealing the 11th article of the law of the 6th of April, 1830, and, if no objections were presented, he would give it his sanction.

2. "That a corps, composed of cavalry, infantry, and artillery, four thousand strong, should be stationed at Bexar for the protection of the coast and frontier of the country, to be under the command of General Mexia.

3. "That proper steps should be taken to have regular mails, and to remove all obstacles to the agricultural and other industries of the inhabitants, who are viewed with the greatest regard.

4. "That Texas must necessarily remain united with Coahuila, because it had not the elements warranting a separation; nor would it be convenient. And although it might be allowed to form a Territory, if the inhabitants called for it, yet, the dismembering of a State was unknown to the Mexican laws, and he would be at a loss how to proceed."

The above conditions, especially the second and fourth, were hard on Texas. What a large force and how strangely located to protect either the coast or the frontier! And then the objection to dismembering a State was puerile, as the union of Coahuila with Texas was conceded to be only temporary. However, Austin appears to have confided in the President's professions of friendship, and although he was still held "in durance vile," wrote on the 2d of December, after the settlement had been effected between the contending factions in Coahuila: "All is changed since October of last year. Then there was no local government in Texas; now there is, and the most of your evils have been remedied, so that it is now important to promote union with all the State, and keep down all kinds of excitement. All is going well. The President, General Santa Anna, has solemnly and publicly declared

that he will sustain the federal representative system, as it now exists, and he will be sustained by all parties."

The Texans generally failed to view so favorably the plans of the aspiring President, and doubted his professions of attachment to a representative government. The real purpose of Santa Anna was soon disclosed. Of this purpose, and its results to Texas, we will treat hereafter.





**STEPHEN F. AUSTIN.**



PART IV  

---

**THE REVOLUTION.**  

---

FROM 1835 TO 1836.





## CHAPTER I.

SANTA ANNA DEVELOPING HIS NEW POLICY—AUSTIN STILL A STATE PRISONER—  
CITIZENS DISARMED—ZACATECAS RESISTS THE USURPER—FRAUDS IN COAHUILA  
—LEGISLATURE DISPERSED BY COS—MILAM AND VIESCA TAKEN PRISONERS—  
REPUBLICANS DEFEATED AT ZACATECAS—SANTA ANNA DICTATOR—PARTIES IN  
TEXAS—CAPTAIN THOMPSON AND THE CORREO—PROSCRIBED PATRIOTS.

**V**IEWED from a material stand-point, the infant settlements in Texas were, at the commencement of the revolutionary period, in a most prosperous and encouraging state. The colonists had found what they sought—delightful homes in a most desirable country. Population was steadily on the increase; herds of cattle and horses were multiplying; cotton, sugar, corn, etc., were produced with little cultivation, in the greatest quantities. With such an abundance of the necessaries, and even the luxuries of life, the planters were contented and happy. But the prospect, so pleasing to contemplate, was overhung with dark and portentous clouds in the political horizon. In Mexico, Santa Anna had resumed the reins of government, and was gradually developing his plans for the overthrow of the Republic and the establishment of a centralized despotism. He was ambitious, unscrupulous, and whimsical. He had betrayed and abandoned the party that elevated him to the presidency, and was now in full accord with the aristocratic and church party—a party against which he had been contending all his previous life. He had somewhat mitigated the rigors of Austin's imprisonment, but kept him in confinement. He still held out hopes to Austin, that his petition in reference to Texas might ultimately be granted. But Austin was ignorant of

the charges under which he had been arrested, and had vainly sought a tribunal competent to take cognizance of his case.

Among the concessions to Texas, was an additional delegate in the legislature of the joint State. But owing to the revolution in Coahuila, this proved of no advantage. In the elections in the fall of 1834, the Centralist party, now headed by Santa Anna, was everywhere triumphant, except in Zacatecas, and Coahuila and Texas. At the meeting of Congress, Zacatecas was declared in a state of rebellion; and to secure perfect quiet, an act was passed reducing the number of militia to one soldier for each five hundred inhabitants, and *disarming* the remainder. Congress also claimed the power to modify, at will, the Constitution of 1824, under which they were elected. These acts of usurpation not only justified, but demanded resistance on the part of the real Republicans of the nation. Zacatecas prepared to resist, and the legislature of Coahuila protested.

At the election held in pursuance of the award of Santa Anna, Augustin Viesca was elected governor, and Ramon Musquiz vice-governor of the State. One of the first acts of the newly-convened Legislature was the fraudulent and unwarranted sale of 400 leagues of Texas land. But this act, passed March 14, by the Legislature, was abrogated by the National Congress on the 25th of April following. The act was fraudulent, and its abrogation unconstitutional.\*

\* This note on the successive occupants of the executive chair, is from a sketch of this period, written by Judge Burnet, and found in the Texas Almanac of 1849:—"The last decree bearing the signature of Governor Villaseñor is dated July 3, 1834. The next, without date, is signed by J. A. Tijerina, President of the Administrative Council. Next in order, No. 292, March 12, 1835, is subscribed by Jose M. Gantu, who appears as governor *ad interim*, but soon retires behind the curtain; and decree No. 295 introduces one Borego, whose signature indicates his being governor *pro tem*. He figures onward to decree No. 299, of April 14, when Augustin Viesca appears in his official robes."

Scarcely had Viesca assumed the gubernatorial reins at Monclova, when the deputies from Saltillo withdrew, and after Mexican fashion, *pronounced* against the new government. In this they were encouraged by the commanding general, Cos, the brother-in-law of Santa Anna, who was at once invested with civil, as well as military authority. Cos hastily dispersed the Legislature in session at Monclova. Viesca, at first, determined to remove the executive archives to San Antonio, and had traveled one day in this direction, when he changed his mind and resolved to submit to Santa Anna. Arriving at Monclova, he again changed his mind, and started for Texas in company with B. R. Milam and John Cameron. The party was overtaken and captured by the soldiers of Cos, and all started for safe-keeping to the castle of San Juan de Ulloa; but fortunately all, at different times and places, made their escape and reached Texas in safety.

In April, Santa Anna, at the head of an army of nearly five thousand men, started toward Zacatecas to reduce that Republican State to submission. Governor Francisco Garcia was a pure Republican and a civilian of considerable experience, but with no military reputation. With troops in number about equal to those under Santa Anna, he marched out of the city and occupied the Guadalupe plains. Here, on the morning of May 11th, was fought a most bloody and, to the Republicans, a most disastrous battle. Two thousand of their number were killed or wounded, and the remainder taken prisoners.

The situation was briefly this: The governor was a prisoner; and the Legislature had been dispersed by the military under General Cos, who assumed dictatorial powers, subordinate only to his master, Santa Anna. At the Federal capital, the Congress had been dissolved; the constitution overthrown; the civil power annihilated; and it only needed the Plan of Toluca, formally proclaimed August 8th, clothing the President with unlimited power,

and the decree of the despot, October 3d, suspending the functions of all State Legislatures, to complete the revolution in Mexico.

While the people of Texas were thus left with scarcely a semblance of civil government, they held no allegiance to the military despotism which had superseded the constitutional authorities in Mexico. The political chiefs and Alcaldes still exercised their functions; but the laws and precedents by which they were guided were of Spanish origin, and illy accorded with the principles of civil liberty prevalent among the Anglo-American colonists. Mostly farmers, they were naturally averse to any warlike measures that could be honorably averted. A few were for submission to Santa Anna. Others were for quietly awaiting the return of Austin, who, as late as March 10th, wrote: "The territorial question is now dead. The advocates of that measure are now strongly in favor of a State government, and the subject is before Congress. A call has been made upon the President for information on the subject, and I am assured the President will make his communication in a few days, and that it will be decidedly in favor of Texas and the State." Still another small but active party favored an immediate declaration of Texan independence. R. M. Williamson, one of the leaders of the war party, in a famous address, on the 4th of July, declared that, "Our country, our liberty, our lives are all involved in the present contest between the State and the military."

While Santa Anna was deluding Austin and the Texans with promises of giving *favorable* attention to their demands, he was making *active* preparations for the military occupancy of the province. In July Gen. Ugartechea, with about 500 men, landed on Lavaca Bay, and proceeded at once to San Antonio. His purpose was still ostensibly to collect the revenue. He sent Captain Tenorio with twenty men to Anahuac, to take charge of the custom-house. The Texans justly complained of the enormous dues demanded,

and a company, under W. B. Travis, who was still smarting under his former treatment, surrounded Tenorio, and disarmed him and his soldiers. This high-handed act was severely condemned by the Ayuntamiento of Liberty, and that of San Felipe, after investigating the affair, released Tenorio and his men, and restored their arms and papers.

"An exaggerated account of these proceedings," says Kennedy, "having reached General Cos, he dispatched Captain Thompson, a naturalized citizen of Mexico, in the war schooner *Correo*, to Galveston, to inquire into the circumstances of the affair, and report as soon as possible the result of his investigation, at Matamoras. Thompson proved himself altogether unfit for his mission. Instead of instituting an inquiry into the facts of the alleged outrage, he assumed the character of a blustering dictator, exceeded his orders, and under the pretext of protecting the revenue, attacked and captured a vessel in the Texas trade. This had the effect of irritating the public mind against both Thompson and the government, and the former having continued to linger on the Texas coast, the *San Felipe*, a merchant vessel, commanded by Captain Hurd, captured the *Correo*, and sent it and its commander to New Orleans, under a charge of piracy."

On reporting to Ugartechea, at San Antonio, Tenorio was sent back to the Brazos on a still more ungracious errand. Lorenzo de Zavalla, after having been sent into honorable exile, as Minister to France, had, when he heard of the despotic proceedings of *Santa Anna*, his former trusted friend, sought refuge in Texas. *Santa Anna* dreaded the influence of so stern a Republican, and ordered his immediate arrest. On the 24th of July, Tenorio presented this order to Wylie Martin, acting political chief of the Brazos. Martin, under some pretext, declined to undertake the arrest. Soon afterwards another order came from headquarters, ordering the arrest of R. M. Williamson, W. B. Travis, Samuel M. Williams, Mosely Baker, F. W. Johnson, and

John H. Moore; and a subsequent order included the names of J. M. Carravahal and Juan Zembrano. The two last named being Mexican citizens of San Antonio, were seized, and sent into Mexico. No officer could be found to attempt to take the others. The last order was dated September 3d.



**MEXICANS.**





## CHAPTER II.

COMMITTEES OF SAFETY—AUSTIN'S RETURN—CANDELLE AT GOLIAD—CONFLICT AT GONZALES—GOLIAD CAPTURED BY THE TEXANS—AUSTIN IN COMMAND ON THE GUADALUPE—THE CONSULTATION—PROVISIONAL GOVERNMENT—AUSTIN MARCHES TOWARDS SAN ANTONIO—BATTLE OF CONCEPCION—THE GRASS FIGHT—THE EXECUTIVE COUNCIL.

**A** SELF-RELIANT people, whose interests and liberties are imperilled, will not long lack the means necessary for concert in action. Texas was threatened with invasion by a government to which it had a right to look for protection. Again, the Indians were more or less troublesome. A party of merchants, transporting goods westward a few miles from Gonzales, was surrounded by a band of hostile Lipans, and the merchants and teamsters killed, and the goods taken. Ostensibly to provide for protection against these savages, committees of safety were organized in different municipalities. It was the business of these committees to collect and disseminate information—to secure arms and ammunition, and in case of necessity, to call out and drill the militia.\*

It was thought advisable to have a Central Committee, to give direction to public affairs, and on the 17th of July, delegates from some of the adjacent municipalities met at

\* We have not the names composing all these committees. The first organized was at Bastrop. The members were J. W. Bunton, S. Wolfenbarger, D. C. Barrett, John McGehee, B. Manlove and Ed. Burleson. At San Felipe, R. M. Williamson was chairman. There was a large committee at Brazoria—John A. Wharton, W. D. C. Hall, Henry Smith, Silas Dinsmore, James F. Perry, John G. McNeill, Robert H. Williams, William H. Jack, F. A. Bingham, John Hodge, Wade H. Bynum, Branch T. Archer, William T. Austin, P. Bertrand and Isaac Tinsley. At Nacogdoches, Sam Houston, Thomas J. Rusk, Frost Thorn and others composed the committee.

San Felipe, and organized what was called an Administrative Council.\*

Among other acts, this Council sent Messrs. Barrett and Gritton on a mission of peace to Ugartechea at San Antonio. The mission was abortive. The idea of a general Consultation, to be composed of delegates from all the municipalities was still discussed. Zavalla had warmly advocated such a meeting; and while the subject was as yet undecided, Stephen F. Austin returned to his colony. His return was hailed with delight, and he was at once installed chairman of the San Felipe Council. Austin, however, was chagrined to find Texas in so disorganized a condition. "I had fully hoped," said he, "to have found Texas at peace and in tranquility; but regret to find it in commotion—all disorganized, all in anarchy, and threatened with immediate hostilities." In a speech on the 8th of September, at Brazoria, he declared in favor of their "constitutional rights, and the peace and security of Texas; also for a general Consultation of the people." The term *Consultation* was used, because Ugartechea had especially objected to the word *Convention*, as savoring too much of revolution. The election was held on the 3d of October.

Notwithstanding Santa Anna's active preparations for war, he still professed to have very pacific views in reference to Texas. He had verbally and expressly authorized Col. Austin to "say to the people that he was their friend, that he wished for their prosperity, and would do all he could to promote it; and that in the new Constitution he would use his influence to give to the people of Texas a special organization suited to their education, habits and situation."

\* The following delegates constituted this Council: From Columbia—J. A. Wharton, James F. Perry, Sterling M'Neill, James Knight and Josiah H. Bell. From Austin—A. Somervell, John Rice Jones, Wylie Martin, Jesse Bartlett and C. B. Stewart. From Mina—D. C. Barrett. R. M. Williamson, Wylie Martin, S. F. Austin and R. R. Royall were, at different times, chairmen of this body, and A. Huston and C. B. Stewart were secretaries.

The treatment which the Texans received, in that portion of the State occupied by Santa Anna's troops, did not exactly correspond with these professions of peace and good-will. We have seen that Ugartechea had arrested two staunch Republican citizens of San Antonio, and had sent them to Monterey; and the efforts he was putting forth to arrest Zavalla and others. At Goliad, Colonel Nicholas Candelle, the commander, signalized the commencement of his barbarous reign, by imprisoning the Alcalde and extorting from the *Administrador* a forced loan of five thousand dollars, "under the penalty of being sent on foot to Bexar in ten hours. He also stripped the town of arms, pressed the people into the ranks as soldiers, and gave notice that troops would be quartered upon the citizens—five to a family—and should be supported by them."

In pursuance of the general plan to disarm all citizens, Ugartechea sent Captain Castenado, with about 150 men, to seize a small cannon which had been given to the corporation of Gonzales for protection against the Indians. The citizens, unwilling to part with the gun, organized and prepared to resist, by force, the demand of Castenado. The ferry boats were removed to the east side of the river, and a guard, under Captain Albert Martin, stationed on the river bank to prevent the crossing of the Mexican soldiers. The first demand was made on the 29th of September. Captain Martin then had but eighteen men, but in a day or two the number had increased to 168. A military organization took place; John H. Moore being elected Colonel, and J. W. E. Wallace, Lieutenant-Colonel. Castenado was in camp about half a mile from the ferry, and Moore determined to cross the river with the cannon and compel him to retreat. During a fog on the morning of October 2d, the Mexicans took a position on a high mound, prepared for defense. The officers of the two parties met and failed to come to an agreement, though Castenado professed himself a Republican and unwilling to fight the

Texans. The Texans, however, with the brass piece, advanced for an attack, and discharged their gun. The Mexicans hastily retreated to Bexar.

The news of the conflict at Gonzales roused a warlike spirit throughout the country. Captain George Collinsworth, of Matagorda, raised a company for the capture of the Mexican garrison at Goliad. The night this company reached the neighborhood of the town, they fortunately fell in with the celebrated Benjamin R. Milam, who had escaped from the guard at Monterey, and was making his way back to Texas. Reinforced by so valuable a recruit, an attack was at once determined upon. As there had been no formal declaration of war, the garrison was not anticipating an attack, and were wholly unprepared for it. The Texans numbered only forty-eight men. They first attacked the quarters of Lieutenant-Colonel Sandoval, the commandant. The sentinel on duty fired his piece, and was immediately shot down. The door of Sandoval's room was broken open with axes and he was taken prisoner. As the result of the capture, the Texans took about twenty-five prisoners, three hundred stand of arms, and military stores to the value of \$10,000. The place was left in command of Captain Phillip Dimit. Goliad was captured October 8th. Three weeks later, Captain Westover captured, after some fighting, the Mexican fort at Lipantitlan, on the Nueces river.

The men who, at the first call to arms, had rushed to Gonzales, had effected no permanent organization, and were unprepared for a regular campaign. They recognized no civil authority, and had no leader who commanded general confidence. Under these circumstances, messengers went from Gonzales to San Felipe, with a request that Colonel Austin should be sent to the command. His services were not especially required in the Council, and that body gave its consent to his departure. He arrived at Gonzales on the 11th of October, and was selected as the commander by the soldiers in camp.

October 16th was the day fixed for the meeting of the Consultation; but on that day there were but thirty-one delegates present, and an adjournment was moved to November 1st. It was the 3d of the month before a quorum appeared, when the body was organized by electing Branch T. Archer, President, and P. B. Dexter, Secretary. The next day R. R. Royall, chairman of the Administrative Council, turned over all the papers and documents in his possession, and that council ceased its functions. A few of the members were for an immediate declaration of independence; but a majority thought it advisable to remain under the Constitution of 1824.

On the 5th of November, the following preamble and resolutions were adopted:

"WHEREAS, General Antonio Lopez de Santa Anna, and other military chieftains, have by force of arms overthrown the Federal institutions of Mexico and dissolved the social compact which existed between Texas and other members of the Mexican Confederacy; now the good people of Texas, availing themselves of their natural rights,

"*Do solemnly declare*—1. That they have taken up arms in defence of their rights and liberties which are threatened by encroachments of military despots, and in defence of the Republican institutions of the Constitution of Mexico of 1824.

"2. That Texas is no longer morally or civilly bound by the compact of the union. Yet, stimulated by the generosity and sympathy common to a free people, they offer their support and assistance to such members of the Mexican Confederacy as will take up arms against military despotism.

"3. They do not acknowledge that the present authorities of the nominal Mexican Republic have the right to govern within the limits of Texas.

"4. That they will not cease to carry on war against said authorities while their troops are within the limits of Texas.

"5. They hold it to be their right, during the disorganization of the Federal system and the reign of despotism, to withdraw from the union and establish an independent government, or adopt such measures as they may deem best calculated to protect their rights and liberties; but they will continue faithful to the Mexican government so long as that nation is governed by the constitution and laws that were formed for the government of the political association.

"6. That Texas is responsible for the expenses of her armies now in the field.

"7. That the public faith of Texas is pledged for the payment of all debts contracted by her agents.

"8. That she will reward by donations in land, all who volunteer their services in her present struggle, and receive them as citizens.

"9. These declarations we solemnly avow to the world, and call God to witness their truth and sincerity; and invoke defeat and disgrace upon our heads, should we prove guilty of duplicity."

On the 12th an ordinance passed creating a provisional government, and an Executive Council, to be composed of one member from each municipality. Henry Smith was elected Governor, James W. Robinson, Lieutenant-Governor and Sam Houston, commander of the army to be raised. The Consultation adjourned on the 14th of November; after selecting S. F. Austin, Branch T. Archer and William H. Wharton as Commissioners to the United States. \*

\* The following is a list of members of the Consultation:

*Municipality of Austin*—William Menifee, Wily Martin, Thomas Barnett, Randall Jones and Jesse Burnham; *of Bevil (afterwards Jasper)*—John Bevil, Wyatt Hanks, Thomas Holmes, S. H. Everett and John H. Blount; *of San Augustine*—A. Huston, Jacob Garrett, William N. Sigler, A. E. C. Johnson, Henry Augustine, Alexander Horton and A. G. Kellogg; *of Harrisburg*—Lorenzo de Zavala, Clement C. Dyer, William P. Harris, M. W. Smith, John W. Moore and David B. Macomb; *of Matagorda*—Ira R. Lewis, R. R. Royall, Charles Wilson and John D. Newell; *of Viesca (afterwards Milam)*—J. G. W. Pierson, J. L. Hood, Samuel T. Allen, A. G. Perry, J. W. Parker and Alexander Thomson; *of Nacogdoches*—William Whitaker, Sam Houston, Daniel Parker, James W. Robinson and N. Robins; *of Columbia (afterwards Brazoria)*—John A. Wharton, Henry Smith, Edwin Waller and J. S. D. Byrom; *of Liberty*—Henry Millard, J. B. Wood, A. B. Harden and George M. Patrick; *of Mina (afterwards Bastrop)*—D. C. Barrett, Robert M. Williamson and James S. Lester; *of Washington*—Asa Mitchell, Elijah Collard, Jesse Grimes, Philip Coe and Asa Hoxie; *of Gonzales*—William S. Fisher, J. D. Clements, George W. Davis, Benjamin Fuqua, James Hodges and William W. Arrington; *of Tenehaw (afterwards Shelby)*—Martin Parmer; *of Jefferson*—Claiborne West.

The following named persons were at different times members of the General Council from the several Municipalities:

*Austin*—Wily Martin, Thomas Barnett, and Randall Jones; *Colorado*—William Menifee and Jesse Burnham; *San Augustine*—A. Huston and A. E. C. Johnson; *Nacogdoches*—Daniel Parker; *Washington*—Jesse Grimes, Asa Mitchell, Asa Hoxie, Philip Coe and Elijah Collard; *Milam*—A. G. Perry and Alexander Thomson; *Liberty*—Henry Millard; *Shelby*—Martin Parmer and James B. Tucker; *Gonzales*—J. D. Clements; *Bastrop*—D. C. Barrett and Bartlett Sims; *Matagorda*—R. R. Royall, Charles Wilson and I. R. Lewis; *Harrisburg*—William P. Harris; *Brazoria*—John A. Wharton and Edwin Waller; *Jasper*—Wyatt Hanks; *Jefferson*—Claiborne West and G. A. Patillo; *Victoria*—J. A. Padilla and John J. Linn; *Refugio*—James

In September, General Cos, with 500 additional soldiers, landed at Pass Cavallo and marched immediately to San Antonio, superseding General Ugartechea, who was dispatched to the Rio Grande for reinforcements.

Austin, after reaching Gonzales, and effecting a thorough reorganization of the volunteers, started for San Antonio, with the intention of capturing that stronghold of the enemy and key to Texas. He reached the Mission La Espada, nine miles below the city, on the 20th, where he remained a few days, resting and recruiting his men.\* On the 27th, he detached the companies of Fannin and Bowie, consisting of ninety-two men, to ascend the river and, if

Power and John Malone; *Goliad*—Ira Westover; *San Patricio*—Lewis Ayers and John McMullen; *Jackson*—James Kerr; *Sabine*—J. S. Lane.

The following were also officers of the Provisional Government:

*Secretaries of the Council*—P. B. Dexter and E. M. Pease; *Secretaries of the Governor*—Charles B. Stewart and Edward B. Wood; *Treasurer*—Joshua Fletcher; *Auditor*—John W. Moody; *Comptroller*—H. C. Hudson; *Post Master-General*—John R. Jones.

\* The following account of *the Flag of Texas*, is from an address of Hon. Guy M. Bryan, before the Texas Veteran Association, in 1873. Travis and the men of Alamo died fighting for the Mexican flag of 1824, as they had not heard of the Declaration of Independence. The Lone Star emblem was a fortunate accident. A half century since overcoats were ornamented with large brass buttons. It happened that the buttons on the coat of Governor Smith had the impress of a five-pointed star. For want of a seal, one of these buttons was cut off and used:

"The first Lone Star flag that I can find account of was made at Harrisburgh in this county, and presented to the company of Captain Andrew Robinson, in 1835. The Lone Star was white, five pointed, and set in ground of red.

"The Georgia battalion flag was azure, lone star, five points, in white field. This flag was raised as national flag on the walls of Goliad by Fannin when he heard of the Declaration of Independence. National flag adopted by President Burnet, at Harrisburg, 9th of April, 1836, for naval service—union blue, star central, and thirteen stripes, alternate red and white. December 10th, 1836, Congress adopted national flag—azure ground, with large golden star central, combined with flag adopted by President Burnet. This was amended by act, January 25th, 1839, that made the permanent flag blue perpendicular stripe, width one-third of the whole, white star, five points in the centre, and the two horizontal stripes of equal breadth, upper white and lower red."

practicable, select a more suitable camping place. Fannin spent that night in a bend of the San Antonio river, near the Concepcion Mission, about one mile and a half below the city, on the east side of the river. This movement was, of course, well known in the city; and no doubt Cos congratulated himself with the thought that he would easily capture this reconnoitering party. The next morning, Oct. 28th, was foggy and favored his design. But the Texans had chosen a favorable position for defense. The river was skirted with timber, with a narrow second bank, considerably lower than the level prairie. Around this depression of the surface, there was a bluff from six to ten feet high. The command was divided into two parties, each one taking a position along the skirt of timber on the upper and lower sides of the bend, having the open plain in front of them. It was naturally a strong position, the river and timber being in the rear of each division, with this natural parapet to fall behind in case of an attack. This, however, the Texans did not expect, and some of their number had ascended to the roof of the Mission, to obtain a clear view, as soon as possible after daylight, and were thus cut off from their companions during the fight. During the dense fog, a considerable force of cavalry and infantry, with one cannon, had marched out from the city and surrounded the Texans on three sides. The fight commenced about eight o'clock, the Mexican line presenting a continual sheet of flame. The Texans fired more cautiously and with more deadly effect. Their rifles picked off the gunners from the enemy's cannon. Three times the Mexicans sounded the charge, but in vain; the Texans hurled them back, and remained masters of the field. Sixteen dead bodies were found near the abandoned cannon, which had been discharged, but five times. In this, the first real engagement of our Revolution the Texans lost one—Rich-





**SAM. HOUSTON.**



ard Andrews—killed. As reported by the Texans, the Mexican loss was about sixty killed.\*

On the 31st of October, Austin moved up about a half a mile above, on the Alamo ditch, near the old mill; and the next day, near the powder house, one mile east of the city. He then had about one thousand men in camp. But as they were but illy provided with arms and munitions of war, and without cannon, he was but poorly prepared to attack a still larger force, in a strongly fortified city. His long confinement had enfeebled his system, and he was destitute of experience as a military commander. The Texans in camp were characteristically independent, and commented somewhat freely on the plans of the commander. Bowie resigned his position as an officer, and others volunteered any amount of good advice. Austin in the mean time dispatched a messenger for the cannon at Gonzales, to be used in an assault on the place.

As an illustration of the difficulties which beset the commander, it may not be improper to state that on the 13th of November, the day after General Houston was elected commander of the army *to be raised*—not the volunteers in the field, who had chosen Austin as their General—Houston wrote a confidential letter to Fannin, in which he said: "The army without means ought never to have passed the Guadalupe without the proper munitions of war to reduce San Antonio. Therefore the error cannot be in falling back to an eligible position." In another sentence, Houston advised the retreat to La Bahia and Gonzales.

On the 2d of November, a full meeting of the commis-

\* As General Austin has been reflected upon, for separating his men so near the enemy, it is but justice to state that his order to Bowie was, to "Select a secure position to encamp the army *to-night*; and report with as little delay as possible, to give time to the army to march and take up its position before night. [Signed]

S. F. AUSTIN.

"By order of P. W. Grayson, *Aid-de-Camp*."

Dated Oct. 27.

sioned officers had decided, with but one dissenting voice, against an attempt to take the city by storm; and Austin was endeavoring to enforce a siege. On the 14th, Cos, to lessen the consumption of forage in the city, started some three hundred of his cavalry horses to the Rio Grande. Austin sent out Travis, with about forty men, who overtook and captured the horses and brought them into the Texan camp. Tired of the inactive life around the city, many of the Texans had gone home, so that by this time there were only about six hundred men in camp.

On the 26th of November, Cos sent out a party of men to cut grass for his horses. As this party was returning to the city, they were discovered by the Texans; and a hundred men, rallying under Bowie, dashed forward to give them battle. Others followed. Simultaneously with the march of the Texans, a company, with two pieces of artillery, started from the city and a running fight took place, in which the Mexicans were reported to have lost fifty killed and several wounded. Two days after this "Grass Fight," General Austin resigned the command of the army to fulfill his mission to the United States; and was succeeded by Edward Burleson, chosen by the volunteers in his stead.

What we have denominated the "Executive Council," is, in the ordinance creating it, called "General Council," and Kennedy calls it a "Legislative Council." The third article of the ordinance declares that "the duties of the General Council shall be to devise ways and means; to advise and assist the Governor in the discharge of his functions. They shall pass no laws *except* such as, in their opinion, the emergency of the country requires," etc. This exception invested them with unlimited power; provided an emergency demanded the exercise of such power. Among the first doings of this body, was the establishment of a General Post-office, and a tariff of duties on imported merchandise. Six ports of entry were created, Sabine, Gal-

veston, Brazos, Matagorda, Lavaca and Copano. They estimated the annual cotton crop at 60,000 bales, and fixed the export duty at one and a quarter cent a pound; and a tonnage duty, which, they supposed would amount to about as much more. They levied a duty on imports of from fifteen to thirty *per centum*. Had there been no interruption of trade, and no extraordinary expenses, the sums derived from export and import duties, and that on tonnage, would have gone far toward supporting the expense of administering the government. But this was prospective; and, to meet the present necessities, Messrs. Austin, Archer and Wharton, the Commissioners to the United States, were empowered to negotiate a loan of \$1,000,000, in bonds of \$1,000 each.

A law of the Legislature of 1834, had provided for the appointment of a first and second judge for each municipality, but as none had been appointed, the Council proceeded to do so, on the 16th of November. The courts were directed to proceed under the provision of the common law of England.\*

The commander-in-chief was authorized to accept the services of 5,000 volunteers, and 1,200 regulars. During

\*The following judges were appointed: Viesca, (Milam,) Joseph L. Hood and John Martin; Liberty, William Hardin and Henry W. Farley; Brazoria, L. C. Munson and Robert Mills; Washington, James Hall and Hugh McGaffin; Gonzales, Andrew Ponton and Charles Lockhart; Mina, (Bastrop,) Sinclair Gervis and Thomas Kinney; Nacogdoches, John Forbes and Radford Berry; San Augustine, John G. Love and W. N. Siglier; Harrisburg, T. H. League and Nathaniel Lynch; Bevil, (Jasper,) George W. Smyth and Joseph Mott; Tenahaw, (Shelby,) Emory Rains and James English; Jefferson, Chichester Chaplain and William T. Hatton; Victoria, Placido Benevedes and Francisco Cardinas; Goliad, Ene Vasques and Robert Galon; Bexar, John N. Seguin and Miguel Arcenfega; Refugio, Martin Power and Martin Lawler; Austin, George Ewing and Gail Borden; Matagorda, Charles Wilson and Thomas Duke.

the months of November and December the Council elected a full corps of officers. \*

\* For the regulars, the Council elected one Major-General, one Adjutant-General, two Colonels, three Lieutenant-Colonels, three Majors, one Second Major, twenty-six Captains, fifty-six Lieutenants. For the volunteers, one Colonel, one Lieutenant-Colonel, one Major, two Captains, and two Lieutenants. But without being too specific—including all arms of the service; infantry, cavalry, artillery, and rangers, there were one hundred and fifteen officers—not including Major-General Chambers and his staff of reserves. But few of those actually in the army were elected. On the day of the attack on San Antonio, Sublett was elected Colonel over Burleson; and Johnson, the commander at San Antonio, was afterward elected Major, to fill a vacancy. Notwithstanding this formidable array of officers, the ranks filled up but slowly. A report presented to the Convention, March 10, 1836, stated that there were at Goliad 30 infantry—privates; and 30 cavalry at Bexar. Besides these, Captain Turner had reported with a company of 56 men, and Captain Teel with forty men.

### CHAPTER III.

A NAVY IMPROVISED—SAN ANTONIO INVESTED—CAPTURED BY THE TEXANS—LIBERAL TERMS TO THE VANQUISHED—BREACH BETWEEN GOVERNOR SMITH AND HIS COUNCIL—AUSTIN'S TIMELY ADVICE—CONVENTION OF 1836 DECLARES THE INDEPENDENCE OF TEXAS—GOVERNMENT AD INTERIM—PROPOSED DESCENT UPON MATAMORAS.

PROVISION was also made for the organization of a navy. Two vessels, the William Robbins and the Invincible, were purchased of Messrs. M'Kinney and Williams, of Quintana. The Mexicans had two vessels of war threatening the Texas coast: the Bravo and the Montezuma. These vessels greatly interrupted trade. During the month of November, Messrs. Peter Kerr, J. M. Carravajal and Fernando De Leon, of Victoria, started from New Orleans with goods, including some ammunition for the Government at San Felipe. The vessel was captured by the Bravo and run on the beach, near Pass Cavallo. The Bravo was afterward driven off by a norther, when Captain Hurd, of the William Robbins, took possession of the vessel and turned her over to Captain S. Rhodes Fisher, with a crew from Matagorda. The Matagorda crew claimed salvage on the vessel, and this produced some discussion in the Council. "Governor Smith," says Yoakum, "being duly advised of these proceedings, took occasion in a special message to reprehend them severely."

On the 6th of November, 1835, General Mexia, who had before figured as a Republican leader in Mexico and Texas, sailed from New Orleans, with Commodore Hawkins, in the schooner Mary Jane, with about one hundred and thirty men, for the capture of Tampico. The men were deceived, and until they were on the coast in sight of Tampico, most of them supposed they were sailing for

Texas. The expedition was unfortunate. Twenty-eight of them were captured; condemned by a drum-head court martial, and shot. (See Mexia.)

We will now return to the army under General Burleson, encamped before San Antonio. The men were but poorly provided to maintain a siege. Many had gone home, though others were constantly arriving. Still, the number had fallen off nearly one half. At one time there were about fourteen hundred men in camps, though all were not regularly organized into military companies. There were, on the first of December, six hundred in the ranks of General Burleson; while Cos had a much larger force in the city, occupying a strongly fortified position, and was daily expecting 500 additional troops under General Ugartechea. These troops arrived in time to participate in the defence of the city. Cos had put the place in a thorough state for defence. The old fortress of the Alamo, on the east side of the river, had been repaired, and fortified with cannon. The main plaza, on the west side of the river, was also fortified. The streets entering it were barricaded and protected with artillery. The narrow streets, lined with stone and adobe houses, afforded ample shelter, and admirable positions for its Mexican defenders. Under these circumstances, many of Burleson's officers were in favor of abandoning the siege. On the 2d of December, a council of war was held at the Texan headquarters, at which an assault was determined upon. "With this view," says Burnet, "the army was paraded, and after a stirring address from Colonel William H. Jack, a call was made for volunteers. Four hundred and fifty men, including the New Orleans Grays, advanced to the front and enrolled their names.\* It was decided to make the

\* There were two companies of the New Orleans Grays—R. C. Norris was major, and William G. Cooke and — Breese were captains. They were raised in New Orleans by Col. Christy and Adolphus Sterne. Among the men were Thomas William Ward, Martin K. Snell, Thomas S. Lubbock, Henry S. Fisher, William L. Hunter, John D. McLeod, and others, less distinguished in our history. See map of Texas, 1834.



attack the next morning, December 3d, in three divisions. The old mill a half mile above the town was to be the place of rendezvous, from which the assailants were to advance along three parallel streets, entering the plaza from the north—Flores, Acequia and Soledad. Colonel J. C. Neil was directed to make a *ruse*, by opening fire on the Alamo, with artillery. During the ensuing night, the scouts reported that a man had been seen going from the camp to the town. This induced a suspicion that the enemy had been apprised of the intended assault. Many now regarded the project as utterly hopeless, and threatened to leave unless it was abandoned. Under these circumstances, Colonel Burleson countermanded the order for the assault, and thought of falling back on Goliad. On the same evening three citizens, Messrs. Maverick, Holmes and J. W. Smith, who had been held in duress in the town, were released by General Cos and arrived in camp. They gave minute and encouraging information relative to the garrison, their defences and police. On the next day, Colonel Milam suggested to Burleson, to seize the new enthusiasm excited by these representations, and storm the place without delay. Burleson gave a cheerful assent, and authorized Milam to set about the daring enterprise. Milam promptly stepped forward in front of Burleson's tent, waved his hat with a joyous ringing *huzzah*, and announced that he was going into San Antonio, and called for volunteers to go with him. The response was direct and cordial, and upwards of four hundred men formed in line, and enrolled their names. The residue agreed to remain and give an outside support, which was indispensable. As before agreed upon, the old mill was the place of rendezvous; and 2 o'clock a. m., the hour of meeting; while Colonel Neil was to make a feint upon the Alamo, on the east side of the river. At the appointed time, only three hundred men were on hand; with two field pieces, a twelve and a six-pounder. In consequence of the diminished numbers, the assailants formed in only two divisions, entering Acequia and Soledad streets.

We cannot do better than to give our readers the official reports of General Burleson and Colonel Johnson, of the capture of the city, and the surrender of General Cos :

HEAD-QUARTERS, VOLUNTEER ARMY,  
Bexar, December 14, 1835.

TO HIS EXCELLENCY, THE PROVISIONAL GOVERNOR OF TEXAS :

SIR: I have the satisfaction to inclose a copy of Colonel Johnson's account of the storming and surrender of San Antonio de Bexar, to which I have little to add that can in any way increase the lustre of this brilliant achievement to the federal arms of the volunteer army under my command; and which will, I trust, prove the downfall of the last position of military despotism on our soil of freedom.

At three o'clock on the morning of the 5th instant, Colonel Niel, with a piece of artillery, protected by Captain Roberts and his company, was sent across the river to attack, at five o'clock, the Alamo, on the north side, to draw the attention of the enemy from the advance of the divisions which had to attack the suburbs of the town, under Colonels Milam and Johnson. This service was effected to my entire satisfaction; and the party returned to camp at nine o'clock A. M.

On the advance of the attacking divisions, I formed all the reserve, with the exception of the guard necessary to protect the camp, at the old mill position, and held myself in readiness to advance, in case of necessity, to assist when required; and shortly afterwards passed into the suburbs to reconnoiter, where I found all going on prosperously, and retired with the reserve to the camp. Several parties were sent out mounted, under Captains Cheshire, Coleman and Roberts, to scour the country and endeavor to intercept Ugartechea, who was expected, and ultimately forced an entry, with reinforcements for General Cos. Captains Cheshire, Sutherland and Lewis, with their companies, were sent in as reinforcements to Colonel Johnson, during the period of attack; and Captains Splann and Ruth and Lieutenant Borden, with their companies, together with Lieutenant-Colonels Somerville and Sublett, were kept in readiness for further assistance, if required. On the evening of the 8th, a party from the Alamo, of about fifty men, passed up in front of our camp and opened a brisk fire, but without effect. They were soon obliged to retire precipitately, by opening a six-pounder on them, commanded by Captain Hunnings, by sending a party across the river, and by the advance of Captain Bradley's company, who were stationed above.

On the morning of the 9th, in consequence of advice from Colonel Johnson, of a flag of truce having been sent in, to intimate a desire to capitulate, I proceeded to town, and by two o'clock A. M., of the 10th, a treaty was finally concluded by the commissioners appointed, to which I acceded immediately, deeming the terms highly favorable, considering the strong position and large force of the enemy, which could not be less than thirteen hundred effective men—one thousand one hundred and five having left this morning with General Cos, besides three companies and several small



**EDWARD BURLESON.**



parties which separated from him in consequence of the fourth article of the treaty.

In addition to a copy of the treaty (marked No. 1) I inclose a list (No. 2) of all the valuable property ceded to us by virtue of the capitulation.

General Cos left this morning for the mission of San José, and to-morrow commences his march to the Rio Grande, after complying with all that had been stipulated.

I can not conclude this dispatch without expressing, in the warmest terms, my entire approbation of every officer and soldier in the army, and particularly those who so gallantly volunteered to storm the town, which I have the honor to command, and to say that their bravery and zeal on the present occasion merit the warmest eulogies which I can confer, and the gratitude of their country. The gallant leader of the storming party, Colonel Benjamin R. Milam, fell gloriously on the third day, and his memory will be dear to Texas as long as there exists a grateful heart to feel, or a friend of liberty to lament his worth. His place was most ably filled by Colonel F. W. Johnson, Adjutant-General of the army, whose coolness and prudence, united with daring bravery, could alone have brought matters to so successful an end, with so very small a loss, against so superior a force, and such strong fortifications. To his shining merits on this occasion I bore ocular testimony during the five days' action.

I have also to contribute my praise to Major Bennet, Quartermaster-General, for the diligence and success with which he supplied both armies during the siege and storm.

These dispatches, with a list of killed and wounded, will be handed to your Excellency by my first aid-de-camp, Colonel William T. Austin, who was present as a volunteer during the five days' storm, and whose conduct on this and every other occasion merits my warmest praise.

To-morrow I leave the garrison and town under command of Colonel Johnson, with a sufficient number of men and officers to sustain the same, in case of attack, until assisted from the colonies; so that your Excellency may consider our conquest as sufficiently secured against every attempt of the enemy. The rest of the army will retire to their homes.

I have the honor to be your Excellency's obedient servant,

EDWARD BURLESON,

*Commander-in-Chief of the Volunteer Army.*

GEN. BURLESON, COMMANDER-IN-CHIEF OF THE FEDERAL VOLUNTEER ARMY OF TEXAS:

SIR: I have the honor to acquaint you, that on the morning of the 5th instant, the volunteers for storming the city of Bexar, possessed by the troops of General Cos, entered the suburbs in two divisions, under the command of Colonel Benjamin R. Milam—the first division, under his immediate command, aided by Major R. C. Morris, and the second, under my command, aided by Colonels Grant and Austin, and Adjutant Bristow.

The first division, consisting of the companies of Captains York, Patton, Llewellyn, Crane, English and Landrum, with two pieces and fifteen artillerymen, commanded by Lieutenant-Colonel Franks, took possession of the

house of Don Antonio de la Garza. The second division, composed of the companies of Captains Cooke, Swisher, Edwards, Alley, Duncan, Peacock, Breece and Placido Benavides, took possession of the house of Berrimendi. The last division was exposed for a short time to a very heavy fire of grape and musketry from the whole of the enemy's line of fortification, until the guns of the first division opened their fire, when the enemy's attention was directed to both divisions. At 7 o'clock a heavy cannonading from the town was seconded by a well-directed fire from the Alamo, which for a time prevented the possibility of covering our lines, or effecting a safe communication between the two divisions. In consequence of the twelve-pounder having been dismantled, and the want of proper cover for the other gun, little execution was done by our artillery during the day. We were, therefore, reduced to a close and well-directed fire from our rifles, which, notwithstanding the advantageous position of the enemy, obliged them to slacken their fire, and several times to abandon their artillery within the range of our shot. Our loss during this day was one private killed, one Colonel and one First-Lieutenant severely wounded; one Colonel slightly, three privates dangerously, six severely, and three slightly. During the whole of the night the two divisions were occupied in strengthening their positions, opening trenches, and effecting a safe communication, although exposed to a heavy cross fire from the enemy, which slackened toward morning. I may remark that the want of proper tools rendered this undertaking doubly arduous. At daylight of the 6th, the enemy were observed to have occupied the tops of the houses in our front, where, under the cover of breastworks, they opened through loop-holes a very brisk fire of small-arms on our whole line, followed by a steady cannonading from the town, in front, and the Alamo on the left flank, with few interruptions during the day. A detachment of Captain Crane's company, under Lieutenant W. McDonald, followed by others, gallantly possessed themselves, under a severe fire, of the house to the right, and in advance of the first division, which considerably extended our line; while the rest of the army was occupied in returning the enemy's fire and strengthening our trenches, which enabled our artillery to do some execution, and complete a safe communication from right to left.

Our loss this day amounted to three privates severely wounded, and two slightly. During the night the fire from the enemy was inconsiderable, and our people were occupied in making and filling sand-bags, and otherwise strengthening our lines. At daylight on the 7th, it was discovered that the enemy had, during the night previous, opened a trench on the Alamo side of the river, and on the left flank, as well as strengthening their battery on the cross street leading to the Alamo. From the first they opened a brisk fire of small-arms; from the last a heavy cannonade, as well as small-arms, which was kept up until eleven o'clock, when they were silenced by our superior fire. About twelve o'clock, Henry Carns, of Captain York's company, exposed to a heavy fire from the enemy, gallantly advanced to a house in front of the first division, and with a crowbar forced an entrance, into which the whole of the company immediately followed him, and made a secure lodgment. In the evening, the

enemy renewed a heavy fire from all the positions which could bear upon us; and at half-past three o'clock, as our gallant commander, Colonel Milam, was passing into the yard of my position, he received a rifle-shot in the head, which caused his instant death; an irreparable loss at so critical a moment. Our casualties, otherwise, were only two privates slightly wounded.

At a meeting of officers, held at seven o'clock, I was invested with the chief command, and Major Morris as my second. At ten o'clock P. M., Captains Llewellyn, English, Crane and Landrum, with their respective companies, forced their way into and took possession of the house of Don J. Antonio Navarro, an advanced and important position close to the square. The fire of the enemy was interrupted and slack during the night, and the weather exceedingly cold and wet.

The morning of the 8th continued cold and wet, and but little firing on either side. At nine o'clock the same companies who took possession of Don J. Antonio Navarro's house, aided by a detachment of the Greys, advanced and occupied Zambrano's Row, leading to the square, without any accident. The brave conduct, on this occasion, of William Graham, of Cooke's company of Greys, merits mention. A heavy fire of artillery and small arms was opened on this position by the enemy, who disputed every inch of ground, and, after suffering a severe loss in officers and men, were obliged to retire from room to room, until last they evacuated the whole house. During this time our men were reinforced by a detachment from York's company, under command of Lieutenant Gill.

The cannonading from the camp was exceedingly heavy from all quarters during the day, but did no essential damage.

Our loss consisted of one captain seriously wounded, and two privates severely. At seven o'clock P. M., the party in Zambrano's Row were reinforced by Captains Swisher, Alley, Edwards and Duncan, and their respective companies.

This evening we had undoubted information of the arrival of a strong reinforcement to the enemy, under Colonel Ugartechea. At 10½ o'clock P. M., Captains Cooke and Patton, with the company of New Orleans Greys and a company of Brazoria volunteers, forced their way into the priest's house in the square, although exposed to the fire of a battery of three guns and a large body of musketeers.

Before this, however, the division was reinforced from the reserve by Captains Cheshire, Lewis and Sutherland, with their companies.

Immediately after we got possession of the priest's house, the enemy opened a furious cannonade from all their batteries, accompanied by incessant volleys of small arms, against every house in our possession and every part of our lines, which continued unceasingly until 6½ o'clock A. M., of the 8th, when they sent a flag of truce, with an intimation that they desired to capitulate. Commissioners were immediately named by both parties, and herewith I accompany you a copy of the terms agreed upon.

Our loss in this night-attack consisted in one man only—Belden, of the Greys, dangerously wounded while in the act of spiking a cannon.

To attempt to give you a faint idea of the intrepid conduct of the gallant

citizens who formed the division under my command, during the whole period of attack, would be a task of no common nature, and far above the power of my pen. All behaved with the bravery peculiar to freemen, and with a decision becoming the sacred cause of Liberty.

To signalize every individual act of gallantry, where no individual was found wanting to himself or to his country, would be a useless and endless effort. Every man has merited my warmest approbation, and deserves his country's gratitude.

The memory of Colonel B. R. Milam, the leader of this daring and successful attack, deserves to be cherished by every patriotic bosom in Texas.

I feel indebted to the able assistance of Colonel Grant, (severely wounded the first day,) Colonel Austin, Majors Morris and Moore, Adjutant Bristow, Lieutenant-Colonel Franks, of the artillery, and every captain—names already given—who entered with either division, from the morning of the 5th until the day of capitulation.

Dr. Cameron's conduct, during the siege and treaty of capitulation, merits particular mention. The guides, Erastus Smith, Norwich, Arnold and John W. Smith, performed important service; and I cannot conclude without expressing my thanks to the reserve under your command for such assistance as could be afforded me during our most critical movements.

The period put to our present war by the fall of San Antonio de Bexar will, I trust, be attended with all the happy results to Texas which her warmest friends could desire.

I have the honor to subscribe myself your most obedient servant,

F. W. JOHNSTON, *Col. Com'g.*

A true copy from the original.

WILLIAM T. AUSTIN, *Aid-de-Camp.*

CAPITULATION ENTERED INTO BY GENERAL MARTIN PERFECTO DE COS, OF THE PERMANENT TROOPS, AND GENERAL EDWARD BURLESON, OF THE COLONIAL TROOPS OF TEXAS.

Being desirous of preventing the further effusion of blood and the ravages of civil war, have agreed on the following stipulations:

1st. That General Cos and his officers retire with their arms and private property into the interior of the republic under parole of honor; and that they will not in any way oppose the re-establishment of the federal constitution of 1824.

2d. That the one hundred infantry lately arrived with the convicts, the remnant of the battalion of Morelos, and the cavalry, retire with the General, taking their arms, and ten rounds of cartridges for their muskets.

3d. That the General take the convicts brought in by Colonel Ugartechea beyond the Rio Grande.

4th. That it is discretionary with the troops to follow their General, remain, or go to such point as they may deem proper; but in case they should all or any of them separate, they are to have their arms, etc.

5th. That all the public property, money, arms, and munitions of war, be inventoried and delivered to General Burleson.

6th. That all private property be restored to its proper owners.



7th. That three officers of each army be appointed to make out the inventory and see that the terms of capitulation be carried into effect.

8th. That three officers on the part of General Cos remain for the purpose of delivering over the said property, stores, etc.

9th. That General Cos with his force, for the present, occupy the Alamo, and General Burleson with his force occupy the town of Bexar, and that the soldiers of neither party pass to the other, armed.

10th. General Cos shall, within six days from the date hereof, remove his force from the garrison he now occupies.

11th. In addition to the arms before mentioned, General Cos shall be permitted to take with his force a 4-pounder and ten pounds of powder and ball.

12th. The officers appointed to make the inventory and delivery of the stores, etc., shall enter upon the duties to which they have been appointed forthwith.

13th. The citizens shall be protected in their persons and property.

14th. General Burleson will furnish General Cos with such provisions as can be obtained, necessary for his troops to the Rio Grande, at the ordinary price of the country.

15th. The sick and wounded of General Cos' army, together with a surgeon and attendants, are permitted to remain.

16th. No person, either citizen or soldier, to be molested on account of his political opinions hitherto expressed.

17th. That duplicates of this capitulation be made out in Castilian and English, and signed by the commissioner appointed, and ratified by the commanders of both armies.

18th. The prisoners of both armies, up to this day, shall be put at liberty.

The commissioners, Jose Juan Sanchez, Adjutant-Inspector; Don Ramon Musquiz, and Lieutenant Francisco Rada, and Interpreter Don Miguel Arciniega, appointed by the Commandant and Inspector, General Martin Perfecto de Cos, in connection with Col. F. W. Johnston, Major R. C. Morris, and Captain J. C. Swisher, and Interpreter John Cameron, appointed on the part of General Edward Burleson, after a long and serious discussion, adopted the eighteen preceding articles, reserving their ratification by the Generals of both armies.

In virtue of which, we have signed this instrument, in the city of Bexar, on the 11th of December, 1835.

JOSE JUAN SANCHEZ,  
RAMON MUSQUIZ,  
J. FRANCISCO DE RADA,  
MIGUEL ARCINEGA, Interpreter,

F. W. JOHNSON,  
ROBERT C. MORRIS,  
JAMES G. SWISHER,  
JOHN CAMERON, Interpreter.

I consent to, and will observe, the above article.

MARTIN PERFECTO DE COS.

Ratified and approved.

EDWARD BURLESON,  
*Commander-in-Chief Volunteer Army.*

While the army in the field was achieving this splendid triumph, the Council at San Felipe was engaged in legislation. It was composed of thirteen members—too many for prompt executive action, and entirely too few for a legislative body. Its duties and powers were not clearly defined, and it was soon manifest that it was composed of inharmonious materials. It is possible that Governor Smith was jealous of his prerogatives, and that the Council infringed upon his legitimate authority. At any rate it became evident that the Governor and his Council could not harmonize. On the 10th of December, the Council passed a bill calling a General Convention. Governor Smith vetoed it because it allowed the municipality of Bexar four delegates, and permitted all Mexicans to vote. The first objection was overruled, and the second obviated by declaring that all Americans might vote, and such Mexicans as were opposed to a centralized government. The election was ordered for February 1st, 1836.

The breach between the Governor and the Council continued to widen, and after a long and bitter personal controversy, finally, on the 11th of January, 1836, the Council, by a unanimous vote, deposed the Governor, preferred formal charges against him, and installed Lieutenant Governor Robinson. The Governor issued a proclamation dissolving the Council, and retained the Archives, and continued to exercise the functions of his office. General Houston and some other officers recognized Governor Smith, and the Council, which continued to hold its sessions, recognized Governor Robinson. A week after the deposition of Governor Smith, the Council failed for want of a quorum. On the 8th of February a quorum was present, and again on the 15th. On the 16th it adjourned to meet in the town of Washington, on the 22d of February, but a quorum never again met.

While the Governor and his intractable Council were wrangling over questions of privilege and authority, the

people were canvassing the great question of Texan independence.\*

On the last of November, Stephen F. Austin, having resigned the command of the army, reported to the Council at San Felipe, preparatory to starting to the United States as Commissioner. On the question of the relation of Texas to the Mexican government, General Austin said:

"It may be out of place to speak of myself in such a communication as this, but I deem it right to say that I have faithfully labored for years to unite Texas permanently to the Mexican Confederation, by separating its local government and internal administration, so far as practicable, from every other part of Mexico, and placing it in the hands of the people of Texas, who are certainly best acquainted with their local wants, and could best harmonize in legislation for them. There was but one way to effect this union, with any hope of permanency or harmony, which was by erecting Texas into a State of the Mexican Confederation. Sound policy, and the true interest of the Mexican Republic, evidently required that this should be done.

"The people of Texas desired it; and if proofs were wanting (but they are not) of their fidelity to their obligation as Mexican citizens, this effort to erect Texas into a State affords one which is conclusive to every man of judgment who knows anything about this country; for all such are convinced that Texas could not, and would not, remain united to Mexico without the right of self-government as a separate State."

In another portion of his communication, Austin says:

"At the time of the former elections, the people did not, and could not, fully understand their true situation; for it was not known then, to a certainty, what changes would take place in Mexico; what kind of government would be established; or what course would be pursued towards Texas. It was only known then that the Central party was in power; that all its measures tended to the destruction of the Federal system, and that preparations were making to invade Texas.

"But, at the present time, the people know that the government is changed—that Centralism is established by the decree of the 3d of October last, and that they are threatened with annihilation. In short, the whole

\*As early as July 19th, 1835, a meeting of citizens was held on the Navidad, in Jackson County, James Kerr, Chairman, and Samuel Rogers, Secretary, which declared for independence. And on the 20th of December, the troops, under Captain Dimmit, and the citizens of Goliad, passed similar resolutions, and the people in the different portions of the province expressed their acquiescence.

picture is now clearly before their view, and they see the dangers that are hanging over them. Can these dangers be averted by a provisional organization, which is based upon a declaration that is equivocal, liable to different constructions? Does not the situation of the country require a more fixed and stable state of things? In short, is it not necessary that Texas should now say in plain, and positive, and unequivocal language, what is the position she occupies, and will occupy; and can such a declaration be made without a new and direct resort to the people, by calling, as speedily as possible, a convention, with plenary power, based upon the principle of equal representation, in proportion to the population?

"These are questions of the most vital importance. I respectfully submit them to the calm deliberation of the Provisional Government, in the full confidence that all the attention will be given to the subject which its importance demands.

"Without expressing any individual opinion of my own, as to the time or day when the new election ought to take place, which would, perhaps, be indecorous in such a communication as this; the object of which is to lay the facts before the Provisional Government, I deem it my duty to say, that so far as I could judge of the opinions and wishes of the citizens who were in the volunteer army when I left them on the 25th ult., they were in favor of an immediate election of a Convention with plenary power."

In the above report, General Austin used very cautious language, and though he declared for a Convention with plenary powers, he did not explicitly commit himself to a declaration of independence. He, perhaps, then thought such a declaration premature. But after his arrival in New Orleans, he received additional information from Mexico, and found that, in order to secure the loan so necessary for Texas, a declaration of independence must be immediately put forth. And he accordingly wrote to the Provisional Government, advocating such a declaration.

The general election was held on the 1st of February, 1836, and the Convention met on the 1st of March, 1836. Its official journal opens thus: "Convention of all the people of Texas, through their delegates elect."

On motion of Mr. Geo. C. Childress, Mr. James Collingsworth, of Brazoria, was called to the chair, and Wm. A. Faris appointed secretary *pro tem.* After the roll of members was completed, on motion of Mr. Robert Potter, the Convention proceeded to elect a president, when Stephen



**RUINS OF THE SAN JOSE MISSION.**



H. Everitt, of Jasper, nominated Richard Ellis, of Red River, who was unanimously elected. H. S. Kimble was elected secretary; E. M. Pease, assistant secretary; Iram Palmer, sergeant at arms; John A. Hizer, doorkeeper, and M. Saul, engrossing clerk.

Mr. George C. Childress offered the following:

*Resolved*, That the president appoint a committee, to consist of five delegates, to draft a Declaration of Independence.

Adopted. Whereupon the president appointed as the committee, Mr. Geo. C. Childress, of Collin, James Gaines, of Sabine, Edward Conrad, of Refugio, Collin McKinney, of Red River, and Bailey Hardeman, of Matagorda.

On the second day, March 2d, Mr. Robert Potter moved the appointment of a committee of one from each municipality, to draft a constitution for the (contemplated) Republic of Texas, which was carried, and Messrs. Martin Farmer, chairman, Robert Potter, Chas. B. Stewart, Edwin Waller, Jesse Grimes, Robert M. Coleman, John Fisher, John W. Bunton, James Gaines, Lorenzo de Zavala, Stephen H. Everitt, Bailey Hardeman, Elijah Stapp, William C. Crawford, Claiborne West, James Power, Jose Antonio Navarro, Collin McKinney, William Menifee, William Motley and Michael B. Menard were appointed the committee.

On the same day, March 2d, Mr. Childress, chairman of the committee, reported the draft of a Declaration of Independence. Mr. Houston moved that the report be received by the Convention, which was done. Gen. Sam Houston introduced the following resolution:

*Resolved*, That the Declaration of Independence, reported by the committee, be adopted, that the same be engrossed and signed by the delegates of this Convention.

And the question being put, the resolution was unanimously adopted.

After the Declaration of Independence, the Convention\* was engaged until the 15th in preparing the Constitution. On the 17th of March the Constitution was adopted, and a Government, *ad interim*, inaugurated, with David G. Burnet, President; Lorenzo De Zavalla, Vice-President, and Sam Houston, Commander-in-Chief of the army in the field. The news of the stirring events in the west, probably hastened the adjournment of the Convention; and soon afterward the President and his Cabinet removed from Washington to Harrisburg.†

\* The Convention was composed of the following members :

*Municipality of Austin*—Charles B. Stewart and Thomas Barnett; of *Brazoria*—James Collingsworth, Edwin Waller, Asa Brigham and J. S. D. Byrom; of *Bexar*—Francis Ruis, J. Antonio Navarro, Jesse B. Badgett and William Motley; of *Colorado*—William Menifee and William D. Lacey; of *Gonzales*—John Fisher and Matthew Caldwell; of *Nacogdoches*—John S. Roberts, Robert Potter, Charles S. Taylor and Thomas J. Rusk; of *Refugio*—James Power and Sam Houston; of *Shelby*—Martin Parmer and Sidney O. Pennington; of *Sabine*—James Gaines and William Clark, Jr.; of *Harrisburg*—Lorenzo de Zavala and Andrew Briscoe; of *Jasper*—George W. Smyth and S. H. Everett; of *Jackson*—Elijah Stapp; of *Jefferson*—Claiborne West and William B. Scates; of *Liberty*—M. B. Menard, A. B. Harden and J. B. Wood; of *Bastrop*—John W. Bunton, Thomas J. Gazley and Robert M. Coleman; of *Milam*—Sterling C. Robertson and George C. Childress; of *Matagorda*—Bailey Hardeman and S. Rhodes Fisher; of *San Patricio*—John Turner and John W. Bower; of *Washington*—Benjamin B. Goodrich, James G. Swisher, George W. Barnett and Jesse Grimes; of *San Augustine*—E. O. Legrand and Stephen W. Blount; of *Red River*—Robert Hamilton, Collin McKinney, A. H. Latimer, Samuel P. Carson, Richard Ellis and William C. Crawford; of *Goliad*—David Thomas and Edward Conrad.

† The following were the principal officers in President Burnet's Cabinet, appointed at the organization of the Government: Samuel P. Carson, Secretary of State; Thomas J. Rusk, Secretary of War; Bailey Hardeman; Secretary of the Treasury; Robert Potter Secretary of the Navy; David Thomas, Attorney-General. During this Government, which continued until the 22d of October, 1836, there were many changes, and the following named persons were, for a time, members of the Cabinet, viz:—James Collingsworth and Wm. H. Jack, Secretaries of State; M. B. Lamar, F. A. Sawyer, A. Somervell and John A. Wharton, Secretaries of War; Peter W. Grayson, Attorney-General; Bernard E. Bee, Secretary of the Treasury; John R. Jones, Post-Master General. The following persons were also in office under the Government *ad interim*:—Asa Brigham, Auditor; H. C. Hudson, Comptroller; Benjamin C. Franklin, Judge for the District of Brazos.



We will now return to military operations. After the capture of San Antonio, many of the soldiers in Burleson's command, especially the Texans, returned to their homes. Others, encouraged by the success of the first essay at arms, were anxious for other enterprises. Captain Dimmit, at Goliad, was, perhaps, the first to suggest the capture of Matamoras, on the right bank of the lower Rio Grande. This was cordially seconded by Colonel Grant, who had assisted in the capture of San Antonio, and who had large landed possessions in Coahuila, and was a member of the Legislature dispersed by Cos. Johnson, Fannin and many others, were ready to enlist in the projected enterprise. The Executive Council, acting independently of the Governor, authorized Fannin to act as agent in getting up and commanding a force for the capture of Matamoras; and, at the same time gave similar authority to Johnson and Grant, and for the same purpose. Not to be outdone in such a movement, Governor Smith ordered General Houston to establish his headquarters in the west, and prepare for a descent upon the same place. Grant and Johnson enlisted many of the men who had come with the New Orleans Grays, and with such horses and munitions of war as could be collected around San Antonio, started for the south-west. They found Fannin in command at Goliad, and proceeded to the Nueces river, and Grant, with a party, went still further, to secure horses for Fannin's command. When Houston reached Goliad and learned of the organization of these independent expeditions, he gave up all pretensions to the command, and was elected a member of the Convention from Refugio. Dimmit, at Houston's suggestion, retired to Victoria. Neil, who succeeded Johnson at San Antonio, had left that place in command of Wm. B. Travis.

## CHAPTER IV.

SANTA ANNA'S TEXAS PROGRAMME—FALL OF THE ALAMO, AND FATE OF ITS BRAVE GARRISON—URREA IN THE SOUTH-WEST—DEATH OF GRANT, MORRIS, &c—WARD AND KING AT REFUGIO—GOLIAD EVACUATED—BATTLE OF COLITA—THE FANNIN MASSACRE.—REFLECTIONS ON THE CONDUCT OF THE CAMPAIGN.

ON the 11th of May, 1835, Santa Anna gained a decisive victory over Governor Garcia, near Zacatecas, completing the total destruction of the Republican party in Mexico. Texas was now the only State in which his authority was disputed; and that able general immediately commenced his preparations for the subjugation of Texas. He proposed to send two columns into the province. General Urrea was ordered to Matamoras, to take one division along the coast to Goliad, Victoria, &c., while the President-General, himself with the main division, was to enter the province *via* Presidio, and thence to San Antonio, San Felipe, *et cetera*. Toward the last of January, 1836, Santa Anna reached Saltillo, and Guerrero, by the middle of February. From this place he wrote to Senior Tornel, Minister of War, giving the outlines of his programme in reference to Texas. It was "to drive from the province all who had taken part in the revolution, together with all the foreigners who lived near the sea coast, or the borders of the United States; to remove far into the interior those who had not taken part in the war; to vacate all lands and grants of land owned by non-residents; to remove from Texas all who had come to the province, and were not entered as colonists under Mexican rules; to divide among the officers and soldiers of the army the best lands, provided they would occupy them; to permit no Anglo-Amer-

ican to settle in Texas ; to sell the remaining vacant lands at one dollar per acre, allowing those speaking the French language to purchase five million acres, those speaking English the same, and those speaking the Spanish without limit ; to satisfy the claims of civilized Indians ; to make the Texans pay the expense of the war ; and to liberate and to declare free the negroes introduced into the colony."

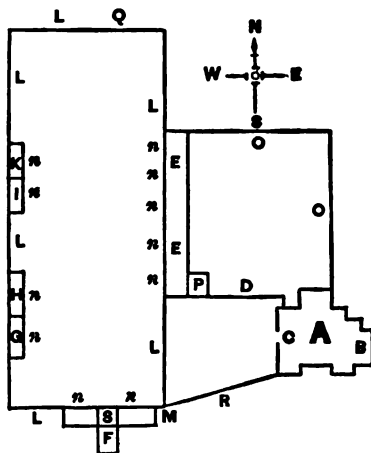
To cut off from Texas the hope of aid from the United States, Tornel issued a general order to all commanders, to treat all foreigners (meaning volunteers from the United States), as pirates. This order was subsequently plead in justification of the massacre of the garrison of the Alamo, and of Fannin's men at Goliad.

On the 22d of February, a portion of the invading army reached the Alazan creek, a little west of the city of San Antonio, when Colonel Travis, with 145 effective men, retired to the fortress of the Alamo, on the East side of the river.

THE ALAMO AND ITS ARMAMENT.—The main chapel is 75x62 feet ; walls of solid masonry, four feet thick and twenty-two and a half feet high : then roofless. It fronts to the west toward the city, one-half a mile distant. From the northwest corner a wall extended fifty feet to the convent building, now occupied by the Quartermaster's Department. The convent was a two-story building, with a flat roof 186x18 feet. From the northeast corner of the chapel a wall extended 186 feet north ; thence 102 feet west to the convent, inclosing the convent yard. From the southwest corner of the chapel a strongly built stockade extended 75 feet to a building called the prison. The prison was one story, 115x17 feet, and joined a part of the south wall of the main Alamo plaza, of which the convent formed a part of the east wall, and some low buildings, used as barracks, formed a part of the west wall. The main plaza, inclosed with walls, was 154x54 yards. The different inclosures occupied between two and three acres ;

ample accommodations for 1000 men. The outer walls were two and a half feet thick and eight feet high, though, as they were planned against the Indians, the fortress was destitute of salient and dominant points in case of a bombardment. A ditch, used for irrigation, passed immediately in the rear of the church, another touched the north-west angle of the main square.

**ITS ARMAMENT.**—Three heavy guns were planted upon the walls of the church; one pointed north, toward the old mill; one west, toward the city, and one south, toward the



GROUND PLAN OF THE ALAMO.

- A. Chapel of the Fortress.
- B. Upper window.
- C. Front door of the Church.
- D. A wall 50 feet long, connecting Church with the long Barrack, E E.
- F. A low stone barrack, 114 feet long, and 17 wide.
- G, H, I and K. Rooms built against the west barrier, and demolished with it.
- L. Barrier wall from 8 to 8 feet high and  $2\frac{3}{4}$  thick.
- M. Gate of the area.
- n n. Doors of houses opening upon area.
- O O. A wall from 5 to 6 feet high, and  $2\frac{3}{4}$  thick, which inclosed a smaller area east of the long barrack and north of the church.
- P. An upper room in the south-east angle of said barrack.
- Q. A breach in the north barrier.
- R. An intrenchment running from the south-west angle of the chapel to the gate.
- S. Represents a *porte cochere*, or wide passage through the centre of the house F, with but one room on each side. The dotted lines represent a projecting stockade which covered a four-gun battery in front of the outer door.

village of Lavilleta. Two guns protected the stockade between the church and the prison; two protected the prison, and an eighteen-pounder was planted at the south-west angle of the main square. A twelve-pound carronade protected the centre of the west wall, and an eight-pounder was planted upon the north-west angle. Two guns were planted on the north wall of the plaza; in all fourteen in position. Over the church floated the flag of the Provisional Government of Texas, the Mexican tri-color, with the numerals 1824 in place of the eagle in the white stripe.

THE SIEGE.—First day, February 23. Travis secured eighty bushels of corn and twenty or thirty beeves. About noon Santa Anna arrived in person, and sent a summons to the Texans to surrender. It was answered by a cannon shot.

Second day.—Mexicans bombarded the fort without effect. Travis sent out couriers to Goliad and to Washington for reinforcements. In his dispatches he said: "I shall never surrender or retreat."

Third day.—Santa Anna removed his headquarters across the river, and made a personal reconnoissance. The Texans opened their batteries, killing two Mexicans and wounding six others. Late at night some of the Texans sallied out and burned some wooden buildings, behind which the Mexicans had taken a position.

Fourth day.—The Mexicans made an unsuccessful attempt to cut off the garrison from water. At night the Texans burned some buildings north of the walls.

Sixth day.—Travis sent out John N. Seguin and a corporal to hurry up reinforcements from Goliad.

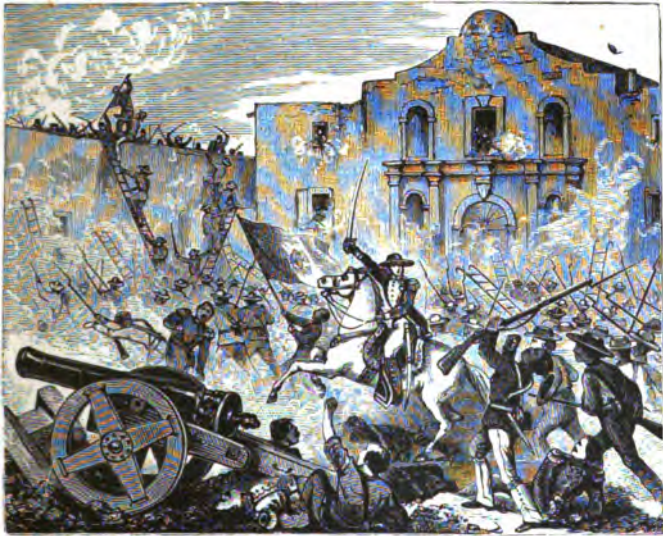
Eighth day, March 1st.—Thirty-two citizen soldiers of Gonzales entered the fort. In the afternoon a twelve-pound shot from the fort struck the house occupied by Santa Anna.

Tenth day.—Colonel Bonham, who had been sent to Goliad for reinforcements, re-entered the fortress. Travis

dispatched a courier to the Convention. He wrote: "I am still here and well-to-do, with one hundred and forty-five men. I have held this place ten days against a force variously estimated at from 1500 to 6000, and I shall continue to hold it till I get relief from my countrymen, or I will perish in its defense. We have had a shower of cannon balls continually falling among us the whole time, yet none of us have fallen. We have been miraculously preserved.

\* \* We are completely surrounded by the enemy, who have batteries in Bexar, only 400 yards to the west; one at Lavilleta, 300 yards south; at the Powder House, 1000 yards east by south; on the ditch, 800 yards north-east, and at the old mill, 800 yards north." Travis now despaired of succor, and according to an account published in 1860 by a Mr. Rose, announced to his companions their desperate situation. After declaring his determination to sell his life as dearly as possible, and drawing a line with his sword, Travis exhorted all who were willing to fight with him to form on the line. With one exception, all fell into the ranks, and even Bowie, who was dying with the consumption, had his cot carried to the line. The man who declined to enter the ranks, that night made his escape. [This tale is incredible, since he reported large pools of blood in the ditch, close to the wall, when no Mexican had then approached within rifle shot.]

Eleventh day.—The Mexicans continued to bombard the fort. The Texans, being short of ammunition, seldom fired. In the evening Santa Anna called a council of officers, and in spite of the remonstrance of some of his generals, resolved to storm the fortress. His orders were prepared very carefully, and given with great minuteness. There were to be four columns of attack, led by his most experienced generals. Each column was supplied with axes, crowbars and scaling ladders. His entire cavalry force was paraded in the rear, to prevent the desertion of his own troops, and to intercept any Texans who might attempt to escape.



**STORMING OF THE ALAMO.**





**THE FALL.**—Sunday March 6. A little after midnight, the different divisions of the Mexican army silently marched to their assigned positions. At four o'clock the bugle sounded, and the whole line advanced to the final assault. Santa Anna, with all the bands, was behind an adobe house, about 500 yards south of the church. The Texans were ready, and, according to Filisola, "poured upon the advancing columns a shower of grape and musket and rifle balls." Twice the assailants reeled and fell back in dismay. Rallied again by the heroic Castrellon (who fell at San Jacinto), they approached the walls the third time. We again quote from Filisola: "The columns of the western and eastern attacks meeting with some difficulty in reaching the tops of small houses forming the wall of the fort, did, by a simultaneous movement, to the right and to the left, swing northward until the three columns formed one dense mass, which, under the guidance of their officers, finally succeeded in effecting an entrance into the enclosed yard. About the same time the column on the south made a breach in the wall and captured one of the guns." This gun, the eighteen-pounder, was immediately turned upon the convent, to which some of the Texans had retreated. The carronade on the center of the west wall was still manned by the Texans, and did fearful execution upon the Mexicans who had ventured into the yard. But the feeble garrison could not long hold out against such overwhelming numbers. Travis fell early in the action, shot with a rifle ball in the head. After being shot he had sufficient strength to kill a Mexican who attempted to spear him. The bodies of most of the Texans were found in the building, where a hand-to-hand fight took place. The body of Crockett, however, was in the yard, with a number of Mexicans lying near him. Bowie was slain in his bed, though it is said he killed two or three of the Mexicans with his pistol as they broke into his room. The church was the last place entered by the foe. It had been agreed

that when further resistance seemed useless, any surviving Texan should blow up the magazine. Major Evans was applying the torch when he was killed in time to prevent the explosion. It was reported that two or three Texans, found in a room, appealed in vain for quarter. The sacrifice was complete. Every soldier had fallen in defense of the fort.

Three non-combatants were spared—a negro servant of Col. Travis, and Mrs. Alsbury and Mrs. Dickinson. Lieutenant Dickinson, with a child on his back, leaped from an upper window in the east end of the church; but their lifeless bodies fell to the ground riddled with bullets. One hundred and eighty bodies of the Texans were collected together in a pile and partially burned. Well-informed Texans put the loss of the Mexicans at twice that number. The official report of the Mexican Adjutant General left in command at San Antonio, puts their loss at 60 killed and 251 wounded. On the 25th of February, 1837, the bones of their victims were collected by Col. John N. Seguin, then in command at the place, and decently and honorably interred.

Simultaneously with the advance of Santa Anna, General Urrea had proceeded along the Texas coast, reaching San Patricio on the 28th of February. It seems incredible that the Texans should have been kept in ignorance of this movement; but so it was. Major Morris, Dr. Grant and about forty Texans were out hunting horses, when Urrea's party passed them undiscovered. Colonel F. W. Johnson and a few others were in the village of San Patricio when the Mexicans reached the neighborhood. The Mexican citizens had notice of the approach of Urrea, and were told to keep lights burning in their houses, so that their friends might know them. It so happened that Colonel Johnson was writing until a late hour, and before his light was extinguished, learned that the town was in the possession of Urrea, and he and four companions—Messrs. Tone, Beck, Toler and Miller—made their escape.

Colonel Grant, with about forty men, had been absent some ten days on a scout for horses. They had followed a party of Mexicans to the Rio Grande, and secured a number of horses and some prisoners, and were returning to Col. Johnson's headquarters at San Patricio. On the night in which Urrea captured the town, Grant and his party camped on the Agua Dulce creek, twenty-six miles to the south-west. From prisoners captured, the Mexicans learned that Grant's party were expected back, and Urrea sent out a strong cavalry force for their capture. When they were discovered, Grant, Morris, Benevedes and Brown were riding considerably in advance of the cavallado of horses driven by their companions. At Grant's request, Benevedes made his escape, and hastened to Goliad to give Fannin notice of the Mexican invasion. Grant and Morris were killed, and Brown taken a prisoner, by being lassoed. The other Texans were all killed. (See Brown, Grant, etc.)

Colonel Fannin had been ordered first to Velasco, on recruiting service, and subsequently to the West, and invested with authority (as agent) to prepare for a descent upon Matamoros. He was in command at Goliad, with about 400 men, mostly of the Georgia battalion, preparing for the expedition to the Rio Grande, when he heard of the invasion of the country by Santa Anna. Col. Bonham, from San Antonio, reached Goliad on the day that Urrea took San Patricio. Fannin at first resolved to go to the relief of Travis in the Alamo. But his gun-carriage broke down, and he lacked the means of transportation. During the delay caused by the accident, he heard of the advance of Urrea and the capture of San Patricio. He then re-entered Goliad, and put the place in a thorough state of defence. He at once dispatched Captain King, with twenty-eight men, to remove some families from Refugio. This was March 3d. King, instead of hastening back, as ordered, remained at Refugio, and sent to Goliad for more troops, as he was

threatened with an attack. To Fannin this delay was vexatious, as he wished to fall back across the Guadalupe river, to which point he had been ordered by General Houston. But he immediately sent Lieutenant-Colonel Ward with 112 men to King's relief. Before Ward reached Refugio, King had been attacked by a party of cavalry. The enemy was repulsed with severe loss. Ward joined King in the old Mission on the evening of the 13th. That night they were attacked by a superior force of Mexicans, who were again repulsed with heavy loss, and as they retreated, they were pursued by the companies of Ward and King. In the darkness the two were separated. Ward made his way back to the Mission. King and his men became bewildered, and finally got lost, and were the next day captured and put to death by order of Urrea.\*

Unwilling to leave Ward and King, Fannin successively sent four couriers to hurry them back to join him in the retreat. These all fell into the hands of the Mexicans and were put to death. On the 16th of March Fannin was reinforced by a company of twenty-eight cavalry, under Captain A. C. Horton. He prepared for a retreat the same day, and a portion of the cannon were thrown into the river; but just at night, while Horton was out reconnoitering, he discovered a large force of the enemy in the immediate neighborhood. Apprehending an attack during the night, the cannon were hastily remounted, and preparations made for defence.

\* The above is the common version of this unfortunate affair. Mr. S. T. Brown, one of Ward's men, who escaped the massacre, gives a different account. He says, that, on the morning of the 16th, Ward and King differed as to who should command, when King with forty-six men withdrew from the fort, and was captured and all his men shot. In the fight, three of Ward's men were wounded. As Ward had positive orders to fall back and join Fannin at Victoria, he supplied the wounded with water, and left them in the Mission and fell back to the Guadalupe river; but before he reached Victoria, the disastrous battle of Coleta had been fought, and he and most of his men were captured, and shared the fate of their companions under Fannin. The three wounded left in the Mission were taken out and shot, at Refugio, with King's men.

**BATTLE OF COLITA.**—The morning of the 17th was foggy, and no enemy appearing in sight, about ten o'clock the army evacuated the fort, and took up the line of march for Victoria. After crossing the Menawhila creek, about eight miles from Goliad, they halted to permit the oxen to graze. They had resumed the march and were within about two miles of the Colita creek, when a company of Urrea's cavalry was discovered in front and a little to their left, issuing from a point of timber. During the morning fog the Mexicans had passed around and in front of Fannin to intercept his march. Horton and his cavalry had gone forward to make arrangements for crossing the river, and, if possible, to secure reinforcements. They were unable to join their companions. The Texans halted and made hasty preparations for a fight. A charge of Urrea's cavalry was gallantly repulsed by Fannin's artillery, which also poured a deadly fire upon the Mexican infantry. In a second charge the Mexicans suffered a still heavier loss. The fight continued until dark, when the Mexicans retired out of gunshot, and the Texans improved the time throwing up temporary breastworks. Fourteen of their number had been either killed or mortally wounded. Sixty others, including Colonel Fannin, were wounded. Before daylight Urrea received heavy reinforcements, including a park of artillery. With no adequate protection against the enemy's cannon; in an open prairie, without water, for which the wounded, especially, were suffering, surrounded by an enemy of five times their number, the Texans were in a desperate condition. What could they do but surrender as prisoners of war? A white flag was raised and the following terms of surrender agreed upon: 1. That the Texans should be treated as prisoners of war according to the usages of civilized nations. 2. That private property should be respected and restored, but the side arms of the officers should be given up. 3. The men should be sent to Copano, and thence in eight days to the United States, or as soon as vessels could be pro-

cured to take them. 4. The officers should be paroled and returned to the United States in like manner.

The prisoners were taken back to Goliad and confined in the old Mission. They were joined by the men captured with Ward on the 25th. All were cheerful in the prospect of a speedy liberation. While they were enlivening their prison on the evening of the 26th in singing "Home, Sweet Home," an order arrived from Santa Anna for their immediate execution!

**THE MASSACRE.**—On the morning of the 27th—Palm Sunday—without warning, and under the pretext that they were starting to be sent home, the privates were marched out first, in four companies, strongly guarded. They were taken in different directions, so that no two were close together, and when a short distance from the walls of the mission, the four divisions were halted and shot! The most were instantly killed; some, who were only wounded, were dispatched with sabres, and a few, by lying still and feigning death until dark, escaped. The officers and the wounded were still in the fort, and heard the firing and the shrieks of the wounded and dying. They, too, were immediately marshalled in line and marched out to meet the fate of their companions. Fannin was the last to suffer. (See Fannin and Shackelford.)\*

In subsequent years, Santa Anna pleaded the obstinacy of Travis, and their stubborn resistance, after all resistance was useless, as an excuse for putting the last man of the brave garrison of the Alamo to the sword. But for the horrible massacre of Fannin's men, he offered no excuse;

\* Reports do not agree as to the exact number put to death. Foote makes the number 330. The names of most of the victims may be found in the Texas Almanac for the year 1860. According to that statement, the whole number killed was 385. Eight physicians and attendants were spared, and twenty-seven of those marched out to be slaughtered made their escape. Major Miller, with eighty volunteers, had just landed at Copano to join the Texas army; but his men were without arms, and were not included in the order for execution.

none could be offered. It was a cold-blooded, deliberate murder of prisoners of war, and should stamp its perpetrators with eternal infamy.

After the splendid achievement of the raw militia of Texas in the capture of the strongly-fortified city of Bexar, defended by more than twice their number of veteran Mexican regulars, it is painful in the extreme, to record the disasters of the opening campaign of 1836. It seems useless now to speculate as to the cause or causes of those disasters, which threatened the destruction of the Texas army. In General Houston's last speech in the United States Senate, he reviews these events, and lays a large share of the blame on Colonel Fannin, who, "disregarding the orders of the commander-in-chief, became, by countenance of the Council, a candidate for commander of the volunteers." In that speech, great injustice is done to Fannin, who had been appointed by the Lieutenant-Governor and Council, and who implored orders from Houston himself, or from the Council, but whose only order was from Governor Robinson, "To make no retrograde movement." As we have stated, Houston still recognized Smith as governor, and by virtue of his authority, had ordered Colonel Neil to evacuate San Antonio, and Captain Dimmitt to evacuate Goliad. These officers obeyed Houston, taking such men as chose to follow their lead; and Neil fell back to Gonzales, and Dimmitt to Victoria. But at the same time, Travis, acting under the authority of the Council, remained in command at San Antonio, and Fannin took command at Goliad. But this is not all, nor even the worst. At San Antonio, Bowie contended for the right to command over Travis, by virtue of his longer service, if not superior rank; and so sharp was the contest, that Crockett, after reaching the city, threatened, with his company, to leave immediately, if the two commanders did not come to terms. Soon afterward, Bowie was taken seriously ill, and this left Travis in command of such troops as chose to submit to his authority.

Again, at Goliad, it was a question still unsettled, whether, under the Council, Fannin, or Grant, or Johnson was the ranking officer; a question not settled until Grant was killed, and Johnson compelled, with only four companions, to escape for his life, from the cavalry of Urrea. And as if to furnish a still further illustration of this miserable state of affairs, the two officers sent to Refugio quarreled, separated, and were both captured and shot by Urrea. Possibly, by remaining together, they might have rejoined Fannin, and the result have been very different.

We may admire the heroism of Fannin, who wrote to Governor Robinson, that if he did not receive relief he should remain at his post, even if it cost the lives of himself and his men; and the still more heroic declaration of Travis, that he should never retreat or surrender; but still we cannot but feel that the lives of these brave and patriotic men were sacrificed to the miserable personal squabbles prevailing in both the civil and military departments of the Provisional Government.





**SCOUTING.**



## CHAPTER V.

THE MEXICAN MARCH TOWARDS SAN JACINTO—HOUSTON'S RETREAT—CAMPS IN MILL CREEK BOTTOM—THE MEXICANS MEET WITH RESISTANCE AT SAN FELIPE, AND TURN DOWN THE RIVER TO RICHMOND—BOTH ARMIES CROSS THE BRAZOS.

THE length of time required to capture the small garrison of the Alamo had been very vexatious to the President-General of Mexico, whose previous military movements had been conducted with great rapidity. But his victory was complete, and he now had leisure to plan for further operations. On the 11th of March he ordered Generals Sesma and Woll, with 675 infantry, 50 dragoons, two six-pounders and eight days' rations, to march for the interior, intending that they should go, *via* Columbus, San Felipe and Harrisburg, to Ananuac. He also ordered about 400 men, with three guns, under Colonel Juan Morales, to reinforce Urrea at Goliad. His plan contemplated the invasion of the province by three divisions. One, consisting of about 750 men, under General Gaona, was to go *via* Bastrop and Washington to Nacogdoches; the coast division of 1,700 men, under Urrea, to advance *via* Victoria, Brazoria, and Galveston to Ananuac; and the central division, of about 4,000, under Filisola, was to follow the route taken by Sesma. Santa Anna, when he heard of the capture of Fannin, thought the conquest of Texas was effected, and in the exuberance of his delight gave orders to his subordinates to shoot all prisoners. He intended soon to return to his capital, and leave Filisola and Almonte to complete the reorganization of the government of the conquered province. But having heard from Sesma that a considerable army, under Houston, was encamped on the east bank of the

Colorado, he, at the solicitation of Almonte and Filisola, concluded to remain and complete his work.

On the fourth day of the session of the Convention at San Felipe, General Houston was re-elected commander-in-chief of the forces in the field. Two days later, on the 6th, the day the Alamo fell, Houston, with George W. Hockley, chief of staff, and one or two companions, left Washington for the headquarters of the army at Gonzales, arriving there on the 11th. Mr. Yoakum says: "It was Houston's intention to combine the forces of Fannin and Neil and march to the aid of Travis." But Houston, in his last senatorial speech, says he had anticipated that calamity (the fall of the Alamo), and went to Gonzales, intending to fall back. There has been no little controversy as to the number of men at Gonzales when Houston arrived there. Mr. Yoakum fixes the number at 374; other authorities make it twice as large, though no thorough organization had been effected. As our readers will remember, thirty-two of the citizen soldiers from Gonzales entered the Alamo during the siege. The night Houston reached the place, the sad tidings arrived that the Alamo had fallen and its brave defenders were all killed. This produced an indescribable scene of grief in the town, as a dozen women and a large number of children had lost their husbands and fathers. A terrible panic ensued. Twenty-five soldiers, says Houston, deserted that night, and fleeing towards the Sabine, spread the news and the panic throughout the country.

Houston deemed a retreat inevitable, and securing the women and children, the party took up the line of march about midnight, March 12th. As the rear guard left the town, the place was fired, without any orders. The Texans arrived at Peach creek the next day. Here they met a reinforcement of 125 men; but when the news of the massacre of Travis and his companions was told the new troops, twenty-five of them immediately left for their homes. The Texans reached the Navidad on the 14th, and the Colorado,

at Burnham's, on the 17th, where the river was crossed; the army now numbering about six hundred men. Descending the stream, they encamped on the west bank, opposite Columbus, until the 25th. In the mean time, the Mexican advance, under Sesma, had reached the right bank of the river. By the 26th, Houston's army had increased to between twelve hundred and fifteen hundred men.

Houston has been severely censured for not making a stand at that place. The river offered a good line of defence; and as soon as he resumed his retrograde movement, many men, whose families would be exposed, had to leave the army to secure their safety. In his last speech in the Senate, he gives the reason for his retreat. When encamped on the Lavaca river, going west, he had dispatched Col. Wm. T. Austin to Velasco for artillery. The guns were shipped up to Columbia, but owing to excessive rains, it was found impossible to transport them to army headquarters. Without artillery, and the soldiers depressed by the sad fate of Travis and of Fannin, Houston thought it best to fall back to the Brazos. When he reached the river at San Felipe, instead of crossing the stream and establishing a line of defense, he turned up across Mill creek, and encamped, from the 29th of March until the 12th of April, in the bottom.

Mosely Baker, with a company of about one hundred men, was stationed on the east bank of the river, opposite San Felipe, to protect the ferry, and prevent the enemy from passing the stream. At Richmond, Wylie Martin, with forty-six men, was guarding the two ferries. On the day that Houston encamped on the west bank of the Brazos, Santa Anna started the bulk of his army from San Antonio; the central division following Sesma, and Gaona marching for Bastrop. The General himself did not leave the city until the last day of March, and arrived at Columbus on the 5th of April. Leaving his heavy guns and most of the infantry to follow, the President, with a division of cavalry, reached

the neighborhood of San Felipe on the 7th. The town had been burnt. Baker showed so determined a resistance, that the Mexicans deflected down the river, camping at Cole's on the 9th and 10th, and sending a foraging party to the fine Mercer and Heard plantations, for provisions, sugar, etc. At Cole's a negro was captured and dispatched to Houston, with an insolent message to the General, in which Santa Anna told him that he knew where he was; and as soon as he had cleaned out the land of thieves at Harrisburg, he was coming back to smoke him—Houston—out. The negro delivered the message. On the 11th the Mexicans camped at Powell's, and reached Richmond on the 12th. Almonte, who knew the place, rode down to the lower ferry, kept by Mr. Morton, and in good English announced that the Mexicans were approaching, and he wanted to make his escape. The negro ferryman, deceived by the speech, took the boat over, and it was instantly seized by the Mexican soldiers. In the meantime, the Mexicans were firing their guns at Captain Martin's company, at the upper ferry; while others were crossing below. When Martin ascertained the ruse that had been practiced, he immediately started up the river to report to Houston.

Houston seized the steamer, *Yellowstone*, that had entered the Brazos to carry out cotton; and with this steamer, and a ferry boat, crossed the stream opposite Groce's on the same days—April 12th and 16th—that Santa Anna crossed the advance division of Mexicans at Richmond.

The pertinent question recurs, why did Houston remain so long in the bottom?

This hiding of himself, and so long period of inaction, have been severely criticised. He had stepped, so to speak, right out of the way of Santa Anna; but did not ascend the river far enough to intercept Gaona, who would cross at Washington or Tenoxticlan. Newell, in his history, says this was done for a secure position. If Houston wished to avoid a fight, this was a very secure position. In his Sen-

atorial speech, the commander assigns another reason. He says that the reason he did not fall upon Santa Anna was, that excessive rains had so swollen the streams that it was impossible for him to emerge from his island camp in the bottom. This is hardly satisfactory. Why did he go there? While he was in that camp, Santa Anna had traversed the whole distance from San Antonio to the Brazos, and finding the crossing opposed by a few determined men, under Mosely Baker and John N. Seguin, had gone down the stream and crossed at Richmond. It is probable that the true reason for this strange strategetical movement was very different from the one assigned; one that he was never willing to avow. In all his references to this trying period, the General complains of the insubordination of the soldiers. He had ordered San Antonio evacuated. The order was not obeyed. Had ordered Fannin to evacuate Goliad. This was so tardily executed that his army was sacrificed. In the general army under Houston himself, men came and went, almost at will. He had the most unbounded confidence in the personal courage of his men, every one of whom was a hero. But he feared that in a hard-contested battle, this personal heroism might bring on a spirit of independence that would be uncontrollable, and might result in disorder and defeat. During the period in which they were in the bottom, they were isolated and he had an opportunity to organize them, and establish his personal influence and authority over them. At any rate he felt, when he crossed the river, that he could rely upon the *obedience*, as well as the valor of his troops. He had taught them that obedience which is said to be the first duty of a soldier.

The Fabian policy of General Houston was not generally approved by the civilians. Nor was there a cordial feeling between the commander of the army and the newly-inaugurated President. Soon after the adjournment of the Convention, the President and his Cabinet removed from

Washington to Harrisburg, to be nearer the coast, and at a point where supplies for the army could be collected and forwarded to headquarters. Houston severely condemned this movement, as increasing the excitement and panic in the country. President Burnet remained at Harrisburg until the armies crossed the Brazos, when he descended the bayou to Lynchburg to secure the safety of his family and other families on the San Jacinto river. But before leaving Harrisburg, General Rusk, Secretary of War, was dispatched to army headquarters to arrest the retrograde movement of the army. In an order to Houston, Burnet rather curtly told the General: "The enemy are laughing you to scorn. You must fight them. You must retreat no farther. The country expects you to fight. The salvation of the country depends on your doing so." General Houston's response to this executive missive was the Battle of San Jacinto.



## CHAPTER VI.

THE HOSTILE ARMIES APPROACH EACH OTHER—SKIRMISH ON THE 20TH—BATTLE OF SAN JACINTO, APRIL 21ST—HOUSTON'S OFFICIAL REPORT—REFLECTIONS.

THE Texans were without artillery ; but some friends in Cincinnati had procured a couple of guns named the "Twin Sisters," and had shipped them to Texas as hollow ware. These guns arrived at Galveston in due time and were shipped up to Harrisburg on the schooner Kosciusko, Captain Aaron Burns, and reached the army at the Brazos. They made a telling report in the subsequent battle.

While encamped at Donoho's, three miles from the river, on the 15th, Captain Martin reached headquarters and reported the crossing of the Mexicans at Richmond. Mr. Yoakum states that "Martin's command being worn out and exhausted with fatigue, was directed to conduct the families that were flying from the seat of war, to Robbins' Ferry on the Trinity." Other accounts state that Martin was so disgusted with the conduct of the campaign, especially in leaving so inadequate a force at Richmond, that he gave up his sword and absolutely refused to remain in the ranks. Other brave men took the route to the Trinity. Such were some of the difficulties of the commander in this trying period. However, he found a true friend and safe counsellor in Colonel Rusk, the Secretary of War, and the two cordially co-operated in the future conduct of the campaign. The prairies were boggy from recent rains, and the streams swollen ; but, by great exertions, the Texans reached Roberts, on the 16th ; Mrs. M'Curley's, on Spring creek, on the 17th, and the banks of Buffalo bayou, opposite Harrisburg, on the 18th.

On the 15th of April, Santa Anna left the banks of Oyster creek, near Richmond, dining at Stafford's, and reaching Harrisburg late that night. After two days spent at that place, he went down to New Washington for fresh supplies. In their march the Mexicans had burned Harrisburg and Stafford's gin-house; and before leaving, burnt New Washington. The Texans had burned Gonzales, San Felipe and the houses of Burnham and Dewees, on the Colorado.

While the Texans were at Harrisburg, an extraordinary Mexican courier with a mail, was captured by Deaf Smith. From the dispatches from Filisola, the Texans learned that Santa Anna was with the advance column, then at New Washington. This intelligence thrilled the Texans with delight. They felt sure that they could gain a victory over the very small force with the President General. The Texans were paraded, and patriotic addresses delivered by Houston and Rusk. The sick and baggage were left; the army crossed the bayou and hurried down to the mouth of the San Jacinto, where they expected to encounter the enemy. Early on the morning of the 20th, they encamped on the right bank of the bayou, in a skirt of timber. Early that morning, Santa Anna had dispatched a boat-load of provisions, procured from Colonel Morgan's warehouse, up to Lynchburg, for his own troops. The boat fell into the hands of the Texans, and furnished a grateful supply to men who had been marching on short rations.

Santa Anna was preparing to leave New Washington for Anahuac, *via* Lynchburg. The place had been burned, and about 9 o'clock in the morning, his scouts arrived, and reported the Texans already at the ferry, prepared to resist his further march to the East. This was a complete surprise to the General. He considered the country already subjugated, and supposed the Texans would be careful to keep out of reach. He, however, ordered his men to parade



**HOUSTON DICTATING ORDERS TO ADJUTANT HOCKLEY**



and march in order of battle to the designated spot, where he encamped about the middle of the afternoon.\*

We subjoin General Houston's official report of the battle:

HEADQUARTERS OF THE ARMY, }  
SAN JACINTO, April 25, 1836. }

*To His Excellency D. G. Burnet, President of the Republic of Texas:*

SIR:—I regret extremely that my situation since the battle of the 21st has been such as to prevent my rendering you my official report of the same previous to this time.

I have the honor to inform you, that on the evening of the eighteenth instant, after a forced march of fifty-five miles, which was effected in two days and a half, the army arrived opposite Harrisburg. That evening a courier of the enemy was taken, from whom I learned that General Santa Anna, with one division of his choice troops, had marched in the direction of Lynch's Ferry, on the San Jacinto, burning Harrisburg as he passed down. The army was ordered to be in readiness to march early on the

\*The official report of General Houston gives the best account of the skirmish of the 20th, and also the most reliable account of the decisive battle. A good deal of controversy has existed as to the destruction of Vince's Bridge on Simm's Bayou. Houston says it was cut down. Others say it was burned. It was probably burned, though Houston may have ordered it cut down. Houston says it was by his order, and solely at his suggestion. Other parties affirm that the suggestion originated with Deaf Smith. The parties burning the bridge were from Karnes' cavalry company. They were Deaf Smith, D. W. Rives, John Coker, Y. P. Alsbury, E. R. Rainwater, John Garner and Moses Lapham. The burning of the bridge arrested the progress of many of the flying Mexicans, though a few succeeded in crossing the stream. Santa Anna, after reaching the bayou, turned down and spent the night in a thicket. The next day, some of Burleson's men were out hunting the fugitives, when one of them saw a deer on the prairie looking intently at some object in the tall grass. The man approached the spot and found lying on the grass a Mexican in common garb, but discovered a gold button in his sleeves. He took him to his companions, who conducted him back to camp; having no idea of the rank of their prisoner. He complained of his feet hurting him, and he was permitted to get on behind Joel W. Robinson and ride into camp. As the company passed in, the Mexican prisoners exclaimed, "El Presidente." Inquiry was made of General Almonte, who announced that the one just brought in was no less a personage than Santa Anna himself. He was conducted to Houston's camp, and his own officers allowed to remain with him, and his personal baggage restored. The company who found him were James A. Sylvester (a printer, who had been taken a prisoner at Harrisburg, when the town was entered by the Mexicans; but who, being detailed to drive a cart, drove into the Texan camp, on the morning of the 20th,) Joel W. Robinson, A. H. Miles and David Cole.

next morning. The main body effected a crossing over Buffalo Bayou, below Harrisburgh, on the morning of the 19th, having left the baggage, the sick, and a sufficient camp guard, in the rear. We continued the march throughout the night, making but one halt in the prairie for a short time, and without refreshment. At daylight we resumed the line of march, and in a short distance our scouts encountered those of the enemy, and we received information that General Santa Anna was at New Washington, and would that day take up the line of march for Anahuac, crossing at Lynch's Ferry. The Texian army halted within half a mile of the ferry in some timber, and were engaged in slaughtering beeves, when the army of Santa Anna was discovered to be approaching in battle array, having been encamped at Clopper's Point, eight miles below. Disposition was immediately made of our forces, and preparation for his reception. He took a position with his Infantry and Artillery in the centre, occupying an island of timber, his Cavalry covering the left flank. The Artillery, consisting of one double-fortified medium brass twelve-pounder, then opened on our encampment. The Infantry in column advanced with the design of charging our lines, but were repulsed by a discharge of grape and canister from our Artillery, consisting of two six-pounders. The enemy had occupied a piece of timber within rifle-shot of the left wing of our army, from which an occasional interchange of small arms took place between the troops, until the enemy withdrew to a position on the bank of the San Jacinto, about three-quarters of a mile from our encampment, and commenced fortification. A short time before sunset, our mounted men, about eighty-five in number, under the special command of Colonel Sherman, marched out for the purpose of reconnoitering the enemy. Whilst advancing they received a volley from the left of the enemy's Infantry, and after a sharp rencontre with their Cavalry, in which ours acted extremely well, and performed some feats of daring chivalry, they retired in good order, having had two men severely wounded and several horses killed. In the meantime the Infantry, under the command of Lieutenant-Colonel Millard, and Colonel Burleson's regiment, with the Artillery, had marched out for the purpose of covering the retreat of the Cavalry if necessary. All then fell back in good order to our encampment, about sunset, and remained without any ostensible action until the 21st, at half-past three o'clock, taking the first refreshment which they had enjoyed for two days. The enemy in the meantime extended the right flank of their Infantry so as to occupy the extreme point of a skirt of timber on the bank of the San Jacinto, and secured their left by a fortification about five feet high, constructed of packs and baggage, leaving an opening in the centre of the breast-work, in which their Artillery was placed, their Cavalry upon their left wing.

About nine o'clock on the morning of the 21st, the enemy were reinforced by 500 choice troops, under the command of General Cos, increasing their effective force to upwards of 1500 men, whilst our aggregate force for the field numbered 783. At half-past three o'clock, in the evening, I ordered the officers of the Texian army to parade their respective commands, having in the meantime ordered the bridge on the only road communicating with the Brazos, distant eight miles from our encampment, to be destroyed,

thus cutting off all possibility of escape. Our troops paraded with alacrity and spirit, and were anxious for the contest. Their conscious disparity in numbers seemed only to increase their enthusiasm and confidence, and heightened their anxiety for the conflict. Our situation afforded me an opportunity of making the arrangements preparatory to the attack, without exposing our designs to the enemy. The 1st Regiment, commanded by Colonel Burleson, was assigned the center. The 2d Regiment, under the command of Colonel Sherman, formed the left wing of the army. The Artillery, under the special command of Colonel George W. Hockley, Inspector General, was placed on the right of the 1st Regiment; and four companies of Infantry, under the command of Lieutenant-Colonel Henry Millard, sustained the Artillery upon the right. Our Cavalry, 61 in number, commanded by Colonel Mirabeau B. Lamar (whose gallant and daring conduct on the previous day had attracted the admiration of his comrades, and called him to that station), placed on our extreme right, completed our line. Our Cavalry was first dispatched to the front of the enemy's left, for the purpose of attracting their notice, whilst an extensive island of timber afforded us an opportunity of concentrating our forces and displaying from that point, agreeably to the previous design of the troops. Every evolution was performed with alacrity, the whole advancing rapidly in line, and through an open prairie, without any protection whatever for our men. The Artillery advanced and took station within two hundred yards of the enemy's breastwork, and commenced an effective fire with grape and canister.

Colonel Sherman, with his regiment, having commenced the action upon our left wing, the whole line, at the center and on the right, advancing in double quick time, rung the war cry, "*Remember the Alamo,*" received the enemy's fire, and advanced within point-blank shot before a piece was discharged from our lines. Our line advanced without a halt, until they were in possession of the woodland and the enemy's breastwork, the right wing of Burleson's and the left of Millard's taking possession of the breastwork; our Artillery having gallantly charged up within seventy yards of the enemy's cannon, when it was taken by our troops. The conflict lasted about eighteen minutes from the time of close action until we were in possession of the enemy's encampment, taking one piece of cannon (loaded), four stand of colors, all their camp equipage, stores, and baggage. Our Cavalry had charged and routed that of the enemy upon the right, and given pursuit to the fugitives, which did not cease until they arrived at the bridge, which I have mentioned before—Captain Karnes, always among the foremost in danger, commanding the pursuers. The conflict in the breastwork lasted but a few moments; many of the troops encountered hand to hand, and not having the advantage of bayonets on our side, our riflemen used their pieces as war clubs, breaking many of them off at the breech. The rout commenced at half-past four, and the pursuit by the main army continued until twilight. A guard was then left in charge of the enemy's encampment, and our army returned with their killed and wounded. In the battle, our loss was 2 killed, and 23 wounded, 6 of whom mortally. The enemy's loss was 630 killed; among whom were 1 General officer, 4 Colonels, 2 Lieutenant-Colonels, 5 Captains, 12 Lieutenants; wounded, 208;

of which were 5 Colonels, 3 Lieutenant-Colonels, 2 Second Lieutenant-Colonels, 7 Captains, 1 Cadet; prisoners, 730; President-General Santa Anna, General Cos, 4 Colonels, (Aids to General Santa Anna), and the Colonel of the Guerrero Battallion, are included in the number. General Santa Anna was not taken until the 22d, and General Cos on yesterday, very few having escaped. About 600 muskets, 300 sabres, and 200 pistols, have been collected since the action; several hundred mules and horses were taken, and near twelve thousand dollars in specie. For several days previous to the action, our troops were engaged in forced marches, exposed to excessive rains, and the additional inconvenience of extremely bad roads, illy supplied with rations and clothing; yet, amid every difficulty, they bore up with cheerfulness and fortitude, and performed their marches with spirit and alacrity. There was no murmuring.

Previous to and during the action, my staff evinced every disposition to be useful, and were actively engaged in their duties. In the conflict, I am assured that they demeaned themselves in such a manner as proved them worthy members of the army of San Jacinto. Colonel T. J. Rusk, Secretary of War, was on the field. For weeks his services had been highly beneficial to the army; in battle he was on the left wing, where Colonel Sherman's command first encountered and drove the enemy; he bore himself gallantly, and continued his efforts and activity, remaining with the pursuers until resistance ceased.

I have the honor of transmitting herewith a list of all the officers and men who were engaged in the action, which I respectfully request may be published, as an act of justice to the individuals. For the Commanding General to attempt discrimination as to the conduct of those who commanded in the action, or those who were commanded, would be impossible. Our success in the action is conclusive proof of their daring intrepidity and courage; every officer and man proved himself worthy of the cause in which he battled, while the triumph received a lustre from the humanity which characterized their conduct after victory, and richly entitles them to the admiration and gratitude of their General. Nor should we withhold the tribute of our grateful thanks from that Being who rules the destinies of nations, and has in the time of greatest need enabled us to arrest a powerful invader whilst devastating our country.

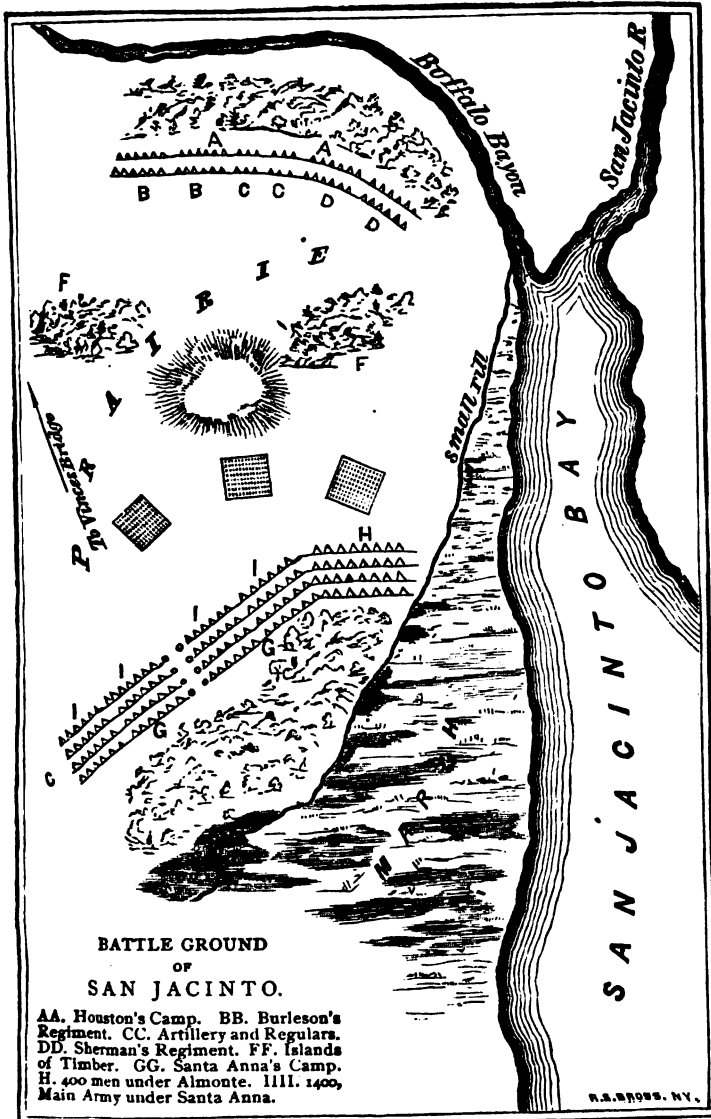
I have the honor to be, with high consideration, your obedient servant,

SAM. HOUSTON,

*Commander-in-Chief.*

The Texas campaign of 1836 furnishes one of the most interesting and remarkable chapters in American history. The population of the province amounted to only a little over 30,000; that of Mexico to over 7,000,000. Texas could hardly be said to have an organized government. It was disturbed by divided counsels, and under the control of distrusted leaders, and was destitute of money and credit,





PLAN OF BATTLE.

## CHAPTER VII.

PRESIDENT BURNET AT GALVESTON—RETREAT OF FILIOLA—TREATY WITH SANTA ANNA—FEELING IN EAST TEXAS—DIFFICULTIES OF THE PRESIDENT AND HIS CABINET—ATTEMPT TO ARREST THE PRESIDENT—ANOTHER MEXICAN INVASION THREATENED—NAVAL OPERATIONS—MORTIT'S REPORT ON TEXAS—ELECTION—MEETING OF CONGRESS—CONSTITUTIONAL GOVERNMENT.

AFTER leaving Harrisburg, President Burnet and Vice-President Zavalla went to their homes near Lynchburg. The former put his family on a small boat, and was just leaving New Washington as a squad of Mexican cavalry under Almonte dashed into the place. Temporarily, the Executive Department was established at Galveston. As soon as the President heard that the army was on Buffalo Bayou, he and Mr. Potter loaded some vessels with supplies and started them up to Harrisburg; but the boats got aground, or met with other detention, so that they did not reach the army until after the battle. On the 23d of April, Burnet wrote to Colonel Rusk, suggesting that, if necessary, the army could fall back to Galveston, and make a final stand on that island. Four days later, but before the news of the victory had reached the island, Warren D. C. Hall, Acting Secretary of War, addressed a similar letter to General Houston. Cannon had been transported from the Brazos; and, under the supervision of Col. James Morgan and Col. A. Huston, the island had been put in a tolerable state for defense.

It was six days before news of the battle reached Galveston, and then President Burnet, and such members of the Government as were with him, hastened up to the battle-field, arriving there on the first of May. (See Calder, R. J.)



**DAVID G. BURNET.**



Immediately after the capture of Santa Anna, that officer wrote to Filisola to countermarch to Bexar and await further orders ; and to direct General Urrea to fall back to the Guadalupe at Victoria. Filisola immediately commenced his retreat. He camped at Powel's, on the Bernard, on the 25th, where he was joined by Gaona, who had passed from the neighborhood of Burton down the Bernard, and also by Urrea, from Brazoria. Filisola then had an army of over four thousand men. But his ammunition had been injured, and he was not in a condition to fight, even if he had not felt obliged to obey the orders of the captive President-General.

At Lynchburg, President Burnet reorganized his cabinet. Mr. Carson, Secretary of State, had been compelled to resign on account of declining health, and James Collinworth took his place. David Thomas had been accidentally killed, and Peter W Grayson became Attorney-General. General Houston, who had been severely wounded in the battle, resigned the command of the army to go to New Orleans for surgical aid, and Mr. Rusk succeeded to the command, and General Lamar became Secretary of War. Messrs. Zavalla, Potter and Hardeman were at their posts. For better accommodations, on the 8th of May the President and his Cabinet, and Santa Anna and staff, left Lynchburg for Velasco, which became the temporary seat of Government. There, on the 14th of May, a treaty was entered into between the President of Texas, and a majority of his Cabinet, and Santa Anna. Some of Mr. Burnet's Cabinet were opposed to the treaty, especially that provision by which Santa Anna was to be released and sent home. Messrs. Ben. Fort Smith, and Henry Teal were sent with a copy of this treaty to Filisola for ratification. The Commissioners found the Mexican General at Goliad on the 26th of May. The treaty was examined, and Messrs. Tolsa and Amat, of his staff, ratified it on behalf of the Mexican army in the

field. Filisola continued his retreat and crossed the Rio Grande in June.

The following is Santa Anna's letter to Filisola, accompanied by a copy of the public treaty :

EXCELLENT SIR: Annexed I send to your Excellency the Articles of the Agreement entered into by me, with his Excellency David G. Burnet, President of the Republic of Texas, for your information and fulfillment of the same to its full extent, in order that no complaints may arise tending to cause a useless rupture. I expect to receive without any delay your Excellency's answer by this same opportunity, and accept in the meantime my consideration and regard. God and Liberty

ANTONIO LOPEZ DE SANTA ANNA.

*To His Excellency General of Division, DON VICENTE FILISOLA.*

ARTICLES OF AN AGREEMENT entered into, between his Excellency David G. Burnet, President of the Republic of Texas, of the one part, and General Antonio Lopez de Santa Anna, President, General-in-Chief of the Mexican army, of the other part.

ART. 1. General Antonio Lopez de Santa Anna agrees that he will not take up arms, nor will he exercise his influence to cause them to be taken up, against the people of Texas during the present war of Independence.

ART. 2. All hostilities between the Mexican and Texan troops will cease immediately, both on land and water.

ART. 3. The Mexican troops will evacuate the Territory of Texas, passing to the other side of the Rio Grande del Norte.

ART. 4. The Mexican army in its retreat shall not take the property of any person without his consent and just indemnification, using only such articles as may be necessary for its subsistence in cases where the owner may not be present; and remitting to the Commander of the Army of Texas, or to the Commissioners to be appointed for the adjustment of such matters, an account of the value of the property consumed, the place where taken, and the name of the owner, if it can be ascertained.

ART. 5. That all private property, including cattle, horses, negro slaves, or indentured persons, of whatever denomination, that may have been captured by any portion of the Mexican army, or may have taken refuge in the said army since the commencement of the late invasion, shall be restored to the Commander of the Texan army, or to such other persons as may be appointed by the Government of Texas to receive them.

ART. 6. The troops of both armies will refrain from coming into contact with each other, and to this end the Commander of the army of Texas will be careful not to approach within a shorter distance of the Mexican army than five leagues.

ART. 7. The Mexican army shall not make any other delay on its march than that which is necessary to take up their hospitals, baggage, etc., and to cross the rivers: any delay not necessary to these purposes to be considered an infraction of this agreement.

ART. 8. By express, to be immediately dispatched, this agreement shall be sent to General Vicente Filisola and to General T. J. Rusk, Commander of the Texan army, in order that they may be apprised of its stipulations, and to this end they will exchange engagements to comply with the same.

ART. 9. That all Texan prisoners now in possession of the Mexican army or its authorities be forthwith released and furnished with free passports to return to their homes, in consideration of which a corresponding number of Mexican prisoners, rank and file, now in possession of the Government of Texas, shall be immediately released. The remainder of the Mexican prisoners that continue in possession of the Government of Texas to be treated with due humanity; any extraordinary comforts that may be furnished them to be at the charge of the Government of Mexico.

ART. 10. General Antonio Lopez de Santa Anna will be sent to Vera Cruz as soon as it shall be deemed proper.

The contracting parties sign this instrument for the above-mentioned purposes, by duplicate, at the Port of Velasco, this 14th of May, 1836.

DAVID G. BURNET,  
ANTONIO LOPEZ DE SANTA ANNA.

JAMES COLLINSWORTH, Secretary of State.  
BAILEY HARDEMAN, Secretary of the Treasury  
P. W. GRAYSON, Attorney-General.

GOLIAD, 25th May, 1836.

EXCELLENT SIR: When on the point of taking up my march with the army I have the honor to command, I received your Excellency's communication announcing the agreements made by your Excellency with the Commander of the Texian forces. Previous to the reception of those agreements I was disposed to obey your prior orders, communicated to me officially; in fulfillment of them I was already on my march, and continued therein on this very day; nor shall there be any other delay than what may be absolutely necessary for transporting the sick, trains, stores, and munitions of war, as is provided for in the treaty. Inasmuch as the said treaty is duly drawn up, agreed to, and ratified by your Excellency, in the character of President of the Republic, and Commander-in-Chief of the Army of Operations, I cannot fail to obey it in all its parts, and have acted in conformity since the commencement. For I have scrupulously performed that part respecting property, prisoners and payment of what has been furnished to the army for its subsistence. Agreeably to the treaty aforesaid, I will also enter into arrangements with the Commander of the Texian forces for a mutual fulfillment of its stipulations and adjustment of claims which may arise. God and Liberty

VICENTE FILISOLA.

*To His Excellency, General DON ANTONIO LOPEZ DE SANTA ANNA, President of the Republic.*

The preceding is the public treaty. The secret one, as found in *Yoakum*, Vol. 2, Appendix No. 5, page 528, is as follows:

## SECRET AGREEMENT.

PORT OF VELASCO, May 14th, 1836.

Antonio Lopez de Santa Anna, General-in-Chief of the Army of Operations, and President of the Republic of Mexico, before the Government established in Texas, solemnly pledges himself to fulfill the stipulations contained in the following articles, so far as concerns himself:

ARTICLE 1. He will not take up arms, nor cause them to be taken up, against the people of Texas, during the present war for Independence.

ART. 2. He will give his orders that in the shortest time the Mexican troops may leave the Territory of Texas.

ART. 3. He will so prepare matters in the Cabinet of Mexico, that the mission that may be sent thither by the Government of Texas may be well received, and that by means of negotiations all differences may be settled, and the Independence that has been declared by the Convention may be acknowledged.

ART. 4. A treaty of comity, amity, and limits, will be established between Mexico and Texas, the territory of the latter not to extend beyond the Rio Bravo del Norte.

ART. 5. The present return of General Santa Anna to Vera Cruz being indispensable for the purpose of effecting his solemn engagements, the Government of Texas will provide for his immediate embarkation for said port.

ART. 6. This instrument being obligatory on one part, as well as on the other, will be signed in duplicate, remaining folded and sealed until the negotiations shall have been concluded, when it will be restored to His Excellency, General Santa Anna—no use of it to be made before that time, unless there should be an infraction by either of the contracting parties.

ANTONIO LOPEZ DE SANTA ANNA,  
DAVID G. BURNET.

JAMES COLLINSWORTH, Secretary of State.

BAILEY HARDEMAN, Secretary of the Treasury.

P. W. GRAYSON, Attorney-General.

East Texas had escaped actual invasion, though suffering much from the expected arrival of Gaona, who was known to be on the march for Nacogdoches. That portion of the province had a considerable population of Mexicans, who, owing to controversies about old land titles and claims, cherished no good feeling for their American neighbors. They also suspected the fidelity of the numerous bands of Indians who had squatted on land claimed by the Cherokees and their associate bands. It was feared that any disaster to the Texans would be seized upon by these Indians, who might murder the settlers to secure their lands. Fortunately, John A. Quitman, of Mississippi, arrived in Nacog-



doches early in April, with a small military company, which afforded ample protection to families, whether remaining on Texas soil, or crossing the Sabine river into Louisiana.

Although the great victory at San Jacinto had, for the time, banished Mexican soldiers from the soil of Texas, except as prisoners of war, it still left many embarrassing questions for the solution of the Government *ad interim*. The army had moved to the west to see that the retreating Mexicans observed the provisions of the treaty. As the time expired for which they had severally enlisted, they were discharged; but volunteers continued to arrive and swell the ranks, until there were nearly two thousand men in camps. But the country had been deserted by its inhabitants, and overrun by the Mexicans, and provisions were exceedingly scarce. Under these circumstances the men became dissatisfied; and citizens had reason to complain that their horses and cattle, and even their corn for bread and for seed, were taken by parties of soldiers, without officers, who were constantly passing through the western settlements. After proceeding as far west as Goliad, and seeing the Mexicans safely out of the country, General Rusk collected the remains of the victims of the Fannin massacre, and had them decently interred. He then returned to the neighborhood of Victoria.

The most difficult and embarrassing question was the disposition to be made of the captive President of Mexico. The President and three members of his cabinet were for releasing him and sending him home according to the literal terms of the treaty, which all parties had signed. But two members were violently opposed to this, and wanted him tried by a drum-head court-martial. The Texas schooner *Invincible*, commanded by Captain J. Brown, was at Velasco, and on the 1st of June, Santa Anna, Almonte, Munez, and Caro were placed on board to be sent to Vera Cruz. Messrs. Zavilla and Hardeman were to go out as Commissioners, to negotiate a treaty with Mexico. The people, generally, dis-

approved this step. A public meeting was held, and resolutions passed, demanding that the prisoners be brought back on shore. To add to the difficulties, on the 2d of June a number of volunteers arrived from New Orleans, under T. Jefferson Green, who threatened hostile demonstrations if the vessel was allowed to sail with the prisoners. Such was the excitement, that the President reluctantly yielded to the clamor; Santa Anna and his suite were disembarked, and taken in charge by the military, and kept in close confinement, until after the meeting of Congress.

During this excitement, every member of the Cabinet threatened to resign, and let the Government dissolve; but Burnet induced them to retain office until an election could be ordered.\* In the meantime, the excitement had reached the army, and at a mass meeting of the soldiers a resolution was passed ordering Burnet's arrest. The first intimation he had of this state of feeling was the receipt of an angry letter signed by a large number of the officers, from which we make a short extract:

"The subject of General Santa Anna, we heard with indignation. That the proposition has been seriously debated by you and your Cabinet as to

\*President Burnet gives this account of the feeling of his cabinet officers, during this trying period: "The violent and dictatorial language of the army, the pragmatic and senseless denunciation of the newly arrived volunteers, and the overheated anathemas of many citizens, all concentrated in one portentous mass upon the members of the administration, and especially on myself, were well calculated to weary the patience of men who had rather consented to discharge the arduous duties, than courted the honors or emoluments of office. At the moment the tumult had reached its acme of excitement, it was seriously proposed in Cabinet council to make a simultaneous surrender of the Government to the people, the fountain of all political power. The proposition was, I believe, congenial with the individual feelings of every member present; but I resisted it, on the ground that an abandonment at such a juncture, would throw Texas into irretrievable anarchy and confusion. I felt, in common with my associates, the injustice and the cruelty of the denunciations against us; but I also felt that the well-being of the country demanded a sacrifice of feeling; and I preferred being abused for a season, to the abdication of my office and the jeopardizing of every hope of success in the great enterprise, the establishment of the independence of Texas, to which I had solemnly pledged my utmost exertions."

the policy of turning him loose, and that some of you propose his liberation. That we should suspect the purity of the motive which suggested such a policy, you must not doubt. It is well known by whom he was captured, and at what risk, and we will not permit him to be liberated until a constitutional Congress and President shall determine that it is expedient; and should he be liberated without the sanction of Congress, the army of citizen soldiers will again assume the privilege of putting down the enemies of Texas."

The excitement against Burnet rose to such a high pitch that, early in July, at a mass meeting of the soldiers in camp, a resolution was passed denouncing him and ordering his arrest. Lieutenant-Colonel Millard, of the regulars, was deputed to proceed to Velasco, take the President, and carry him to camp for trial. Millard took only a few men with him, and those were not of the most reliable character. It was intended to keep the object of their mission a secret; but one of the men got drunk and betrayed them. It was further fortunate for Burnet that Millard found Major A. Turner, then in command of Galveston, at Velasco. As Turner was of the same regiment, Millard communicated to him the object of his visit, and requested Turner to assist him in its accomplishment. Turner, who was a warm personal friend of the President, at once notified him of the intended arrest. Of course Burnet was indignant, and denied the authority of the army to interfere with the civil government.\*

In the mean time, the report started by the drunken sailor had gained a wide circulation, and produced a profound impression. It instantly cemented the hitherto discordant members of the Cabinet; and as it spread throughout the adjacent settlements, roused the people to

\*The order to Turner was very comprehensive. It read: "You are hereby ordered to proceed (from Quintana), to Velasco; and arrest the person of David G. Burnet; take into your possession the books and papers of his office; and you will also take into your possession the books, papers and records of the Secretaries of State, of War, and of the Treasury, and them safely keep, and report forthwith.

[Signed]

H. MILLARD."

the danger in which the civil government was placed. They rushed to Velasco, determined to stand by the President, and some of them contrived to send word to Millard, that Judge Lynch was preparing to sit on his case. Millard became alarmed, and he and his companions left in hot haste for the West.

About this time, news of a threatening character came from Mexico. Messrs. Karnes and Teel, who had been sent as commissioners to see that the terms of the treaty, in reference to prisoners, were strictly complied with, had been arrested, and detained at Matamoras. They there found Major Miller, who had been taken at Copano, just before the Fannin Massacre. These prisoners sent word to Texas that the Mexicans were making formidable preparations for a second invasion of Texas. When this information reached General Rusk, he issued stringent orders, revoking all furloughs, and for recruiting the army. President Burnet issued a proclamation for the enrollment of the militia and the increase of the army. It was evident that there were Mexican emissaries poisoning the minds of the Indians in East Texas; and as most of these tribes were immigrants from the United States, General Gaines was appealed to, to preserve the peace; and he took efficient steps to do so.

This threatened Mexican invasion was prevented by a revival of the efforts of the Federal party, now that Santa Anna was a prisoner in Texas. When the Texans ascertained that the Mexicans were not coming against them, propositions for the conquest of Matamoras were revived, and received the endorsement of the President and his Cabinet. But the absence of some of the vessels of the navy, which were expected to co-operate in the attack, frustrated this project.

We have already stated that during the Provisional Government, the schooners "Liberty" and "Invincible" had been purchased for the navy. After the battle of San



**A MEXICAN JACAL.**



Jacinto, the Liberty conveyed General Houston to New Orleans, where, after lying at anchor for a considerable time, she was sold to defray her expenses. In April, 1836, the Invincible, commanded by Captain Jerry Brown, while on a cruise near Tampico, fell in with a Mexican war schooner, the Montezuma, and brought her to action, which lasted several hours, when the latter, in a disabled condition, was stranded in attempting to enter the port. The Invincible was uninjured, and soon afterward captured the American brig Pocket, laden with stores for the Mexican army in Texas, and brought her into Galveston with a grateful supply for the victors of San Jacinto and their prisoners of war.

After this valuable service, it was the intention of the government that the Invincible should convey Santa Anna and suite, and Messrs. Zavalla and Hardeman, the Texas Commissioners to negotiate a final treaty with Mexico, to Vera Cruz. But this was frustrated by the interference of the people. After another successful cruise on the Mexican coast, the vessel was ordered to New York to be refitted. Another vessel, the Brutus, Captain William Hurd, had also been procured. This vessel was absent, without orders, when the Texans were preparing for a descent upon Matamoras; and this frustrated their design, as they required the vessel to transport troops and munitions of war to the mouth of the Rio Grande. She made her way to New York.

During the summer, Major Isaac W. Burton, with a company of mounted rangers, occupied the coast near Copano. On the 2d of June, they succeeded in decoying on shore the boat belonging to a Mexican supply vessel, the Watchman, loaded with provisions for the Mexican army. She was captured, and while waiting for favorable winds to sail to Velasco, two other supply vessels, the Comanche, and the Fanny Butler, appeared on the coast, and were captured and taken to Velasco. These captures

amounted to some twenty-five thousand dollars, and gave Burton's men the name of "Horse Marines."

About the first of June, President Burnet dispatched Messrs. James Collinsworth and Peter W. Grayson, as Commissioners to the United States, to secure the recognition of Texan independence, and establish diplomatic relations between the two countries. Messrs. Austin, Archer and Wharton, the former Commissioners, after accomplishing all in their power, returned to Texas, soon after the great battle which secured our independence. When Messrs. Collinsworth and Grayson reached Washington, Congress had adjourned; but President Jackson sent Henry M. Morfit as Commissioner to inquire into the condition of Texas, and report. Mr. Morfit's report estimated the population at 52,670,\*

The country was now comparatively quiet, and all fears of an invasion from Mexico had disappeared. On the 12th of July, President Burnet issued a proclamation, prohibiting the impressment of private property for the use of the army, and on the 14th he revoked all commissions held by persons not actually in the army or navy.†

\* The details of this report were as follows.

<i>Anglo-Americans</i> , .....	30,000
<i>Mexicans</i> : at San Antonio, 2,000; Nacogdoches, 800; La Bahia, (Goliad) 500; Victoria, 120; San Patricio, 50, ....	3,470
<i>Indians</i> : Wacoos, 400; Towokonees, 200; Tonkawas, 800; Coshotees, 350; Alabamas, 250; Comanches, 2,000; Cadoes, 500; Lipans, 900; Small Bands, 800; to which add the civilized Indians, Cherokees, Kickapoos, Choctaws, Chickasaws, Pottawotamies, Delawares and Shawnees, 8,000, .....	14,200
<i>Negroes</i> , ....	5,000
<b>Aggregate</b> .....	<b>52,670</b>

† This last brought the President into a controversy with General T. J. Chambers, who had been commissioned by the Executive Council as Major General of the reserves, and sent into the United States with a number of staff officers. General Chambers was still absent, and he complained that the proclamation of the President was intended to revoke his commission and arrest his labors.



On the 23d of July, the President issued his proclamation for a general election, to take place on the first Monday in September, for the election of President, Vice-President and members of Congress, under the new Constitution; which was also to be voted upon. He also ordered an election to decide whether Texas was willing to be annexed to the United States. The Constitution was adopted by an almost unanimous vote; and the vote was equally strong for annexation. Sam Houston was elected President, and Mirabeau B. Lamar, Vice-President.\*

Congress convened at Columbia, on the 3d of October. President Burnet's message gave a truthful picture of the country and offered valuable suggestions for Congress. According to the reports accompanying the message, the audited debt of the country then amounted to about \$250,000; to which was to be added nearly a half million for army supplies, and over a half million due the army and navy—making the total public debt about \$1,250,000.

Among the acts of Congress considered necessary to the complete organization of Civil Government, was one appointing chief justices for the different counties. †

The Constitution which had been adopted provided that the President elect should "enter on the duties of his office on the second Monday in December next succeeding his

\* By the proclamation, soldiers were especially authorized to open polls at their various camps and vote. There were three candidates voted for: Sam Houston received 4,874 votes; Henry Smith 743, and Stephen F. Austin 587; total 5,704. Lamar had a majority of 2,699.

† The following is a list of the original counties and their officers: Austin, Thomas Barnnet; Brazoria, George B. McKinstry; Bexar, Joseph Baker; Sabine, Matthew Parker; Gonzales, B. D. McClure; Goliad, W. H. McIntire; Harrisburg, Andrew Briscoe; Jasper, Joseph Mott; Jefferson, Chichester Chapplin; Liberty, D. P. Coats; Matagorda, Silas Dinsmore; Mina, Andrew Rabb; Nacogdoches, Charles S. Taylor; Red River, Robert Hamilton; Victoria, John McHenry; San Augustine, Wm. McFarland; Shelby, George O. Lusk; Refugio, John Dunn; San Patricio, John Turner; Washington, John P. Cole; Milam, Massilon Farley; Jackson, Patrick Usher; Colorado, Wm. Menifee.

election." But President Burnet and Vice-president Zavala were more than willing to lay aside their official robes, and on the 22d of October, sent in their resignations. These were accepted, and Messrs. Houston and Lamar were duly inaugurated. "Thus closes our Revolutionary period; a period that furnishes the darkest and brightest pages in Texas history."

PART V.  
—  
THE REPUBLIC.  
—  
FROM 1837 TO 1846.



## CHAPTER I.

HOUSTON'S ADMINISTRATION—CONGRESSIONAL PROCEEDINGS—LAND LAWS—THE NAVY—GOVERNMENT REMOVED TO HOUSTON.

**H**OUSTON'S FIRST ADMINISTRATION.—After having been formally installed into his new office, and having delivered his inaugural address, the new President presented to the Speaker of the House his sword, the emblem of the military authority with which he had been clothed, and said: "It now becomes my duty to make a presentation of this sword, the emblem of my past office. I have worn it with some humble pretensions in defence of my country; and should the danger of my country again call for my services, I expect to resume it and respond to that call, if needful, with my blood and my life."\*

The question of disposing of Santa Anna had not been settled when Houston came into office. The distinguished prisoner, after being delivered over to Captain Patton, of the army, had been taken first to Columbia and then to Orizaba, the residence of Dr. Phelps, a few miles up the river. On the 16th of August, the Pasaic, a strange schooner, with an unusually large crew, arrived at Columbia, under the command of a Spaniard, who went up to Orizaba and had an interview with Santa Anna. It was

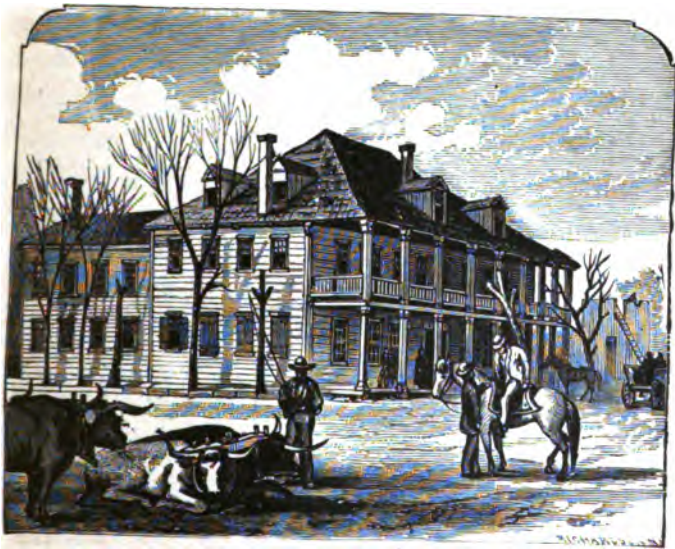
\* That speech and emblematic act were characteristic of President Houston, and have been noticed by all the historians. But inasmuch as he had relinquished the command of the army on the 5th of May, when he took his departure for New Orleans, and had just been re-invested with the command of both the army and navy, the propriety of this highly symbolic act is not very apparent.

at once suspected that an attempt would be made to rescue the prisoner and convey him to sea on this vessel. For fear an attempt of that kind would be made, Santa Anna was ironed and the guard doubled. This was done without the sanction of President Burnet. When Congress met a resolution was passed requesting that the irons should be removed, and it was immediately done. But Congress refused to pass a bill to set him at liberty. However, soon after that body adjourned, President Houston assumed the responsibility of setting the prisoner free. Santa Anna and Colonel Almonte, of his staff, and Colonels Bee and Patton, of the Texas army, left the Brazos on the 22d of December, and proceeded across the country on horseback to the Mississippi River, where they took a steamer on their way to Washington City.

A radical change was effected in the judicial system of the country. Heretofore, no Supreme Court had been organized. During the government *ad interim*, one court with admiralty jurisdiction had been created and B. C. Franklin appointed judge. The Republic was, at the session of the first Congress, divided into four districts. The Supreme Court was formed by having one chief justice, while the district judges acted as associate justices in the higher court. These judges were elected by joint ballot of both houses of Congress and held their offices for four years. Provision was also made for county and magistrate's courts.

The financial question occupied a large share of attention. An *ad valorem* tax was placed upon property, and to raise a revenue by imposts an act was passed, December 20th, imposing *ad valorem* duties of various rates, from one to fifty per cent., and a tonnage duty of \$1.25 per ton. Other acts authorized the President to borrow various amounts; but, as he received no propositions which he deemed it advisable to accept, these brought no relief to the exhausted treasury.

Destitute as the country was of available means, Congress



**OLD CAPITOL, HOUSTON.**





was very liberal in its appropriations. On the 15th of December, a bill passed appropriating \$150,000 for the use of the navy; \$700,000 for the army; and \$150,000 for the executive and civil departments. This bill still left the support of the diplomatic agents of the government to be provided for.

As General Rusk had taken a place in the Cabinet, the command of the army was given to General Felix Huston. Huston reported to the Secretary of War on the 16th of December, that the army consisted of about seven hundred enlisted men for the period of the war, and eighty who had six months longer to serve. The troops had neither flour nor bread; beef-cattle were in abundance on the prairies, but they had no horses to drive them up. They had likewise a good supply of ammunition, but were without flints. By resolution of the Congress, General James Hamilton, of South Carolina, was invited to take command of the army; but he respectfully declined the office.

In the early part of 1837, Filisola was stationed on the Rio Grande to organize another expedition for the invasion of Texas; but fortunately the revolution under Moctezuma furnished employment for Mexican troops at home. Texas being in no immediate danger of invasion from Mexico, by order of Houston the soldiers were permitted to go home on furlough; and the country was saved the expense of keeping so large a body of men unemployed in the field.

As we have seen, one of the first acts of the Executive Council at San Felipe in 1835, was to close the land office and suspend the issuance of land titles. The new constitution directed that the public land should be "sectionized," instead of being laid off in leagues and labors, after the Spanish land system. The old Texans, whose tracts were in leagues, opposed the new plan, and it was not adopted. Congress, however, passed a general land law, requiring the land office to be opened on the 1st of June, 1837, and remain open six months for the special benefit of citizens

who had not obtained their land under the colonization laws, and for volunteers who had served a term in the army. It further provided "that every free white person, head of a family, who should arrive in the Republic from and after January 1, 1837, should be entitled to 1,280 acres of land, and every single free white man, 640 acres, to be increased to 1,280 acres in case of marriage; but patents not to be granted till after they had been three years resident. This bill was vetoed by the President, but promptly passed over the veto by the constitutional majority.

On the 16th of December, a bill was passed "to incorporate the Texas Railroad, Navigation and Banking Company," with a capital stock of five millions of dollars, to be increased if desirable to ten millions. This company was authorized to connect the waters of the Sabine and Rio Grande rivers by means of internal navigation, with the privilege of constructing branch canals and branch railroads in every direction, and to an unlimited extent; and if the company could have carried out their grand programme, the whole public domain of the State would have passed into their hands.\*

The general land law, which was to have gone into operation June 1, 1837, was suspended first until October 1, and was subsequently indefinitely suspended. Finally, on the 14th of December, a general land law was adopted. Under this law "a Commissioner of the general land office was provided for; also, a Board of Commissioners for each

\*Mr. Godge, in his fiscal history of Texas, says the whole amount of stock was subscribed by eight individuals and firms, and though none of them paid anything in, some made money out of the charter. One of the stockholders sold out his interest to a gentleman of New York for thirty thousand dollars, and received his pay in store goods. The successful salesman bought out the interest of another for ten thousand dollars, and another disposed of his interest for three leagues of land, which he subsequently sold for two dollars and a half an acre.

county, to take proof and issue headrights; and a surveyor for each county, to survey, and make out and record field notes. These field notes, with the certificate, to be returned to the General Land Office, examined, located on the map of lands, and, if found correct, on vacant lands, a grant of patent, signed by the President and countersigned by the Commissioner, passing under both their seals, issues to the party in the name of the State. Should the party's claim be for military services, he obtained his warrant from the War office, and proceeded to locate as a headright certificate. So, likewise, in regard to land scrip, the same course was to be pursued." By this bill, which was vetoed by the President, and passed over the veto, the Land Office was to be opened for old settlers and soldiers on the first Thursday in February, 1838, and for other parties, six months later.\*

When Houston was inaugurated, the navy was in no condition to render valuable service to the Government, either in protecting the coast or conducting offensive warfare. The *Invincible* and the *Brutus* were in New York for repairs, and would probably have shared the fate of the

\* Under this law, fraudulent claims were successfully passed through the formalities necessary to secure titles, and no little criticism was indulged in as to its provisions. Anson Jones, who was a member of the Senate, says: "The law, though objectionable, was the best that could have been passed, under the circumstances, at that time, without conflicting with equitable rights that had grown up under former legislation. \* \* \* Everybody of ordinary sagacity knew there would be frauds committed the moment a Land Office was opened in Texas. It took no prophet to tell that. It would have taken all the Prophets, and the Apostles to boot, to tell us how fraud was to be prevented in Texas land matters. The greatest fault, after all, that can be found with this bill is that it did not prevent "perjury," for, aside from perjury, which no law can stop, few evils have grown out of it." Commenting upon the same law, D. G. Burnet says: "The acquisition of land has ever constituted a too prominent feature in the Anglo-American settlement of Texas. Iniquitous frauds have been resorted to in gratification of this inordinate passion. It is difficult, by legislation, to circumscribe the chicanery of land speculators. Their ingenious avidity will find means to circumvent the most stringent enactments." Our readers will bear in mind that these strictures were passed before the railroad system of Texas had been fully developed.

Liberty, in New Orleans, and been sold to defray their expenses, but Henry Swartwout, the Collector of the Port, generously stepped forward and furnished the means out of his private purse, to refit the ships, and prepare them for a cruise. When they arrived in Galveston Captain H. L. Thompson was placed in command of the *Invincible*, and Captain I. D. Boylan of the *Brutus*. During the administration of President Burnet, another vessel, the *Independence*, Captain Charles E. Hawkins, commander, had been purchased and put in commission. In 1837, Captain George W. Wheelwright became commander of the *Independence*. During the month of April, the *Invincible* and the *Brutus*, accompanied by Hon. S. Rhodes Fisher, Secretary of the Navy, started for a cruise in the Gulf of Mexico.

During this month, April, 1837, Yoakum, in his history of Texas, pages 212 and 213, volume 2, says :

“The appearance of the Mexican fleet in the Gulf was followed by some damage to Texas. The *Champion*, freighted with provisions, etc., for the army, was taken by the enemy; and also on the 12th of April the *Julis Cæsar*, whose cargo was valued at \$30,000. President Houston had previously issued an order for the release of the Mexican prisoners; but, learning that those on board the captured vessels had been taken into Matamoras and confined, he revoked the order of release.

“This blockading navy of the enemy necessarily came in contact with the commerce of the United States, and the Mexican brig of war *Urrea*, having captured some American vessels and property, was taken by the United States sloop-of-war *Natchez* and sent into Pensacola as a pirate. On the 17th of April, the Texan schooner *Independence*, having a crew of thirty-one men, besides several passengers, among whom was William H. Wharton, on his return from his mission to the United States, was met about thirty miles from Velasco by two Mexican brigs-of-war, the *Libertador*, having sixteen eighteen-pounders and one hundred and forty men, and the *Vencedor del Alamo* carrying six twelves and one long eighteen-pounder and one hundred men. After a severe fight, in which the Texans behaved most gallantly, the *Independence* was overpowered and taken into Brazos Santiago, whence the crew and passengers were transferred to Matamoras and confined. In this engagement, Captain Wheelwright, of the *Independence*, was severely wounded. The Texan navy, on leaving Galveston in May, proceeded to the mouth of the Mississippi, but failing to find any of the enemy there after a cruise of seven or eight days, turned to the coast of Mexico. The Texans made some small prizes about the island of Mugerés, and thence proceeded to Yucatan, where they cannonaded the town of Sisal

for some three hours, but with little effect. The Texan schooner *Invincible* took and sent into port as a prize the Mexican schooner *Obispo*, of eighty tons; and the *Brutus* captured and sent in the schooner *Telegraph*. The Texans also made repeated landings along the coast, and burnt eight or nine towns. This, though sufficiently annoying to the enemy, and in accordance with their mode of warfare, has not been considered, in modern times, as the most humane way of conducting a war. Another vessel, the *Eliza Russel*, of one hundred and eighty tons, belonging to English subjects, which was taken by the *Invincible* off the Alicranes and brought into Galveston, not being freighted with a contraband cargo, was afterwards properly restored, with damages, by the Republic."

Page 216, volume 2, the same historian says:

"Colonel John H. Wharton, desirous of making an effort to release his brother from the prison of Matamoras, obtained permission and a flag, and proceeded with thirty Mexican prisoners to that town to make an exchange, but on landing he was made a prisoner and confined in a dungeon. After an imprisonment of six days he made his escape and returned to Texas. In the meantime his brother, William H. Wharton, through the aid of the well-known Captain Thompson of the Mexican navy, also escaped and reached home. It was intended that Thompson should desert the enemy's service and leave with him; but Thompson's departure was precipitated by some information given to the Mexican authorities, and he arrived in Texas before either of the Whartons. This barbarous conduct on the part of the enemy induced the President of Texas to readmit the granting of *letters of marque and reprisal* against them, which he had suspended on his entrance into office.

"On the 25th of August, the *Brutus* and the *Invincible* arrived off the bar at Galveston, having in tow a Mexican armed schooner, which they had captured near the banks of Campeachy. On the same evening the *Brutus* and the prize entered the harbor, but the *Invincible* could not get in. On the following morning the latter was attacked by two of the enemy's armed brigs. The *Brutus*, in attempting to go out to her aid, ran aground; so the *Invincible* was obliged to continue the unequal contest alone during the day; towards evening she attempted a retreat, but struck on the breakers near the south-east channel. The crew landed in safety, but during the night the vessel went to pieces. The *Invincible* was a favorite craft in the Texan navy, and her loss much regretted."

The last remaining vessel of the old navy, the *Brutus*, was lost during the equinoctial gale of 1837, in the harbor of Galveston; at which time fourteen or fifteen vessels then in port were destroyed or seriously injured, and nearly the entire city flooded by the water of the bay in its exit before

a sudden norther, just after having been filled by a strong south-east gale of several days continuance.

After a three-months' laborious session at Columbia, the first session of the Congress of Texas adjourned to meet at the newly laid out city of Houston, on the 5th of May.

On the 2d of March, 1837, the Congress of the United States passed the bill recognizing the independence of Texas; and during the next year commercial treaties were negotiated with France and Great Britain, though the latter insisted upon considering Texas as a part of the Mexican Republic.

Notwithstanding the Mexican invasion in 1836, and the absence of so many farmers in the army, the season was favorable, and good crops were made. The year 1837 was also a good crop year. It was estimated that the cotton crop amounted to fifty thousand bales. A heavy tide of immigration was setting towards Texas, and a profitable commerce carried on at its principal seaports. There was regular steam communication with New Orleans, and a fine class of sail vessels between New York and the Texas coast. Towns were multiplying with great rapidity, and the prospect was encouraging for the future.

Under the Constitution, the first President held office only two years; though after the first term the Presidential term was three years. At the election held September 3d, 1838, Mirabeau B. Lamar was elected President, and David G. Burnet Vice President.\*

\*During the summer, two of the gentlemen most prominent as candidates for President took themselves out of the canvass by suicide. (See James Collinsworth and Peter W. Grayson). The following were the votes cast at the election: For President, Lamar, 6,995; for Robert Wilson, 252; total 7,247. For Vice President, D. G. Burnet, 3,952; A. C. Horton, 1,917; Joseph Rowe, 1,215.

The following were the principal officers during this Presidential term: S. F. Austin, R. A. Irwin, and J. Pinckney Henderson, Secretaries of State; Thomas J. Rusk, William S. Fisher, Bernard E. Bee, George W. Hockley, Secretaries of War; Henry Smith, Secretary of the Treasury; S. Rhodes Fisher, William M. Shepperd, Secretaries of the Navy; J. Pinckney

Henderson, Peter W. Grayson, John Birdsall, A. S. Thurston, Attorney Generals; Robert Burr, Post Master General; E. M. Pease, Francis R. Lubbock, Comptrollers; John W. Moody, First Auditor; J. G. Welshinger, Second Auditor; William G. Cooke, Stock Commissioner; William H. Wharton, Memucan Hunt, Anson Jones, Ministers to the United States; J. Pinckney Henderson, Minister to Great Britain and France; W. F. Catlett, Secretary of Legation to the United States; George S. McIntosh, Secretary of Legation to Great Britain and France.

## CHAPTER II.

LAMAR'S ADMINISTRATION—TROUBLE AT NACOGDOCHES—A NEW NAVY—AUSTIN  
SELECTED AS THE PERMANENT CAPITOL—NEW COLONIES—REPUBLIC OF THE RIO  
GRANDE—SANTA FE EXPEDITION—ITS MISCARRIAGE, AND THE CAUSES.

LAMAR'S ADMINISTRATION.—General Lamar was formally inaugurated on the 10th of December, 1838. The ceremonies occurred in front of the Capitol, Houston, in the presence of an immense concourse of people, who were delighted with the sentiments expressed by the incoming Executive. In his inaugural he said: "The character of my administration may be anticipated in the domestic nature of our government and the peaceful habits of the people. Looking upon agriculture, commerce, and the useful arts, as the true basis of all National strength and glory, it will be my leading policy to awaken into vigorous activity the wealth, talent, and enterprise of the country; and, at the same time, to lay the foundation of those higher institutions for moral and mental culture without which no government on democratic principles can prosper, nor the people long preserve their liberties."

The President took ground against the annexation of Texas to the United States, and in his regular message strongly advocated a National bank, and a system of popular and liberal education. It was during his administration that Congress laid the foundation of our school fund, by setting aside fifty leagues of land for a university, and three leagues for each county in the Republic.

In the summer of 1838, a considerable number of the Mexican citizens of Nacogdoches—Captain Antonio Manchaca, who visited them, said 125 and a few Biloxi Indians





**MIRABEAU B. LAMAR.**



—being dissatisfied with the government of Texas, went into camp on the Angelina river, without any very well defined purpose. On the assembling of a small military force these Mexicans dispersed. Some of them returned to their homes; but Vincente Cordova, the leader, fled westward with a few followers, and entered into a correspondence with Filisola, the Mexican commander on the Rio Grande. Early in 1839, Canalizo succeeded Filisola in command at Matamoras. He immediately dispatched Manuel Flores to co-operate with Cordova in rousing the prairie Indians to hostilities against the Texans. These Indians were exhorted not to cease to harass the Texans for a single day; to burn their habitations and lay waste their fields; and by rapid and well-concerted movements, to draw their attention in every direction; and the Indians were informed that Mexico would soon be in a condition to re-establish her authority over Texas; and then they should have their lands; but assuring them that they need expect nothing from these greedy adventurers for land, who wished to deprive the Indians of the sun that warms and vivifies them, and who would not cease to injure them while the grass grows and water runs." The Texans having heard of Cordova's movements, General Burleson, in March, raised a small company of volunteers, and found and defeated him on the Guadalupe river, near Seguin. Cordova escaped, but left his usual haunts, and Flores failed to find him. Flores went east, in hopes of finding Cordova, and when near the present city of Austin he was discovered by Lieutenant James O. Rice, with a party of Rangers. Flores and two of his companions were killed, and his instructions captured. This broke up the Indio-Mexican league, that seriously threatened at one time to do much mischief to the country.

In November, 1838, Congress passed a law for the creation of a new navy. Samuel M. Williams was appointed by President Houston to make the purchase. A contract

was made with Frederick Dawson, of Baltimore, for one ship, two brigs and three schooners. In March, 1839, General Hamilton, of South Carolina, purchased for the government the steamer Charleston, (afterward the Zavalla). Mr. Dawson delivered, during the same year, the schooners San Jacinto, San Bernard and San Antonio; and the brigs Colorado and Dolphin, and the sloop of war Austin.

There being no demand for these ships on the Texas coast, they were placed in the service of the revolutionary government of Yucatan; that government to defray all expenses, and render other compensation to Texas.\*

There always had been a strong party opposed to the location of the seat of government at the city of Houston; and by an act of Congress, approved January 14, 1839, commissioners were appointed to select another location. The village of Waterloo, on the Colorado, was chosen. It was sufficiently near the geographical center of the State; but was then on the extreme frontier, and exposed to incursions of the Comanche and other tribes of prairie Indians. The new site was appropriately named *Austin*.† The city

\* The following is a list of the vessels and their armament and officers, as they left Galveston harbor on the 24th of June, 1840, for the coast of Yucatan: Sloop Austin, 20 guns, Commodore E. W. Moore; steamship Zavalla, 8 guns, Captain J. K. T. Lathrop; schooner San Jacinto, 5 guns, Lieutenant W. R. Postell; schooner San Bernard, 5 guns, Lieutenant W. S. Williamson; schooner San Antonio, 5 guns, Lieutenant Alexander Moore; and brig Dolphin, — guns, Lieutenant John Rudd.

† Albert C. Horton, Lewis P. Cook, Isaac W. Burton, William Menifee and J. Campbell, were the commissioners to select the location. Edwin Waller was the agent to lay off the city and locate the different public buildings. Austin has had a severe struggle to retain the government. General Houston was bitterly opposed to the location; and in 1842, removed the executive departments to Houston. This was in March. In October the President called an extra session of Congress in Washington; where the government remained until July, 1845, when the Annexation Convention assembled in Austin. It became the seat of government. In 1850, by a popular vote, Austin was chosen the capital for twenty years. The places voted for were Austin, 7,674; Palestine, 1,854; Tehuacany, 1,143 and some scattering. In 1872 it was permanently located at the same place, Austin receiving 63,297 votes; Houston, 35,188; Waco, 12,776, and a few scattering.

was promptly laid out; lots sold, and buildings erected for the accommodation of the various departments of the government. These buildings were in such a state of preparation that by the first of October, the President and heads of departments removed to the new capital.

To induce a more rapid settlement of the Republic, Congress gave encouragement to the introduction of new colonies. In 1841-42, W. S. Peters took two contracts, engaging to introduce 800 families into the fine region of country around Dallas. Fisher & Miller took a contract for settling 600 families on the Upper Colorado and Llano rivers; C. F. Mercer, two contracts for settling 600 families in the region of country above the Peters colony, towards Red river. A German Emigration Company settled Comal and Gillespie counties; and Henry Castro introduced about 600 families into Western Texas, settling Castroville in 1844; Quihi in 1845; Vandenburg in 1846, and Dhanis in 1847.

We have not attempted to keep our readers advised of the changes constantly taking place among our trans-Rio Grande neighbors. But in 1839 a revolution occurred in which not a few of the Texas soldiers participated. The disbanding of the army left many ready for any enterprise that promised excitement, and congenial employment. It was natural that the Republicans in Mexico should look to Texas for sympathy and support. During the summer a considerable number of Republicans assembled at Lipantitlan, on the west side of the Nueces river. President Lamar issued a proclamation ordering them to disperse. But little attention was paid to the order. Among the Mexican leaders the most noted were General Lic. Antonio Canalis and Colonels Jose Maria Gonzales and — Zapata. Among the Americans the principal were Colonels S. W. Jordan and Reuben Ross. The "Republic of the Rio Grande" was formally proclaimed, and a military organization effected. The force, including 180 Texans, amounted

to about 600 men. They left Lipantitlan on the 20th of September, and crossed the Rio Grande on the 30th. Their first point of attack was Guerrero, three miles from the river, occupied by General Parbon, of the Centralist army. Parbon retreated, without offering to fight, to Alcantra, near Mier. Here he was overtaken by the Republicans on the 3d of October, when a severe battle was fought. Early in the engagement the Indians and rancheros in Canalis' ranks became demoralized, and the Texans had to bear the brunt of the battle. The Centralists, after losing about 150 of their men, retreated, leaving the Republicans masters of the field. Their loss in killed was 14. After this recruits flocked to their standard, but Canalis, instead of availing himself of the enthusiasm which this victory had kindled, remained for two months inactive. Finally, on the 12th of December, he moved down the river with 1,000 men, and laid siege to Matamoras. The siege was not very vigorously prosecuted; but on the 15th a skirmish took place in which fifteen Centralists were killed. The city was strongly fortified and well garrisoned and provisioned. It had a garrison of 1,500 regulars, under General Canalizo. On the 16th, Canalis, at a council of his officers, announced his intention to abandon the siege. This offended the Texans, and Colonel Ross with about fifty of his men returned to their homes.

Canalis retired towards Monterey. Arriving within six miles of that city, his troops found themselves suddenly confronted by an army of 2,000, under General Arista. This was December 24th. After some skirmishes and manœuvres, in which the Texans thought Canalis exhibited a conspicuous want of generalship, the intriguing Arista succeeded in detaching a large number of the Mexicans from Canalis' ranks to his own, where the pay was more certain. Jordan, with the Texans, and a few faithful Mexicans, retreated towards the Rio Grande, crossing that stream on the 7th of January.

Canalis, not at all disheartened, collected a few of his followers, and called a convention at Guerrero, January 28. Jordan rejoined him at Presidio, but not liking the prospect, remained only a few days. Arista, being fully posted as to the movements of the Republicans, attacked and defeated Canalis at Moralis, on the 15th of March. Canalis, with a portion of his men, escaped to Texas, and unfurled the banner of the Republic of the Rio Grande, at San Patricio. Here he was joined by Jordan, with 110 men; William S. Fisher, with 200; and John N. Seguin, with 100. Including about 300 Rancheros, the whole force amounted to 700.

For some unaccountable reason, Colonel Jordan, with 260 men, was dispatched, in advance of the main body, with two Mexican officers for guides. With very little opposition, this comparatively small party occupied successively the towns of Guerrero, Mier, Comargo, Tula, Morallo, Linares, and finally Victoria, the capital of the State of Tamaulipas. Jordan strongly suspected that his Mexican guides were seeking an opportunity to betray him and his men into the hands of the Centralists. This was nearly accomplished, near Saltillo, on the 23d of October. The Republicans were confronted by a Centralist army numbering over 1,000 men, with two nine-pounders, under the command of Vasques. As soon as the battle opened, the suspected officers deserted to the Centralists with their companies. The Texans, however, maintained the fight, killing (by estimation), 400 of the enemy. They lost of their number, five killed and seven wounded. Jordan and his party returned to Texas.

The subsequent conduct of Canalis created a suspicion that, in dividing his force, and dividing the small party of Texans, and sending Jordan into the interior without support, he acted in bad faith. A majority of the troops were Texans, and he perhaps feared that should they succeed in gaining important advantages, he would be displaced from

the command, and one of the Texan officers promoted. At any rate, after the departure of Jordan, though Canalis crossed the Rio Grande, he remained comparatively inactive, and finally, at Comargo, surrendered his entire force to Arista. It is to his credit that in the surrender he stipulated for the lives and liberty of the Texans in his ranks. Thus ended the attempt to establish the "Republic of the Rio Grande." But this organization, for the time, gave employment to the Mexican army under Arista, and so prevented an invasion of Texas.

The Texans claimed the Rio Grande as the southwestern boundary of the Republic, but no attempt had as yet been made to extend the laws over that portion of Santa Fe lying on the Texas side of the river. Between St. Louis and the city of Santa Fe, a lucrative trade was springing up, which the Texans were anxious to divert to their own gulf ports. To open communication with that distant region, an expedition to Santa Fe was projected in 1841. The object of this expedition, as announced by President Lamar in his proclamation, was to have a friendly interview with the authorities of the State, and if they were willing to come under the laws of Texas, arrangements would be entered into to extend our laws over that territory; but if the people were averse to this, he wished to establish friendly commercial relations with the people of New Mexico. For protection through the Indian country, a military organization was effected, and placed under command of General Hugh M'Leod. It consisted of five companies of mounted infantry, and one of artillery—270 soldiers. The President sent Messrs. William G. Cooke, R. F. Brenham, and Don J. A. Navarro, as commissioners, who were charged to so conduct the negotiations as to accomplish the purposes of the Government in sending out the expedition. There were also about fifty traders, teamsters and adventurers. The commander was instructed not to attempt a subjugation of the people by arms.



The expedition started from the neighborhood of Georgetown on Brushy, on the 20th of June, 1841. Many difficulties were encountered, from the very start; and from Little River, they sent back for more beef cattle. The guides were not well acquainted with the route, and after wandering about for some time, finally mistook the Wichita for Red river, and got lost in the Wichita mountains. Provisions gave out, water was scarce, the Indians troublesome, horses were stolen, and occasionally men that straggled off from their companions were killed. On the 11th of August, Messrs. Howland, Baker and Rosenbury were sent forward to procure supplies. A few days later, the main party fell in with a large band of Kiowa Indians. Lieutenant Hull and four men being a short distance from the others, were attacked by these Indians, and after desperate fighting, in which a dozen Indians were killed, they were overpowered and slain. Lieutenant Hull had no less than thirty lance and arrow wounds. They were then on the Quintufue, a branch of the Palo Duro river. After this, a consultation of officers was held, and it was determined to divide the command, sending forward to the settlements for provisions. "Those best able to travel," says Kendall, "were detailed by General M'Leod to march in advance, and were placed under command of Captain Sutton, an excellent officer. The party consisted of eighty-seven officers and privates, with merchants, travellers, and servants enough to swell the number to ninety-nine. Among the officers were Captain Lewis, Lieutenants Lubbock, Munson, Brown, and Seavy, the latter acting as Adjutant. The civilians were Colonel Cooke, Dr. Brenham, Major Howard, Messrs. Van Ness, Fitzgerald, Frank Combs, and myself." This party left M'Leod on the 31st of August, and arrived at Anton Chico, a village on the Galinas, a tributary of the Rio Grande, on the 10th of September. Here an ample supply of provisions were obtained, and on the 14th, Captain Lewis, with Kendall, Van Ness, and some others,

started for San Miguel. They had heard that Howland and his companions had been taken prisoners, but did not doubt that when the authorities understood the peaceful objects of the mission, all would be well. In this they were sadly mistaken.

It seems unaccountably strange, that the Texans, after the experience of 1836, should have acted with so little caution. Although they heard that the Governor was hostile to their enterprise, no word was sent back either to M'Leod, or to the more advanced party at Anton Chico. When Kendall and his party arrived at a small village called Cuesta, they were met by a party of Mexicans, under Don Salezar, a military officer. The men were disarmed, and their papers and valuables taken from them, with the assurance, however, that they would soon all be returned. Disarmed and robbed, they were marched as prisoners into San Miguel. Howland and his party, for an attempt, or an alleged attempt, to escape, were barbarously shot. In the meantime, it was observed that Lewis was becoming quite intimate with the Mexican officers. The result was, that Lewis, one of their trusted officers, turned traitor, and plotted the capture of the party at Anton Chico, with Cooke, and those with M'Leod, who was then at the Laguna Colorado, some forty miles distant. These unfortunate men, after being disarmed and plundered, were tied in companies of four and six, and marched first to San Miguel, thence to Santa Fe, and finally to the city of Mexico, and confined in the prisons of St. Jago, Puebla, and Perote, where they languished for nearly two years. A few, at the solicitation of influential friends, were released; and among them, Kendall, the historian of the expedition. Senor Navarro, however, being an object of special hostility, was confined in the castle of San Juan D'Ulloa, until the revolution of 1844, when he, too, was set at liberty. Mr. Kendall gives the following reasons for the failure of the expedition:



TOWN OF SAN ANTONIO DE BEXAR, TEXAS 1840.



“And what mistake had brought this sorrowful issue to our enterprise? In as few words as possible, I will answer the question. In the first place, the expedition began its march too late in the season by at least six weeks. Had it left Austin on the first of May, the grass would have been much better, and we should have had little difficulty in finding good water both for ourselves and our cattle. In the second place, we were disappointed in obtaining a party of Lipan Indians for guides, and were consequently obliged to take a route some three hundred miles out of our way, and in many places extremely difficult of travel. Thirdly, the Government of Texas did not furnish wagons and oxen enough to transport the goods of the merchants, and this, as a matter of course, caused tedious delays. Fourthly, cattle enough on the hoof were not provided, even with the second supply sent by the commissioners from Little river. Again, the distance was vastly greater than we had anticipated, in our widest and wildest calculations; owing to which circumstance, and an improvident waste of provisions while in the buffalo range, we found ourselves upon scant allowance in the middle of our long journey—a privation which weakened, dispirited and rendered the men unfit for duty. The Indians also annoyed us much, by their harrassing and continual attempts to cut off small parties and steal our horses. Finally, the character of the Governor of New Mexico, was far from being understood, and his power was underrated by all. The General's estimate of the views and feelings of the people of Santa Fe and the vicinity, was perfectly correct; not a doubt can exist that they all were and are anxious to throw off the yoke of Armijo, and come under the liberal institutions of Texas. But the Governor found us divided into small parties, broken down by long marches and want of food; he discovered a traitor among us, too, and taking advantage of these circumstances, his course was plain and his conquest easy. Far different would have been the result, had the expedition reached the confines of New Mexico a month earlier, and in a body. Then, with fresh horses, and a sufficiency of provisions for the men, the feelings of the inhabitants would have been different. The proclamation of General Lamar would have been distributed among them; the people would have had an opportunity to come over to Texas without fear, and the feeble opposition Armijo could have made, and I doubt whether he would have made any against the Texans in a body, could have been put down with ease. Had it been evident that a majority of the inhabitants were satisfied under their present government, and unfriendly to a union with Texas, then the goods would have been sold and the force withdrawn; at least, such was the tenor of the proclamation. No attack would have been made upon the inhabitants—that was expressly understood. But had Armijo seen fit to commence hostilities, his power in New Mexico would have been at an end. Fate decreed otherwise, and by a series of unforeseen and unfortunate circumstances, the expedition was thrown into his hands.”

During the year 1840, France and Belgium recognized the independence of Texas.

Toward the Indian tribes, the policy of General Lamar was diametrically opposed to that of his predecessor. While General Houston sought to conciliate them with kind treatment, Lamar thought they should be excluded from our territory, and proposed, if necessary, to mark the boundaries of the Republic with the sword. There was then, as there has been ever since, a difference of opinion as to which was the true policy.\*

Financially, the administration of Mr. Lamar was not a success, though his most bitter opponent never accused either the President or the members of his cabinet of dishonesty; (and the same remark is true of all the Presidents of the Republic and the members of their cabinets respectively). The public credit was low and declining when Lamar was inaugurated, and continued rapidly to grow worse. Under the administration of Houston the salaries of officers had been fixed exorbitantly high—the President's at \$10,000, and the members of his cabinet at \$3,500 each; and this at a period when the whole population was less than 50,000, and the ability of the Republic to maintain its independence quite problematical. To add to the burdens of the incoming administration, a new navy had been contracted for, and no means provided to defray the expense of purchase. The revenue was small—the annual expenses enormous—and it is not to be wondered at that treasury notes—called red-backs, from the color of the paper upon which they were printed—should have declined, in the three years, from seventy cents to twenty cents or even less, on the dollar. Nominally, the expense of the Government for the year 1841 was \$1,176,288. The public debt

\*See Part VII for a sketch of the various Indian tribes, and their battles with the whites.

increased during the three years from \$1,877,525 to \$7,300,000.\*

The cares and responsibilities of office weighed heavily on President Lamar, and the severe strictures of political opponents affected his deeply sensitive nature, and he applied to Congress for permission to absent himself from the Republic. The request was granted, and during the last year the Government was administered by Vice-President Burnet.†

\*Mr. Gouge, in his *Fiscal History*, says the average amount of expenses per annum, during Lamar's administration, was \$1,618,405; while the average in the succeeding administration of Houston was only \$170,361; and adds, this difference is owing in part only to the differences in the character of the men who presided over the Government. President Lamar, as a paper-money man, was profuse on principle. He knew no limit on expenditure but the limit of credit. President Houston, as somewhat of a hard-money man, was more inclined to economy. But if Houston had been Chief Magistrate from 1839 to 1842, he could have restricted but in part the expenditures of those years. And if Lamar had succeeded him, he would have been compelled, from the force of circumstances, to be, in some degree, economical.

† During this Administration the following gentlemen filled various offices, at home and abroad: Bernard E. Bee, James Webb, Abner S. Lipscomb, James S. Mayfield, Samuel A. Roberts, Secretaries of State; A. Sydney Johnston, Branch T. Archer, Secretaries of War; Richard G. Dunlap, James H. Starr, J. G. Chalmers, Secretaries of the Treasury; Memucan Hunt and Louis P. Cooke, Secretaries of the Navy; J. C. Watrous, James Webb and F. A. Morris, Attorney Generals; Robert Burr, Edwin Waller and John R. Jones, Post Master-Generals; Asa Brigham and James W. Simmons, Treasurers; James W. Simmons and James B. Shaw, Comptrollers; Jown W. Moody and Charles Mason, First Auditors; Musgrove Evans, Second Auditor; John P. Borden and Thomas William Ward, Commissioners of General Land Office; Thomas R. Stiff, Jackson Smith, Joseph Moreland and Charles de Morse, Stock Commissioners; Richard G. Dunlap and Barnard E. Bee, Ministers to the United States; James Hamilton, Minister to Great Britain; William Henry Dangerfield and George S. McIntosh, Ministers to France; Bernard E. Bee and James Webb, Ministers and Agents to Mexico; M. Austin Bryan, Samuel A. Roberts and Nathaniel Amory, Secretaries of Legation to the United States; George L. Hammecken, Secretary of Legation to Mexico; James Hamilton, Commissioner to treat with Holland, Belgium, Great Britain and France; Samuel M. Williams, A. T. Burnley, James Hamilton and James Reiley, Loan Commissioners.

At the election held in September, 1841, Sam Houston was elected President, and Edward Burleson, Vice-President.\*

\*At this election there were 11,531 votes polled, of which Houston received 7,915, and Burnet 3,616. For Vice President, Burleson received 6 141, and Memucan Hunt 4,336.



## CHAPTER III.

HOUSTON'S SECOND ADMINISTRATION—STATE OF THE PUBLIC FINANCES—RAIDS OF VASQUEZ AND WOLL—THE ARCHIVE WAR—SOMERVELL IN THE SOUTHWEST—THE MIER EXPEDITION—ITS DISASTERS—THE SNIVELY EXPEDITION—SANTA ANNA'S PROPOSALS THROUGH ROBINSON—THE NAVY.

HOUSTON was, for the second time, inaugurated President, December 13th, 1841. He found the Sixth Congress then in session, diligently at work, introducing measures of retrenchment and reform. From the first organization of the Government, agents had been kept in foreign countries, vainly endeavoring to effect a loan. This fantasy of an expected foreign loan had kept up the hopes of the Texans, when their own paper was worth but fifteen or twenty cents on the dollar. General James Hamilton, of South Carolina, was still in Europe, and reported favorably as to the prospect of success. But the Texans had been so often sadly disappointed, that but little reliance was placed upon his report; and his efforts finally, fortunately for Texas, proved abortive. In Houston's message to Congress, he said: "There is not a dollar in the treasury. The nation is involved from ten to fifteen millions; we are not only without money, but without credit, and for want of punctuality, without character. Patriotism, industry and enterprise are now our only resources—apart from our public domain, and the precarious revenues of the country. These remain our only hope, and must be improved, husbanded, and properly employed." He recommended, as the only practicable method of relief, the suspension of all attempts, at present, to pay off the indebtedness; and the issue of exchequer bills, not to exceed \$350,000 in amount, to take the place of the old promissory

notes, as a medium of exchange. He also recommended a reduction of taxes; and that taxes and customs dues be collected *in par funds*. Congress reduced the taxes, but failed to require them to be paid in par funds. The old promissory notes, now no longer receivable for public dues, soon lost a marketable value and ceased to circulate. For a short time the "new issue" was better; but the public feared that, after a short trial, this paper would not pay their taxes, and it rapidly declined in value. These fears were realized. At an extra session of Congress, in June, 1842, a law was passed, requiring the collectors of customs, sheriffs, clerks and postmasters, throughout the Republic, to receive exchequer bills only at the current rates at which such bills were sold in the market. Though this was well calculated to destroy confidence in the paper issues, even of the "reform Congress," the small amount authorized to be put in circulation prevented the exchequer bills from falling so low in the market as the old red-backs. Many real reforms were introduced. A rigid economy was practiced in the various executive departments of the Government, and in the management of Indian affairs; and all unnecessary officers were dispensed with.\*

\* The following figures are taken from Gouge's Fiscal History. The first column shows the receipts for the year 1841—the last year of the Lamar administration. The second column shows the receipts for the three years of Houston's second term:

	Lamar's—1841.	Houston's—1842-44.
From customs .....	\$151,990 45	\$360,177 46
Direct taxes.....	170,503 91	80,335 89
Licenses.....	42,686 87	16,503 50
Land and land dues .....	68,025 52	
Miscellaneous.....	429 32	562 58

From the above it would appear as though the people very generally abstained from paying taxes. While these could be paid in a currency worth but twenty-five cents on the dollar, they were paid. But when par funds were required, they went unpaid. The requirement of par funds was a very unpopular measure; and in some portions of the Republic it is reported, meetings were held, protesting against the execution of the law. Even the revenue from customs was materially diminished by the introduction of smuggled goods; especially in East Texas, along the line of the Sabine river.

In 1836 the United States declined to annex Texas, partly because the ability of the latter to maintain its independence was somewhat problematical. Early in 1842, the question began again to be agitated, both in Texas and the United States. Six years had elapsed, and Mexico had made no serious attempt to recover her lost province. Now, when the subject of annexing Texas to the United States began again to attract attention, to keep up the shadow of a claim, the Mexican Government sent small military parties into the country, though with no expectation of permanent occupancy. Unheralded and unexpected by the Texans, on the 5th of March, 1842, General Rafael Vasquez appeared in the neighborhood of San Antonio, and sent in a demand for the surrender of the city. After some consultation, Captain Jack Hays, with his small company of rangers, retired to the Guadalupe river, and on the 5th Vasquez entered the city, promising to protect the persons and property of the citizens. The city government was remodeled after the Mexican style, alcaldes taking the place of magistrates; but after an occupancy of only two days, in which the soldiers behaved remarkably well, the Mexicans retreated again to the west side of the Rio Grande. About the same time, small parties of Mexican soldiers visited Refugio and Goliad, but remained only a day or two, when they retired again to their own country.

In September a still more formidable army arrived in the neighborhood, under the command of General Adrian Woll. This raid was as unexpected as the other had been. The District Court was in session, and Woll captured Judge Hutchinson and the former Lieutenant-Governor, J. W. Robinson, and a number of other lawyers and officers of the court, in all, fifty-three. This party behaved very well in the city, protecting private property from plunder. It was on the 11th of September that Woll entered the city. A considerable force of Texans had collected on the Salado, six miles east of the city. Woll went out to attack this

force, and a battle was fought on the 17th. Colonel Caldwell, in the official report of the battle, says: "We commenced fighting at eleven o'clock. A hot fire was kept up until about one hour by sun, when the enemy retreated, bearing off their dead on the ground, and very many dead and wounded were taken from the field by their friends. We have a glorious band of Texan patriots, among whom ten only were wounded, and not one killed." As Woll was retreating toward the city, he fell in with a company of fifty-three Texans, from Fayette county, on its way to join Caldwell. After nearly one-half of his men had fallen, Dawson raised a white flag; it was fired upon. Dawson was an old soldier, having been in the United States army, and was a Lieutenant at the battle of San Jacinto, but seeing the hopelessness of fighting such overwhelming numbers, he surrendered his pistol. Unarmed as he was, a Mexican lancer assaulted him. He wrenched the lance from his opponent, and would have slain him, but was killed by another Mexican soldier. Thirty-three of his men were killed in battle; fifteen surrendered, five of whom were wounded, and two escaped unhurt. One of the latter, Henry G. Wood, who had lost his father and brother in the fight, after giving up his arms, was assaulted by a lancer. He seized the lance, killed the Mexican with it, and mounted his horse and escaped. At daybreak on the morning after this battle, Woll left the city and started for the Rio Grande. A misunderstanding among the Texans, as to who was entitled to the command, prevented a pursuit.

President Houston believed the archives of the Government, especially the records of the Land Office, unsafe at a point so exposed as the city of Austin. On the 5th of February, 1842, he sent a message to Congress, suggesting the propriety of removing these archives to a place of greater security. Congress took no action on the subject; and after the adjournment, President Houston paid a visit to Galveston. While in that city he heard of the raid of Vasquez,



**DAVID CROCKETT.**



and the Mexican occupancy of San Antonio. He immediately directed the members of his Cabinet to meet him in Houston. This abandonment of their frontier exasperated the people of Austin, and they determined to retain possession of the archives. This produced what has been dignified with the name of "The Archive War." A vigilance committee was formed, composed of the best citizens of the county, who took possession of the Government books and papers, boxed them up, and kept a constant guard over them. A committee was also formed at Bastrop, to patrol the roads, and permit no wagons with public property to pass down the country. An exception was made in favor of the property of the French minister, who was permitted to leave with whatever he chose to take with him. During the extra session of Congress, in June, the President again called attention to this subject; but no action was taken.

On the 10th of December, President Houston ordered Capt. Thomas I. Smith, to secretly muster a company of men, and secure the most necessary books and papers, and transport them to Washington, where Congress was to convene in regular session. Smith, with twenty men, and three wagons, quietly entered Austin on the night of December 30, and commenced loading. The visit was unanticipated by the people of the city, but a volunteer company soon rallied, under Capt. Mark B. Lewis, procured a cannon at the arsenal, and fired upon the transportation party. The Land Office was hit, but no serious damage done. The wagoners commenced a hasty retreat, taking, by Houston's order, the road to Caldwell, to avoid the patrol at Bastrop. They reached Kinney's Fort, on Brushy creek, fifteen miles from the city, when they camped. The next morning, when they prepared to start, they found Capt. Lewis with his cannon planted directly in their front. After a parley, the same wagons carried their loads back to Austin, and no other attempt was made for their removal. The committee preserved them, and when the Government returned to

the capital, under Jones' administration, they were surrendered to the proper officers. But during the absence of the Executive Department from Austin, Colonel Ward, the Commissioner of the Land Office, returned to the city and opened his office, and transacted such business as was deemed of importance to the public welfare.

The Mexican raids under Vasquez and Woll had awakened a martial spirit in Texas. Moreover, there were a good many Texans held as prisoners in Mexico, belonging to the Santa Fe expedition, and taken by Woll in San Antonio. It was the opinion of some of our leading men, that it would be good policy to organize an expedition for aggressive warfare, with a view of taking Mexican citizens, to be exchanged for the Texans detained as prisoners in Mexico. Under the influence of this new military enthusiasm, many companies of soldiers made their way to San Antonio, ready to join the proposed expedition. These men wished Burleson to command them; but Somervell was a personal friend and favorite of the President, and was perhaps, as Brigadier-General of the militia, entitled to the command. At any rate, he was directed to take charge of the expedition. When Somervell arrived at headquarters, he proposed, in deference to the wishes of the men, to turn the command over to General Burleson; but the latter declined the responsibility. General Somervell was somewhat tardy in his movements, and some of the men became dissatisfied and left for their homes. While camped on the Medina, at a mass meeting of the men, Col. James R. Cook was requested to take command; but, after some discussion, the men consented to march under Somervell. They left the Medina on the 25th of November, for Laredo. For some unexplained reason, they deflected from the main route of travel, and soon found themselves on flat, boggy prairies, where they made but slow progress. The command reached Laredo on the 8th of December, and took possession of the place without opposition. The men



expected to cross the river, and pass down through the towns of Guerrero, Mier, Comargo and Reinoso, to Matamoras; but after a few days' rest, they were ordered to move down on the Texas side of the stream. The first night out was spent in a dense thicket. The next morning, after reaching water, the General, learning that there was great dissatisfaction at his not crossing the river, assembled the men, and assured them that he was willing to lead them into the enemy's land; but at the same time, unaccountably announced that all who desired to do so, were at liberty to return home. Out of the 700 men then in the ranks, about 200, with Colonels Bennet and M'Crocklin, left the army.

The next day, orders were given by General Somervell to march for Guerrero. They were still in the dense chaparral, and it took five days to make the distance that ought to have been traveled over in two. When they reached the Rio Grande, six miles from the town, December 14th, Major Hays and Captain Bogart, and a few of the men, crossed the river, and the whole army crossed on the 15th. The Mexican officer in command, Colonel Canalis, retired on the approach of the Texans. The place was comparatively destitute of supplies, and on the 17th they recrossed to the Texas side. Here, on the 19th, the following order was issued:

Order No. 64. The troops belonging to the Southwestern army will march at ten o'clock this morning for the junction of the Rio Frio and the Nueces, thence to Ganzaes, where they will be disbanded. By order of Brigadier General Somervell.

JOHN HEMPHILL,  
Acting Adjutant General.

This order astounded the men, who were anxious to avenge the insults which the raids of Vasquez and Woll had inflicted upon Texas. To this day it is still a mystery why the General abandoned the aggressive movement undertaken by order of the President. We copy the closing paragraph of his report to the Secretary of War:

“It was from no apprehension of the scarcity of stores of subsistence, that the army under my command was ordered to withdraw on the 10th ult. But having been eleven days on the river, and knowing the various positions of bodies of the enemy’s troops, I was satisfied that they were concentrating in such numbers as to render a longer stay an act of imprudence.”\*

About three hundred of the men remained after General Somervell left. Some of them were without horses, and all wished to make a hostile demonstration before returning to their homes. William S. Fisher was elected commander. Companies were organized under Captains Eastland, Cameron, Ryon and Pierson. They were near the river, and boats were secured to transport the baggage down to a point opposite to the town of Mier, their first objective point. A guard was placed on the boats, under the command of T. Jefferson Green. All arrived safely at a point opposite to the town. On the 21st a detachment of Texans entered the city and made a demand for provisions and horses, taking

\*It has been conjectured that President Houston never intended an aggressive movement against Mexico, and that Somervell acted under secret orders, in disbanding his men. If the General had intended to make the expedition a failure, he could not have done it more effectually than he did; but with the fatality that attended so many of the military enterprises of Texas, General Somervell, instead of *ordering* his men home, permitted a fraction of them to remain, and enter upon the disastrous Mier expedition. Better material for an army was never collected in Texas, than those in the Southwestern army when it left San Antonio. We give a few of the names of those who returned with General S.:

John Hemphill, Wm. G. Cooke, C. N. Winfield, John H. Herndon, M. Austin Bryan, B. J. Gillaspie, James R. Cook, George T. Howard, E. S. C. Robertson, Clark L. Owen, J. B. Robertson, Shelby McNeil, T. S. Lubbock, John P. Borden, Thomas Green, Memucan Hunt, Ben. McCulloch, Jack Hays, P. Hansborough Bell, Bartlet Sims, Capt. Bogart, J. N. Mitchell, Capt. Lowery, Robert Smithers.

We subjoin the names of a few of the Mier men:

William S. Fisher, Thomas J. Green, Wm. M. Eastland, Ewin Cameron, Claudius H. Buster, Wm. Ryon, Harvey Sellers, Freeman Douglas, George B. Crittenden, Dr. R. F. Brenham, F. M. Gibson, Pat. H. Lusk, Henry Journey, G. W. Pilant, J. G. Peerson, Thomas W. Cox, John R. Baker, S. H. Walker, James C. Wilson, Wm. A. Wallace, Chas. K. Reece, John Shipman, W. P. Stapp, and many others worthy of mention. A failure in an army with such material is both humiliating and unaccountable.

the Alcalde as a hostage, until the provisions were delivered at their camp on the river. While the Texans were quietly waiting for the delivery of the supplies, Ampudia, with about 2,000 Mexican soldiers, took possession of the town, and of course the provisions were not delivered. The Texans were encamped on the Texas side of the stream, and not receiving their supplies, they, on the afternoon of Christmas day, crossed the stream and started for the city. The troops of Ampudia were encountered on the Alcantra creek, near the city. The Mexicans were driven into the town, though still fighting. The Texans were then pressing their way towards the main plaza. The Mexicans continued to resist, firing from the tops of the flat-roofed houses. A little after daylight Colonel Fisher was severely wounded. Early in the engagement five of the Texan scouts were taken prisoners. During a temporary slack in the fire from the assailants' ranks, consequent upon the wounding of their commander, Ampudia sent Dr. Sennickson, one of the prisoners, with a flag of truce. Up to that time the Texans had been completely victorious, and might possibly have taken the city had the fight not been intermitted. But the Mexicans outnumbered them five or six to one. Fisher, weak from the loss of blood, and affected by the use of powerful stimulants, felt unable to continue the combat, and advised a surrender. Ampudia offered most generous terms. In the meantime, before any conclusion had been reached, two or three old men, and then others, went over on the Mexican side and laid down their arms. As this process went on, there were too few left for successful combat, and all finally surrendered. "The prisoners were to be treated with the consideration which is in accordance with the magnanimous Mexican nation." The Texans had 265 men engaged in the fight, of whom sixteen were killed and about twenty wounded. The wounded were left in charge of Dr. Sennickson, and the others hurried towards the city of Mexico. They reached Matamoras on the 9th of January,

and Monterey on the 26th of January, 1843. Passing Saltillo, they arrived at the Hacienda Salado, February 10th, where they resolved to make an attempt to regain their liberty.

On the morning of the 11th, the prisoners, after an early breakfast and while the most of the guard were at their breakfast, leaving but two sentinels on duty, Captains Cameron and S. H. Walker, in a careless manner, approached the sentinels. Cameron gave the signal agreed upon, "Now, boys, we go it," and suddenly seized one and disarmed him, while Walker disarmed the other. The Texans rushed out of the inclosed area and supplied themselves with such weapons as they could pick up. The guards rallied, and for a few minutes maintained a sharp conflict, but finally gave way, and the prisoners were free.\*

The Texans started immediately for home, passing around Saltillo on the 13th of February. The next night they abandoned the road, and attempted to make their way through the mountains; became bewildered and scattered, and suffered for food and water. On the 18th most of them were recaptured. Of the 216 at Salado, eighteen refused to join in the attempt to escape, five were killed, sixteen were lost in the mountains, and probably perished, four made their way back to Texas, and 173 were recaptured. On reaching Salado the second time, on the 24th of March, an order was received from Santa Anna to shoot every tenth man. The men were paraded and required to draw a bean out of a box, containing 159 white and seventeen black beans. Those drawing the black beans were taken out of the ranks and securely guarded. They asked to be shot in front, but this poor boon was denied them. Such as were Catholics accepted the services of a priest; the

\* In this conflict the Texans lost in killed, Dr. R. F. Brenham and Lieutenant Fitzgerald, both of whom had been in the Santa Fe expedition, and Messrs. Rice, Lyons, and Higgison. Wounded, Captain Baker, G. Wash Trahern, Hancock, Harvey and Stansbury.

others requested one of their number, Robert Dunham, a pious member of the Methodist church, to pray for them. He knelt down and offered a most fervent prayer. Religious services having been concluded, the men were blindfolded and tied, and made to sit down with their backs to their executioners; when the word was given—Fire! All were killed but young Shepherd, who, though still alive, feigned death, and during the night crawled off. He was subsequently recaptured—and shot!\*

The black beans had been placed on the top, and the officers required to draw first, but most of them escaped. A few days later a positive order was received from Santa Anna, to shoot Capt. Cameron. It was said that this order was given at the request of Canalis, who had a quarrel with Cameron when in the campaign of the Republic of the Rio Grande. The survivors shared the fate of other prisoners in the hands of the Mexicans. They were chained together, imprisoned, put to work on roads and other public improvements, half fed, and subjected to various insults from domineering officers. A number died; some were released at the solicitation of influential friends, (Col. Green at the request of General Andrew Jackson). During Santa Anna's detention in Texas, he was for a considerable time at the home of Dr. Phelps, and remembered with gratitude the kindness of the family. He released Orlando Phelps, Dr. Phelps' son. First Ampudia, and then Santa Anna, took a fancy to a mere lad by the name of Hill; and young Hill's father and brother were released; and the young man sent to the best college in Mexico. He adopted the profession of a mining engineer, and is still a citizen of Mexico. In September, 1844, the wife of Santa Anna died. It has been

\* Names of the victims: Wm. M. Eastland, Robert Dunham, L. L. Cash, James D. Cocke, Edward Este, a brother-in-law of D. G. Burnet; Robert Harris, Thomas L. James, Patrick Mahon, James Ogden, Charles Roberts, Wm. Rowan, J. L. Shepherd, J. M. N. Thomason, James H. Torrey, James Turnbull, Henry Whaling and M. C. Wing.

stated that on her death-bed she requested that the Texan prisoners might be set at liberty. At any rate, during this period of grief, the Mexican President released the 104 survivors of the ill-starred expedition.

A large strip of country belonging to Texas, situated north of Red river, was uninhabited. Traders, in going from St. Louis to Santa Fe, passed through this uninhabited district. It was expected a large party of Mexican merchants, with valuable stocks of goods, would pass along this route early in the year 1843. Some adventurers in Texas looked upon this party as belonging to our Mexican enemies, and therefore subject to legitimate plunder; and under instructions of President Houston, the War Department authorized the organization of a military company for its capture. The command of the expedition was given to Colonel Jacob Snively, a member of the President's staff, as Inspector-General. Colonel S. was instructed to remain on Texas soil; make his captures only in honorable warfare, and deposit one-half the spoils in the Texas treasury. But as the men were required to equip themselves, when they organized for the march, the requisition to give the treasury one-half the spoils, was unanimously rejected. The place of rendezvous was on Red river, near where the town of Dennison now stands. The command, numbering 180 men, left that place on the 25th of April, and struck the Santa Fe trail at the crossing of the Arkansas river, about the last of May.

Snively's party failed to meet with the caravan; but, on the 20th of June, fell in with a company of Mexican soldiers, sent to guard the train. In the fight which ensued, seventeen Mexican soldiers were killed and about eighty taken prisoners. The Texans obtained a good supply of provisions and horses. After this brilliant achievement, the men became dissatisfied and demoralized, and separated into two parties; one party choosing Captain Chandler as their leader.



**THE URSULINE CONVENT, SAN ANTONIO.**





The St. Louis papers having published an account of Snively's departure from Red river, General Gaines sent 200 U. S. dragoons, under Captain Phillip St. George Cooke, to protect the caravan. On the 30th of June, the dragoons discovered Snively's camp, surrounded it, and under pretence that it was on the soil of the United States, compelled the men to surrender and give up their arms. Cooke offered to such of the Texans as preferred to go to St. Louis, an escort to that city. A few accepted the offer; but the most of the men wished to return to their homes in Texas. Cooke furnished such as chose to return, a few guns to protect themselves against the Indians. Snively's party now numbered 107. Chandler and his men were still in the neighborhood, and had escaped the dragoons. On the 2d of July, the two parties united. On the 4th, they had a skirmish with the Indians; and another a few days later. Finally, August 6th, the command reached Bird's Fort on the Trinity river, where the men were disbanded. Subsequent investigation proved that Snively was on Texas soil when disarmed by Cooke, and after annexation, a paltry sum was paid into the Texas treasury by the United States, for the arms taken at that time.\*

\* After examining the published accounts of this expedition, and two sketches in manuscript, by persons connected with it, we still find it difficult to fix accurately the dates and the connection of the different incidents. We have just obtained a new sketch, by Colonel Hugh F. Young, of San Antonio, who was with Snively from the organization to the breaking up of the party. The account is interesting, but too long to be copied. The following are the leading points in this sketch: 1. The legal character of the party. It was authorized by President Houston, and regular instructions given by the Secretary of War. While Gen. Houston was Senator, he declared that the expedition was without authority. *We have seen the letter of instruction, signed Sam Houston.* 2. The object of the expedition was to make reprisals for the raids of Vasques and Woll. 3. Lieutenant James O. Rice was guide, and under his direction the company took the old Coahuila trail to the mouth of the Little Wichita river, where they forded Red river, at a place where it is from 400 to 600 yards wide. They then passed through the Wichita mountains, crossing the south and north forks of the Canadian river and the Cimaron, and struck the Arkansas river about twenty-five miles below the Fort Leavenworth and Santa Fe road.

Among the prisoners taken by Woll, in San Antonio, was the former Lieutenant-Governor J. W. Robinson. From his prison, Robinson wrote to Santa Anna, suggesting possible terms for the adjustment of the difficulties between Texas and Mexico. It is likely that this course was adopted by Robinson primarily to regain his personal liberty. At any rate, he was released and sent home by the substitute President, with important letters to Mr. Houston. Though the proposition brought by Robinson was distasteful to the Texans, as it contemplated Texas as province of Mexico, it produced a good deal of discussion in which the diplomatic agents of both Great Britain and France participated; and finally an armistice was agreed upon and proclaimed, June 13th, 1843, "To continue until due notice to resumé hostilities, (should such intention thereafter be entertained by either party) should be formally announced through her Britanic Majesty's *Charges D'Affaires*, at their respective governments."

The further discussion of the relations between the countries was carried on through Hon. William Kennedy, the British Consul at Galveston. Santa Anna complained

They had travelled about 550 miles. 4. They reached that point one month too early, and while lying idle in camps, the men became dissatisfied and insubordinate. 5. They ascertained that Governor Armijo, of New Mexico, was camped at the Cimarone spring, with about 1,000 Mexican soldiers, to protect the train. 6. Snively's men encountered and completely defeated a large advance party of Armijo, after which the Governor ingloriously retreated to Santa Fe. 7. Chandler and his followers abandoned Snively. 8. Those with Snively were forced to surrender to Cooke. Afterward, Snively, with a part of his command, reunited with Chandler. They obtained information that the train was *en route*, only a few days' march distant. 9. Owing to a reluctance on the part of the main body to march for the train, Snively resigned, breaking his sword; when Warfield was elected commander. The men seemed still unwilling to attempt to take the train, and dissolved, and in small parties started for home. They were in Texas when disarmed by Cooke, and the U. S. Congress, in spite of the declaration of Houston, that the command was unauthorized, finally paid each man eighteen and a half dollars for each gun taken. During the encounters with the Indians, four men were killed: Messrs. Davis, Simmons, Sharpe and Caldwell.

that Texas still held Mexican prisoners captured at San Jacinto. To this it was replied, that all those prisoners had been set at liberty in 1837, and that all who chose to do so, had returned to Mexico. But to satisfy the demand, Houston issued a proclamation, ordering all prisoners released, and directing them to report to the camp of Colonel Jack Hays, when transportation would be furnished them and an escort to the headquarters of General Woll, near Matamoras. Another subject of complaint was, that Mexican citizens had been killed in the Southwest. To this it was answered, that that portion of Texas was infested by banditti, who claimed either Texan or Mexican citizenship, as best served their predatory excursions. To break up this nest of robbers the whole Southwest was placed under martial law, under General Davis. Another subject of complaint was that the Snively expedition had been sent to rob Mexican merchants. To this the President replied, that as soon as orders could reach Colonel Snively, that party should be called home. Santa Anna, on his part, agreed to release all Texans in Mexican prisons.

Commissioners were finally appointed, to meet and discuss the questions at issue between the two countries.\*

The Commissioners met on the 26th of September. Their instructions were "To endeavor to establish a general armistice between Texas and Mexico, to continue during the pendency of negotiations for a permanent peace, and adjustment of the difficulties between the two countries, and for such further period as they could agree upon; requiring notice to be given by either party disposed to resume hostilities, to the other, through the British Minister resident at the corresponding Court, six months previous to any act of hostility; to agree that the Government of Texas should appoint Commissioners, clothed with full powers, to meet at

\* George W. Hockley and Samuel M. Williams were the Texas Commissioners, and Messrs. Landeras and Jannequi the Commissioners on the part of Mexico. They met at Sabinas, on the Rio Grande.

the city of Mexico, to negotiate for the adjustment of all existing difficulties, and for the establishment of a permanent peace." As the Texans were anxious to gain time, the Commissioners were in no hurry to conclude their negotiations. In the mean time, the question of annexation had assumed a prominence which threw all others in the shade; but, finally, February 18th, 1844, a general armistice was signed. This document was unsatisfactory to the Texas Government, as it referred to Texas as "a department of Mexico." It was quietly deposited, without action, in the archives of the State Department.

During Houston's administration a very serious disturbance occurred in East Texas, between two hostile factions, both of whom defied the civil law, and carried on their operations according to the code of Judge Lynch. These parties were called "Regulators," and "Moderators." In Shelby, Harrison, and some other counties, nearly the entire population was involved in this vendetta. Hostile parties traversed the country, committing many unlawful acts and killing those of the opposite faction. It was supposed that at one time as many as a thousand men were under arms, in defiance of the civil authorities. Finally, when the citizens began to feel that all the interests of society were in jeopardy, President Houston directed General James Smith to call out the militia and quell the disturbance. The men then generally returned peacefully to their homes, but it was several years before entire peace was established between the leaders of the "Moderators" and "Regulators."

When Houston came into office, the vessels constituting the Texas navy were on the coast of Yucatan, employed by the revolutionary Government of that State. Having returned from that service, the vessels sailed into New Orleans for repairs. While the schooner San Antonio was at anchor in the Mississippi river, a mutiny occurred on board. The officers had an intimation of the intended outbreak, and were prepared for it. Several of the mutineers

were condemned and hung at the yard arm. In August, 1842, the *San Antonio*, Captain Brannan—it is supposed, by order of Commodore Moore, as the Government at Washington gave no orders—sailed for Yucatan, it was said, to collect dues from the Government there. She was never heard of afterward; and it is supposed she foundered at sea and all on board perished.

Though President Houston was opposed to aggressive war against Mexico, he thought a blockade might be maintained by the Texas navy of the leading Mexican ports. The blockade had been proclaimed soon after the vessels returned from Yucatan, but months passed and the ships were still at anchor in the Mississippi, or at Mobile. The vessels were ordered to Galveston for instructions. The order was disregarded and was repeated, and Commodore Moore ordered to report in person to the Secretary of War. He failed to report. Moore claimed that he had invested largely of his personal means in refitting the ships, and was unwilling to leave them. He expected soon to sail for Yucatan on a cruise. The navy being thus idle, and its commanding officers failing to obey the orders of the Secretary of War, Houston sent a message to Congress, which was considered in secret session, and on the 16th of January, 1843, an act was passed secretly, for the sale of the navy.

President Houston sent Colonels James Morgan and Wm. Bryan to New Orleans as Commissioners, with imperative orders to take possession of the vessels and bring them to Galveston. The Commodore declined to deliver them up; but proposed to bring them home; and started, with Colonel Morgan with him on the vessel. When they arrived at the mouth of the river with the *Austin* and the *Wharton* they received such information as induced Colonel Morgan to consent to a cruise on the coast of Yucatan. When Houston learned that his Commissioner had gone on a cruise with the recalcitrant Commodore, he issued a proclamation suspending Moore from command, and ordering the ships

were four districts. The number had now increased to seven.\*

Negotiations for permanent peace, based upon the independence of Texas, were still carried forward, encouraged by the liberal disposition of General Herrera, who was now President of Mexico. England and France, says Dr. Jones, influenced by the strongest desire to prevent annexation, and insure the separate independence of Texas, conjointly resolved upon a diplomatic act, in June, 1844, by which these powers guaranteed the independence of Texas, on condition that she should not be annexed to the United States. A year or two earlier, this proposition would have been hailed with delight by the citizens of Texas; but now there was a prospect of annexation, and all other questions were lost sight of. This question had entered into the Presidential canvass in the United States, and Mr. Polk, the annexation candidate, had been elected.

President Jones felt the embarrassment of the situation. Texas was an independent power; and with her diplomatic agents in foreign countries, it would be manifestly improper for the executive to display too great an anxiety to merge the sovereignty of the country in that of another; especially while leading nations were negotiating in its interest. This caution of the President was construed into indifference, if not hostility to the great measure of annexation; and he was condemned in unmeasured terms. He

\* The following were Chief Justices of the Supreme Court during the Republic: James Collinworth, John Birdsall (by appointment of the President), Thomas J. Rusk, and John Hemphill. Clerks of Supreme Court: William Fairfax Gray, and Thomas Green. Judges of District Court: Shelby Corzine, Benjamin C. Franklin, R. M. Williamson, James W. Robinson, Edward T. Branch, John T. Mills, Ezekiel W. Cullen, Henry W. Fontaine, John Scott, Anthony B. Shelby, William J. Jones, John Hemphill, Richardson Scurry, John M. Hansford, R. E. B. Baylor, Anderson Hutchinson, George W. Terrill, Thomas Johnson, Patrick C. Jack, Richard Morris, William B. Ochiltree, William E. Jones, M. P. Norton, John B. Jones, R. T. Wheeler.



**ANSON JONES.**





was further annoyed by parties who were determined to involve the country in a war with Mexico, even before the measure of annexation was determined. Some of these were military officers of Texas; others were emissaries from the United States.\*

This question of annexation was one of sufficient historical importance to claim our careful consideration. It has been recklessly asserted that many of the leading citizens of the province came into the country intending to revolutionize it and transfer its allegiance from the Mexican to the North American Republic; and that General Jackson was privy to this manœuvre and gave it his sanction. This supposition is not worthy of a moment's attention. The men who settled Texas were true men, and when they became citizens of Mexico, it was with the purpose of becoming loyal subjects of that Government. At the Convention of 1833, of which Austin, Houston, Burnet and many other leading Texans were members, a warm attachment was expressed for the Mexican constitution of 1824, and for the Plan of Zavalla, which proposed to restore that constitution, and under which Santa Anna had been elected President. Two years later, the members of the General Consultation, at San Felipe, deliberately renewed their declaration of fealty to that constitution. Nor would the proposition to declare Texas independent have been entertained for a moment, had not Santa Anna overthrown the constitutional government, and dissolved the State legislatures, and established a central military despotism.

But after Texas had declared her independence at Washington, on the 2d of March, 1836, and had achieved it at San Jacinto a few weeks later, they awoke to the difficulties of maintaining a separate nationality. The country was too new; too sparsely populated; too poor to maintain an expen-

\* Dr. Jones mentions among those who were determined to bring on a war, ex-Governor Yell, of Arkansas, and Wickliffe, of Kentucky; Commodore Stockton, and Major A. J. Donaldson.

sive government, with its judicial, executive and legislative departments, its army and navy, and list of diplomatic agents in foreign countries. To avoid such heavy expenses and responsibilities, the people, in September, 1836, voted in favor of annexing Texas to the United States; but the authorities at Washington declined to accept the new State and the question for several years was in abeyance.

During the administration of Mr. Tyler, "the President without a party," it was intimated that if Texas would renew her application for admission, it would be favorably received. The Texan Minister again brought the subject to the attention of the State Department, and Mr. Calhoun introduced a bill providing for the annexation of Texas, by treaty, to the United States. President Tyler had miscalculated the temper of the Senate. That body, by a vote of thirty-five to sixteen, rejected the bill. After this snubbing, Mr. Van Zandt, the Texas Minister, withdrew the application. Nor was Texas so much concerned about the success of the measure as she had formerly been. Through the British and French Ministers in Mexico, negotiations were in progress, which finally secured the Mexican acknowledgement of our independence. with an English and French guarantee.

The politicians of the United States were anxious to keep the Texas question out of the Presidential canvass for 1844. It was universally supposed that Mr. Van Buren would be the Democratic candidate, and that Henry Clay would be nominated by the Whigs; and both these gentlemen announced themselves opposed to annexation. On the part of Van Buren this announcement was premature. When the Democratic Convention met, he was shelved, and Mr. Polk nominated. A heated political canvass followed. It was asserted that England and France wished to get a foothold on this continent, by gaining the control of Texas, contrary to the "Monroe doctrine." It was further asserted

that Great Britain was plotting for the emancipation of the slaves in Texas.\*

Although the people of the United States had, in the Presidential election, declared for annexation, it was still doubtful whether a sufficient number of votes could be depended upon, in the Senate, to accomplish the measure by treaty, and a joint resolution was passed by both houses of Congress, to annex Texas to the Union as a State. This was promptly signed by President Tyler, and transmitted to Texas.

On the fifth of May, President Jones issued his proclamation for the election of delegates to a general convention of the people, to consider the proposition which had passed the United States Congress. The Texas Congress met in a

\* We ought, perhaps, here to correct an error into which Mr. Yoakum was led. Speaking on this subject, he says, volume 2, page 421: "At the same time Texas was informed that Mr. Doyle, the British *Charge d'Affaires*, had been instructed to propose to Mexico a settlement of the difficulties with Texas, based upon the abolition of slavery in the latter." On the contrary, Anson Jones says, (Memoranda for 1850, page 52): "The subject of domestic slavery, about which so much alarm existed in 1844-45, was never so much as mentioned or alluded to by the British Minister to the Government of Texas, except to disclaim, in most emphatic terms, any intention on the part of England ever to interfere with it here. \* \*

Indeed, that constituted no part of the policy of that far-reaching nation. Her Texas policy was to build up a power independent of the United States, that could raise cotton enough to supply the world." Dr. Ashbel Smith, who was Minister to England during Houston's Administration, and Secretary of State under that of Jones, mentions another topic, (see page 47. Lecture before Galveston Historical Society). It was charged that both Houston and Jones "were plotting to sell Texas to an European power. That they were engaged in a deliberate conspiracy to sell Texas to England.

\* \* A conspiracy against Texas and against a broad Continental policy. Yet, all the while, up to the last moment of the incorporation of Texas into the American Union, no European power ever even hinted at, much less did any one propose, any political advantage or influence, or any political relation whatever; nor sought any commercial facility which would not, on the same terms, be open to the world. It may seem *aliunde* the record of Texas history, to vindicate the loyal honesty of European cabinets in their dealings with Texas, but be pleased to bear in mind that the vindication of these cabinets is, at the same time, the vindication of the honored chief officers of the Republic of Texas."

called session, at Washington, on the 16th of June, and promptly gave its assent to the annexation resolutions.\*

The Convention met in the city of Austin, July 4th, and organized by electing Thomas J. Rusk, President, and James H. Raymond, Secretary. A committee was appointed to whom the message of the President and the annexation resolutions were referred. The following is the report of that committee :

COMMITTEE ROOM, July 4th, 1845.

Hon. THOS. J. RUSK,

*President of the Convention:*

The committee to whom was referred the communication of his Excellency the President of the Republic, together with the accompanying documents, have had the same under consideration, and have instructed me to report the following Ordinance, and recommend its adoption by the Convention.

[Signed]

ABNER S. LIPSCOMB,  
Chairman.

### AN ORDINANCE.

Whereas, the Congress of the United States of America has passed resolutions providing for the annexation of Texas to that Union, which resolutions were offered by the President of the United States on the first day of March, 1845; and

\* During the Republic there were nine Congresses elected. The first held two sessions: one at Columbia, and one at Houston. The second convened before the regular time, and held an adjourned session, April 9th, 1838. The seventh held a called session in Houston and another in Washington, and the regular session at the same place. The ninth Congress held a called session in Washington, in June, 1845. This was the last meeting of the Congress of the Republic, as at that session annexation was assented to. The following table shows the time and officers of the regular sessions:

SENATE.				HOUSE.	
No	TIME.	PRES'T. PRO TEM.	SECRETARY.	SPEAKER.	CHIEF CLERK.
1	Oct. 3, 1836	E. Ellis.	E. Scurry.	I. Ingram.	W. A. Ferris.
	May 2, 1837	J. Grimes.	A. Robinson.	B. T. Archer.	W. F. Gray.
2	Sept. 25, 1837.	S. H. Everett.	W. F. Gray.	Jo. Bova.	J. H. Shreve.
3	Nov. 5, 1838.	S. H. Everett.	J. D. M'Leod.	J. M. Hansford.	J. W. Eldridge.
4	Nov. 11, 1839.	No Presid't Elected.	J. D. M'Leod.	D. S. Kaufman.	T. W. Ward.
5	Nov. 2, 1840.	A. Jones.	J. D. M'Leod.	D. S. Kaufman.	J. H. Raymond.
6	Nov. 6, 1841.	J. A. Greer.	A. C. M'Farlan.	K. L. Anderson.	J. H. Raymond.
7	Nov. 14, 1842.	J. A. Greer.	S. Z. Hoyle.	N. H. Darnell.	J. H. Raymond.
8	Dec 4, 1843	J. A. Greer.	Tom Green.	E. Scurry	J. H. Raymond.
9	Dec 2, 1844.	J. A. Greer.	M. E. Jewett.	J. M. Lewis.	J. H. Raymond.

Whereas, the President of the United States has submitted to Texas the first and second sections of the said resolution as the basis upon which Texas may be admitted as one of the States of the said Union; and Whereas, the existing government of the Republic of Texas has assented to the proposals thus made,—the terms and conditions of which are as follow:

JOINT RESOLUTION FOR ANNEXING TEXAS TO THE UNITED STATES.

*Resolved by the Senate and House of Representatives of the United States of America in Congress assembled, That Congress doth consent that the territory properly included within, and rightfully belonging to, the Republic of Texas, may be erected into a new State, to be called the State of Texas, with a republican form of government adopted by the people of said Republic, by deputies in convention assembled, with the consent of the existing government, in order that the same may be admitted as one of the States of this Union.*

2. *And be it further resolved, That the foregoing consent of Congress is given upon the following conditions, to-wit: First*—said State to be formed subject to the adjustment by this Government of all questions of boundary that may arise with other governments,—and the Constitution thereof, with the proper evidence of its adoption by the people of said Republic of Texas, shall be transmitted to the President of the United States, to be laid before Congress for its final action, on or before the first day of January, 1846. *Second*—said State, when admitted into the Union, after ceding to the United States all public edifices, fortifications, barracks, ports and harbors, navy and navy yards, docks, magazines and armaments, and all other means pertaining to the public defence, belonging to the said Republic, shall retain all the public funds, debts, taxes and dues of every kind which may belong to or be due and owing to the said Republic; and shall also retain all the vacant and unappropriated lands lying within its limits, to be applied to the payment of the debts and liabilities of said Republic of Texas, and the residue of said lands, after discharging said debts and liabilities, to be disposed of as said State may direct; but in no event are said debts and liabilities to become a charge upon the Government of the United States. *Third*—new States of convenient size, not exceeding four in number, in addition to said State of Texas, and having sufficient population, may hereafter, by the consent of said State, be formed out of the territory thereof, which shall be entitled to admission under the provisions of the Federal Constitution; and such States as may be formed out of that portion of said territory lying south of thirty-six degrees thirty minutes, north latitude, commonly known as the Missouri Compromise Line, shall be admitted into the Union with or without slavery, as the people of each State asking admission may desire; and in such State or States as shall be formed out of said territory north of said Missouri Compromise Line, slavery or involuntary servitude (except for crime), shall be prohibited.”

Now, in order to manifest the assent of the people of this Republic, as is required in the above recited portions of said resolutions, we, the Deputies of the people of Texas in convention assembled, in their name and by their authority, do ordain and declare that we assent to, and accept the propo-

sale, conditions and guarantees contained in the first and second sections of the Resolution of the Congress of the United States aforesaid.

Mr. Mayfield moved the adoption of the Ordinance; upon which question the ayes and noes were taken, and stood as follows:

Ayes—Messrs. President, Anderson, Armstrong of J., Armstrong of R., Baylor, Brashear, Brown, Burroughs, Caldwell, Caznean, Clark, Cunningham, Cuney, Darnell, Davis, Evans, Everts, Forbes, Gage, Hemphill, Henderson, Hicks, Hogg, Horton, Holland, Hunter, Irion, Jewett, Kinney, Latimer of R. R., Latimer of L., Lewis, Love, Lumpkin, Lusk, Lipscomb, Mayfield, McGowan, M'Neill, Miller, Moore, Navarro, Parker, Power, Rains, Rannels, Scott, Smyth, Standefer, Taylor, Van Zandt, White, Wood, Wright and Young—55.

No—Mr. Bache—1.

The only negative vote cast was by Richard Bache, a grandson of Benjamin Franklin, who represented Galveston.

On the ensuing 10th of October, the people, by a nearly unanimous vote, ratified the action of the convention. December 2d, President Polk signed the bill extending the laws of the United States over Texas. These laws, and the postal service of the United States, went into operation in Texas February 19th, 1846; and on that day President Jones relinquished the Executive authority to J. Pinckney Henderson, the newly-elected Governor. Thus was consummated one of the most remarkable events in the civil history of the world, in which a nation voluntarily surrendered its sovereignty.†

---

† The following is a list of the principal officers during Jones' administration: Ashbel Smith and Ebenezer Allen, Secretaries of State; George W. Hill and William G. Cooke, Secretaries of War and Navy, (one office); William B. Ochiltree and John A. Greer, Secretaries of the Treasury; Ebenezer Allen, Attorney General; Moses Johnson, Treasurer; James B. Shaw, Comptroller; Thomas William Ward, Commissioner of the General Land Office; Charles Mason, Auditor; George W. Terrill and Ashbel Smith, Ministers to Great Britain, France and Spain; James Reiley and David S. Kauffman, Ministers to the United States; William D. Lee, Secretary of Legation.

At the election held on the third Monday in December, for Governor, &c., the following was the result of the vote: For Governor, J. P. Henderson, 7,853; Dr. J. P. Miller, 1,673; scattering, 32. For Lieutenant Governor, Albert C. Horton, 4,204; N. H. Darnell, 4,084.







**INDIAN WAR DANCE.**



PART VI.

---

TEXAS AS A STATE.

---

FROM 1847 TO 1878.



## CHAPTER I.

HENDERSON'S ADMINISTRATION—COURTS—PUBLIC DOMAIN—TEXANS IN MEXICAN WAR—HORTON ACTING GOVERNOR—WOOD'S ADMINISTRATION—PUBLIC DEBT—SANTA FE, AGAIN—BELL'S ADMINISTRATION—THE UNITED STATES PROPOSE TO BUY SANTA FE—PEARCE'S BOUNDARY BILL—SANTA FE SOLD—DISPUTES ABOUT LAND IN PETER'S COLONY.

THE other States of the American union, when they became such, passed from a subordinate condition of colonies, or territories to the automatic condition of "States"—Texas on the contrary surrendered her nationality, and took, comparatively, a subordinate place as one of the members of the great confederacy. But in doing this, she was relieved of the burden of maintaining an army, a navy, a postal system, and a corps of diplomatic agents in foreign countries. From this time our history becomes more circumscribed, and limited almost exclusively to our own immediate territory.

Governor Henderson was inaugurated February 16th, 1846. The constitution which had been prepared by the convention of the previous year, and adopted by the people, fixed the Governor's term at two years, and invested him with the veto power, and provided for biennial sessions of the Legislature. The Supreme Court, having only appellate jurisdiction, was composed of one chief justice and two associates. The Legislature formed eight judicial districts. The justices of the supreme court and judges of district courts were to be nominated by the Governor, and confirmed by a two-thirds vote of the Senate, and were to hold office for six years.

At the last session of the Congress of the Republic, according to the report of the Commissioner of the General Land Office, the total amount of the public domain subject to location and unsurveyed, was 181,991,403 acres.\*

Pending the annexation negotiations, the United States had kept on the Sabine an army of observation, consisting of two regiments of cavalry and one of infantry, under General Z. Taylor. On the 26th of June, 1845, this force, somewhat augmented, sailed from New Orleans and established military headquarters at Corpus Christi.

When the annexation bill passed the United States Congress, Mr. Almonte, the Mexican Minister at Washington, denounced the act and demanded his passports. War with Mexico was seen to be inevitable; and the Legislature passed a bill authorizing Governor Henderson to command the Texans who might be mustered into the service of the United States. Soon after General Taylor reached Corpus Christi he was reinforced by the arrival of the regiment of Colonel Twiggs, who had passed through Texas by land. Taylor had about 4,000 men with him then. This was about the middle of January. On the 8th of March, the advance division left Corpus Christi under Colonel Twiggs, and Taylor's army reached the Arroyo Colorado, thirty miles from Matamoras, on the 18th. On the 3d of May, the Mexicans bombarded Fort Brown. The battle of Palo Alto was fought May 8th, and that of Resaca de La Palma on the 9th, after which the army left the territory of Texas.

\* Total amount of land issued by the various boards of land commissioners, 43,543,970 acres; of which the committee appointed to detect fraudulent claims, recommended 19,212,206 acres as good, the others, fraudulent. Amount issued by Department of War, as bounty and donation claims, 6,300,000. Total amount of land scrip sold by the late Republic, 368,787 acres—making the total legal claims issued by Texas 25,880,093 acres; while the claims reported fraudulent were 24,331,764 acres. Total amount issued by the Mexican authorities, a considerable proportion of which is supposed to be fraudulent, 22,060,000 acres.

On the 2d of May, Texas was called upon for two regiments of cavalry and two of infantry.\*

During Governor Henderson's absence from the State, the executive office was administered by Lieutenant-Governor Horton†.

George T. Wood was inaugurated governor and John A. Greer lieutenant-governor, December 21st, 1847. For five years since the inauguration of General Houston for his second term, the public debt had remained *in statu quo*, except the accumulated interest. The previous Legislature had recommended the sale of the public lands to the United States, and the *scaling* of the public debt. In a message to the Legislature, December 29th, Governor Wood said: "The debt must be paid. The honor of the State must stand without blemish. We can never expect to attain a

\* The following officers from Texas served for a longer or shorter period: J. P. Henderson, Major General of volunteers—staff, M. B. Lamar, Ed. Burleson, H. L. Kinney and Ed. Clark. First regiment, J. C. Hays, Colonel; S. H. Walker, Lieutenant-Colonel; M. Chevalie, Major. Second regiment, A. S. Johnston, Colonel; E. McLane, Lieutenant-Colonel, and Wells, Major. Third regiment, George T. Wood, Colonel; P. H. Bell, Lieutenant-Colonel, and C. E. Cooper, Major. Ben. McCulloch was captain of a spy company. According to Mansfield's Report, there were 6,672 Texans mustered into the service; 243 were discharged from disability; 39 killed in battle; 2 died of their wounds; 113 died of disease; 113 deserted, and the remainder served their time out. According to a report from the Adjutant-General's office of Texas, Texas furnished 8,018 men for the Mexican war. The Texans distinguished themselves in every battle. General Taylor complimented them very highly for their bravery, but is said to have found great difficulty in bringing them under the strict rules of military discipline.

†The returns from the election came in very slowly, especially from the West, which voted strongly for Horton. When the Legislature met, it appeared from the returns then in, that N. H. Darnell was elected Lieutenant Governor, and he was accordingly sworn in, and for a few days presided over the Senate. Subsequent returns elected Horton, and Darnell promptly resigned. D. G. Burnet was Secretary of State; John W. Harris, Attorney General; Jas. B. Shaw, Comptroller; James H. Raymond, Treasurer; Thos. Wm. Ward, Commissioner of the Land Office, and Wm. G. Cooke, Adjutant General. At the election held in 1847, for governor, there were 14,767 votes polled; of which George T. Wood received 7,154, Dr. J. B. Miller 5,106, N. H. Darnell 1,276, and scattering 1,221. For Lieutenant Governor—J. A. Greer 4,890, E. H. Tarrant 3,567, Edwin Waller 2,979, and some scattering.

high and permanent prosperity until it is done; and the consummation of a purpose so noble calls for united and energetic action." On the 20th of March, 1848, a law was passed, the first section of which required all persons having claims against the late Republic to present them to the auditor and comptroller of public accounts by the first of November, 1849. Another section required the auditor and comptroller to classify all the claims presented under this act, reducing the same to the actual par value which may have been realized by the late Republic. In a message to the Legislature in November, 1849, Governor Wood recommended that Texas creditors be paid in land at fifty cents an acre. Such a law was passed, but very few creditors chose to take the land, and the debt was still unsettled when Wood went out of office.

Since the disastrous failure of the Santa Fe expedition, during Lamar's administration, no attempt had been made to extend the jurisdiction of Texas over that distant portion of the State. In 1846 General Kearney had taken possession of Santa Fe in the name of the United States. In the treaty of Guadalupe Hidalgo, February 22d, 1848, Mexico had ceded that territory to the United States, and Colonel Munroe, of the U. S. Army, was in command there.

In 1847, Governor Henderson had called the attention of the Legislature to our claim to Santa Fe; and in 1848 a bill passed the Legislature extending the laws of Texas over that portion of New Mexico east of the Rio Grande river, and Judge Beard was sent there to hold District Court. Colonel Munroe paid no attention to the Texas Judge, and proceeded to order an election of a territorial delegate to the United States Congress. Gov. Wood requested the Legislature to put the whole military power of the State under his control, that he might enforce the claim; but in a correspondence with the State Department at Washington, he was notified that if Texas attempted a forcible possession of Santa Fe, the Texans would be



treated as intruders. In the heat of the controversy, some of our writers contended that if the delegate from New Mexico was admitted to his seat in Congress, the Texas delegates should withdraw, and the State resume her separate nationality. This question, like that of the settlement of the public debt, was left for the next administration.\*

At the election in the fall of 1849, P. Hansborough Bell was elected Governor, and John A. Greer, re-elected Lieutenant-Governor. †

P. Hansborough Bell was inaugurated Governor December 21st, 1849, and held the office for two terms, having been re-elected in 1851. At the period of his inauguration the Santa Fe question occupied the attention of the people, not only of Texas, but of the United States; and at one time threatened to create a serious disturbance between the Northern and Southern States; the latter generally taking sides with Texas. This question became linked with that other harrassing one, the payment of our public debt. Our creditors were becoming clamorous for a settlement; and were sending urgent petitions to Congress, assuming that the United States, by taking the customs revenue of the late Republic, had become responsible for the payment of such debts as had been contracted on the faith of the Republic pledging the customs receipts for their liquidation.

On the 16th of January, 1850, Mr. Benton introduced into the United States Senate a bill providing, among other things, that if Texas would cede to the United States a certain portion of territory, and relinquish all claim on the

\* Officers of the executive department during Wood's administration: Secretary of State, W. D. Millér; Attorney Generals, J. W. Harris, H. P. Brewster; Comptroller, James B. Shaw; Commissioner of Land Office, Thomas Wm. Ward; Adjutant-General, John D. Pitts; Auditor, J. M. Swisher.

† In this election there were 21,715 votes cast. P. H. Bell received 10,310; G. T. Wood, 8,764; J. T. Mills, 2,632. For Lieutenant-Governor, J. A. Greer, 10,599; J. W. Henderson, 6,981; Johnson, 1,289.

United States "for liabilities of the debts of Texas," &c., the United States would pay to Texas the sum of fifteen million dollars, in five per cent. stocks, redeemable fourteen years after date.

On the 29th of the same month, Mr. Clay introduced one of those "compromise measures" for which he was distinguished. This provided for settling several irritating questions; such as the admission of California; the establishment of the boundary line between Texas and Mexico; the abolition of the slave trade in the District of Columbia, and the modification of the Fugitive Slave Act. The fourth resolution of this bill was as follows:

*"Resolved, That it be proposed to the State of Texas, that the United States will provide for the payment of all that portion of the legitimate and bona fide public debt of that State, contracted prior to its annexation to the United States, and for which the duties on foreign imports were pledged by the said State to its creditors, not exceeding the sum of \$——, in consideration of the said duties so pledged being no longer applicable to that object, after the said annexation, but having thenceforth become payable to the United States; and upon the condition, also, that the said State of Texas shall, by some solemn and authentic act of the Legislature, or of a convention, relinquish to the United States any claim which it has to any part of New Mexico."*

Congress proceeded slowly with the settlement of this perplexing question. On the 5th of August, Mr. Pearce introduced what has since been denominated the "Boundary Bill;" a bill that finally became a law. In the debate upon this bill, the speakers generally disclaimed any right which Texas legitimately had to the territory of Santa Fe. The following, from the speech of Mr. Moore, of Pennsylvania, illustrates the general tone of the debate:

"And here let me say that, while I may, perhaps, be willing to vote for a reasonable sum to Texas in the settlement of this question, not one dollar of it would I vote as a remuneration for the territory which she thus claims; but because I feel that, having annexed that State to this Union, and taken all her means of revenue, we are, in a measure, at least equitably, if not legally, responsible for the debts due from her at that time, and for the liquidation of which debts these revenues were pledged."



**SCENE NEAR FORT MASON.**



In the discussion on this subject, it was generally conceded that all the debts contracted by the late Republic were upon the faith of the revenue derived from customs, and it became a question of some moment as to the amount of said debts. According to Gouge's Fiscal History, the public debt of Texas, at different periods, was as follows: In 1836, \$267,534; in 1837, \$1,090,984; in 1838, \$1,886,525; in 1839, \$3,102,083; in 1840, \$5,485,502; in 1841, \$7,704,328; and in 1851, with accumulated interest, \$12,436,991. But we have already stated that the Auditor and Comptroller, under the direction of the Legislature, and with the assistance of a Legislative committee, had scaled this debt to a sum supposed to be equal to the par value received by the late Republic. In his speech before the Senate, Mr. Pearce fixes the equitable debt at a little less than \$4,500,000.

On the 9th of August, Mr. Pearce's bill was engrossed for a third reading, and finally passed the Senate by a vote of thirty to twenty. And on the 4th of September, it passed the House without amendment, by a vote of one hundred and eight to ninety-seven. It may not be improper, to state that the creditors of Texas had marshalled in force in the lobby at Washington, and were energetically at work to secure the passage of the bill. For the benefit of our readers we copy the act in full:

**AN ACT** proposing to the State of Texas the establishment of her northern and western boundaries, the relinquishment by the said State, of all territory claimed by her exterior to said boundary, and all of her claims upon the United States.

Be it enacted, etc: That the following propositions be, and the same are hereby offered to the State of Texas, which, when agreed to by the said State, in an act passed by the General Assembly, shall be binding and obligatory on the United States and upon the said State of Texas; provided, that the said agreement by the said General Assembly shall be given on or before the first day of December, 1850.

1st. The State of Texas will agree that her boundary on the north shall commence at the point at which the meridian of one hundred degrees west from Greenwich is intersected by the parallel of thirty-six degrees thirty minutes north latitude, and shall run from said point due west to the meridian of one hundred and three degrees west from Greenwich;—Thence her

boundary shall run due south to the thirty-second degree of north latitude thence on the said parallel of thirty-two degrees north latitude to the Rio Bravo del Norte, and thence with the channel of said river in the Gulf of Mexico.

2d. The State of Texas cedes to the United States all her claim to the territory exterior to the limits and boundaries which she agrees to establish by the first article of this agreement.

3d. The State of Texas relinquishes all claim upon the United States for liability for the debts of Texas, and for compensation or indemnity for the surrender to the United States of her ships, forts, arsenals, custom-houses, custom house revenue, arms and munitions of war, and public buildings, with their sites, which became the property of the United States at the time of annexation.

4th. The United States, in consideration of said establishment of boundary, cession of claims to territory, and relinquishment of claims, will pay to the State of Texas the sum of \$10,000,000, in stock bearing five per cent. interest, and redeemable at the end of fourteen years; the interest payable half-yearly at the Treasury of the United States.

5th. Immediately after the President of the United States shall have been furnished with an authentic copy of the act of the General Assembly of Texas accepting the propositions, he shall cause the stock to be issued in favor of the State of Texas, as provided for in the fourth article of agreement: provided, that not more than five millions of said stock shall be issued until the creditors of the State, holding bonds and other certificates of stock of Texas, for which duties on imports were specially pledged, shall first file at the Treasury of the United States releases of all claims against the United States for or on account of said bonds or certificates, in such forms as shall be prescribed by the Secretary of the Treasury, and approved by the President of the United States: provided, also, that nothing herein contained shall be construed to impair or qualify anything contained in the third article of the second section of the joint resolution for annexing Texas to the United States, approved March 1st, 1845, either as regards the number of States that may hereafter be formed out of the State of Texas, or otherwise."

The Boundary Act was signed by the President on the 7th of September, and immediately communicated to the Executive of Texas, who convened the State Legislature in extra session at Austin. During the Congressional discussions on the bill, a violent opposition to the measure was displayed in Texas, especially to that provision which retained in the United States Treasury five millions of the bonds until the Texas creditors were paid off. This seemed to throw suspicion upon Texas, and to imply that she would not promptly pay her indebtedness, even if the United States furnished the means. Again, there was opposition

to parting with any of her territory. Moreover, a certain class of politicians denounced the measure, because, as they asserted, the Federal Government assumed too imperious a tone towards a sovereign State. But the act required an unconditional assent, and gave but a few weeks for consideration.

In Governor Bell's message, he advised the military occupancy of Santa Fe; but suggested that Texas might be willing to sell the vacant land there, provided the territory was still left under the jurisdiction of the State. But when the Legislature came to discuss the merits and demerits of Pearce's bill, the opposition finally yielded, and on the 25th of November a law was passed, accepting the propositions made by the United States in the bill; after reciting the provisions of which it declares :

1st. That the State of Texas hereby agrees to and accepts said propositions; and it is hereby declared that the State shall be bound by the terms thereof, according to their true import and meaning.

2d. That the Governor of this State be, and he is hereby requested to cause a copy of this act, authenticated under the seal of the State, to be furnished to the President of the United States, by mail, as early as practicable.

The act was to take effect from and after its passage.\*

There has been a great deal of controversy and no little litigation in Texas, growing out of what is called "premium lands," given to empresarios, and companies introducing immigrants under contracts. During Bell's administration a serious difficulty arose between the settlers and the agents of the company that settled Peters' colony. The company claimed immense tracts of lands which colonists had located and improved. When Mr. Hedgecoxe, the agent of the company, attempted to run off these premium lands, he was

\* It will be seen that Texas sold 98,980 square miles, equal to 56,249,640 acres. Had Mr. Clay's bill passed, we should have lost much more, including all that portion of the staked plains included in the fifty odd counties laid off by the Legislature in 1876.

driven off by the people who occupied them. This led to an investigation, when it was discovered that the company laid claim to over a million of acres of land more than they were entitled to. Of course their claim was disallowed, and the land saved to the *bona fide* settlers.

At the election held in the fall of 1853, Elisha M. Pease was elected Governor, and David C. Dickson, Lieutenant Governor.\*

\*Officers of Executive Department, during Bell's administration: James Webb and Thomas H. Duval, Secretaries of State; A. J. Hamilton and Ebenezer Allen, Attorneys-General; J. B. Shaw, Comptroller; J. H. Raymond, Treasurer; George W. Smyth, Land Commissioner; C. L. Mason, John S. Gillett and Ben. Hill, Adjutants-General; and John M. Swisher, Auditor.

In the election in 1851, there were 28,300 votes cast for Governor, of which P. H. Bell received 13,595; M. T. Johnson, 5,262; J. A. Greer, 4,061; B. H. Epperson, 2,971; T. J. Chambers, 2,320; and there were 100 scattering. For Lieutenant-Governor, J. W. Henderson, 9,659; Matt Ward, 7,788; Dr. C. G. Keenan, 5,740; and John S. Gillet, 2,644. For a short period, Mr. Henderson filled the Executive Chair, just at the close of the term, Mr. Bell having gone to Washington to take his seat in Congress, to which he had been elected. At the election in 1853, 96,152 votes were cast for Governor, of which E. M. Pease received 13,091; Wm. B. Ochiltree, 9,178; George T. Wood, 5,983; Lemuel D. Evans, 4,677; T. J. Chambers, 2,449; John W. Dancy, 315; and 459 scattering. For Lieutenant-Governor, David C. Dickson, 14,215; Dr. J. B. Robertson, 6,868; Jared E. Kirby, 5,967; William C. Henry, 4,823; Richard A. Goode, 835.



## CHAPTER II.

PEASE'S ADMINISTRATION—DEBT OF THE OLD REPUBLIC SCALED AND SETTLED—MEXICAN CART WAR—TAXES RELINQUISHED TO COUNTIES—POLITICAL PARTIES—RUNNELS' ADMINISTRATION—RAILROADS—INDIAN RESERVATIONS—CORTINA IN BROWNSVILLE—HOUSTON'S ADMINISTRATION—POLITICAL EXCITEMENT—CORTINA AGAIN—FRONTIER DEFENCE—HOUSTON'S MESSAGE TO THE LEGISLATURE—SECESSION CONVENTION—ORDINANCE PASSED—TEXAS UNITES WITH THE NEWLY-FORMED CONFEDERACY—HOUSTON DEPOSED.

ELISHA M. PEASE was inaugurated Governor on December 21st, 1851; was re-elected in 1853, and held the office for four years. In his first message to the Legislature, he recommended, as of the utmost importance, that suitable and permanent provision be made for the support of public schools; and also for the establishment of a State University. He also advised the Legislature to make provision for the establishment of asylums for lunatics, for orphans, for the education of the blind, and the deaf and dumb. And, except the orphan asylum, all went into operation during his official term.

In the debate in Congress in 1850, on the bill for the purchase of Santa Fe, Mr. Pearce, the author of the bill, opposed the reserve of five million bonds in the United States Treasury, as he said, "Because, 1st, I do not wish the United States to become a commissioner in bankruptcy for Texas; and, 2d, I do not wish to place Texas in the condition of appearing to be obliged to be placed in the hands of a commissioner in bankruptcy."

In the progress of events during the settlement, precisely that state of things occurred. The creditors of Texas demanded better terms than the State law gave them; and the United States intervened. and in a bill known as the

in full in the Treasury Department of the United States, and received his pay. Texas was then out of debt; and, as shown by the report of the Comptroller, there was in the State treasury, exclusive of the school fund, \$1,592,742.

The extensive frontier of Texas, almost entirely destitute of population, afforded slaves an opportunity to make their escape into Mexico; and it was supposed that the lower class of Mexicans aided them in their flight. While Texas was at peace, Mexico was convulsed with perpetually recurring revolutions, and not a few of the citizens of the former Republic sought a home in Texas. Many of this class had been Peons—indentured servants—at home, and readily associated with the servile population of Texas; some intermarrying with negro women. It was thought this imperilled the institution of slavery, and public meetings were held at Austin, Gonzales and other towns in Western Texas, and resolutions adopted protesting against the employment of Mexican laborers. But South-western Texas was largely represented by Mexican citizens; and their countrymen from the other side of the Rio Grande continued to seek employment in Texas. Many of them engaged in transporting goods from the western seaports to the interior; and as they lived very cheaply, and drove ox-carts, they could carry freight at lower prices than regular American freighters. The latter determined to break up the ox-cart business. Bands of armed men collected in Karnes and Goliad and some other counties, and assailed the Mexican trains, in some instances killing the drivers and driving off their oxen. Governor Pease, when informed of this state of things, visited San Antonio, and after inquiring into the facts connected with "The Cart War," called out a company of seventy-five men, and put a stop to the unlawful interference with the cart-men.

In Governor Pease's message to the Legislature, at its session in the fall of 1855, he says:



**E. M. PEASE.**



“It gives me no ordinary pleasure to welcome you to the Capital, and to congratulate you upon the present condition of the State. We are receiving large accessions to our wealth and population; our citizens are in the enjoyment of a healthful season and an abundant harvest; every branch of industry receives its liberal reward, and our inhabitants are prosperous and happy in a degree unexampled in our former history.”

We copy other paragraphs from the same message, on the subject of finance :

“For the last four years, as you are aware, the State taxes have been relinquished to the counties, and the expenses of the government have been paid from the bonds received from the United States government in the settlement of our Northwest boundary.

“The amount of these bonds now remaining in the Treasury is \$1,575,000, and if we continue to rely upon them to meet the expenses of the government, they will, with the interest accruing on them, pay these expenses for about eight years.

“But these bonds having been received as the consideration for our relinquishment of the right of soil and jurisdiction over a portion of the territory acquired by our revolution, ought not to be expended for temporary purposes; they ought rather to be husbanded and used for objects of public utility, permanent in their character.

“The main reason assigned for relinquishing the State tax to the counties, was to enable them to build court-houses and jails. Those counties which have made a judicious use of this tax are now supplied with these buildings, and this reason can no longer be urged.

“I am opposed to any future relinquishment of the State tax to the counties, and think that it should be relied on to meet the ordinary expenses of the government; this course will probably tend to economy in these expenses, for where the means for the support of a government are derived from a direct tax upon the people, it will be found that they are more watchful to prevent lavish and improvident appropriations, and hold their officers to a more rigid accountability.

“If we act upon these suggestions, we will still have to use a portion of these bonds to meet the outstanding appropriations for the years 1854 and 1855, and also for the appropriations for the year 1856, as the taxes assessed for that year will not be collected until 1857.”\*

\* During Pease's administration, the principal offices in the executive department were filled as follows: Edward Clark, Secretary of State; James B. Shaw, Comptroller; James H. Raymond, Treasurer; Thomas J. Jennings and James Willey, Attorneys-General; Stephen Crosby, Land Commissioner.

At the election in 1855, there were 46,339 votes cast for Governor; of which E. H. Pease received 26,336; David C. Dickson, 17,968; scattering, 1,036. For Lieutenant-Governor, Hardin R. Runnels received 21,073; W.

Hardin R. Runnels was inaugurated Governor, December 21st, 1857. During that year a very severe drouth prevailed in a considerable portion of the State; but population and wealth continued to flow in from the older States, and his administration includes a prosperous era in our history.

The Governor, in his message, complains of the slow progress of railroads, notwithstanding the immense land donations, and the loan of \$6,000 per mile from the school fund, for every mile of completed road. He advised the Legislature to grant no more charters, and to hold the companies already chartered to a rigid accountability.

---

G. W. Jowers, 17,817, and Andrew Neill, 4,300. At the election in 1857 there were 56,180 votes polled; of which Hardin R. Runnels received 32,552, and Sam Houston 23,628. For Lieutenant-Governor, F. R. Lubbock, 33,379; Jesse Grimes, 20,818, and F. Smith, 878.

It was during Pease's administration that political parties were organized in Texas. The State had been introduced into the Union under the auspices of the Democrats, and the great mass of the people were of that party. The Constitution of 1845 was in accordance with the principles of the Democracy. Banks and banking were prohibited, and the State was prohibited from taking stock in any corporation. At the election in 1853, Pease had five or six competitors for the office. Any one who chose to do so, announced himself a candidate for any elective office; and men were elected on personal considerations. Sometimes an apparently frivolous circumstance affected the election. General Houston often remarked, in a jesting manner, that in a parenthesis he had made Lamar President. In his first draft of his official report of the battle of San Jacinto, he did not mention Lamar's name; but when he came to revise it, he threw in a parenthetical sentence, mentioning the heroic feat of Lamar, on the afternoon of April 20th. On the contrary, Henderson said that by the omission of Wood's name, in an official report of one of the battles of Mexico, he had made him his successor. Wood had behaved with distinguished gallantry, and his men felt that he had been slighted in the report, and to compensate him, elected him Governor on his return from Mexico. In 1854, the Know-Nothing party was organized, and that party for a time had a large number of lodges in Texas; in some counties electing local officers; and in 1855, returning L. D. Evans to Congress from the eastern district. Dr. Dickson, the Know-Nothing candidate against Pease, received some 4,000 more votes than had ever before been given for Governor. But he lacked still several thousand of an election. After that campaign, the Know-Nothing party ceased to be a factor in Texas politics.

While there was general peace throughout the State, there were some local disturbances. The Indians who had been collected upon the reservation in Young county, proved a source of irritation. They had stocks of horses and cattle; and the frontier settlers had similar stocks. The Indians were accused of committing depredations upon the property of the whites; quarrels followed, in which a number of the Indians were killed. The result was they had to be removed from Texas. There was also trouble on the Rio Grande. It was during this administration that Juan N. Cortina commenced his depredations on that frontier. He, on the 1st of October, took military possession of Brownsville; but was soon driven back into Mexico.\*

\* The Know-Nothing party had but a brief career in Texas. It was a secret society, and secret political societies are contrary to the genius of our institutions. It was said to have had tests of a religious character; and that is contrary to the American Constitution. Again, it was said to array one race against another; and that, in Texas, which invited inhabitants of all nationalities to become citizens, was unwise and impolitic. For the information of those not familiar with the political controversies of our country, it may be proper to remark, that for the admission of Missouri into the Union, Mr. Clay introduced one of his compromise measures, which declared that hereafter all States formed north of the line of thirty-six degrees, thirty minutes, should exclude the institution of domestic slavery, but that south of that degree slavery might be adopted or excluded. The compromise measure introduced by Mr. Clay in 1850, provided that California should be admitted as a free State; and that the Territories of Utah and New Mexico should be formed without any provision concerning slavery; that the slave trade should be prohibited in the District of Columbia; and that a fugitive slave law should be enacted, providing for the return to their owners of slaves escaping to a free State.

What was called the Squatter Sovereignty doctrine, incorporated by Senator Douglas into the Kansas-Nebraska bill, introduced into the United States Senate in December, 1854, virtually repealed the Missouri Compromise. It declared that that compromise, "being inconsistent with the principles of non-intervention by Congress with slavery in the States and Territories, as recognized by the legislation of 1850, commonly called the Compromise measures, is hereby declared inoperative and void, it being the true intent and meaning of this act, not to legislate slavery into any Territory or State, nor to exclude it therefrom, but to leave the people thereof perfectly free to form and regulate their domestic institutions in their own way, subject only to the Constitution of the United States."

The operation of the "Kansas-Nebraska" bill, was not as favorable to the South as its friends had anticipated. In the intense sectional excitement of the period, it became apparent that unless some action was taken by the united South, Kansas would become a free State. Governor Runnels called the attention of the Legislature to this subject. In accordance with the Governor's suggestion, the Legislature, in February, 1858, passed a joint resolution on the subject. The preamble announced that a portion of the population of Kansas were determined by force to exclude the citizens of the slaveholding States from a just and peaceful participation in the use and enjoyment of the common property and territory, &c., and passed the following resolution :

*Resolved, &c.,* That the Governor of the State is hereby authorized to order an election for seven delegates, to meet delegates appointed by the other Southern States in convention, whenever the Executives of a majority of the slaveholding States shall express the opinion that such convention is necessary to preserve the equal rights of such States in the Union, and advise the Governor of this State that measures have been taken to meet those of Texas.

The Governor was further authorized to call an extra session of the Legislature, if he deemed it necessary, to

---

Under the Missouri Compromise, Nebraska and Kansas would have been free States. This bill gave the people of the South permission, if they chose to do so, to enter them with their slaves, and was generally acceptable to the South. Senator Houston voted against it, predicting that it would practically exclude slavery, even from Kansas. That vote was condemned, and he was left out of the Senatorial delegation.

When Texas was admitted into the Union, there were but two political parties in the United States: the Democrats and the Whigs. At the election in 1848 a new party, opposed to any more slave territory, put Mr. Van Buren in the field as a candidate for the Presidency. General Taylor, the Whig candidate, was elected, though Texas voted for Mr. Cass. By the time of the Presidential election in 1856, the Whig party had ceased to exist; having, in the North, been generally absorbed by the Republican party, which chose John C. Fremont for its Presidential candidate. Millard Fillmore was the candidate of the Whigs. Mr. Buchanan, the Democratic candidate, was elected.



consider this subject, and even to make arrangements for a convention of the people, representing the sovereignty of the State.

At the election held in the fall of 1859, Mr. Runnels was the regular Democratic nominee, and Sam Houston again ran as an Independent candidate.\* Houston was elected.†

Sam Houston was inaugurated Governor, December 21st, 1859. It was a period of intense political excitement. The great canvass was just opening which resulted the next year in the election of Abraham Lincoln as President of the United States. Houston had been elected over Mr. Runnels, the regular nominee of the Democratic party in Texas; but he found himself not in harmony with the Legislature. Fires, supposed to be incendiary, were of frequent occurrence. The Indians, after their removal from the reservation, had been more hostile and barbarous than ever. On the Rio Grande frontier, Cortina was committing frequent depredations, sometimes crossing to the Texas side and committing murders and thefts. After sending two commissioners to the Rio Grande to obtain accurate information, the Governor dispatched Major Forbes Britton to Washington, to secure protection on that border. The result was an order from the War Department to Colonel Robert E. Lee, then in command in Texas, to cross the river, if necessary, and break up Cortina's band. The Governor acted with equal promptness in his efforts to protect the frontier. Five days after his inauguration, he ordered Capt. W. C. Dalrymple to raise a company of sixty men for frontier protection. This was followed in a few days by similar orders to Captains Ed. Burleson, and John

\*Executive officers during Runnels' administration: T. S. Anderson, Secretary of State; Clement B. Johns, Comptroller; C. H. Randolph, Treasurer; F. M. White, Commissioner of Land Office; M. D. Graham, Attorney-General.

†At the election, 64,027 votes were cast; for Houston, 36,257; for Runnels 27,500.

into Congress to displace President Jones, and inaugurate a Government *ad interim*, to hasten annexation. They were now in a much greater hurry to precipitate the act of secession. The first day of the session of the Convention was spent in debating the question of submitting the ordinance to a vote of the people. That was decided by a vote of 140 for, and 28 against submitting it to a popular vote.

The Ordinance of Secession, as finally passed,\* was as follows :

*An Ordinance to Dissolve the Union between the State of Texas and the other States, united under the compact styled "The Constitution of the United States of America."*

SECTION 1st. Whereas, the Federal Government has failed to accomplish the purposes of the compact of Union between these States in giving protec-

\* VOTE.—Yeas.—Mr. President, Abercrombie, Allen, J. M. Anderson, T. S. Anderson, Armstrong, Askew, Adams, Batte, Beasley, Box, Burditt, Burroughs, Burton, Blythe, Brahan, Brown, Black, Broadus, Casey, T. J. Chambers, Wm. Chambers, J. G. Chambers, Campbell, Charlton, Chisan, Clayton, Cook, Chilton, Clark, Jr., Cleveland, Coke, Davidson, Devine, Diamond, Donelson, Dougherty, Dancy, Deen, Davenport, Wm. W. Diamond, Dunham, Early, Edwards, Field, Flournoy, Ford, Fall, Feeney, Spencer Ford, Frost, Galloway, Gold, Graham, Green, Gawhal, Robert Graham, Gray, Gregg, Henderson, Herbert, Hill, Hogg, Hooker, Howard, Hays, Hicks, Hobby, Holt, Hord, Hoyle, Hutchison, Ireland, Jennings, Jones, Kelly, Koester, Latham, Lasseur, Lester, Locke, Lubbock, Lea, Littleton, Lofton, Luckett, Maltby, Maxey, M'Craven, M'Cray, Miller, Thomas Moore, T. C. Moore, Montel, Muller, Marshall, Lewis W. Moore, M'Intosh, M'Craw, Mills, Moss, Nash, Neal, Newsom, Nichols, Nicholson, Noendorf, Nelson, Nayland, A. J. Nicholson, Norris, Obenchain, Ochiltree, Oldham, Palmer, W. K. Payne, W. M. Payne, Peck, Pope, Pendergrast, Poag, Portis, Preston, Price, Rainey, Reagan, Rector, Robertson, Rogers, J. C. Robertson, Rhome, Wm. P. Rogers, James H. Rogers, Ross, Rugely, Runnels, Scarborough, Scurry, S. S. Smith, G. Smith, Scott, Shepherd, Stell, Charles Stewart, J. G. Stewart, Stockdale, Wm. H. Stewart, Taylor, B. F. Terry, N. Terry, Thomason, Todd, Thompson, Waller, Walworth Warren, Ward, Watkins, Weir, Wharton, Wiley, Wilson, Wilcox, Benjamin Williams, Work,—167.

Noes.—Hughes, Johnson of Lamar, Johnson of Titus, Shuford, Throckmorton, Williams of Lamar, and Wright.

At the re-assembling of the Convention, March 2d, the following names were added to the yeas: Bagby, Chambers, Baxter, Cox, Hall, Harrison, Henderson, Henry, Hunt, Jones, Mattox, Montgomery, M'Call, Nash, Stapp, Russel, Wilson, Word.



**ELLIS P. BEAN**



tion either to the persons of our people upon an exposed frontier, or to the property of our citizens; and, whereas, the action of the Northern States of the Union is violative of the compact between the States and the guaranties of the Constitution; and, whereas, the recent developments in Federal affairs make it evident that the power of the Federal Government is sought to be made a weapon with which to strike down the interests and prosperity of the people of Texas and her sister slave-holding States, instead of permitting it to be as was intended, our shield against outrage and aggression, therefore, "We, the people of the State of Texas, by Delegates in Convention assembled, do declare and ordain that the Ordinance adopted by our Convention of Delegates on the fourth (4th) day of July, A. D., 1845, and afterwards ratified by us, under which the Republic of Texas was admitted into the Union with other States, and became a party to the compact styled 'The Constitution of the United States of America,' be and hereby is repealed and annulled."

That all the powers which, by the said compact, were delegated by Texas to the Federal Government, are revoked and resumed. That Texas is of right absolved from all restraints and obligations incurred by said compact, and is a separate sovereign State, and that her citizens and people are absolved from all allegiance to the United States or the Government thereof.

SEC. 2d. This ordinance shall be submitted to the people of Texas for their ratification or rejection by the qualified voters, on the 23d day of February, 1861; and, unless rejected by a majority of the votes cast, shall take effect and be in force on and after the second day of March, A. D. 1861; Provided, that in the representative district of El Paso, said election may be held on the 18th day of February, 1861.

Done by the people of the State of Texas, in Convention assembled, at Austin, this first day of February, A. D., 1861.

The act of the Convention was hailed with the liveliest demonstrations of popular joy. Bells were rung, salutes were fired, and the following night the Capitol was illuminated. After the passage of the ordinance, both the Convention and the Legislature adjourned. On the 9th of February Governor Houston issued his proclamation for an election to be held, in accordance with the ordinance of the Convention, on the 23d of February; the people to vote for or against secession. At the election 39,415 voted for, and 13,841 against secession.

The Convention re-assembled on the 4th of March. A committee was sent to hold a conference with the Governor, and to announce to him, that Texas was now "a free, sovereign and independent State." The Governor protested

against any further action on the part of the Convention; and contended that, having passed the ordinance of secession and submitted it to the people, their functions ceased.\* The Convention, however, continued in session, and on the same day passed the following ordinance, uniting Texas with the new Confederation which had been formed at Montgomery :

*An Ordinance in relation to a Union of the State of Texas with the Confederate States of America.*

WHEREAS, the Convention of this State has received information that the Congress of the Confederate States of America, now in session at the city of Montgomery, in the State of Alabama, has adopted a Constitution for a Provisional Government, which Constitution is modeled on that of the United States of America; and whereas, as a seceding State, it becomes expedient and proper, that Texas should join said Confederacy, and share its destinies; and whereas, a delegation consisting of seven members has already been elected by the Convention to the Congress of the Confederacy aforesaid, therefore,

The people of Texas in Convention assembled, have ordained and declared, and do hereby ordain and declare, that the delegation aforesaid to the Congress aforesaid, be and they are hereby instructed, and we do accordingly instruct them, in behalf of the State, and as representing its sovereign authority, to apply for the admission of this State into said Confederacy, and to that and for that purpose, to give in the adhesion of Texas to the Provisional Constitution of said Confederate States; and which said Constitution this Convention hereby approves, ratifies, and accepts.

SEC. 2. *Be it further ordained,* That the delegation appointed by this Convention to the Congress of the Confederate States be, and they are

\*Up to the time of secession, there had been but two Presidents of the Senate elected: Edward Burleson, of the first Legislature, and Jesse Grimes, of the succeeding Legislatures, up to the eighth. H. P. Bee was Secretary of the first Senate; N. C. Raymond, of the second and third; W. D. Miller, of the fourth; James F. Johnson, of the fifth and sixth; R. T. Browning, of the seventh, and James F. Johnson, of the eighth.

W. E. Crump was Speaker of the first Legislature; J. W. Henderson, of the second; C. C. Keenan, of the third; D. C. Dickson, of the fourth; H. R. Runnels, of the fifth; H. P. Bee, of the sixth; Wm. S. Taylor, of the seventh, and M. D. K. Taylor, of the eighth. James H. Raymond was Chief Clerk of the House of the first Legislature; B. F. Hill, of the four succeeding Legislatures (with J. W. Hampton for the extra session of the third Legislature); E. D. McKinney, of the sixth; H. H. Haynie, of the seventh, and Wm. Leigh Chambers of the eighth.

hereby authorized to act in said Congress, as the duly accredited representatives of the State of Texas. Provided, however, that any permanent Constitution which may be formed by said Congress, shall not become obligatory on this State, until approved in such way as shall be determined upon.

Sec. 3. *Be it further ordained,* That the President of the Convention immediately transmit, through such channel as he may select, a copy or copies of this Ordinance, to the Congress at Montgomery, and the members or Congress from this State.

## CHAPTER III.

THE WAR—CLARK'S ADMINISTRATION—SURRENDER OF UNITED STATES PROPERTY AT SAN ANTONIO AND IN THE SOUTH-WEST—INDIANS HOSTILE—WARLIKE PREPARATIONS ON A LARGE SCALE—THE BLOCKADE—LUBBOCK'S ADMINISTRATION—STATE PROSPEROUS—ARIZONA EXPEDITION—FEDERALS TAKE POSSESSION OF GALVESTON—MAGRUDER IN COMMAND IN TEXAS—RECAPTURE OF GALVESTON BY THE CONFEDERATES—FEDERALS REPULSED AT SABINE PASS—CONSCRIPT LAW—MARTIAL LAW—"COTTON ORDERS"—HOUSTON ON MARTIAL LAW—MURRAH'S ADMINISTRATION—FINE CROPS—THE FEDERALS IN THE SOUTH-WEST—FIGHTING IN LOUISIANA—"COTTON ORDERS" AGAIN—MURRAH VS. MAGRUDER—CONFEDERATE ARMIES DISBAND.

ON the 14th of March, an ordinance passed the Convention requiring all State officers to take the oath of loyalty to the Constitution promulgated by the Convention at Montgomery. Governor Houston and Mr. Cave, Secretary of State, declining to take said oath, their offices were declared vacant, and Mr. Ed. Clark, the Lieutenant-Governor, was duly installed Governor. The other public officers taking the required oath were continued in office. Agreeably to adjournment, the Legislature reassembled March 18th. Ex-Governor Houston sent a message to that body, protesting against his removal and the usurpation of the functions of his office by Governor Clark.

On the 20th of January, 1860, Governor Houston sent General J. M. Smith on a confidential mission to General Twiggs, at San Antonio, inquiring what disposition would be made of the public property belonging to the United States in the department? To this inquiry Gen. Twiggs replied: "I am without instructions from Washington, in regard to the disposition of the public property here, or of the troops, in the event of the State's seceding. After secession, if the Executive of the State makes a demand on the Commander of the Department, he will receive an answer."



Edward Clark, the Lieutenant-Governor, having taken the prescribed oath to the Southern Confederacy, was sworn in as Governor on the 16th of March, but General Houston continued to occupy the office building of the Governor until the morning of the 18th, when Mr. Clark entered the room before Houston reached it in the morning, and remained in undisputed possession.

There were at that time about twenty-five hundred United States soldiers guarding the frontiers of Texas; all under command of Major-General Twiggs. The Convention had appointed commissioners to receive the public property; and the following agreement was entered into just after Clark became Governor :

SAN ANTONIO, Feb. 18th, 1861.

The undersigned, commissioners on the part of the State of Texas, fully empowered to exercise the authority undertaken by them, have formally and solemnly agreed with Brvt. Maj. Gen. David E. Twiggs, U. S. A., commanding the Department of Texas, that the troops of the United States shall leave the soil of the State, by the way of the coast; that they shall take with them the arms of their respective corps, including the battery at Fort Duncan and the battery of the same character at Fort Brown, and shall be allowed the necessary means for regular and comfortable movement, provisions, tents, etc., etc., and transportation.

It is the desire of the Commission, that there shall be no infraction of this agreement on the part of the State. It is their wish, on the contrary, that every facility shall be afforded the troops. They are our friends. They have heretofore afforded to our people all the protection in their power, and we owe them every consideration.

The public property at the various posts, other than that above recited for the use of the troops, will be turned over to agents to be appointed by the Commission, who will give due and proper receipts for the whole to the officers of the army, whom they relieve in their custody of the public property.

THOS. J. DEVINE,  
P. N. LUCKETT,  
S. A. MAVERICK.

Commissioners on behalf of Committee of Public Safety.

In accordance with this agreement, the United States soldiers marched to Green Lake, near Indianola, ready to embark; and the Government sent an unarmed steamer, the *Star of the West*, to remove them. The steamer was

captured by Colonel Earl Van Dorn; and Major Sibley chartered a couple of sail-vessels, upon which he embarked his men. A norther sprung up, and Sibley was unable to procure a pilot. While in the bay, Colonel Van Dorn, with a few hundred volunteers, and the assistance of the steamer General Rusk, sent from Galveston, captured the schooner and soldiers.

Governor Clark authorized Colonel Wm. C. Young to enlist a thousand men for service on the northern frontier. About the first of May, Colonel Young crossed Red river, and captured Fort Arbuckle and other forts in the Indian Territory, Major Emory retreating toward Kansas. The troops from the frontier posts collected in the neighborhood of San Antonio, and on the 9th of May, Van Dorn, with a large volunteer force, demanded their surrender. Officers were paroled, and the men agreed to leave the State. A few of them enlisted in the Confederate army.

The Indians, still chafing under their forcible removal from their reservations, and seeing the frontier denuded of troops, became more bold and hostile than ever. Murders were committed in Gillespie, Uvalde, and Kerr counties, and a band of the savages penetrated Atascosa county. Indeed the whole frontier was more or less troubled by their raids. An expedition from Galveston sailed down the coast to the mouth of the Rio Grande, to assist Colonel Ford in capturing the forts and public property on the lower Rio Grande. It was at first thought that the officer in command of Fort Brown would resist; but after some hesitation all the public property was turned over to the Texas Commissionssioners, Messrs. E. B. Nichols and H. B. Waller.

On the 8th of June, Governor Clark issued his proclamation announcing that a state of war existed, and that Texas creditors were prohibited from paying Northern debts, &c.

On the 2d of July, a blockading squadron appeared at Galveston, and on the 4th seven small sailing vessels were

captured. Soon afterward, the whole Texas coast was closed to commerce, except by the hazardous mode of blockade-running.

The whole country was alive with the military spirit. The State was divided into militia districts for camps of instruction. In August the Governor appointed thirty-two Brigadier Generals of militia. By the 7th of November, fifteen thousand men had enlisted in the Confederate army.

At the election in 1861, F. R. Lubbock was elected Governor, and John M. Crockett, Lieutenant Governor.\*

\* For Governor: Francis R. Lubbock, 21,854; T. J. Chambers, 13,759; Edward Clark, 21,730. Total, 57,343. For Lieutenant Governor; Crockett, 22,321; F. F. Foscue, 12,160.

*Executive Officers During Houston and Clark's Term.*—Secretaries of State, E. W. Cave, Bird Holland, and C. S. West; Attorney General, G. W. Flournoy; Comptroller, C. R. Johns; Treasurer, C. H. Randolph; Land Commissioner, F. M. White.

*Courts.*—At annexation, John Hemphill became Chief Justice of the Supreme Court, and A. S. Lipscomb and R. T. Wheeler, Associates. Tom Green, Clerk. In 1856, Justice Lipscomb died, and O. M. Roberts became Associate Justice. In 1850, the Court was required to hold its sessions alternately in Austin, Galveston and Tyler. In 1858, Justice Hemphill was elected to the Senate. Wheeler became Chief Justice, and James H. Bell, Associate. In 1862, George F. Moore was elected Associate Justice.

In 1846, John C. Watrous was appointed Judge of the Federal District Court. In 1858 a new district was formed and Thomas H. Duval was appointed Judge.

In 1856, the Legislature created a Court of Claims. James C. Wilson was appointed Commissioner. He was succeeded in 1857 by I. A. Illingworth; and in 1858 by Ed. Clark; 1859 by Joseph Lee; and in 1860 by William S. Hotchkiss.

We have entered upon the era of the great civil war. The time has not arrived to write its story, or to discuss its principles with the calm spirit of history. It was a dark, gloomy period, in which bitter passions prevailed. Future generations will form their estimate of its men and its measures. We shall confine ourselves to a simple record of the facts and incidents as they occurred.

*Congressional Representation.*—Sam Houston was Senator from 1846 to 1857; Thomas J. Rusk from 1845 to 1857. After Rusk's death Matt. Ward filled out his unexpired term, when Lewis T. Wigfall was elected. In 1859, John Hemphill was elected in place of Sam Houston. Wigfall and Hemphill resigned when the State seceded. Texas was entitled to two Representatives in the lower House. David S. Kaufman represented the Eastern District from 1846 to 1851; Richardson Scurrey, in 1851-53; O. W.

Mr. Lubbock was inaugurated Governor November 7th, 1861. Texas suffered less, probably, from the effects of the civil war than any other Southern State. Her numerous gulf ports offered many facilities for running the blockade; and on her southwestern border, cotton found a ready market in the towns of Mexico. Through these channels, supplies of groceries and other necessaries were procured, though at an advanced price. Though so large a portion of her able-bodied men were in the army, the old men and boys so managed the servants, as to raise the greatest abundance of corn, wheat, cotton, etc. The women, with great cheerfulness, submitted to the additional labors imposed upon them; assisting in the field, and especially in the manufacture of cloth for domestic use. The inexhaustible salt lakes of the Southwest furnished the State, and could have furnished the whole Confederacy with that necessary article.

In the fall of 1861, a brigade was organized at San Antonio, by General Sibley, for the occupancy of the Upper Rio Grande country. Sibley reached Fort Bliss, near El Paso, on the 16th of December. He marched up the river on the east side, and arrived within a few miles of Fort Craig on the 20th of February, 1862. At a place called Valverde, a great battle was fought on the next day. The Texans, after a severe fight, remained masters of the field; having taken some prisoners and six pieces of artillery. The Federals retired to the fort. After this fight, the Texans advanced up the river, occupying Santa Fe on the 23d of March. On the 27th of March, at a canon called Glorietta, twenty miles north of Santa Fe, a portion of the command was attacked by a strong force of Federals, and suffered a heavy loss in killed and prisoners. Some other

Smyth, in 1854-55; Lemuel Dale Evans, in 1856-57; and John H. Reagan in 1858-61. Timothy Pillsbury represented the Western District from 1846 to 1849; Volney E. Howard, in 1850-53; P. H. Bell, in 1854-57; Guy M. Bryan, in 1858-59; Andrew J. Hamilton, in 1860-61.



**F. R. LUBBOCK.**



skirmishes took place, but without any decided victory. The last one was at Peratta, on the 23d of April. The command was then on the retrograde march toward Texas. In killed, wounded and prisoners, the brigade had lost about five hundred men in New Mexico. This was a heavier loss, but the result was not so disastrous as the Lamar Santa Fe expedition in 1840. The Texans found Forts Craig, Union, etc., too well garrisoned and strongly fortified to take with their slender means; and the population of New Mexico, almost to a man, espoused the Federal cause.

The whole power of all departments of the Government was exerted to fill up the ranks of the army. February 26th, 1862, Governor Lubbock called for fourteen regiments, and sent them into camps for instruction. November 29th, General J. Bankhead Magruder succeeded General Hebert in the command of Texas. He called for ten thousand additional troops. At the close of Lubbock's administration, the Adjutant-General reported ninety thousand Texans in the Confederate armies.

On the 17th of May, 1862, Commodore Eagle, of the blockading squadron, demanded the surrender of Galveston. It was known by the Confederates that he had no land forces to occupy the city, and no attention was paid to the demand. On the 4th of October, the demand was repeated, and four days allowed for the removal of non-combatants. The Commodore gave notice that he had a sufficient force to capture and hold the island. The Confederates withdrew to Virginia Point, six miles distant. The Commodore sent some of his vessels into the inner harbor, and two hundred and sixty men, of the 42d Massachusetts, landed and raised the United States flag over the Custom-House, and took a position on one of the wharves. This was the situation when General Magruder assumed command in Texas. He at once determined to repossess the island. The return of Sibley's brigade from Arizona gave Magruder a large

force of experienced soldiers, which was augmented by about five thousand State troops called into temporary service for the protection of the coast. Preparations having been carefully, but secretly, completed, Gen. Magruder went to Virginia Point on the 29th of December, at the same time sending the Neptune and Bayou City, two bayou steamers fitted up as gun-boats, with the Lucy Gwinn and John F. Carr as tenders, to the head of Galveston Bay, with instructions to enter the harbor on the night of December 31st, for the attack on the city. Early in the night designated, the land forces crossed from Virginia Point over to the island and silently took a position for the attack. The 42d Massachusetts was stationed on the wharf; but had taken up the planks between their position and the shore. The steamer Harriet Lane was lying at the wharf, and the brig Westfield, the gun-boat Owasssee, and the Clifton, a transport, and some smaller craft, were lying out toward the Pass. The fight was opened by the troops on the island. Soon afterward, the bayou steamers moved up to the channel and attacked the Harriet Lane. The Neptune was pierced by a shell and soon sunk in shallow water. The Bayou City ran up to the Harriet Lane and became entangled in the rigging, and could not be readily disengaged. The Texans promptly leaped on board the Harriet Lane, which soon surrendered, having lost her principal officers. Soon afterward, the men on the wharf surrendered; and some other Federal vessels, including a barque and some smaller craft, were captured by the Texans. The others left the harbor. The Westfield, in trying to get out, got aground, and to prevent her from falling into the hands of the Confederates, a train was set to explode her. The explosion not occurring as soon as expected, Commodore Renshaw, with fifteen men, went on board to examine the fuse. While they were on the ship, she exploded, and all the men lost their lives. All the vessels left the harbor, and for a few days the port of Galveston was open to commerce.



No other important engagement took place in Texas until September 6th, when a fleet of twenty-odd sail appeared off the coast at Sabine Pass. The fort erected to defend the Pass had only forty-one men, under Lieutenant Dowling. Three or four vessels entered the harbor and commenced bombarding the fort. When the vessels arrived within good range, the guns of the fort were opened upon them, and in a few minutes two of the ships were disabled; and the others left the harbor. The two disabled gunboats, the "Sachem" and "Clifton," with all their armaments and crews, were captured. This gallant achievement of a few men saved the Texas coast from a formidable threatened invasion.

During Governor Lubbock's administration, the conscript law was enacted and enforced in Texas. This, in its various provisions, placed every man liable to military duty in the ranks. In the Governor's message to the Legislature, in November, 1863, he says: "I again suggest the importance of declaring by law, that every male person, from sixteen years old and upwards, not totally unfit, be declared to be in the military service of the State; that no exemptions be allowed other than those recognized by the Constitution; and that no one be permitted to furnish a substitute. I am clearly of the opinion that exemptions and the right to furnish substitutes is working great injury to the country, and should be abolished, both by the State and Confederate Government." \* \* The Governor states that about ninety thousand men had entered the Confederate service from Texas, besides "minute companies" not liable, under the present law, to military duty. The highest vote the State had ever polled was 64, 27.

April 28th, 1862, General L., in command at San Antonio, proclaimed martial law over the western sub-military district, and on the 30th of May following, General Hebert proclaimed martial law over the whole State, in the following General Order:

CONFEDERATE STATES OF AMERICA. }  
 HEADQUARTERS DEPARTMENT OF TEXAS, }  
 Houston, May 30, 1862.

[General Order No. 45.]

I. The following Proclamation is published for the information of all concerned:

PROCLAMATION.

II. I, P. O. Hebert, Brigadier General Provisional Army, Confederate States of America, do proclaim that Martial Law is extended over the State of Texas.

Every white male person above the age of sixteen years, being temporarily or otherwise, within the aforesaid limits, shall upon a summons issued by the Provost Marshal, promptly present himself before said Provost Marshal to have his name, residence, and occupation registered, and to furnish such information as may be required of him: And such as claim to be aliens shall be sworn to the effect that they will abide by and maintain the laws of this State and the Confederate States, so long as they are permitted to reside therein, and that they will not convey to our enemies any information whatever, or do any act injurious to the interest of the country.

All orders issued by the Provost Marshals in the execution of their duties, shall be promptly obeyed. Any disobedience of summons emanating from them shall be dealt with summarily. All officers commanding troops will promptly comply with any requisitions made upon them by Provost Marshals for aid or assistance.

Any attempt to depreciate the currency of the Confederate States is an act of hostility; will be treated as such and visited with summary punishment.

No interference with the rights of loyal citizens, or with the usual routine of business, or with the usual civil administration of the law, will be permitted, except where necessary to enforce the provisions of this Proclamation.

By order of

BRIGADIER GENERAL P. O. HEBERT,  
*Provisional Army C. S., Commanding Department of Texas.*  
 SAMUEL BOYER DAVIS,  
*Captain and Assistant Adjutant General.*

On the 21st of November, 1862, General Hebert issued an order prohibiting the exportation of cotton, except by authorized agents of the Government. In February, 1863, General Magruder issued a new cotton order, imposing additional restrictions upon the exportation of cotton across the Rio Grande. The papers generally condemned this interference with trade, as preventing the people from procuring necessary supplies; and in April the Commanding General issued another "order" revoking all previous

“cotton orders,” and permitting planters, who could procure teamsters not subject to conscription, to export any amount of cotton. But it was but a short time before other restrictions were placed upon the Rio Grande trade.

At the election held August 3d, 1863, Pendleton Murrah was elected Governor, and Fletcher S. Stockdale, Lieutenant Governor.\*

\* For Governor there were polled: For Murrah, 17,511; T. J. Chambers, 12,455; scattering, 1,070—total, 31,036. For Lieutenant Governor: F. S. Stockdale, 11,152; Stephen H. Darden, 8,083; A. M. Gentry, 4,400; P. W. Kittrell, 4,163; scattering, 8.

*Executive Officers.*—R. J. Towns, Secretary of State; C. R. Johns, Comptroller; C. M. Randolph, Treasurer; Stephen Crosby, Land Commissioner; J. Y. Dashiell, Adjutant General; N. C. Shelly, Attorney General.

During this administration a change gradually took place in the public mind. At its commencement, the great mass of the people cheerfully, even enthusiastically sustained the newly-formed Confederacy, and they promptly submitted to every law and every order deemed necessary to success. A great majority looked upon the establishment of the Confederacy as an accomplished fact; and believed that its recognition by the governments of Europe, and the United States itself, was only a question of time. But the events of two years—the surrender of New Orleans and Memphis in 1862, and the fall of Vicksburg in 1863, began to beget doubts of final success. Again—at first the farmers obeyed, without a protest, the various “cotton orders” as they were issued from “Headquarters.” But observation of the working of these changing “orders,” created a suspicion that they operated to the injury of the planter, and inured more to the benefit of speculators than the Confederate government; and this without impugning the motives of the commanding generals. Again, the conscript law and the confiscation laws were enforced a little too vigorously. Some in feeble health were pushed into the army, who ought to have been at home under the care of a doctor, and with their friends and families. In some instances, persons who had spent a lifetime in Texas were accidentally in the North, and did not, or perhaps could not, return to their homes. Their property was seized by the receivers and confiscated.

But the subject of most dissatisfaction was the proclamation of martial law; and the manner of its enforcement. It was not intended, originally, to interfere with men in legitimate business. But under the rulings of young lieutenants, citizens were prohibited from going to a neighboring county seat without a passport. Venerable men, who had spent forty years in Texas, felt humiliated, when they had to travel a considerable distance to obtain from a young lieutenant permission to visit a relative, or transact some item of business in a neighborhood out of their county. While many complied even with the requirements of the “order” for the good of the

Pendleton Murrah was inaugurated Governor November 5th, 1863. A large number of refugees from Louisiana, Arkansas and Missouri had entered Texas with their slaves; the season had been propitious, and overwhelming crops of corn and cotton had been produced; the latter crop supposed to amount to three hundred thousand bales, the largest Texas had ever produced. Nearly every family had been furnished with wheels and looms, and an abundance of cloth was manufactured. The trade across the Rio Grande, and that carried on by running the blockade, kept the people tolerably well supplied with such necessaries as could not be produced in the State. But, while thus rejoicing in the exemption from calamities incident to the war in other States, the cheerful spirit which pervaded the people during the first years of the war was evidently on the wane.

cause, others thought it an intolerable infringement of the rights of freemen. One editor, for his severe strictures upon the measure, was threatened with arrest and imprisonment. From its first promulgation there were some who denounced this order. Among the foremost were A. H. Stephens, Vice President of the Confederacy; W. S. Oldham, one of the Senators from Texas, and others of less note. A few weeks after martial law was proclaimed in Texas, ex-Governor Houston, then in retirement, wrote an earnest protest against it to Governor Lubbock, exhorting the Governor to see that the laws of the State were properly enforced, and reminding him that he is the sworn Executive. Houston says: "A proclamation issued by General Hebert, in May last, and I presume not revoked, is the most extraordinary document I have ever seen, and I venture to say ever seen in any country, unless it was where despotic sway was the only rule of law. In that proclamation he abrogates all powers of your Excellency, as Governor of the State, ignores the Bill of Rights, the Constitution and the Laws, and arrogates to himself undefined and unlimited powers. By this proclamation of martial law, he has created provost marshals, who are authorized to remove citizens, upon suspicion, out of the State without trial; and call in the military to aid in the execution of the provost marshal's pleasure or will; and has established an inquisition to all male persons over the age of sixteen." More than six months elapsed before this letter was given to the public. It then appeared in the columns of the *Houston Telegraph*. The murmuring against the law had become so deep that it found utterance in the language of the old hero of San Jacinto. Houston was now in declining health, and died a few weeks later. It produced a profound impression, especially upon the old Texans, who looked upon this letter as the venerable patriarch's dying protest against military usurpations.

The financial question was becoming more and more perplexing. The Legislature authorized the collectors to receive Confederate money at par for taxes, and to pay all officers of the Government in the same currency, and that when in the market it was worth only about three or four cents on the dollar. People paid their taxes promptly, but the salary of the Governor or any other State officer would hardly buy his cigars, if he indulged in smoking. To consider this, and other questions, he convened an extra session of the Legislature, on the 11th of May, 1864. But that body could devise no plan of relief which did not recognize the depreciation of Confederate currency, and that they were still unwilling to do. They did, however, provide for exchanging the old for the new issue of Confederate bills.

The Federals having failed to effect a landing on the eastern coast of Texas, next directed their attention to breaking up the trade carried on through Brownsville and Matamoras. On the day of Murrah's inauguration, General Banks took possession of Brownsville, General Bee retiring towards the interior of the State. Banks did not attempt to penetrate the interior, but advanced along the coast, in conjunction with a fleet of gun-boats. But few Confederates had been left in the West, and these were more for picket duty than fighting, and retired as the Federals advanced. The Federals took possession of Corpus Christi November 15th, Aransas Pass on the 17th, Mustang Island on the 18th, and Pass Cavallo and St. Joseph Island on the 30th. Indianola was occupied by them on the 13th of December, and Lavaca on the 26th. A small party of Federals crossed over to the Matagorda peninsula. A company of Confederates, under Captain Rugely, of Matagorda, in attempting to cut off this party, were caught in open boats by a fierce norther, and fourteen of his men perished. It was expected that Banks would advance up the coast and attempt the capture of Galveston; but after a few weeks, his army retired from Indianola,

and, with the exception of a small garrison at Brownsville and Brazos St. Jago, evacuated Texas.

No sooner was the West relieved from the presence of an invading army, than the East was threatened. Matagorda Bay was evacuated on the 13th of March, and on the 23d of the same month, Banks took possession of Alexandria, near our eastern line. General J. Kirby Smith, who, since January, 1864, had been in command of the Trans-Mississippi Department, ordered a rapid concentration of troops to intercept the new advance of the Federals. A number of battles were soon fought; that of Mansfield, April 8th, and Pleasant Hill on the 9th. The battle of Blair's Landing was fought April 14th. The Federals had been effectually checked, and on the 26th of April General Steele retreated to Little Rock, and Banks to Alexandria. After the retreat began the battle of Yellow Bayou was fought, May 18th.

On the 12th of March, 1864, General Grant was appointed Commander-in-Chief of the Union forces. He at once began to concentrate the troops into two grand armies; one in the West, under Sherman, for the capture of Atlanta, and a march to the sea; and the other under his own immediate command for the capture of Richmond. The Trans-Mississippi Department was thus relieved from active participation in the ensuing campaign. General J. C. Walker was appointed to the command in Texas, and General Magruder was assigned to duty under General Smith, in Arkansas.

Though Texas was free from the presence of an invading army, the people were not relieved of the burdens and inconveniences of war. Cotton continued to be in great demand. The Confederate officers wanted it; the State Military Board wanted it; county courts were authorized to export cotton to procure necessaries for soldiers' families; and parties engaged in importing machinery for factories, were authorized to take out cotton. So many demands,



**STERLING C. ROBERTSON**





some of them made imperatively, upon the planter, produced exasperation. Further than that, it brought on a conflict of jurisdiction. Governor Murrah, in his message to the extra session of the Legislature, refers to this subject as follows: "Subordinate officers on the Rio Grande, claiming to act under instructions from officers higher in rank in the Confederate States' service, have interfered with cotton transported under the authority of the State, and have delayed and prevented its exportation. I am informed by Colonel E. B. Nichols, agent of the State, that they have prevented cotton, belonging to the Military Board, from being exported. They have thus interposed themselves between the State and the execution of her laws, the providing of means for her defense and to clothe her people."

Not only were cotton and teams impressed for the use of the army, but officers were sent to the leading planters in the best portions of the State, to measure their corn-cribs. A census was then taken of the number of whites and slaves, and mules and horses on the plantation. A liberal amount was left to supply the persons and animals, and the overplus was taken for the army.

Governor Murrah had other grounds of complaint against the military authorities. At the regular session of the Legislature in 1863-64, a law had been passed for organizing a reserve corps, under the authority of the State, of all under fifty years of age. Many of this class of men were already in the field when a new conscript act was passed, including those between forty-five and fifty years. The law authorized them to organize into companies, &c., before being formally transferred to the Confederate service. The Governor, after consulting General Magruder, fixed a day for these troops to organize; but after the law of the Confederate Congress reached the Trans-Mississippi Department, Magruder proceeded to act independently of the State authority. We again quote from the Governor's message:

“Major General Magruder, so soon as the recent Act of Conscription, passed by Congress, was published in the Trans-Mississippi Department, declined receiving the State troops, as State troops, in any form of organization, although tendered to him, and expressed his determination to rely alone upon the law of Congress for troops. This law was published in Houston, according to my recollection, about the 20th of March, and the troops in the four districts already named were then assembling in their brigade encampments, to be organized as the law of the State required, and in conformity with General Orders No. 13, issued by himself, with my consent, after they had been continued in service, as State troops, by my orders already referred to. The position assumed by Gen. Magruder virtually involved the assumption that the law of Congress annulled the laws the Legislature enacted, and that the Confederate military officers were thereby authorized to break up a military organization, formed under the authority of the State as a reserve auxiliary corps, embracing men never before embraced by any legislation of the Confederate Government, and designed to perform nearly the same service, and to accomplish the same ends, as those proposed by the law of Congress. Of course, I need not state that my opinions did not at all accord with his, on this subject, and that I so represented to him. I preferred that the State organization should be completed and that the troops should go to the field as State troops, at least until the Legislature should meet and dispose of the embarrassing question, by transferring them regularly to the Confederate service, in a body; or to be organized in conformity with, and for the purposes indicated by the Conscription Act, and by adjusting the legislation of the State to that of Congress, if that body should deem it proper so to do. I insisted upon this, as the only proper and legitimate course to be pursued—but Gen. Magruder did not accede to my views.”

The Governor ventured still further; and severely criticised some of the provisions of the new Conscription Law:

“The recent Act of Conscription, passed by Congress, exempts from military service ‘the Vice-President of the Confederate States, the members and officers of Congress, of the several Legislatures, and such other Confederate and State officers as the President or the Executives of the respective States may certify to be necessary, for the proper administration of the Confederate and State Governments, as the case may be.’ Has Congress the power to invest by law, the President of the Confederate States with authority to strip the general government of these States of the officers provided for their administration by the Constitution and laws? Has the Confederate Government the power to vest the Executive of a sovereign State, or any other officer, with authority to displace the officers provided for its administration by the Constitution and Laws of that State?

“I will not argue these questions, and thereby leave the implication of doubt on my mind as to them. There can be but one answer given to them—that answer must be in the negative.

"The Constitution and laws of Texas have not only provided, but have determined, the officers necessary to the administration of the Government—and they are, in their respective offices, discharging the duties imposed upon them by the authority referred to.

"It is the duty of the Executive of the State to respect and execute its laws, and to see that its Constitution is not violated. These obligations are imposed on him by a solemn oath. He is nowhere empowered to veto or nullify laws already in force, nor to set aside provisions of the Constitution."

The civil war was rapidly approaching the end. General Lee surrendered the main army at Spottsylvania Court House on the 9th of April, 1865; Johnston surrendered the army under his command, April 26th; and General Taylor, May 6th. The last battle of the war was fought in Western Texas, at the old Palo Alto battle-ground, on the 13th of May.

May 25th Governor Murrah issued three proclamations: one commanding civil officers to preserve public property; another convening an extra session of the Legislature; and a third ordering an election for delegates to a convention. The last two were set aside by the Federal Commander. Without formal orders, the soldiers disbanded by common consent, and returned to their homes, taking such public property as they could carry with them. As might have been expected, a scene of confusion and disorder ensued, in which, in some instances, private property was taken by irresponsible parties.

On the 30th of May, Generals Smith and Magruder went on board a Federal vessel, in the harbor at Galveston, and formally surrendered the Trans-Mississippi Department. General Granger, of the United States army, landed on the 19th of June, and assumed command. He announced the emancipation of the slaves, and the suspension of all legislative enactments inconsistent with the laws of the United States.\*

\*Executive officers: R. J. Towns, Secretary of State; C. R. Johns, Comptroller; C. M. Randolph, Treasurer; Stephen Crosby, Land Commissioner; D. B. Culbertson, Adjutant-General; William Stedman, Attorney-General.

**Judicial Officers:** R. T. Wheeler, Chief Justice; George F. Moore and James H. Bell, Associates. There were twenty judicial districts in the State, and two Confederate District Courts, presided over by Wm. Pinckney Hill, and Thomas J. Devine.

**Confederate Officers:** John H. Reagan was Postmaster-General. The Convention in 1861, sent the following delegates to the Convention at Montgomery, Alabama: John H. Reagan, Lewis T. Wigfall, John Hemp-hill, William S. Oldham, John Gregg, and William B. Ochiltree. Lewis T. Wigfall and William S. Oldham represented Texas in the Senate: and during the Confederacy, the following gentlemen represented Texas in the House: John A. Wilcox, C. C. Herbert, Peter W. Gray, B. F. Sexton, M. D. Graham, William B. Wright, A. M. Branch, John R. Baylor, S. H. Morgan, Stephen H. Darden, and A. P. Wiley.

Mr. Murrah was a native of South Carolina. Educated in the political school of Mr. Calhoun, he believed in State Rights and State Sovereignty. With his positive convictions and determined will, he could not adjust himself to the actual situation when he became Governor of the State. Military "orders" set aside State laws and deaunded the Executive Office of its authority. We believe that under more favorable auspices Pendleton Murrah would have made a good Governor. As it was, his administration was unsatisfactory to himself, offensive to the military commanders, and of little benefit to the State. His fate excites our commiseration. When the armies surrendered, he left the State and his country. Sincerely attached to a cause now "lost," he lost hope and soon afterward died in Mexico.

## CHAPTER IV.

**FIRST RECONSTRUCTION—HAMILTON'S ADMINISTRATION—REGISTRATION OF LOYAL VOTERS—ELECTION—CONVENTION—HAMILTON'S MESSAGE—THROCKMORTON'S ADMINISTRATION—GOVERNMENTS IN THE SOUTHERN STATES DECLARED PROVISIONAL, ONLY—SHERIDAN'S ORDER ON ASSUMING COMMAND—NEW REGISTRATION—IRON CLAD OATH—THROCKMORTON REMOVED—SECOND RECONSTRUCTION—PEASE'S ADMINISTRATION—HANCOCK IN COMMAND—SECOND RECONSTRUCTION CONVENTION—AB INITIO CONTROVERSY—SUFFRAGE BILL—PROTEST OF THE AB INITIOS—CONVENTION DISSOLVES—ELECTION.**

ON the 29th of May, 1865, President Johnson issued his Amnesty Proclamation, and on the 17th of June appointed Andrew J. Hamilton, Provisional Governor of Texas. Mr. Hamilton arrived in Galveston July 21st, and on the 25th issued a proclamation, announcing his appointment, and assuming the duties of his office. This was a period of transition in which the laws of Congress and the instructions of President Johnson shaped the course both of the officers and people of the State. In due time Governor Hamilton appointed boards of registration in each county, authorized to administer the amnesty oath and register such as were, under the reconstruction acts, allowed to vote,—those "loyal to the United States, and none others." By proclamation of the Governor, an election was held January 8th, 1866, for delegates to a Convention to form a new Constitution. Very little interest was manifested in the election. In his message to the Convention, Governor Hamilton said: "I would be wanting in candor if I did not declare that the apathy manifested by the people, in the recent election, fills me with deep concern. From the returns made to the Department of State, and the reports that have reached me from various portions of the State, there is reason to believe that less than half the voters participated in the election."

The Convention met on the 10th of February, and organized by electing J. W. Throckmorton, President, and W.L. Chalmers, Secretary. The Governor, in his message, expressed his views freely on the relation of freedmen to the political institutions of the country. We give some sentences: "I believe it would be unwise to exclude the freedmen in our midst from the exercise of political privileges, by making the enjoyment of these privileges to depend upon the accident of birth or color. I wish to be perfectly frank in the statement of my views, but I do not wish to be misunderstood. I do not believe that the great mass of freedmen in our midst are qualified by their intelligence to exercise the right of suffrage, and I do not desire to see this privilege conferred upon them. But I think that progress is the great law of mind, under every free government, and I do not believe that any policy can be enduring or permanent in this country, which is based upon accidental circumstances, and "the traditions of prejudice, instead of being founded upon the eternal principles of truth and justice." \* \* \* "I believe it would be wise to regulate the qualifications of those who are to become voters hereafter, by rules of universal application." The Governor adds: "Justice requires that the National Government shall see to it, that this now despised and degraded race shall be protected in the beneficial enjoyment of the great boon which has been accorded to them. Any system of laws, therefore, intended to deprive them of the actual fruits of liberty, will meet with resistance from the Congress of the United States."

The Convention completed its work and adjourned April 2d. The general election was held on the 4th of June. The Constitution was adopted; J. W. Throckmorton was elected Governor, and G. Wash. Jones, Lieutenant-Governor.\*

\* Executive Officers under Hamilton: James H. Bell, Secretary of State; William Alexander, Attorney-General; A. H. Latimer, Comptroller; S. Harris, Treasurer; R. M. Elgin and Joseph Spence, Land Commissioners.

J. W. Throckmorton was inaugurated Governor, August 13th, 1866. The Legislature then in session adopted all necessary measures for the complete restoration of civil law. It was the misfortune of Governor Throckmorton that the whole plan of reconstruction, as carried forward by President Johnson, was unacceptable to Congress, and it soon became manifest that he would meet with serious embarrassments in administering the State Government. Though an original Unionist, having voted in the Convention of 1861 against secession, he was elected Governor by the Democrats in opposition to Mr. Pease, the Republican candidate.

Early in February, a bill was introduced into Congress for the more efficient government of the insurrectionary States. We copy the preamble :

“Whereas, The pretended State Governments of the late so-called Confederate States of Virginia, North Carolina, South Carolina, Georgia, Mississippi, Alabama, Louisiana, Florida, Texas and Arkansas, were set up without the authority of Congress, and therefore are of no constitutional validity; and whereas, They are in the hands and under the control of the unrepentant leaders of the rebellion, and afford no adequate protection for life or property, but countenance and encourage lawlessness and crime; and whereas, It is necessary that peace and good order should be enforced in the said so-called States, until loyal and republican State governments can be legally formed; therefore,” &c., &c.

During the discussion of the bill, Mr. Pearce offered the following on the subject of universal manhood suffrage, which was adopted by a vote of 60 to 40 :

“Be it enacted, that the 14th article of the Constitution amendment being ratified by the Legislatures of the requisite number of States, the same is

---

At the election there were 48,519 votes for the Constitution, and 7,719 against it. For Governor, Throckmorton received 48,631 votes, and E. M. Pease, 12,051. For Lieutenant-Governor, Jones, 48,392; L. Lindsay, 8,714.

During Hamilton's administration, a tax of twelve and a half cents on the \$100 was collected. The receipts into the Treasury amounted to \$344,446; and the expenditures to \$233,203; leaving a handsome balance in the Treasury.

hereby declared ratified and a part of the Constitution. When any State, lately rebellious, ratifies the same and modifies its Constitution and laws in accordance therewith, and which shall secure equal impartial suffrage to all male citizens of the United States over twenty-one years of age, one year in State and three months preceding election in precinct, without regard to race or color, or previous condition of servitude, except as disfranchised by participation in the late rebellion, in elections for President, Members of Congress, Governor, State, county, district, city, parish and town elections, and shall constitutionally provide that all persons shall equally possess the right to pursue all lawful vocations, receive equal benefits of the public schools, equal protection and all rights of citizens in said State, and when said Constitution is submitted to the people of said State for ratification or rejection, and when the Constitution shall be ratified and submitted to Congress for examination and approval, shall be declared entitled to representation, and representatives and senators therefrom shall be admitted on taking the oath prescribed by law."

Shellabarger offered an amendment declaring that until the rebellious States are admitted to representation, any civil government should be deemed provisional, subject to the authority of the United States, to be abolished, modified or superseded at any time, and all elections under the civil government to be conducted by persons described in the fifth section, and no person should be qualified to hold office under the provisional government who was ineligible under the provisions of the third section of the constitutional amendment of last session. Adopted—yeas, 98, nays, 70.

This bill was vetoed by President Johnson, and passed over the veto; in the House by a vote of 135 to 47, and in the Senate by 28 to 10. Louisiana and Texas constituted the Fifth Military District. Under this bill, General Sheridan issued the following Order Number One, dated New Orleans, March 19th, 1867:

"1. The act of Congress entitled "An act to provide for the more efficient government of the rebel States," having been officially transmitted to the undersigned in an order from the Headquarters of the Army, which assigns him to the command of the Fifth Military District created by that act, consisting of the States of Louisiana and Texas, he hereby assumes command of the same

"2. According to the provisions of the 6th section of the act of Congress above cited, the present State and Municipal Governments in the States of





**CADDO CHIEF.**



Louisiana and Texas are hereby declared to be provisional only, and subject to be abolished, modified, controlled or superseded.

"3. No general removals from office will be made, unless the present incumbents fail to carry out the provisions of the law, or impede the reorganization, or, unless a delay in reorganizing should necessitate a change. Pending the reorganization, it is desirable and intended to create as little disturbance in the machinery of the various branches of the Provisional Governments as possible, consistent with the law of Congress and its successful execution, but this condition is dependent upon the disposition shown by the people, and upon the length of time required for reorganization.

"4. The States of Louisiana and Texas will retain their present military designations, viz: 'District of Louisiana,' and 'District of Texas.' The officers in command of each will continue to exercise all their powers and duties as heretofore, and will in addition carry out all the provisions of the law within their respective commands, except those which specifically require the action of the Military District Commander, and except in cases of removals from, and appointments to office."

Under this law a new registration of voters, including the newly enfranchised freedmen, became necessary. April 4th, General Griffin, in command at Galveston, addressed the following letter to Governor Throckmorton:

"SIR:—I have the honor to acknowledge the receipt of your communications of the 28th and 29th ultimo, and shall deem it a privilege to avail myself of your offer of assistance in registering the qualified voters of the State.

"I am exceedingly anxious not to go out of the State for registers; and am desirous of obtaining the names of all persons, irrespective of color, that are qualified to act in this capacity—men that can take the oath of office as prescribed by act of Congress of July 2d, 1862, a copy of which is herewith enclosed.

"If possible, please favor me with the probable black and white vote of each county.

"I am very desirous to have the law impartially executed, and no effort shall be spared, on my part, to bring out the full number of legal voters in this State.

"If the citizens accept the situation, come forward, and yield a cheerful obedience, there can be no trouble."

After receiving this communication, the Governor immediately sent circulars to the Chief Justices of the various counties, of which the following is a copy:

SIR:—In order to facilitate the labors of the military authorities in providing for the registration of the legal voters under the recent acts of Congress, known as the Military Bill and Supplement thereto, it is necessary that you furnish to this department, without delay, a list of all persons in your county, “irrespective of color,” who are competent and qualified to act as Registers, and who can take the accompanying oath. \*

It is desired by Major-General Griffin, commanding, that each county, if possible, furnish its own Registers. You will therefore spare no pains to furnish the list at the earliest moment. Send at once, those who come within your personal knowledge; afterwards, such others as you may ascertain, noting particularly their business qualifications so far as practicable. The best men, that is, those who are most competent, and who will act fairly and promptly, should be noted.

You are further requested to give the number and name of each voting precinct in your county.

The probable number of whites who are entitled to vote under the laws of the State. The per centage of those disqualified to vote can be better ascertained here.

The probable number of colored entitled to vote under the acts of Congress.

I can not too strongly urge upon you, and through you, upon the people of your county, the propriety and absolute necessity at this juncture in affairs, of contributing, to the fullest extent, every aid possible, in order that the military authorities may be enabled to execute the acts of Congress with promptness and fairness.

On the 15<sup>th</sup> of April General Griffin issued an order forbidding all civil elections in Texas; and soon afterward another ordering negroes to be placed on juries. Fifteen registration districts were formed, corresponding to the

\* IRON CLAD OATH.—I, ———, do solemnly swear that I have never voluntarily borne arms against the United States since I have been a citizen thereof; that I have voluntarily given no aid, countenance, counsel, or encouragement to persons engaged in armed hostility thereto; that I have neither sought nor accepted, nor attempted to exercise the functions of any office whatever, under any authority in hostility to the United States; that I have not yielded a voluntary support to any pretended government, authority, power or constitution within the United States, hostile or inimical thereto. And I do further swear that to the best of my knowledge and ability, I will support and defend the Constitution of the United States, against all enemies, foreign and domestic; that I will bear true faith and allegiance to the same; that I take this obligation freely, without any mental reservation or purpose of evasion; and that I will well and faithfully discharge the duties of the office on which I am about to enter, So help me God.

fifteen judicial districts created by the Legislature of 1866. While the work of registration was in progress, and the State Government endeavoring to harmonize itself with the views of the military commanders,\* on the 30th of July the following Special Order Number 105 was issued by General Sheridan. in New Orleans :

“ A careful consideration of the reports of Brevet Major-General C. Griffin, U. S. Army, shows that J. W. Throckmorton, Governor of Texas,

\* As a further evidence of the willingness of Governor Throckmorton in good faith to adjust himself and the State to the new Reconstruction acts of Congress, we add some extracts from a letter addressed to Dr. Ashbel Smith :

“ I feel an abiding confidence that the people of Texas will not falter, or prove indifferent. Every citizen of the State, however exalted or humble his sphere, should feel that his country demands of him prudent and efficient service, and that his services may be more potent for good now than at any future period. Every one who is entitled should register and vote at the proper time, and those who are disfranchised should encourage others that are not. The best and wisest men, who are allowed to sit, should be selected for members of the Convention. No impediment should be thrown in the way of the newly-enfranchised class, but every reasonable means and encouragement should be extended to them in order that they may enjoy without hindrance their new privileges.

“ They are in no wise responsible for the present state of things, and should this extraordinary enlargement of the right of suffrage tend to the destruction of republican institutions, or to the demoralization and ruin of the blacks, they are not responsible. Hereafter they are to be, to the people of the South, an element of political power and strength, if wisely and properly treated.

“ Therefore it is to be earnestly desired that all proper means should be used to direct these-people to an intelligent and wise use of the high privilege conferred.

“ I am in correspondence with the military authorities upon the subject of inaugurating the details of reorganization, and have tendered the co-operation of the civil authorities of the State in the execution of the law.

“ I have invited attention to the necessity of having defined and promulgated the class of persons heretofore holding office who are excluded—that is to what extent the terms “ Executive and Judicial officers” goes, etc. I shall make use of every means to aid those who are charged with the execution of the law, and at the same time endeavor to possess myself of information necessary to enable the people of the State to act intelligently. I have an assurance from Major General Griffin that he will spare no pains to have a full and complete registry of all the legal voters in the State.

“ Very respectfully, your obedient servant,

J. W. THROCKMORTON.”

is an impediment to the reconstruction of that State, under the law. He is therefore removed from that office. E. M. Pease is hereby appointed Governor of Texas in place of J. W. Throckmorton, removed. He will be obeyed and respected accordingly."\*

E. M. Pease became Governor, by military appointment, July 30th, 1867. This was a period of bitter partizanship. Under the instructions, marked secret and sent by General Griffin to the different boards of registration, a very rigid rule was adopted, by which hundreds of men who believed themselves entitled to register were rejected. In the meantime, General Sheridan had been removed from the command of the Fifth military district, and General Hancock appointed in his place. The views of the latter differed radically from those of his predecessor. Hancock was opposed to the trial of civilians by the military, and declined to interfere, even at the request of Governor Pease.†

\*Executive Officers: John A. Green, Secretary of State; William M. Walton, Attorney-General; W. L. Robards, Comptroller; M. H. Royston, Treasurer; Stephen Crosby, Land Commissioner; Davis Guerly, Adjutant-General.

Justices of Supreme Court: George F. Moore, Chief Justice; R. Coke, S. P. Donley, A. H. Willie, and George W. Smith, Associates. Judges Watrous, and Duval, Judges of the United States District Court.

David G. Burnet and Oran M. Roberts were elected Senators; and Geo. W. Chilton, B. H. Epperson, A. M. Branch, and C. C. Herbert were elected to the United States House of Representatives, but were not admitted to their seats.

† A murder had been committed in Uvalde county. Three men were in confinement for the crime. Judge Noonan wrote a letter to Governor Pease in which he asked: "Would it not be well to try them by military commission?" This was transmitted to General Hancock, and answered by Colonel W. C. Mitchell, Secretary of Civil Affairs, by order of the Commanding General. We copy a few paragraphs:

"In his view it is of evil example, and full of danger to the cause of freedom and good government, that the exercise of the military power, through military tribunals created for the trial of offenders against the civil law, should ever be permitted, when the ordinary powers of the existing State Governments are ample for the punishment of offenders, if those charged with the administration of the laws are faithful in the discharge of their duties.

"If the means at the disposal of the State authorities are inefficient to

When General Hancock was furnished with the "secret" instructions given by General Griffin to the registrars, he became satisfied that many entitled to registration had been refused; and on the 11th of January, 1868, he issued a counter "order;" from which we make an extract:

"In consequence of this, and as the time for the revision of the registration in the State of Texas is now at hand, and the duty of making the revision will, it is probable, in a great degree, be performed by persons who are members of the Boards of Registration, to which the "memoranda" in question were distributed for their guidance, the Major General commanding deems it of importance that the members of the Board of Registration, and the people at large, should be informed that the "memoranda" before referred to, distributed from the headquarters of this military district, are null and of no effect, and are not now to be regarded by the Boards of Registration in making their decisions; and that the members of the Boards are to look to the laws, and to the laws alone, for the rules which are to govern them in the discharge of the delicate and important duties imposed upon them.

"For this purpose they will be furnished with copies of the Acts of Congress relating to this subject, and of the amendment (known as Article XIV.) to the Constitution of the United States.

"In case of questions arising as to the right of any individual to be registered, the person deeming himself aggrieved is entitled to his appeal from

---

secure the confinement of the persons named in the communication of the Governor of the State of Texas to the General commanding there, until they can be legally tried, on the fact being made known to him, the commander of the district will supply the means to retain them in confinement; and the commanding officer of the troops in Texas is so authorized to act. If there are any reasons in existence which justify an apprehension that the prisoners cannot be fairly tried in that county, let the proper civil officers have the *venue* changed for the trial, as provided for by the laws of Texas.

"In the opinion of the Commander of the Fifth Military District, the existing Government of the State of Texas possesses all the powers necessary for the proper and prompt trial of the prisoners in question, in due course of law.

"If these powers are not exercised for that purpose, the failure to exercise them can be attributed only to the indolence or culpable inefficiency of the officers now charged with the execution and enforcement of the laws under the authority of the State Government; and if there is such a failure, in the instance mentioned, on the part of those officers, to execute the laws, it will then become the duty of the Commander to remove the officers who fail to discharge the duties imposed on them, and to replace them with others who will discharge them."

the decision of the Board, and the Boards are directed to make a full statement of the facts in such cases, and to forward the same to these headquarters without unnecessary delay.

“ By command of MAJOR GENERAL HANCOCK.

“ GEORGE L. HARTSUFF, *Assistant Adjutant General.*”

The want of harmony between Congress and the President exhibited itself in frequent changes of commanders in the South. General Sheridan represented the Congressional element, and was appointed by Mr. Stanton, Secretary of War. General Hancock, on the contrary, represented the views of President Johnson. Soon after the publication of Hancock's letter to Governor Pease, and the “order” repudiating the instructions of General Griffin, he was removed, and General J. J. Reynolds appointed to the Fifth Military District, which was soon restricted to Texas, Louisiana having been reconstructed, and her Representatives admitted to their seats in Congress. Austin became the headquarters of the District.

Under the new regulations, every one who expected to vote was required to register, and present his certificate of registration at the polls. There were registered 56,678 white, and 47,581 colored voters. It is supposed that 25,000 whites were not registered, either through indifference, or because they were disfranchised. In order to secure a large vote, the law required that a majority of the registered voters should vote at the election; but did not require that a majority of the whole should favor the calling of a Convention. But one place of voting was designated in each county; and that at the county seat. The election occupied four days—February 10th–14th. Forty-four thousand, six hundred and eighty-nine votes were cast for the Convention, and 11,440 against it.

The Convention met in Austin; June 1st, 1866, and organized by electing Edmund J. Davis, President, and W. V. Tunstall, Secretary. When officially informed of the organization, Governor Pease sent a communication, from which the following paragraphs are extracted.



"It is not my province to make recommendations for your action; but I trust that it will not be considered improper for me to suggest that, in the Constitution you are about to form, it is expected—

"That you will declare that the pretended act of secession, and all laws that have been enacted in aid of the late rebellion, or repugnant to the Constitution and laws of the United States, are and were null and void from their inception; and that you will at once repeal all laws that make any discrimination against persons on account of their color, race or previous condition;

"That you will provide for ascertaining and paying all debts that were owing by the State at the commencement of the rebellion, and prohibit the payment of any debts incurred in aid of the rebellion, or for the support of the rebel government during its progress;

"That you will secure equal civil and political rights to every inhabitant of the State, who has not forfeited these rights by participation in the late rebellion, or by conviction for crime;

"That you will temporarily disfranchise a number of those who participated in the rebellion, sufficient to place the political power of the State in the hands of those who are loyal to the United States Government;

"That you will make a liberal provision, by taxation upon property, for the immediate establishment of Free Public Schools for the education of every child in the State;

"That you will secure to every citizen of the State who has not heretofore received it, a reasonable amount of land out of the public domain for a homestead;

"That you will adopt efficient measures to encourage immigration to our State from foreign countries; and to give aid and encouragement to such works of internal improvement as the necessities of our people require.

"All these measures are called for by the public sentiment of our loyal citizens, and are necessary, I think, to secure the future happiness and prosperity of all."

As the Convention progressed with its work it soon became manifest that its members, though acknowledged loyal Republicans, held sentiments widely differing from each other, on the questions deemed vital. In the summer of 1867, a few weeks before General Griffin died (with yellow fever) a petition was drawn up by Mr. William Alexander, and signed by a number of other gentlemen, requesting the General to "declare by military order, all pretended legislation done in Texas, dating from and after February 1st, 1861 (the date of the so-called ordinance of secession), to be, what the law holds it to be,—null and void from the beginning," *i. e.*, *ab initio*. Because Governor Pease, in a

proclamation, recognized the Constitution and laws of 1866, (subject to certain exceptions), as "rules for the government of the people of Texas, and the officers of the civil government," Mr. Alexander resigned the office of Attorney General, to which he had been appointed. Those members of the Convention who, with Mr. Alexander, believed that all laws and legislative enactments since the passage of the ordinance of secession were null and void, were called *Ab Initios*.

On the 20th of August, the Convention passed a bill appropriating \$25,000 additional to defray its expenses. It was sent to General Reynolds for his approval. To this, the General replied on the 24th, as follows :

"Hon. E. J. DAVIS, *President Constitutional Convention* :

"SIR.—I have the honor to acknowledge the receipt of a resolution of the Convention, passed on the 20th instant, asking my approval of an additional appropriation of twenty-five thousand dollars to defray expenses.

"The Convention has been in session about eighty-five days, and has expended an appropriation of one hundred thousand dollars.

"The present state of the treasury, the rate at which money is coming in, and the prospective current wants of the State, forbid the appropriation of any more money from the treasury for the expenses of the Constitutional Convention.

"The resolution is respectfully returned without approval."

Comparatively little progress had been made towards forming a Constitution, but as no more money could be drawn from the treasury to defray expenses, the Convention adjourned on the 31st of August, to meet again on the 7th of December.

On reassembling in December, the contests between the two wings of the Republican party in the body became more marked and irreconcilable. On the question of suffrage, one party wished to disfranchise a large number who had been instrumental in passing the ordinance of secession and sustaining the Confederate cause, while the more liberal wished all the *bona fide* citizens of the State enfranchised. That party finally prevailed. Instead of the disfranchising



**PLACIDO, CHIEF OF THE TONKAWAS.**



report of the committee, a liberal substitute, offered by ex-Governor Hamilton, was adopted.\*

\* We copy the section and the vote on the substitute:

"SECTION 1. Every male citizen of the United States of the age of twenty-one years and upward, not laboring under the disabilities named in this Constitution, without distinction of race, color, or former condition, who shall be a resident of this State at the time of the adoption of this Constitution, or who shall theretofore reside in this State one year, and in the county in which he offers to vote sixty days next preceding any election, shall be entitled to vote for all officers that are now or that hereafter may be elected by the people, and upon all questions submitted to the electors on any election;

"Provided, that no person shall be allowed to vote or hold office who is now or hereafter may be disqualified therefrom by the Constitution of the United States, until such disqualification shall be removed by the Congress of the United States.

"Provided further, that no person, while kept in any asylum, or confined in prison, or, who has been convicted of felony, or who is of unsound mind, shall be allowed to vote or hold office."

Yeas—Messrs. Armstrong of Lamar, Armstrong of Jasper, Bell, Beltinger, Bryant of Grayson, Buffington, Burnett, Carter, Cole, Curtis, Evans of Titus, Fleming, Gaston, Glenn, Gray, Hamilton of Travis, Harris, Harn, Kealy, Keigwin, Kirk, Leib, McCormick, McWashington, Morse, Mundine, Phillips of San Augustine, Posey, Rogers, Scott, Schutze, Sorrelle, Stockbridge, Watrous, Williams, Wilson of Brazoria, Wright—37.

Nays—Messrs. President, Board, Butler, Degener, Downing, Fayle, Flanigan, Hamilton of Bastrop, Hunt, Johnson, Jordan, Keuchler, Lippard, Long, Mackey, Mills, Mullens, Newcomb, Patton, Phillips of Wharton, Ruby, Slaughter, Smith, Thomas, Varnell, Wilson of Milam—26.

This bill passed on the 3d of February. On the 4th, the *ab initio* members of the Convention entered the following protest. It was signed by twenty-two members; some objecting to some of the statements. Mr. Davis, above his signature, writes: "I join in the above protest, except only that part which charges deception and intimidation on the part of the members."

"Hon. E. J. DAVIS, *President of the Convention*:

"SIR:—We, the undersigned, delegates to the Constitutional Convention of the State of Texas, do hereby express disapproval of the proposed Constitution adopted by a majority of this Convention.

"We object to it, because it is based upon the unwarranted assumption that the Constitution of the United States, with the treaties and laws made in pursuance thereof, and the accepted Constitution of the State of Texas (of 1845), have not been continuously the supreme law of the land. Believing as we do, that all pretended laws and judicial decisions made within the National limits, and not authorized by and subordinate to the Govern-

The Constitution was now nearly completed, and many of the members left for home. At the hour of meeting February 6th, no quorum was present. General Canby had been in Texas since December 20th. President Davis read to the members present a letter from Gen. Canby, directing the records of the Convention to be turned over to the custody of the assistant Adjutant-General of the district. Whereupon Mr. Davis directed the Secretary to turn over the Constitution adopted by this Convention, and all ordinances, declarations and resolutions adopted by the same, and books and records, to the Adjutant-General, as fast as the same could be arranged, written out and enrolled; after which he declared the Reconstruction Convention adjourned.

The Convention had ordered a general election in July, but President Grant had it deferred until the 30th of November and three following days.

On the 30th of September, Governor Pease tendered his resignation of the executive office, and for three months an

ment of the United States, were from the beginning and must remain null and void, and the undersigned will never compromise the principle for any supposed policy.

“ We do most earnestly and solemnly protest against that provision in the proposed constitution which extends the right of suffrage to all those who voluntarily became the public enemy of the United States, feeling assured that it was the aim of Congress to enable the loyal people of the State of Texas, without regard to any distinction of race or color, to reorganize and maintain a government in the place of that overthrown by the rebellion, and we cannot forbear to express the conviction that the adoption by the majority of the Convention of the provision in regard to suffrage was obtained by virtue of a premeditated and deliberate deception, and by methods of intimidation, which deserve the greatest censure. The majority of the Convention have deliberately removed from the Constitution every safeguard for the protection of the loyal voter, white and black. They have stricken from that instrument the whole system of registry; they have repudiated the oath of loyalty contained in the reconstruction laws; they have spurned the test of equal civil and political rights, and we do most solemnly call upon the registered voters of Texas to vindicate the National honor, and the cause of right and justice, by their votes.”

Adjutant in charge of civil affairs administered the executive department of the State of Texas.\*

\* Executive officers during Pease's Administration: W. C. Phillips, Secretary of State; Wm. Alexander and E. B. Turner, Attorneys General; M. C. Hamilton, Comptroller; John T. Allen, Treasurer; Joseph Spence, Land Commissioner; A. Morrill, Chief Justice; C. Colwell, A. J. Hamilton, A. H. Latimer, and L. Lindsay, Associates. Mr. Latimer having resigned, M. B. Walker was appointed in his place.

Pease had served two terms as Governor of Texas, in a period of unexampled peace and prosperity; and he felt the humiliation of being trammelled and controlled by military commanders. In his message to the Convention he said: "The powers vested in the officers of the Provisional Government are exercised in subordination to the Commander of the Fifth Military District; and without his co-operation and assistance, all their efforts to execute the laws and preserve the public peace can avail but little. I regret to say that, in some instances, this co-operation and assistance have been withheld, and the acts of the provisional officers have been misrepresented and their recommendations disregarded. A knowledge of these facts has so emboldened and encouraged those who are disposed to disregard the laws that, in many instances, sheriffs have reported to this office that they were unable to obtain the aid of citizens to make arrests, because they feared personal violence from the parties and their friends."

The situation of Pease was very much like that of Murrah, the last Governor under Confederate rule. Murrah was under, first, Magruder and then Walker. Pease was under Sheridan, Griffin, Hancock, Reynolds and Canby. This species of civic-military rule was not satisfactory. In Murrah's message to the Legislature, he said: "Imperative duty requires of me to call your attention to the fearful demoralization and crimes prevailing throughout the State. In some sections society is almost disorganized—the voice of the law is hushed and its authority seldom asserted. It is a dead letter—an unhonored thing upon the unread pages of the statutes. Murder, robbery, theft, outrages of every kind against property—against human life—against everything sacred to a civilized people—are frequent and general. Whole communities are under a reign of terror, and they utter their dreadful apprehensions, and their agonizing cries of distress in vain. The rule of the mob—the bandit—of unbridled passions—rides over the solemn ordinances of the government. Foul crime is committed, and the criminal, steeped in guilt and branded by his own dark deeds with eternal infamy goes unwhipped of justice. Not even a warrant is issued for him—no effort is made by the sworn officers of the law, or by the community, to bring him to punishment. Too often the deed is excused—the community is divided in opinion as to the guilt, and the criminal is screened from justice—unless his offending chances to touch some peculiar influence, or prevailing notions—and then, without the forms of law, he is hung by a mob."

Under the direction of General Reynolds, who had been re-appointed to the command of the Fifth Military District, the general election was held November 30th–December 3d, 1869. \*

In Pease's message to the Convention, he complains as follows: "It is not the part of wisdom to disguise from ourselves the true situation of affairs. Crime was never as prevalent in Texas as it is at this time. Since the first of December last, authentic information has been received at this office of *two hundred and six (206) homicides*, committed in only sixty-seven (67) of the one hundred and twenty-seven organized counties of the State, while but a small number of the perpetrators have been arrested and punished by the process of the law. This state of things has become so alarming that the people, in several instances, have taken the law into their own hands, and have executed the murderers without a trial—a proceeding which is always dangerous and greatly to be reprobated."

\* The vote for the constitution was 54,477; against it, 4,655. For Governor: E. J. Davis, 39,901; A. J. Hamilton, 39,092; Hamilton Stuart, 380. For Lieutenant-Governor; J. W. Flanagan, 35,401; Wells Thompson, 19,583; Boulds Baker, 10,327; A. H. Latimer, 6,801. No elections were held in the counties of Milam and Navarro. The reason assigned by the Commander was that they were in such a disturbed condition that a peaceful election could not be held. Though General Davis had signed the "protest" exhorting the loyal voters to defeat the proposed Constitution, when he entered the canvass for Governor he advocated its adoption, so that but few votes were finally cast against it. Total registered voters in 1869, 135,553. Whites, 78,648; colored, 56,905.

Soon after ascertaining the result of the election, the following special order appeared:

[*Extract.*]

AUSTIN, TEXAS, January 8, 1870.

Special Orders—No. 6.

I. The following appointments to civil office are hereby made, the persons appointed having been elected to the positions designated: Edmund J. Davis, to be Governor; J. W. Flanagan, to be Lieutenant Governor; A. Bledsoe, to be Comptroller; G. W. Honey, to be Treasurer; Jacob Kuechler to be Commissioner of General Land Office.

The present incumbents will continue to discharge the duties of their respective offices until their successors appear in person and qualify.

\* \* \* \* \*

By Command of

BREVET MAJOR GENERAL REYNOLDS.

H. CLAY WOOD, *Assistant Adjutant General.*

On the 11th of January another order was published, convening the Legislature, February 5th, 1870.



## CHAPTER V.

**DAVIS' ADMINISTRATION—TEXAS DELEGATES ADMITTED TO THEIR SEATS IN CONGRESS—MARTIAL LAW AGAIN—STATE POLICE—FRONTIER PROTECTION—THREATENED COLLISION AT CLOSE OF HIS ADMINISTRATION—HAPPILY AVERTED—COKE'S ADMINISTRATION—COUNTRY PROSPEROUS—CONSTITUTIONAL CONVENTION—HUBBARD'S ADMINISTRATION—LAWLESSNESS SUPPRESSED.**

**M**R. DAVIS assumed the office of Governor, January 18th, 1870. The Legislature met, as called by the Commanding General; ratified the new amendments to the Constitution of the United States; elected United States Senators, and adjourned.

March 30th, the President signed the bill accepting the Constitution of Texas, and her Representatives and Senators were admitted to their seats. On the 2d of April, Davis issued a proclamation announcing the restoration of Texas to her place in the Union. This he signed as Governor of Texas. Previous to this he had signed himself Provisional Governor. April 16th, General Reynolds, by special order, relinquished all control over the civil affairs of the State. The Legislature re-assembled April 26th; and on the 28th, the Governor and Lieutenant-Governor were formally inaugurated.\*

The Legislature, which met April 26th, continued in session until the 15th of August. This was a called session. Among the more important acts may be mentioned the one for organizing the military forces of the State. These

\*Classed politically, the Legislature, which had been elected at the same time with the Governor, stood, in the Senate, 17 Republicans, (two of them colored), 7 Conservatives, and 6 Democrats. In the House, 50 Republicans, (8 colored), 19 Conservatives, and 21 Democrats.

were divided into two classes: the State Guard, composed of volunteer companies; and the Reserve Military, which included all persons subject to military duty, not enrolled in volunteer companies. Any one might avoid military duty by paying fifteen dollars per year. All the troops were under the control of the Governor. The most important provision in the militia bill read as follows: "He shall also have power to declare martial law in any county or counties, and suspend the laws therein, whenever in his opinion the enforcement of the law of this State is obstructed; and he shall call out such part of the State Guard or Reserve Military as he may deem necessary. The expenses of maintaining such a force to be assessed upon the people of the county or counties where the laws are suspended, at the discretion of the Governor, whose duty it shall be to provide for the trial and punishment of offenders by court martial and military commissions."

Another bill authorized the Governor to organize a force of twenty companies for the protection of the frontier, and to sell the bonds of the State for their support. Another established a State police, in connection with the militia system, to be under the command of the Adjutant General,—to consist of about 260 officers and men.

A bill was also passed, requiring voters to register, and one laying down stringent rules for conducting elections. Thirty-five judicial districts were created, and the probate business transferred from the county to the district courts. Another bill created a system of free public schools throughout the State. An immense number of general and special laws were passed. We mention one more,—that which permitted those who had no homes, to locate upon the public domain. The law gave to each head of a family 160 acres, and to each single person eighty acres, but the land must be occupied as a homestead.

For nearly ten years Texas had been under a mixed government, partly civil, and partly military—the military

element predominating. It was hardly to be expected that the people would, at once, return to the pacific, law-abiding condition of society at the breaking out of the war. Governor Davis had been a General in the Federal army—most of the people of Texas had been enlisted on the other side. The party spirit which had prevailed could not at once give place to mutual confidence. Time alone could modify the asperities engendered by the war.

The Conservative and Democratic parties protested against some of the provisions of the militia bill, especially that which empowered the Governor to proclaim martial law; and the one for the employment of State police. Many of those enlisted in the State police were colored; some of the officers were men objectionable on many grounds. Collisions occasionally occurred.\*

Among the more important acts of the Legislature which re-assembled in January, 1871, was one authorizing counties

\*A serious difficulty occurred in Huntsville, early in January, 1871. A negro named Sam. Jenkins, an important witness in a criminal case, was killed. Certain parties implicated in the killing were arrested by a party of State police, in charge of Captain M'Annelly. After being arrested they were aided by friends to escape, and in the melee Captain M. was wounded. After this, Governor Davis—January 20th—proclaimed martial law in Walker county, and a Provost Marshal was appointed, and a military company from an adjoining county summoned to enforce the law. A military commission was convened, and Nat. Outlaw, one of the parties charged with the murder of the negro, was convicted and sent to the Penitentiary for five years. Some other parties were fined. On reviewing the testimony, the Governor released Outlaw, and restored the supremacy of civil law.

Another difficulty took place at Groesbeck. On the last day of September, 1871, D. C. Applewhite was killed in the streets, by Mitch. Cotton and three colored policemen. Applewhite was charged with carrying concealed weapons. Attempts were made to arrest the men who did the killing, when a serious disturbance arose, in which the whites were arrayed on one side and the colored people on the other. On the 10th of October, Governor Davis proclaimed martial law in Limestone and Freestone counties. This order was revoked November 11th; but the people were assessed for a considerable sum to defray expenses. In one other instance, (in Hill county), martial law was for a short time enforced.

and corporations, by popular vote, to grant subsidies to railroads.\*

The Legislature met January 14th, 1873. Mr. Webster Flanagan, who had been elected President of the Senate at the previous session, resigned, and his place was filled by Mr. E. B. Pickett, a Democrat. The tone of the Governor's message was conciliatory, and all parties manifested a disposition to repeal obnoxious laws, reduce public expenses and legislate for the benefit of the State. The Militia bill was so modified as to take from the Governor the authority to declare martial law; the State police was disbanded, and the election law and the school law materially changed. Precinct elections were restored, and only one day set apart for elections, instead of four.

At the election held in December, 1873, the Democrats elected all the State officers, the Congressmen from all the districts, and a majority of both branches of the Legislature.

After the election, an *ex parte* case, brought before the Supreme Court on a writ of *habeas corpus*, brought up the constitutionality of the election law. The Court decided the law unconstitutional, and Governor Davis issued a proclamation, January 12th, (the day before that fixed for the meeting of the Legislature) prohibiting that body from assembling. The two Houses, notwithstanding the inhibition, met in their respective chambers and organized. The Governor declined to receive any communication from them. On the night of the 13th, great apprehensions were entertained of a conflict between the two parties. The second

\* Under the Constitution the Governor continued in office four years. At the election in the fall of 1872, the Democrats elected the six Congressmen to which the State was entitled, and a majority in both branches of the State Legislature. At this election a vote was taken to fix permanently the State capital. Austin received 63,297 out of the 111,362 votes cast. For President, Greeley received 66,455 votes, and Grant 47,226. In 1868, by a special act of Congress, Texas was prohibited from voting in the Presidential election.



**EDWARD J. DAVIS.**

;



story of the Capitol building was in possession of the two Houses, guarded by a military company as a special police to assist the sergeant-at-arms, while the lower story was in possession of the executive officers, guarded by a company of colored soldiers, under the command of the Adjutant-General. President Grant was appealed to, but declined to interfere. Under a protest, the Secretary of State permitted a Committee of the Legislature to take possession of the election returns. The vote was counted, and Messrs. Coke and Hubbard duly installed in their respective offices.\*

\* Soon after the meeting of the Legislature, Mr. J. W. Flanagan, Lieutenant-Governor, was elected to the United States Senate; Donald Campbell was elected President of the Senate. Mr. Campbell died in 1871, and Webster Flanagan was elected in his place. Mr. F. resigned in 1873, and E. B. Pickett was elected. J. P. Newcomb was Secretary of State during Davis' administration; Wm. Alexander, Attorney-General; A. Bledsoe, Comptroller; G. W. Honey, Treasurer; J. Kuechler, Land Commissioner; James Davidson and Frank L. Britton, Adjutants General.

Under the Constitution of 1869, Justices of the Supreme Court were nominated by the Governor, and confirmed by the Senate. They held their office nine years, and the one going out first was *ex officio* Chief Justice. Courts were held only at the State capital. L. D. Evans was Chief Justice, and M. B. Walker and Wesley Ogden, Associates. In 1873, Justice Evans' time having expired, J. D. M'Ado was appointed in his place.

An executive officer chosen by a very close vote, or by a minority of the electors, labors under a great disadvantage. There is a magic power in numbers; and an officer who goes in by an overwhelming majority feels that he has good backing. The vote between Davis and Hamilton was very close. Indeed, General Hamilton thought that, had all the counties voted, and their votes been received, he would have been the successful candidate. Governor Davis had labored under another disadvantage. A considerable number of his own political party opposed some of the leading measures of his administration. He was thus without the moral support of two ex-Governors; three or four ex-Justices of the Supreme Court, and other leading and influential Republicans in all parts of the State. Notwithstanding this opposition, and the Indian depredations on the frontier, and the lawless acts which disturbed society in various parts of the State, the period in which he was Governor was one of great prosperity. The aggregate wealth of the State increased from \$170,473,778, in 1870, to \$223,410,920, in 1873. Population increased fifty or sixty per cent. At the commencement of 1871 there were in operation in the State 511 miles of railroad. At the close of 1872 there 1,078 miles; showing an increase of more than one hundred per cent. in two years.

It was late at night, January 13th, 1874, when Richard Coke and Richard B. Hubbard were inaugurated to their respective offices. There was still a feverish excitement in the public mind. Fears were entertained that Governor Davis might yet be sustained in his office by the interposition of President Grant, or that some rash act might precipitate a collision between the different bands of armed men in the city. Fortunately no blood was shed, and on the 19th, though Governor Davis had not formally surrendered the executive office, he had vacated it, and Governor Coke took undisputed possession. Governor Coke had been elected by a majority of about 40,000. All the Congressmen and a majority of the members of the Legislature then in session belonged to the Democratic party; and the Supreme Court was at once reorganized under an amendment to the Constitution, increasing the number of Judges to five. Harmony was thus introduced into all departments of the State Government. Governor Coke, in his message, took a very hopeful view of our State affairs, and the people generally indulged in glowing anticipations of future prosperity. The opening of railroad communication with St. Louis, the abundant crops and inflowing tide of immigration, stimulated enterprise and kept alive the hopes of our people. In the period of financial distress which has befallen the country since that period, Texas has suffered less than any other State of the American Union.

Considerable dissatisfaction was expressed with the Con-

We copy one paragraph from the message of the Governor to the Legislature, in January, 1873: "When I commenced the performance of the duties of Governor, I proposed to myself these main purposes: On the one hand to restrain that tendency to extravagant squandering of public money, and running into debt, which has disgraced many of the governments and legislatures of the (so-called) reconstructed States—a tendency, however, that was to be expected of that demoralization which the tremendous convulsion of the war caused to permeate, more or less, all parties and classes in those States. On the other hand, to restrain that lawlessness which always unfavorably distinguished our people, but had become shockingly intensified by the habits taught our young men in military camps."



stitution formed under the auspices of General Reynolds ; and at the second session of the fourteenth Legislature, held in March, 1875, provision was made for calling a Constitutional Convention. The Convention met on the 6th of September, and organized by electing E. B. Pickett President, and Wm. Leigh Chalmers Secretary. Having completed its work, it adjourned on the 24th of November.\*

The fifteenth Legislature met on the 12th of April, 1876, and on the 25th, Messrs. Coke and Hubbard were reinaugurated to their respective offices. On the 5th of May, Governor Coke was elected to the United States Senate; but he continued to exercise the functions of Governor until the 1st of December.

On the first of December, 1876, Richard B. Hubbard, the Lieutenant-Governor, became Governor by the resignation of Governor Coke.†

\* At the election, August 2d, 69,583 votes were cast for the Convention, and 30,549 against it. At the election, February 15th, 1876, 136,606 votes were cast for the Constitution, and 56,652 against it. The regular Democratic State ticket was elected. For Governor, Richard Coke received 150,418, and William Chambers 47,719 votes.

Executive Officers: Wells Thompson, President of the Senate; A. W. Deberry, Secretary of State; H. H. Boone, Attorney-General; William Steele, Adjutant-General; Stephen H. Darden, Comptroller; A. J. Dorn, Treasurer; J. J. Groos, Land Commissioner.

Thomas H. Duval, Judge of the United States Court, Western District; and since 1872, Amos Morrill, of the Eastern District.

By an amendment to the Constitution, in 1874, the Supreme Court was composed of one Chief Justice and four Associates: O. M. Roberts, Chief Justice; W. P. Ballinger, George F. Moore, Reuben A. Rives, and Thomas J. Devine, Associates. Vacancies having occurred, P. W. Gray and John Ireland were appointed Associate Justices.

A new organization took place under the Constitution of 1875: O. M. Roberts, Chief Justice; George F. Moore and Robert S. Gould, Associate Justices. By the Constitution, a Court of Appeals was created; and John P. White, C. M. Winkler and M. D. Ector, appointed Judges.

† A good many topics of interest, connected with the administrations of Coke and Hubbard, are treated under special heads—as railroads, penitentiary, public debt, &c., &c.

Executive Officers: Wells Thompson, Lieutenant-Governor; Isham G.

Searcy, Secretary of State; A. J. Dorn, Treasurer; S. H. Darden, Comptroller; J. J. Groos, and W. C. Walsh, Land Commissioners; William Steele, Adjutant-General; H. H. Boone, Attorney-General; V. O. King, Commissioner of Insurance, Statistics and History.

U. S. Senators: M. C. Hamilton, 1870-1878—succeeded by Richard Coke. J. W. Flanagan, 1870-1874—succeeded by S. B. Maxey. Members of the House: The State was entitled to four members in 1870, and they were George W. Whitmore, John C. Connor, William T. Clark, and Edward Dégner. In 1871-72: W. S. Herndon, D. C. Giddings, (two terms), and W. P. McLean. In 1873, after the new apportionment, the State was entitled to two additional; they were R. Q. Mills and Asa C. Willie, John Hancock, (from 1871 to 1876); D. C. Giddings, (1877-78); John H. Reagan, (1874-78); David B. Culbertson, (1874-78); J. W. Throckmorton, (1874-78); Roger Q. Mills, (1873-78); G. Schleicher, (1874-78).

**LAWLESSNESS.**—At the close of the Pease administration, mention was made of the prevalence of lawlessness and crime. It was hoped that after the restoration of civil law there would be an abatement of this lawless spirit. But unfortunately there was not. Under the Davis administration various excuses were offered for its continuance. Party spirit ran high. The partizans of Mr. Davis charged that the disorders of society were chargeable to the war spirit still rampant among their political opponents; while the Democrats charged that these disorders were greatly aggravated by the State police. It is not possible, at this time, to fix the blame upon the guilty parties; nor is it necessary. It was fondly hoped that with the inauguration of Governor Coke, who was elected by such an overwhelming majority, the civil law would reassert itself, and arrest the spirit of insubordination. But it did not. On the 13th of June, Governor Coke issued a proclamation denouncing the severest penalties of the law against transgressors, and exhorting civil officers to do their duty in the premises. This had some effect, as the Governor says, in his message to the ensuing Legislature, that in one year 853 convicts were sent to the penitentiary; and in about one-third of the State from which partial reports had been received, out of 1,561 trials for criminal offences, there resulted 981 convictions. There were, however, instances in which the civil law was still powerless; and in July, 1876, the Governor sent Captain L. H. M'Annelly, from Washington county, with fifty men to preserve the peace in DeWitt county. Peace was restored there; but the presence of Captain M'Annelly's company was demanded in other places, and up to the present time it has been found necessary to keep a few men in the Governor's employ to enforce civil law. During the summer of 1876, the worst band of robbers that ever infested our State was broken up. The time has come when all good, law-abiding citizens, of all parties and nationalities, appear to be willing to unite in sustaining the officers of the law, and bringing criminals to justice. The most aggravated case of lawlessness during Governor Hubbard's administration occurred in El Paso county, when a mob displaced the civil officers and committed a number of murders. Many land-forgers have been sentenced to the Penitentiary; and the bands engaged in robbing stages and railroad trains, it is believed, have been broken up.

Officers of the Legislature since secession: Of the Senate—President elect, 11th Legislature, R. H. Guinn; 12th, Don Campbell, Webster Flanagan; 13th, E. B. Pickett; 14th, John Ireland; 15th, Wells Thompson. Secretaries: 10th, P. De Cordova; 11th, William Leigh Chalmers; 12th, C. M. Campbell, and C. C. Allen; 13th, William Leigh Chalmers; 14th, J. F. Beall; 15th, William Leigh Chalmers. Officers of the House—Speakers: 9th session, C. M. Buckley; 10th, M. D. K. Taylor; 11th, N. M. Burford; 12th, Ira H. Evans; 13th, M. D. K. Taylor; 14th, Guy M. Bryan; 15th, T. R. Bonner. Chief Clerks: 9th Legislature, William Leigh Chalmers; 10th, J. H. Herndon; 11th, J. V. Hutchins; 12th, John G. Boyle; 13th, 14th, and 15th, W. C. Walsh.

At the election held November 5th, 1878, the candidates nominated by the State Democratic Convention, which met in Austin July 16th, were elected, receiving about two-thirds of the votes cast. The other third was divided between the candidates of the Greenback and the Republican parties. The following are the officers elected:

O. M. Roberts, Governor; Joseph D. Sayers, Lieutenant-Governor; S. H. Darden, Comptroller; F. R. Lubbock, Treasurer; W. C. Walsh, Land Commissioner. George McCormick, Attorney-General; George F. Moore, Chief Justice; M. H. Bonner, Associate Justice.

The Congressmen elect are: John H. Reagan, (Dem.), First District; D. C. Culberson, (Dem.), Second District; Olin Wellborn, (Dem.) Third District; R. Q. Mills, (Dem.), Fourth District; George W. Jones, (Ind.), Fifth District; G. Schleicher, (Dem.), Sixth District, died in Washington.



PART VII.



TEXAS INDIANS.





**COMANCHE WARRIOR.**





## CHAPTER I.

**THREE GENERAL CLASSES OF INDIANS—1, PUEBLAS—2, INDIANS THAT CULTIVATE THE SOIL—NASSONITES, CENNIS, CADDOS, WACOS, INTRUSIVE TRIBES—3, NOMADIC, OR MIGRATORY INDIANS, THAT LIVE BY HUNTING: COMANCHES, APACHES, LIPANS, ETC., ETC**

**W**E propose in this chapter to give a brief sketch of the Indians of our State. This does not include a much earlier race of aborigines—the Mound-Builders, whose monuments of earth-works are found on our coast as far as the Nueces river. Nor do we propose to enter the domain of the antiquary, to inquire whence our Indians came, by what route, and who were their ancestors or their kinsmen.

In the popular mind, there are erroneous impressions of our Indian races. It is generally supposed that Indians are all very much alike. On the contrary, they differ as widely in manners, in language, in religion, and in political institutions, as the peoples now inhabiting this continent—peoples who have migrated from all the nations of the Old World. In general, the Indians found in the South were less barbarous and cruel than those of a more northern latitude. Captive children and feeble women were sometimes put to death because they impeded travel, but such a barbarism as running the gauntlet was unknown here. In war dances, the Caranchuas and some other tribes drank the blood of their enemies, and tasted the flesh, but there is no evidence that any Texas tribes were cannibals.

Our Indians may be classed under three general divisions: 1. The Pueblas, or village Indians. 2. The tribes who lived by agriculture and stock-raising. 3. The nomadic, or hunting and migratory tribes.

**I. PUEBLAS.**—In 1637, seventy-five years before the English settled Jamestown, Marcus De Niza, a Franciscan missionary from the city of Mexico, crossed the Rio Grande and entered the village now known as Isleta, the present county seat of El Paso county. He found it then, as it is now, occupied by Puebla Indians, probably belonging to the Aztecs, or ancient inhabitants of the continent. They lived in comfortable houses, dressed in a coarse kind of cloth made from cotton produced in the neighborhood, and had an abundance of corn, vegetables, etc. Very pacific, they readily accepted the new doctrines introduced by the missionary, and conformed to the rites of the Church.

Three years later, Isleta was visited, "captured," in the pompous language of the narrator, by the Spaniards sent from Mexico under Coronado, when the innocent natives became Spanish subjects. Coronado conferred upon the settlement the inestimable blessing of introducing sheep, cattle

and horses. From the supply thus introduced have sprung the immense herds and flocks and caballados of horses in New Mexico. These Indians probably occupied their village for centuries before the discovery of the continent by Columbus. Neither the revolutions in Mexico, nor the people of the United States, have produced any material change in the habits or customs of these Pueblos during the last three centuries. They are now loyal and peaceable citizens of the United States, and of the State of Texas.

The Aranamas, near Goliad, were also Pueblos; and are said to have been farther advanced in civilization than those of the upper Rio Grande. If tradition is to be credited, they used glass windows in their two-story houses. They were pacific, and early fell a prey to their more belligerent neighbors, the Caranchuas. The mission near Goliad, established for the Aranamas, was after annexation converted into a college building, and is now, we believe, private property.

II. TRIBES THAT CULTIVATED THE SOIL.—There were some twenty different tribes and bands that subsisted, in part, by cultivating the soil; though all, of course, engaged in hunting and fishing. The earliest discovered and most numerous, and most civilized of this class, were the Nasonites and Cennis tribes on the Trinity and Neches rivers. The Orquizacos, on San Jacinto River and Bay belonged to the same general class. When visited by La Salle, in 1685, the Indians received him kindly, and entertained him with genuine hospitality, and furnished him provisions and horses to continue his journey across the continent. A quarter of a century later, the same villages afforded a refuge to Belisle and La Harpe. They ever proved faithful allies to the French. These tribes, so numerous and so noble, disappeared during the last years of the last century; and their disappearance and fate are involved in almost as much mystery as the fate of the ten lost tribes of Israel. It was during an era of wars and revolutions. The long contest between France and Spain for the ownership and possession of Texas had finally been settled in favor of the latter; and these Indians, the ever-faithful allies of the French, are never more heard of. Yoakum suggests that possibly the intrusive tribes from the United States had a hand in their destruction. But it is useless to speculate on a subject which offers no rational prospect of solution.

When the Anglo-Americans reached this country, they found the old villages of the Nasonites occupied by small bands of Alabamas, Coshatties, and Muscogeas, who had been driven from their *rest* on the Alabama River, and sought a new one here. These Indians have always been friendly with the whites, and in the days of the Republic four leagues of land were set apart for their homes; but the whites have squatted upon the most valuable portions of the land, until now they have but a few hundred acres left; and it is too poor to attract the cupidity of settlers. It is probable the small remnant of these Indians will soon be transferred to the Indian Territory. These are now the only Indians claiming a domicile in Texas.

The Caddos were a powerful tribe inhabiting East Texas and Louisiana. They were brave and warlike—possessed extensive fields of corn, large stocks of cattle, horses, etc., and were allies of the French. When driven

from East Texas, they formed a large village near where Fort Worth now stands.

The Tehas (or Texas) belonged to the Caddo family. This was once a powerful band. Coronado, in 1540, found the *Tehas* or *Tayos* on the upper Red River. He speaks in high terms of this tribe. They proved faithful guides. Joutel, the surviving companion of La Salle, found a village of this name on the Sabine. The map of Bellin, (Paris, 1744) locates the Tehas or Teijas village on the Trinity, near the present town of Crockett. An old map in our possession locates their village on the east side of the Neches River, at the old crossing of the San Antonio and Nacogdoches road. Their tribal existence was soon lost, but they have left their name inscribed upon one of the most brilliant stars of the great American constellation.

The Naugdoches, or Nacogdoches, were another band of Caddos. One of the earliest missions established in Texas was for this tribe, which has left its name to the county in which their principal village was located. In San Augustine county there was another band of the same great family—the Ayish; for whom there was also a mission established.

“The Keechies,” says Judge Burnet, “were a peculiar race. Their language differed radically from all others known in Texas. The Comanches held them in singular abhorrence, believing them to possess and exercise the power of witchcraft.” They left their name on the creek on which they lived in East Texas. They were not very highly esteemed. Their men were conjurers, and their women fortune-tellers. After being reduced to a few families, they sought a home across Red River. The Quapaws were another peculiar tribe. They were said to be a kind of Quakers, and were non-combatants. The Shawnees had a village near the present town of Henderson, Rusk county. The Tehuacanies gave their name to a range of hills in Limestone county. A university located in their old range now bears their name.

The principal village of the Wacoos was on the Brazos River, where the city of the same name now stands. This was a large tribe, and their villages were found in several localities.

The late George Wilkins Kendall, in his Santa Fe Expedition, gives a picture of a Waco village which that party found on the Trinity River. “In a large bend of the stream the village was situated, and all around were the corn-fields and pumpkin and melon patches of the inhabitants. Although the bend must have been five or six miles in length, by nearly two in breadth in the wider parts, every portion of it appeared to be in cultivation; and the land was extremely fertile. The purlieus of the village appeared to be kept clean. The wigwams, or houses rather, for they deserve that name, were built in rows and had an air of neatness and regularity about them, such as I had never before observed in an Indian village. They were of conical shape, some twenty-five feet in height, and of about the same diameter on the floor; the materials used in their construction being poles, buffalo hides and rushes. The poles were stuck in the ground, and after running up perpendicularly some ten feet, were bent over so as to converge to a point at the top, thus giving a regular dome-like roof to carry off the

rains. Over these, buffalo hides in some instances were made fast, and these again were covered with long rushes—thus making thatched cottages impervious to dust and rain.

“ Within many of the houses, at an elevation of four or five feet from the ground, was a row of berths extended nearly the whole circuit, and very neatly got up. The bottom of these berths appeared to be of rough basket work, the frame which supported them being of long poles. The inhabitants had carried off a principal part of their furniture, but had still enough left to convince us that, for Indians, they lived in much comfort and not a little style. Attached to each residence, and immediately in the rear was another building of smaller dimensions, the lower part of which was evidently used for a corn-crib and store-house. In these buildings we found a quantity of corn and pumpkins, besides finely-cured venison, antelope and buffalo meat. Above the corn-crib was a species of balcony.”

In one of these buildings was found a musical instrument, not unlike a fife, which Mr. Kendall suggested some love-sick Romeo used to charm his Juliet. A house of much larger dimensions was found near the centre of the village; probably the residence of the chief. Mr. Kendall adds: “ I confess that I saw evidences of a more elevated kind of humanity than I had supposed was to be found anywhere among the original Americans.”

Higher up on the river, the Pawnees had extensive villages and cultivated fields; while the home of the Anadaquas was on the Upper Brazos. Their principal village was near the present town of Graham, in Young county. Hosea Maria, one of the chiefs of this band, once with his warriors surprised and killed a party of fourteen surveyors in Limestone county.

The Cherokees, Creeks, Choctaws and Delawares were Indians belonging to the United States. Driven from home, they sought a settlement in Texas. They became a source of trouble, and were, in 1839, expelled from the Republic.

III. We now come to the third class, the Nomads—the real live Indians—the Comanches. In their own language, they call themselves *Naini*, or live people, intimating that other nations are growing effete. This is the Indian that fills up our ideal of true savage life—the Arab of the prairie—the model of the fabled Thessalian “Centaur,” half horse, half man, so closely joined and so dexterously managed that it appears but one animal—fleet and furious. This is the class that has hung like a dark and threatening cloud over our frontier, disputing every inch of ground with the no less brave and determined pioneer settler.

COMANCHES.—This was the most powerful and warlike of all the native tribes of Texas. They are offshoots from the great Shoshone family. From the earliest settlement of the country they were hostile to the Spaniards; but, up to 1836, were on friendly terms with the people of the United States. Their range extended along the entire frontier of Texas, but their principal villages were on the Upper Colorado. The San Saba Mission was established for their benefit. Their government was a mixture of the Patriarchal and the Republican. Their chiefs were elective, and exercised a paternal, rather than a despotic authority. Difficulties were settled

generally by arbitration. On foot the Comanche is ungainly and awkward, but is perfectly at home on horseback. They are considered the best horsemen in the world. The women perform the drudgery, and as described by Mr. Catlin, in 1833, wore slips made of dressed skins. They practiced polygamy, and divorces could be readily obtained, especially by the husband. Mr. Catlin said they had no system of worship, and but very indistinct ideas of a future state. But Captain Marcy, who spent months in the tribe, says they are Theists, worshipping one Supreme Being, and believe firmly in a future state. Various estimates are given as to their numbers. In 1833, Mr. Catlin estimated them at from 30,000 to 40,000; but Captain Marcy puts the number at from 12,000 to 18,000. "They have," continues the Captain, "three local grand divisions: Northern, Middle and Southern; designated by them as, Tennawas, Yamparicks and Comanches. These again, are subdivided into smaller bands, each having its separate chief or captain. The southern Comanches alone remain permanently in Texas. They consist of two bands. The names of their two principal chiefs in 1854, were Shascahco and Ketumse. The aggregate number in the two bands at that time was about 1,100 souls. The middle band numbered 3,500, and resided on the Canadian river, but sometimes followed the buffaloes to the Brazos river. The northern band, which was much larger than either of the others, seldom entered Texas."

**APACHES.**—A brave and warlike tribe of hunters, whose principal village was at the Bandera Pass. For a century this tribe depredated upon the citizens of San Antonio. They were generally in close alliance with the Comanches, a kindred tribe.

**LIPANS.**—This was a numerous and warlike tribe of migratory Indians, inhabiting the country between the Nueces and Rio Grande rivers. They belonged to the same great family with the Comanches and Apaches. They early acquired the Spanish language and became Spanish subjects. In 1811, 300 Lipan warriors fought in the ranks of Mr. Menchaca, when he captured Hidalgo. In 1813, 100 of them fought in the Republican ranks at the battle of Rosillo, near San Antonio. The Lipans, being Mexican subjects, found a home on the west side of the Rio Grande. It is supposed that they still occasionally visit Texas in small thieving bands.

**TONKAWAS.**—A small tribe on the Colorado. They were in mortal dread of the Comanches, and always lived near the American settlements. They sometimes committed petty thefts, but were never openly hostile. Their principal chief, Placido was implicitly trusted by Burleson and other Texans, when fighting the Comanches and other hostile tribes. During the late war a number of the Reservation Indians enlisted in the Union army; Placido absolutely refused to enlist, as he said he could never fight against Texas. In a melee which ensued, he and a number of his men were killed. There is a small remnant of this band in the Indian Territory, that desires to return to Texas.

**KICKAPOOS.**—A band of this tribe, belonging to the great Algonquin family—came first from Illinois to Missouri, thence into the Indian Territory, and finally into Texas, and established a village in the neighborhood of Crockett, in Houston county.

**KIOWAS.**—This brave and powerful tribe did not belong to Texas. Their home is in the Indian Territory and Arizona. They, however, occasionally followed the buffaloes to the Brazos, and committed depredations on Texas settlements.

We have now enumerated the principal tribes of Texas Indians. When the Spanish and French adventurers and explorers visited the country, they found these Indians friendly, and were treated with hospitality. Are the Indians alone responsible for subsequent scenes of blood and carnage? We subjoin the testimony of one American:

Captain Randall Jones, one of Austin's first colonists, and a gentleman of unimpeachable veracity, spent the years from 1813 to 1818 as a trader among the Indians of Texas. In his journal he says: "I have now been five years trading among the Indians and Mexicans. During the whole of this period, I can say with truth, that I was always treated with respect and attention. In all my transactions, either with Mexicans or Indians, I endeavored to act justly, and was never insulted or mistreated by them."

## CHAPTER II.

BATTLES IN CHRONOLOGICAL ORDER—ON GALVESTON ISLAND, 1818-1821—ON THE COLORADO, 1822-23—CARANCHUAS BANISHED, 1825—FIGHTS FROM 1826 TO 1830—BOWIE'S FIGHT IN 1831—WILBARGER SCALPED IN 1833—ON RED RIVER IN 1834—PARKER'S FORT MASSACRE 1836—MRS. PLUMMER'S CAPTIVITY—CYNTHIA ANN PARKER RECLAIMED, AFTER A CAPTIVITY OF TWENTY-FIVE YEARS.

INDIAN BATTLES, ETC., IN CHRONOLOGICAL ORDER.—1818.—While Galveston Island was occupied by Lafitte, some of his men stole a Caranchua squaw. To revenge this injury, about 300 of the Indians landed on the island, near the Three Trees. The pirates, to the number of 200, with two cannon, immediately proceeded down the island to meet them. After a severe fight and the loss of about thirty, the Indians were glad to withdraw to the main land.

1821.—After Lafitte had left the island, a company, under Dr. Parnell, visited it to hunt for treasures supposed to have been buried by the freebooters. Parnell found some Indians on the island, and attacked and drove them off. Mr. Yoakum suggests that it was these attacks that made the Caranchuas so hostile towards Austin's colonists.

1822.—Two vessels arrived at the mouth of the Colorado with immigrants. While the main party went up the river by land, the goods were left in charge of four young men at the landing. These young men were killed by the Indians, and the goods destroyed. Two of them were sons of Mr. Clopper, who afterwards settled on Buffalo bayou.

1823.—The next year, three young men were hunting on the Colorado, below Eagle lake, when they were surprised by the Caranchuas, and Messrs. Loy and Alley were killed. John Clark, though badly wounded, plunged into the stream and escaped by swimming. He lived until 1861. His large estate is still in litigation.

1824.—While surveying, Captain Chriesman had several skirmishes with the Caranchuas on the San Bernard river and Gulf Prairie. The severest encounter was with a company under Captain Randall Jones. This was on a creek in Brazoria county, since called Jones' creek. Fifteen Indians were killed. The whites lost three: Messrs. Bailey, Singer and Spencer.

1825.—The colonists were now sufficiently strong to rid themselves of this small band; and Colonel Austin requested Captain Abner Kuykendall to collect about one hundred militia and expel them from the colony. While pursuing them, Colonel Austin was met at the Menawhila creek, a few miles east of Goliad, by the priest of the Mission, who went security for the good behavior of the Indians. It was agreed that the latter should not

come east of the San Antonio river; an agreement to which they all adhered. This was strictly in accordance with American policy; first extinguish the Indian's title to the land and then expel him from it, either by banishment or extermination.

1826.—A new settlement had been formed on the Guadalupe river, near Gonzales, in Dewitt's colony. While a number of men were on the Colorado to celebrate the Fourth of July, the settlement was attacked by the Indians. John Wightman was killed, and Ba-il Durbin badly wounded. The houses were burned and the settlement for a time broken up. Deaf Smith went to San Antonio, Henry S. Brown to Brazoria, James Kerr to the Lavaca river, and others scattered to different parts of Texas.

1829.—Captains A. Kuykendall and Henry S. Brown conducted a scouting party up the Colorado. Near the mouth of the San Saba they found an encampment of the Waco and Tehuacana Indians. The Indians were defeated and their camp destroyed.

1831.—**BOWIE'S FIGHT.**—In 1830 the celebrated James Bowie became a citizen of San Antonio and married the daughter of Don Veramendi, the Vice-Governor. On the 2d of November, 1831, he and his brother Rezin P. Bowie, and seven other Americans and two negro servants, started to hunt for the San Saba silver mines. When in the neighborhood of the old mission, on the San Saba river, they were attacked by 164 Tehuacana and Caddo Indians. The Bowies threw up temporary breastworks, which the Indians repeatedly and vigorously attacked. Falling in these assaults, the Indians next attempted to burn them out by setting fire to the long prairie grass. The Americans, however, sternly held their ground. The fight lasted from sunrise in the morning until dark, when the savages sullenly retired, having lost nearly one-half their number. One of Bowie's men was killed and three wounded.

The citizens of Bexar, in a memorial to the General Government, state that from 1822 to 1832, ninety-seven citizens, besides the soldiers killed in battle, had been murdered by hostile Indians.

1833.—Josiah Wilbarger and two companions were out hunting on Walnut creek, east of the city of Austin, when they were surprised by Indians and one of their number instantly killed. Wilbarger was shot and scalped and left for dead. Young Hornsby escaped upon a fleet horse to the settlement. A party went out the next day and buried the one who was killed. Wilbarger was still living, and though weak with the loss of blood, he had crawled to a water-hole. He lived twelve years and married; but finally died from the effects of the scalping.\*

1834.—The Kiowas killed Judge Gabriel N. Martin, on Red river, and took Matthew N. Martin, his son, prisoner. Mr. Martin's brother-in-law, Travis G. Wright, with three companions, started to recover the lost boy.

\*The night young Hornsby reached home, his mother had a singular dream; she dreamed that she saw Wilbarger lying at a water-hole, faint and bleeding, but still alive. This dream was twice repeated, and made so strong an impression upon her that she persuaded the party going out to prepare a litter, which they did; and the suffering man was conveyed in on that litter.





**A CHIEF OF THE KIWAS**



They fortunately fell in with a company of United States soldiers, under Colonel Dodge, who found the Indians and recovered young Martin, and several other prisoners. The same year, Colonel John H. Moore, with Captains R. M. Williamson, Phil. Coe, and G. W. Bennett, went on a long and somewhat fatiguing scout against the Wacoos and Tehuacanies. It was during this year that Colonel Almonte visited the country to inquire into its condition. He reports the total Indian population at that time at 15,300; of whom 10,800 are regarded as hostile and 4,500 as friendly. Of the hostile Indians, Almonte assigns 9,900 to the department of Bexar, and 600 to the department of the Brazos. This does not include the civilized Indians about Nacogdoches, of whom Almonte speaks as citizens of Mexico, and loyal to that government.

1836.—It was fortunate for Texas, that, during the early part of this year, so eventful in our history, Colonel Ellis P. Bean, a warm personal friend of Gen. Houston, was the agent for the Indians in East Texas. The survey and location of lands claimed by these Indians had already produced an unpleasant feeling between the two races. But Bean kept the Indians quiet until after the decisive battle of San Jacinto, when the victory of the Texans gave them such a prestige that the civilized tribes remained peaceable, though fears were then entertained that, if the Texans were defeated, the whites in East Texas would have been either killed or driven from their homes.

PARKER'S FORT MASSACRE.—The Parker family came from Missouri, in 1833, and settled in Limestone county, near the present town of Groesbeck, where they built a fort. On the 19th of May, 1836, this fort was visited by several hundred Comanche and Caddo Indians. At first the Indians presented a white flag, and pretended friendship. At the time, of the thirty-five persons in the fort, only five were able to bear arms. The Indians inquired for a water-hole at which to camp; and also wanted a beef. Mr. Benjamin Parker stepped out to point them to water, when he was instantly killed. The savages then rushed into the fort, killing Benjamin Parker, senior, aged seventy-nine, Silas Parker, and Samuel and Robert Frost. Mrs. Sarah Parker was wounded. Mrs. Elizabeth Kellogg, Mrs. Rachel Plummer, (daughter of James Parker), her son, James Platt Plummer, two years old; Cynthia Ann Parker, eight years old, and her brother, John Parker, six years old, all children of Silas Parker, were taken prisoners. Those that escaped were six days in the wilderness without food, before they reached the settlements on the Brazos, in what is now Grimes county. Mrs. Kellogg was a prisoner about six months; Mrs. Plummer a little over a year. She had not been long a prisoner when she was delivered of a child. The crying of her infant annoyed the Indians, and it was killed in a most cruel manner before her eyes. With an old knife she dug a grave and buried it. She was given as a servant to a cruel old squaw, who treated her in a most brutal manner. Another party had taken off her son, and she supposed her husband and father had been killed at the fort, though being at a distance in the field at work, they had escaped the massacre. Her infant was dead, and her life was a burden. She resolved she would no longer submit to the brutal old squaw. One day when the two were some

distance from the camp, though still in sight, when her mistress attempted to beat her with a club, she wrenched the club out of her hands and knocked the squaw down. The Indians, who had seen the whole proceeding, came running up, and she fully expected to be killed, but they patted her on the shoulder, crying, *bueno ! bueno !* (well done!). After this she fared much better. She was eventually sold to a Santa Fe trader, who took her to Missouri, and she soon found her way back to her friends in Texas. She died about nine months after reaching home. Her son, after six years of captivity, was restored to his family. Both he and his father are now dead. Cynthia Ann Parker was a quarter of a century among the savages, and became the wife of a chief. In 1860, Captain Ross, of Waco, was out on the frontier, and in a fight with the Indians, captured a prisoner. Though the prisoner was in male attire, they suspected her sex. She was very much bronzed, and in habit a perfect Indian, but they were satisfied that she was a white woman. She was brought to Camp Cooper, forty miles west of Belknap, and word sent to the settlements. The venerable Isaac Parker still in hopes of hearing of his long-lost niece, went to the camp. Her age and general appearance suited the object of his search, but she had lost every word of her native tongue. Colonel P. was about to give up in despair when he turned to the interpreters and said very distinctly that the woman he was seeking was named *Cynthia Ann*. The sound of the name by which her mother had called her awakened in the bosom of the poor captive emotions that had long lain dormant. In a letter to us, Colonel Parker says: "The moment I mentioned the name, she straightened herself in her seat, and patting herself on the breast, said, 'Cynthia Ann, Cynthia Ann.' A ray of recollection sprung up in her mind, that had been obliterated for twenty-five years. Her very countenance changed, and a pleasant smile took the place of a sullen gloom." She had one child with her, having left two others with the tribe. Returning with her uncle, she soon recovered her native tongue. It was during the war, and she learned to spin and weave, and to make herself useful generally about the house. She hoped when the war was over to get her other children, but both she and her child died. One of her sons was left with the Indians, and her husband is dead. The other son visited Texas in 1875. It is reported that her brother John had a romantic adventure, while a prisoner. The Indians, when raiding on the Rio Grande, captured a Mexican girl. The two became enamored of each other, though they had not married. John took the small-pox, and the Indians left him to die. The girl insisted on remaining and taking care of him. He recovered, and it is said is living, with his devoted wife, on a stock ranch in the far West.

In August of this year, the Indians went down the Yegua creek, by the neighborhood of Burton, and on Cumming's creek killed Hon. J. G. Robinson and his brother. The same party, in leaving the settlement, killed the Gotier family, a few miles from the present town of Giddings. A little later, a party attacked the house of Mr. Taylor, near the three forks of Little River, but was repulsed. In November, Mr. Harvey and his wife were killed near Wheelock, and their daughter taken prisoner. She was subsequently recovered from the Mexicans, to whom the Indians had sold her.

## CHAPTER III.

**INDIAN AFFAIRS DURING THE REPUBLIC—FIGHTING IN ROBERTSON'S COLONY IN 1837—NEAR SAN ANTONIO, 1838—BATTLE CREEK, NAVARRO COUNTY—ATTACK ON MORGAN'S AND MARLIN'S FAMILIES, IN FALLS COUNTY, IN 1839—EXPULSION OF THE CHEROKEES—BLOODY WORK IN THE COUNCIL HOUSE IN SAN ANTONIO, 1840—COMANCHES BURN VICTORIA AND LINNVILLE, AND ARE DEFEATED AT PLUM CREEK—MOORE'S EXPEDITION TO THE UPPER COLORADO—FROM 1841 TO 1847—RECOVERY OF MISS PUTNAM, AFTER A LONG SEPARATION FROM HER PARENTS.**

1837.—On the 7th of January, Captain George B. Erath, of the Rangers, had a fight with a band of Indians in Robertson's colony. The Indians were driven off, but two of the Rangers, Frank Childress and David Clarke, were killed. About the first of February, some men were out hunting hogs in the Trinity bottom, near old Fort Houston, Anderson county, when they were attacked by Indians. David and Evans Faulkenbury were killed, and Abram Anglin and Anderson wounded. In May of this year, a number of colonists were killed near Nashville, on the Brazos; and James Coryell near Marlin. Later in the year, Lieutenant Van Benthuyzen went with a scouting party towards the head waters of the Trinity river. He encountered a body of Indians and had a severe fight, in which he lost Lieutenant Miles and eight privates killed, and three others wounded.

1838.—In April, Colonel Sparks F. Holland and a Mr. Berry were killed while out surveying on the Richland creek. In September, a large number of Comanches visited the neighborhood of San Antonio. They surprised a party of surveyors on the Leon creek, a few miles from the city. Moses Lapham and a Mr. Jones were killed and scalped. A Mexican named Padre Goaner was scalped, but succeeded in reaching the city, where he still lives. On the same day Francisco A. Ruiz and Nicolas Flores Ruiz were taken prisoners. Francisco Ruiz was well known to the Indians, and that night, one of the chiefs untied him, and told him to escape. He now lives on the Medina river. Flores was probably killed, as he was never heard of afterward. When the news of this raid reached the city, Captain Frank Cage raised a company of thirteen men for pursuit. He had no idea of the number of the Indians. When out on the Castroville road, near where Colonel Means now lives, they suddenly found themselves surrounded by a hundred or more warriors. Mr. James Campbell became separated from his companions, and made his way safely into the city. Captain Cage, W. D. Lee, Dr. McClung, O'Boyle, King and two others, were killed; and General Richard Dunlap and Major Patton badly wounded. Besides Campbell, Spears and Hood escaped unhurt. A party of citizens the next

day brought in the bodies of the dead, and buried them in the Protestant burying ground, in San Antonio. On the 16th of October, General Rusk had a fight near Kickapoo town, in which eleven Indians were killed, and some of Rusk's men wounded. On the 25th of the same month, General John C. Neil gained a victory over a party of Comanches, found near Fort Graham.

**BATTLE CREEK FIGHT—NAVARRO COUNTY**—In the fall of this year, a party of twenty-four men started from the old town of Franklin, in Robertson county, on a land-locating expedition, under the leadership of Captain William M. Love, who lived on Richland creek, in Navarro county. When they reached the neighborhood of what is now known as Spring Hill, they met a large number of Indians, many of whom could speak our language. It always irritated Indians to see the white man survey his lands, and they informed the white men, if they did not desist, they would kill them. It so happened that one compass would not work, and it was necessary to send an express back for another instrument. Love and a man named Jackson volunteered to go; but before going he enjoined upon the remaining twenty-two men not to commence work until his return, but to hunt buffalo with the Indians, and drive all the buffalo out of the vicinity, thinking by driving off the buffalo the Indians would follow. This prudent advice they did not follow, but in a day or two commenced work, and the Indians, true to their promise, commenced an attack upon them. The whites took shelter in a ravine, and fought as bravely as men could fight, during an entire day, killing, as it has since been learned, more than three times their own number of the savage foe; but when night came, after more than half their number had fallen, and they were nearly famished for the want of water, they made a break for the nearest timber. At this crisis all but three were killed or wounded. One man, whose name I do not remember, with another named Smith, and Colonel W. F. Henderson, escaped unhurt after much suffering. One of the men wandered off alone, and made his way to the settlements, while a man named Violet, with a broken leg, crawled eighteen miles to the Tywockany Springs, and was found there nearly a week after the sad disaster, almost famished, but was rescued. Two of the party who escaped took with them General Walter P. Lane, severely wounded, with one leg broken. Although a few had thus escaped the wily foe, their danger was not over. The Indians well knew the trail leading to the nearest settlement, and were ahead of Henderson, Smith, and the wounded Lane, waylaying the route they were to pass. In those troublous times, both white and red man lay by in the daytime, and did most of their traveling by night. Captain Love and Jackson were returning from Franklin, and surprised the party of Indians while they were waylaying Lane and his friends, who were assisting him to hobble along. After disposing of the Indians, Love and Jackson had not proceeded far until, at dawn of day, they met what they supposed to be more Indians, and were upon the point of discharging their rifles, when they discovered it was Lane, Henderson, and Smith, who were marching into the trap set for them by their wily foe. Then Captain Love learned of the defeat of his party. After taking Lane to the settlement, a burial party was made up and repaired to the battle-ground, where the seventeen

dead men were buried. This affair gave name to Battle creek, one of the tributaries of Richland.

1839—THE MORGAN MASSACRE—ATTACK ON MARLIN'S HOUSE—BRYANT'S DEFEAT.

On the east side of the Brazos, near the Falls, the Morgans and Marlins, somewhat intermarried, constituted several families, residing a few miles apart, some above and some a little below the site of the present village of Marlin. There was a considerable settlement along the river for some twenty miles, but the country beyond or above them was open to the Indians. The period to which reference is made was the winter of 1838-9.

On Sunday night, the 1st day of January, 1839, a part of the families of James Marlin and Mrs. Jones and the family of Jackson Morgan, were together passing the night with the family of George Morgan, at what is now called Morgan's Point, six miles above the town of Marlin. The remainder of the divided families were at the house of John Marlin, seven miles below, that is, Fort Milam. John and James Marlin were brothers; the others of that name were their children.

A little after dark, the house of George Morgan was suddenly surrounded and attacked by Indians, who instantly rushed in and gave the inmates no time for defense. Old Mr. George Morgan and wife, their grandson, Jackson Jones, Jackson Morgan's wife, and Miss Adeline Marlin, aged fifteen or sixteen years, were all tomahawked and scalped in the same room in the space of a few moments. Miss Stacy Ann Marlin (the wife of William Morgan) was severely wounded and left as dead. Three children were in the yard when the attack commenced. Of these Isaac Marlin, a child of ten years, secreted himself under the fence, and there remained until the tragedy was over. Wesley Jones, quite a child, first ran into the house, but, seeing the Indians entering and tomahawking the inmates, ran out, unobserved by the murderous wretches, and was followed by Mary Marlin, another child. They escaped together. The wounded lady, retaining consciousness, feigned death; but was not scalped, while all the others were. The Indians robbed the house of its contents and left. When they had done so and silence again reigned, the heroic child, Isaac Marlin—his name should be immortalized—re-entered the house, and, by feeling the lifeless bodies, ascertained to his satisfaction who were killed. His wounded sister, supposing him to be an Indian, still remained motionless till he left, when she crawled out. Little Isaac then took the path for John Marlin's, and ran the seven miles very quickly—a swift child-messenger of death to his kindred there assembled. Wesley Jones and Mary Marlin did not get in till daylight, and the wounded Mrs. Morgan not till noon next day.

When little Isaac got into John Marlin's house, that gentleman, his brother James, William N. P. and Wilson Marlin, Jackson and George W. Morgan, and Albert G. Gholson immediately hastened to the scene, and found the facts identical with the child's narration. Other relief arrived next day, and the dead were consigned to their graves amid the wailings of their grief-stricken relatives and friends.

Ten days later, being the 10th of January, 1839, the Indians, seventy in number, attacked the house of John Marlin and his son Benjamin, whose

surviving family still reside in Milam county, and Jarett Menefee and his son Thomas, who killed seven Indians and wounded others, without receiving any injury themselves. Tired of that kind of reception, the enemy withdrew. When the attack was made, Menefee's negro man, "Hinchey," was at work a short distance from the house; but, failing to reach it, he left in double-quick time for the settlements below, and made twenty-five miles in pretty fair saddle-horse time. "Hinchey" duly reported the attack, and a company was quickly gathered together to relieve the besieged. They lost no time in reaching Marlin's, but found the Indians had retreated as before stated.

It was determined, however, upon a discussion of the matter by those present, that they must pursue and fight the Indians, or abandon their homes and fall back into the more settled parts of the country. They chose the former alternative, and made their dispositions accordingly. The effective force available for pursuit was forty-eight men. Benjamin Bryant (of Bryant's Station, whose surviving family still reside in Milam county) was called to the command. The names of the company were as follows: A. J. Powers, Washington McGrew, — Ward, Armstrong Barton, — Plummer, Alfred Eaton, Hugh A. Henry, William Fullerton, A. J. Webb, — Doss, Charles Solls (or Sawls), William N. P. Marlin, — Bryant, G. W. Morgan, Enoch M. Jones, John R. Henry, Lewis B. and William C. Powers, Henry Haigwood, Eli Chandler, Ethan Stroud, Joseph Boren, William McGrew, Andrew McMillan, Clay and David Cobb, Richard Teel, Albert G. Gholson, Michael Castleman, Wilson Reed, Wily Carter, John Welsh, Britton Dawson, R. H. Matthews, David W. Campbell, Nathan Campbell, John D. B. Smith, Jeremiah McDanel, Walter Campbell, William Henry, Hugh Henry, John Marlin, Wilson Marlin, Joseph P. McCannless, John Tucker, and Thomas Duncan, then a boy and now of Bell county, and one other whose name could not be remembered.

On the next morning, Bryant took the trail of the enemy and pursued it; crossed the Brazos near Morgan's Point; on the west side found a deserted camp, with fresh sign; about a mile out came upon a fresh trail bearing into the river, and followed it. At the river, counted sixty-four fresh horse-tracks and a large trail of foot Indians which crossed the river. Seeing the prairie on fire below, they supposed it to be Marlin's house and hastened back, without finding the enemy, and halted for the night. Next morning, January 16th, they started up again, and found that the Indians had been at the deserted houses two miles above and plundered them. Thence they traveled up six miles to Morgan's Point, and suddenly discovered the enemy in the open post-oak near a dry branch. The noted chief, Jose Maria, who was riding in front, in perfect *nonchalance* halted, slipped off his gloves, and, taking deliberate aim, fired at Boren, cutting his coat-sleeve. Jose Maria gave the signal to call on his men, and the action commenced. Bryant ordered a charge, which was gallantly made, though the captain received a wound at the time, which called Ethan Stroud to the command. The Indians fired, and fell back into the ravine. Simultaneous with the charge, David W. Campbell fired at Jose Maria, the ball striking him on the breast-bone, but failing to dismount him. Albert G. Gholson then shot his horse, which died in the ravine. Our men then



charged up to the bank of the ravine and fired, when the Indians commenced retreating down its bed toward the bottom. Seeing this, several of our sharpshooters rushed below them to hold them in check. This caused the enemy to return to the first position and renew the defense; by which time, supposing the day had been won, our men had somewhat scattered and were acting each for himself. The consequence was, that, when the enemy re-opened the fire, several were wounded and confusion and disorder ensued, to remedy which the men were ordered to retreat to another point some two hundred yards distant, to draw the Indians from their concealment. This order, from the prevailing confusion, was understood by many to be for an unqualified retreat; panic seized some of the men, which being discovered by the wily Jose Maria, he charged in full force, making the welkin ring with hideous and exulting yells. Several of our men fell, and the rout became general. Without order, in utter confusion, and each man acting for himself, they were hotly pursued for four miles, their pursuers dealing death and carnage among them.

In this charge and retreat, the ten first named in the preceding list were killed, and the next five were wounded. All who were killed fell within one and a half miles of the battle-ground, the most of them within half a mile, being overtaken on foot. Plummer, Ward and Barton were killed at the ravine. In the disaster some acts were performed which deserve mention. David W. Campbell, not observing the retreat, was about being surrounded by the enemy, when the brave Captain Eli Chandler, already mounted, rushed to his relief and took him up behind him. Young Jackson Powers, missing his horse, mounted on a pony behind William McGrew, his arm being broken at the same moment, and was retreating. His brother William, however, came by on a large horse, and requested him to leave the pony and ride behind him. He dismounted, but from his broken arm and the restlessness of the horse he was unable to mount, till, the Indians rushing upon him, his brother only left him as the poor boy fell under the tomahawk. William N. P. Marlin, before the retreat, was so severely wounded in the hip that he could not mount, and was about being left, when David Cobb ran to him and threw him on his horse. Wilson Reed, a daring fellow, in the retreat was knocked from his horse by a tree, the enemy being close upon them, when he sang out in a half-mirthful tone: "O, Lord! boys, Mary Ann is a widow!" But some brave fellow picked him up and carried him safely away.

1839.—In January, Colonel John H. Moore, with sixty-three white volunteers and sixteen Lipan Indians, went on a scout to the Upper Colorado. They reached the neighborhood of a Comanche village on the 14th of February. The next day the village was partially destroyed, the warriors retreating to a strong position in a bend of the creek. The Texans had also retired a short distance, to reload, when they were vigorously attacked by a large body of warriors. The fight was not very decisive. Colonel Moore had one man killed, and three wounded. On the 20th of April, Mrs. Coleman, widow of Colonel E. M. Coleman, and her son were killed near Webberville. Jacob Burleson raised a small company and pursued the Indians, who were found in force and strongly posted on Brushy creek. The next day General Ed. Burleson arrived with reinforcements, when a

severe battle was fought, in which it was said twenty Indians were killed. General Burleson's brother, Jacob, and James Gilleland, John Watters, and Edward Blakie were killed. A number of others were wounded. On the 27th of May, Captain John Bird left Fort Milam, at the Falls of the Brazos, for a general scout. Indians were found and severely dealt with, on Little river. In this engagement the whites lost four killed, including Captain Bird. About the same time, a Mr. Webster started from Austin to settle on his head-right league of land on the North Gabriel. He had fourteen men, his wife, three children and a negro woman. He found a large body of Comanches encamped on his land, and attempted to retreat; encamping that night on Brushy creek. For fear of an attack, Mr. Webster formed a kind of barricade with his wagons, and prepared for defence. The next morning they were assaulted. The fight continued until all the men were killed, when Mrs. Webster and two of her children, and the negro woman, were taken prisoners.

**EXPULSION OF THE CHEROKEES.**—President Lamar's policy was to expel all Indians from Texas. He believed the civilized tribes were intruders, and that their presence retarded the settlement of the country. He therefore resolved upon their expulsion. It was said these Indians had committed many depredations, especially that they had murdered the Killough family, of whom some sixteen or eighteen had been killed. The Cherokees, however disclaimed all responsibility for these murders, and laid the blame on wild Indians. Vice-President Burnet and General A. S. Johnston, Secretary of War, were sent to the Indian village, on the Angelina river, to induce the Indians to peacefully withdraw to their Territory. These Commissioners were authorized to pay the Cherokees for their improvements. The Indians utterly refused to give up their homes. In anticipation of such refusal, three regiments of volunteers had been collected and sent to the neighborhood, under Colonels Burleson, Rusk and Landrum, all under the command of General Douglass. All negotiations having been unavailing to induce the Indians to leave, they were attacked on the 15th of July. After losing eighteen of their number they retreated to the Neches river. They were followed the next day by the Texans, and another severe battle was fought. In this the Indians lost about one hundred in killed and wounded. In the first day's fight the Texans lost three killed and five wounded; on the second day they lost five killed and seventeen wounded. After this disastrous defeat the Indians abandoned their fine lands and homes to the whites.

In October, Captain Thomas B. Howard inflicted a severe chastisement upon a party of Indians on Little river. The year 1839 closed with a fight between Colonel Burleson and a party of Indians found on Cherokee creek, San Saba county. In this fight six Indians were killed, and some women and children taken prisoners. Among these were the wife and children of the celebrated Cherokee chief, Bowles, who had been killed when his people were driven from East Texas.

1840.—**FIGHT IN COUNCIL HOUSE, SAN ANTONIO.**—Early in 1840 some Comanche chiefs sent in word to Captain Karnes that they wished to come in and make peace. They were told to come in and bring with them all the



**BATTLE CREEK FIGHT, NAVARRO CO.—1888.**



prisoners they held. When they arrived they brought but one little girl, a Miss Lockhart. They were known to have others, especially a Mrs. Webster and child, taken from the neighborhood of Georgetown a few weeks previously. During the confusion after the battle, this lady escaped, and, after nearly perishing for water, finally with her child reached the city. On the 19th of March, twelve chiefs entered the building used as a court-house; where they met the Commissioners appointed by President Lamar, with the interpreter. The Indians were upbraided for not bringing more captives held by them. They said the one brought was all they held; this was said in a defiant tone. In the meantime a company of Texas Rangers came on the ground, Captain Howard and some of his men entering the house. The interpreter was told to inform them that they would be held as hostages, until the other prisoners were brought in. The interpreter at first refused to tell them, as he said they would instantly fight. But the Commissioners insisted, and placing himself near the door, he told them and left. As he had said, the chiefs immediately drew their bows and knives. One started toward the door in which Captain Howard was standing. The captain received a severe cut with a knife, but killed the Indian. A general fight ensued, in which Indians, men and women, participated. A powerful chief attacked Colonel M. Caldwell, who was not armed. He defended himself with rocks until a soldier shot the savage. In an adjoining room, Mr. Morgan was attacked by two Indians, and killed both of them. Lieutenant Dunnington was killed by a squaw, who shot an arrow through his body. Judge Thompson was in the yard, amusing himself by setting up pieces of money for the little Indians to knock out. He was killed by an arrow, before he suspected danger. Judge Hood was killed in the council-house. Colonel Lysander Wells rode into the plaza just as the fight commenced. A powerful savage vaulted on behind him, and first attempted to unhorse him. Failing in this, he tried to guide the horse out of the plaza. The colonel, held fast as he was, found himself unable to draw his pistol. Finally, after passing two or three times around the plaza, the Indian was shot by a soldier, and Wells relieved from his awkward predicament. The melee lasted until all the warriors (thirty) were killed. Two Indian women and three children were also killed. The loss of the Texans was seven killed and eight wounded.

COMANCHE INVASION.—On the 4th of August some four hundred Comanche warriors crossed Plum creek, in Caldwell county, going down the country. They reached Victoria on the 6th, and after burning part of the town and committing other depredations, they descended to Linnville, a trading point on Lavaca Bay, entering that place early on the morning of the 8th. Most of the men of the village were absent, and the savages proceeded to pillage and burn the place. Three families took refuge on a small sail vessel in the harbor. While Major Watts, Collector of Customs, was trying to reach the vessel, he was shot down, and his wife taken prisoner. From Linnville the Indians hastily withdrew with their valuable booty. As the news of this raid spread through the settlements, the people rallied under their favorite leaders to intercept them. Plum creek was the place of rendezvous. Here were concentrated the companies of Captains Ben

McCulloch, Clarke L. Owen, Ed. Burleson, M. Caldwell, Thos. W. Ward, W. J. E. Wallace, Monroe Hardiman, and others, all under the command of General Felix Huston. On the morning of August 18th the Indians had just started their pack mules, and were preparing to follow, when they were attacked by the Texans. The Indians hastily retreated. As they could not carry off their prisoners, they shot them. Mrs. Crosby, taken near Victoria, was killed. Mrs. Watts was found with an arrow in her breast. The arrow was withdrawn, and she recovered, and died in 1878, while keeping the San Antonio House, in Port Lavaca. During the invasion twenty-one whites had been killed, though none fell in the fight. The Indians lost twenty-seven killed and more wounded.

On the 5th of October, Colonel John Moore, with ninety Texans and twelve Lipans started on a scout to the upper Colorado. When about three hundred miles above Austin, a Comanche village was discovered. This was October 23d. Early the next morning the village was attacked. The Indians were completely surprised, and the village destroyed. Forty-eight Indians were killed in the village. As they were retreating to the river, Captain Owen was sent forward to intercept their flight. In this he was successful. Eighty more men, women and children were either shot or drowned in the stream. Thirty-four prisoners were taken. In the village the Texans found goods taken the previous summer from Linnville. Moore had two men wounded; none killed.

1841.—Comparatively little fighting was done this year. General E. H. Tarrant destroyed an Indian village on the Trinity river, above Dallas. There were some skirmishes, especially in northern Texas, in one of which John B. Denton was killed, on a creek that bears his name, in Denton county.

1842.—During Houston's second administration, the Indians were comparatively quiet. He pursued his well-known pacific policy. There were, however, occasional raids. In March a small band visited Austin, killing a Mr. Ward and Mr. Hadley. In the same month a party visited Carlos' ranch, on the San Antonio river, and killed Mr. Gilleland and his wife, and took their children, a little girl and her younger brother, prisoners. The children were subsequently recovered by a company of rangers under Captain M. (Mustang) Gray. At this present writing, Mr. Gilleland and his sister, wife of Rev. Dr. Fisher, live in Austin.

1844.—The Indians continued to be peaceable. Thomas I. Smith and John C. Nail, as commissioners on the part of Texas, met at Tehuacana creek, in Limestone county, representatives of the Comanches, Keechies, Wacoes, Caddoes, Anadaquas, Delawares, Cherokees, Lipans and Tonkawas, and entered into treaties with them. The "Indian question" has always been troublesome and expensive. In a speech in the United States Senate, July 14, 1854, General Rusk stated that Texas had, during the ten years of the republic, expended \$3,815,011 in protecting her citizens against the Indians.

## CHAPTER IV.

NUMBER OF INDIANS IN THE STATE AT ANNEXATION—INDIAN RESERVES—PROSPEROUS BUT SOON BROKEN UP—DOVE CREEK FIGHT—SCALPING OF MRS. FRIEND—TEXAS NOW FREE FROM INDIAN RAIDS.

THE last time any considerable number of hostile Indians penetrated the settlements was in the summer of 1848. About two hundred Lipans passed down the Cibolo creek, and out towards the Rio Grande, committing some murders and thefts.

1849.—By the treaty of annexation the Indians were placed under the control of the United States. Major Neighbors was Indian agent. He estimated their numbers at 29,500, distributed as follows: Comanches, 20,000; Kiowas, 1,500; Caddoes, 1,400; Lipans, 500; Keechies, 800; Wacoos, etc., 1,000; Delawares, 650; Tonkawas, 650; Apaches, 8,500.

In January, 1851, a committee of the Legislature reported that during the year 1849 the Indians had, in Texas, killed 171 persons, wounded seven and taken twenty-five into captivity, and had stolen 6,000 horses, and property valued at \$100,000.

In 1853 the Forester family was killed, on the Medina river, twenty-five miles from San Antonio. It is supposed the Tonkawas did the killing, though this tribe always professed to maintain friendly relations with the whites.

INDIAN RESERVES.—It was thought the native tribes of Indians were entitled to a domicil in the State, and, in 1854, the Legislature passed a bill giving temporary control to the United States of two tracts of land, in what was then Young district, for Indian reserves. We transfer from the Texas Almanac of 1858 the following account of these reserves:

The State of Texas, by Act of the Legislature, set apart twelve leagues of land, upon which the Texas Indians were to be settled by the United States Government. Said twelve leagues, or 55,728 acres of land, to be reserved to the United States for the use and benefit of the Texas Indians exclusively. Under the supervision of Major R. S. Neighbors, eight leagues of land were located on the Brazos river, below the junction of the Clear Fork and Main Brazos, and about fifteen miles below Fort Belknap. This reservation is called the Brazos Agency, and contains about eleven hundred souls, consisting of Caddoes, Anadahkoes, Wacoos, Tahwacanoes and Tonkahuas. There are other Indians than those named, but they are enumerated as Caddoes chiefly. On this reserve there are six hundred acres of land in successful cultivation in wheat and corn. The mode of culture is the same, or similar to that of the Americans. These Brazos Reserve Indians have made extraordinary progress in civilization, since their settlement in 1833, and are very honest, trustworthy and industrious. They have a school, under the charge of Mr. Ellis Combes. Mr. C. reports fifty scholars in regular attend-

ance; and, judging from the interest taken in this educational enterprise by the old Indians, he is inclined to the opinion that good results will come of it. On this Reservation there are several good houses, built expressly for the transaction of all and any business connected with the Indians. These buildings are situated near the centre of the Reserve, in a very pretty mesquit valley, the approach to which affords a most lovely and slightly landscape. Captain S. P. Ross, an old Texan and a worthy man, is the Special Agent of the United States Government, in charge of the Brazos Agency. Captain Ross' long experience on the frontier, and superior knowledge of the Indian character, eminently fit him for the position he occupies. His salary is \$1,500 per annum.

The Comanche Reserve is about sixty miles distant from the Brazos Agency, and is located on the Clear Fork of the Brazos river, forty-five miles above its confluence with the main Brazos. Their Reserve extends over four leagues of land, and contains four hundred souls—all Comanches, known as the Southern band of that tribe. Their head chief is a good man, and has been a valuable auxiliary in the reclamation of these Indians from savage life. He is known by the name of Ketemesie. The Comanches have not made the same progress as the Brazos Reserve Indians—not that they are any more indolent or lazy, but because of their total estrangement heretofore from the manners and customs of the white man. The Indians on the Brazos Reserve have always lived near, and frequently among the white settlers, while the Comanches have been outside of all intercourse of a friendly nature. This agency is furnished with all necessary buildings, and, like the Brazos Agency, is supplied with competent and trustworthy farmers and artisans. The Comanches have a good crop this year, and will, most probably, make sufficient to bread themselves. Colonel M. Leeper is their Agent, at a salary of \$1,500 per annum.

The United States Government has been very liberal in its appropriations for the benefit of the reclaimed savage, and has spared neither trouble or expense in the furtherance of the peace-policy—a policy which is now beginning to show its good effects. It does justice to the Indian—is due to the cause of humanity, and reflects great credit upon the originators thereof.

Major R. S. Neighbors is the Supervising Agent of the Government for all the Texas Indians, at a salary of \$2,000 per annum. The Major is too well known throughout the country for any attempt to be made here eulogistic of his public services. To him, more than any other, should be ascribed the success of the Indian-feeding policy in Texas. The duties appertaining to the office of Supervising Agent are very onerous and responsible, and not unfrequently hazardous. His course towards the Indians must be scrupulously correct and straightforward; there cannot be one jot or tittle of deviation at all from the line of policy marked out. The Indian is liberal in extending his confidence, but it *must* be carefully cherished. His memory is the rock of ages; there is no "two ways" about it. Major Neighbors disburses annually about \$80,000 for the use of the Texas Indians.

Texas has wisely granted jurisdiction to the United States over ten miles adjoining each Reserve. This is to prevent the sale or traffic in intoxicating liquors. The civil authority has jurisdiction in all criminal cases, on both Reserves; as well have the Indians police regulations, of the strictest sort, for their own government. Their immediate agents are constituted magistrates, before whom all or any offenders are brought for trial. There is less theft or disturbance, of any kind, among these people, than there is among the same population of Americans. Suffice it that the Feeding or Peace-Policy in Texas is a success. It has demonstrated, beyond a doubt, that Indians can be civilized and reclaimed. The Brazos Reserve Indians have tended their own crops, which will compare favorably with any in the State; and have also kept from fifty to one hundred men on ranging service during the season, and have been great protection to the frontier.

Charles E. Barnard, Esq., is the authorized Government Indian Trader for both Reserves. Mr. B. has been trading with the Indians on the frontier for a period of fifteen years or more. He is well known to all the Indians in Texas, and enjoys their



entire confidence. It is nothing but justice to Mr. Barnard to say that his services have been invaluable to the Indian Agents in carrying out the views of the Federal Government. The trading with the Indians is not so profitable now as it was some years past, when the Indians depended upon their hunting for means of support. The trade in skins and peltries is entirely stopped, and the Indians now look to the products of their farms and stock-raising for support. They have generally good stocks of hogs, cattle and horses, and are doing well with them.

In 1858 there were reported on these reserves: Tonkawas, 250; Tehuacanas, 204; Wacoes, 171; Comanches, 380; Anadaquas, 235; Caddoes, etc., 249; total, 1,489. They had schools, and a missionary preached to them occasionally. But the same reasons which required the removal of the Cherokees from East Texas, rendered it imperative to remove the reserve Indians from Texas. After some disturbances between the Indians and the citizens, Major George H. Thomas, of the U. S. Army, in August, 1859, transferred the Indians to the Indian Territory.

The census tables for 1860 report only 403 Indians as residents in Texas. These were the Alabamas, etc., in Polk county.

During the civil war the Indians were comparatively quiet. Being within the Federal lines, many of them enlisted in the Union army. Some, however, came to the Confederates, and others remained neutral. Among these were the Kickapoos. To avoid the necessity of taking any part in the contest, about one thousand of this tribe determined to remove to Mexico, and started through Texas for the Rio Grande. When camped on Dove creek, a tributary of the Concho, they were discovered by the Texans, who were in pursuit of them with about four hundred Confederate soldiers and militia. The Indians were in a dense thicket. The Texans, with great gallantry, charged the thicket; but they were met with such a hot reception that they were compelled to fall back. The charge was renewed, time and again, but without dislodging the Indians. At night the assailants withdrew, having lost seventeen killed and twenty-five wounded. They intended the next morning to renew the fight, but a rain having set in, they returned to Camp Colorado and reported having killed fifty-three Indians, including two women and two children. The Indians, when they arrived at Piedras Negras, said that when they were discovered by the Texans they sent a flag of truce to let the Texans know that they only desired peaceably to pass to their new homes in Mexico. The flag was fired upon, (so they said) and their encampment, with the women and children, attacked. They reported that in the fight fourteen of their warriors were killed and eight wounded. For some years after this fight, the Kickapoos were troublesome, crossing the Rio Grande and committing depredations in Texas. Finally, in 1874-5, the United States Commissioners removed the most of them back to their former homes in the Indian Territory.

A report made to the Legislature, after a careful investigation by a committee, states that in the two years immediately after the close of the war, 162 persons had been killed in Texas by the Indians; forty-three had been carried into captivity and stolen. A volume might be written, detailing the particulars of these raids and murders.

For ten years after the close of the war, almost every month, with the full moon, came an Indian raid into some part of the frontier. Newspapers

were full of the harrowing details. It is not possible to give all these incidents. We give one taken from one of the newspaper accounts at the time it occurred. We knew the parties in former years. Mrs. Friend, the lady scalped, was a daughter of Rev. Joseph Dancer, one of the earliest preachers on the frontier. He was killed by the Indians a year before the raid described below. The little boy, who was carried into captivity, was finally recovered by his grandfather, Rev. Leonard S. Friend:

LLANO, LLANO Co., TEXAS, Feb. 11th, 1868.

"The most horrible Indian depredations were committed in this county, commencing on the evening of the 6th inst.

"The Indians, numbering twelve or fifteen, attacked the house of Mr. John S. Friend, about sixteen miles from this place, in Legion Valley. When first discovered by Mrs. Friend, (the only living witness of the awful scene), the Indians were in the yard, and directly commenced tearing down the house. The only resistance made was by Mrs. Friend, who contended as bravely as any woman that ever lived. The Indians succeeded in getting into the house. Mrs. Friend attempted to shoot one, but the gun was wrested from her hands; the Indian attempting to shoot her, she knocked the gun out of his hands with a chair. She afterwards knocked the Indian down with a smoothing iron. Mrs. Friend was then shot in the breast with an arrow, and fell, perhaps fainted. She was also badly cut across the hand, and shot through one arm: The shots were with an arrow. She was then scalped and left for dead. Fortunately she recovered sufficiently to watch the Indians start off. But one barbarous wretch, thinking there was possibly life remaining in his victim, returned and gave the arrow, sticking in her breast, several severe jerks backward and forward, to see if she would flinch. Mrs. Friend noticing the Indian returning, placed herself in exactly the position she was while being scalped, and remained as if lifeless during all this torture. She then saw the Indians take off as prisoners Mrs. Boy Johnson and child, Mrs. Babe Johnson and child, Miss Townsend, a little girl named — Cordle, and Mrs. Friend's little son—seven in all. After Mrs. Friend recovered slightly, she started to the widow Johnson's house, distant one and-a-half miles, where a Mr. Bradford and family were staying. Mr. Bradford pulled the arrow out of her breast, placed a cloth over her head and then fled to the woods, leaving her alone sitting before the fire, in which condition she remained until next morning. The attack was made before sun-down. Twenty-four hours passed before the physician at this place was called; at the same time word was received here of the affair. Every man that could possibly go, started immediately—a part going to the scene of the late fatal occurrence. Arriving in the night, we had to wait until morning to see the trail, which was thirty-six hours after the occurrence.

"One child, that of Mrs. Boy Johnson, was found next evening after taken, about three and-a-half or four miles from Mr. Friend's house. The next morning we found Mrs. Babe Johnson's child with its throat cut from ear to ear, and about ten o'clock of the same day, after trailing over one of the roughest mountains, we found both of the Mrs. Johnsons, murdered and

scalped. The same evening Miss Townsend was found murdered, scalped and horribly mutilated, too horribly to be described. The little Miss Cordle and Mr. Friend's son are supposed to be still in the hands of the Indians.

“Parties have watched passes, and tried to follow the trail, but the Indians have eluded all. Old Mr. Smith was killed and scalped, near the old Fort Mason crossing, on the same day of the other depredations.”





**TRADING WITH THE INDIANS.**



PART VIII.

---

BIOGRAPHICAL SKETCHES

OF

DISTINGUISHED CHARACTERS IN TEXAS.





## BIOGRAPHIES.

---

**ALLEN, EBENEZER**—A native of Maine; came to Texas during the Republic, and was Secretary of State under Jones' administration; Attorney-General under both Lamar's and Houston's second administrations, and filled the same office in the State, under Bell's administration. He was one of the earliest advocates of Texas railroads; and was one of the projectors and early managers of the Texas Central. He died in Virginia in 1863. He was then in the Confederate service; engaged in the torpedo business.

**ALLENS, of Houston**—Five brothers of this name have been residents of the city of Houston. A. C. and J. K. Allen came to Texas in 1832, and in 1836 bought a league of land on Buffalo Bayou and laid out the city of Houston. J. K. Allen died in 1838. A. C. Allen was Inspector of Customs on the Rio Grande, in 1849, and died in 1863. In 1836, three other brothers settled in Houston. Harvey H. Allen filled the office of Chief Justice of Harris county, and died in 1862. For more than forty years Samuel L. and H. R. Allen have been enterprising citizens of Houston. The latter, in 1870, represented Harris county in the Legislature.

**ALLEN, J. M.**—Born in Kentucky. At an early age, he entered the United States navy; left it to engage in the Greek revolution, and was with Lord Byron when he died at Missolongi, on the 12th of April, 1821; returned to to his native land in time to enlist in the unfortunate expedition to Tampico, in 1835; he escaped; came to Texas and commanded a cavalry company at the battle of San Jacinto. He was the first Mayor of Galveston, an office to which he was repeatedly re-elected. After annexation he was appointed United States Marshal, an office he held when he died, February 12, 1847.

**ALMONTE, DON JUAN N.**—A natural son of the patriot priest, Morelos. Foote gives the origin of the name as follows: "Morelos was at the head of his troops one day, when an infant, (whose birth was thus unceremoniously made known to him,) was brought into his sight by the mother. 'Al monte! Almonte,—to the mountain with the brat!' and Almonte was thenceforth his name." When the Republicans sent Herrera and Bean to the United States as diplomatic agents, Morelos sent young Almonte with them to be educated at an American college. The death of his father soon afterwards deprived Almonte of the means of prosecuting his studies, and he became a clerk in a hardware store in New Orleans. After the triumph of the Republicans in Mexico, in 1821, Almonte left Nacogdoches with

Bernardo Gutierrez, who had been appointed Governor of Tamaulipas. Leaving Bernardo on the Rio Grande, Almonte went on to the city of Mexico to push his fortunes. He attached himself to Santa Anna, whose star was then in the ascendant. In 1834 his chief sent him to Texas, where he spent several months making observations on the country and its inhabitants. Most of the time he was with Colonel Bean, the old friend of his father. When he returned to Mexico he made a report which furnishes us the best data we have as to the population and resources of Texas at that time. In 1836, Almonte was Santa Anna's private secretary and confidential adviser. After the re-establishment of Mexican authority, Almonte was to run the boundary between Texas and the United States, and then he was to be the Governor. General Rusk gives this account of Almonte's surrender at San Jacinto: "At the close of the fight, and just after sundown, Colonel Almonte came out of the woods with about 250 men. There were at that place not exceeding ten or fifteen Americans; and none of them could speak the Mexican language well. The prisoners were asked if they could speak English? Almonte answered in Spanish that they could not. They were then told in Spanish to form two and two deep and march with us to camp. They formed and commenced marching accordingly. Our few men were distributed around them as a guard. Most of us were very much fatigued, and such was the condition of the Mexicans, also. As we proceeded in this way, one of our men, who was so tired he could hardly walk, being incommoded by a Mexican who had dropped out of the line, cursed and threatened him in a very rough manner in English. This threat was immediately repeated to the Mexican in Spanish. I concluded that he, at least, must understand English very well, and that it was probably Almonte whom I saw before me. I therefore observed so him, 'you must be Colonel Almonte;' he replied in English, 'You speak well.' I then rode up to him and gave him my hand, saying to him, 'It affords me great pleasure to see you Colonel.' With great presence of mind and his customary politeness he responded, 'The pleasure is reciprocated.'" In the estimation of Almonte, defeat was not an extraordinary event in the life of a soldier of fortune. He conversed freely and without reserve with those Texans whose acquaintance he had formed two years before. There is no doubt but that his philosophic and cheerful temper had its effect upon the Texans, and reconciled them to the measures of the President and Cabinet in sparing the lives of Santa Anna and his officers.

In 1840 Almonte was Minister of War under Bustamente, and was instrumental in suppressing a rebellion inaugurated by his former friend Urrea. After Bustamente's overthrow, Almonte for a while supported himself by lecturing. On the return of Santa Anna to power, Almonte was sent as Minister to the United States. When Congress passed the bill for the annexation of Texas, Almonte denounced it and demanded his passports. He said "that America had committed the most unjust act recorded in history." In 1846 he was Minister to Great Britain; 1853 to the United States; 1856 again to Great Britain. In 1862, near Cordova, he pronounced in favor of the French; in 1863 he was head of the French Executive Council in Mexico; and in 1865 a member of the imperial household of Maxi-

millian. At the downfall of the Empire he sought refuge in France, where he died in 1869.

**ANDERSON, KENNETH L.**—Was Vice-President of the Republic in Jones' administration. He was a prominent candidate for Governor in 1845, and while making the canvass, was taken ill and died at Fantharps, in Anderson, Grimes county. Mr. Anderson was an eminent lawyer, and was a law partner of Thomas J. Rusk and J. Pinckney Henderson, at Nacogdoches.

**ARCHER, DR. BRANCH TANNER.**—Was a native of Virginia, and served a term in the Legislature of that State. He was in correspondence with Aaron Burr, and intended engaging in Burr's expedition, if that had not been broken up. After engaging in a duel in which his antagonist fell, he came to Texas. This was in 1831. He was soon afterwards sent with Geo. B. M'Kinstry to Anahuac, to remonstrate with Bradburn against the closing of the ports of Texas. Bradburn rescinded the order. He represented Brazoria county in the Convention of 1833 and also in the Consultation in 1835. He was President of the latter body, and after its adjournment, went as one of the Commissioners to the United States. He was Secretary of War during Lamar's administration and died at Mrs. Wharton's, in Brazoria county, September 22, 1856.

**ARREDONDO, JOAQUIN DE**—Was in early life a staunch Loyalist. In 1811 he captured Hidalgo; in 1813 he defeated Toledo and Perry in the battle of Medina, near San Antonio. In 1817, he captured and shot the unfortunate Mina, and his soldiers defeated and killed Perry at Goliad. The one redeeming trait in his character with Texans is the fact that he cordially entered into Austin's colonization scheme when he was commander of the eastern internal provinces, in 1819.

**AUSTIN, MOSES**—Was a native of Connecticut. When but twenty years of age, he married Miss Maria Brown, of Philadelphia, and soon afterward, in conjunction with his brother Stephen, entered into the mercantile business in Richmond, Virginia. They subsequently purchased the lead mines called Chessel's Mines, on New river, Wythe county, to which they removed, and established a regular system for smelting shot. There Stephen F. Austin and his sister Emily were born. This enterprise not proving entirely satisfactory, Moses Austin, having heard favorable reports of the lead mines in Missouri, determined to remove there, and through the influence of Baron Carondelet, then Governor of Louisiana, he secured a grant of the lead mines of Potosi, forty miles west of St. Genevieve. Having procured from the Spanish Consul the necessary passports, he started with his family on the untried route of travel. He crossed the mountains of Virginia and descended the Kanawha river into the Great West, on the last year of the last century, and laid the foundation of a settlement in what is now Washington county, Missouri. He opened the mine, put up the necessary machinery, and for a while carried on an extensive and lucrative business. At his residence, known as Durham

Hall, he dispensed a generous hospitality. The failure of the Bank of Missouri involved Mr. Austin in serious pecuniary embarrassments; but instead of giving up to despondency, this only served to rouse him to still grander enterprises. He formed the project of planting a colony of Anglo-Americans in the Spanish province of Texas. To make the necessary arrangements, Austin, in the fall of 1820, visited San Antonio, the capital of the province. He was coldly received by the Governor, and ordered to leave the province under pain of imprisonment. This was discouraging, but as he walked out of the Governor's office, he providentially met Baron De Bastrop, with whom he had been previously acquainted. Through De Bastrop's influence, Gov. Martinez was induced to give Austin a more favorable notice. Austin had become a Spanish subject when that country owned Louisiana in 1798, and of course the law against foreigners did not apply in his case. Through the same influence of De Bastrop, the members of the Ayuntamiento signed a petition to the commander of the eastern internal provinces at Monterey, praying that functionary to grant Austin's request, and permit him to introduce three hundred families into Texas. At that time, the country from the Sabine river to San Antonio was an uninhabited wilderness, the Gachupin war having depopulated the province. Mr. Kennedy says, that when Austin was two hundred miles from any settlement, he was robbed and deserted by his companions. Subsisting on acorns and nuts, he made his way eastward, and finally, in an enfeebled and exhausted condition, reached M'Goffin's settlement on the Sabine river. After resting a short time, he proceeded to his Missouri home. He did not doubt the success of his application, and in the spring of 1821, commenced making active preparations to remove to Texas. But a cold had settled on his lungs, and he continued rapidly to decline; and died at the residence of his son-in-law, Mr. James Bryan, June 10th. "Moses Austin," says Lamar, "maintained a reputation free from the suspicion of dishonor. His energy, disappointment could not dampen, nor misfortune subdue." A few days before his death, he received intelligence of the success of his application to the Spanish authorities, and he left an injunction to his son, Stephen F. Austin, to carry out his scheme for the Texas colony.

**AUSTIN, STEPHEN FULLER**—was born in Austinsville, Wythe Co, Virginia, November 3d, 1793. When but six years of age, his father's family moved to Missouri. After spending four years at an academy in New London, Connecticut, he completed his education at Transylvania University, in Kentucky. At the organization of Missouri into a territory, in 1818, Mr. Austin was elected a member of the Territorial Legislature. The next year he removed to the Territory of Arkansas, and was immediately appointed a circuit judge; an office he held until he resigned it to engage in the great providential work of his life, that of planting a colony in Texas. Indeed his settlement on Red River was with a view of opening a plantation to raise corn and other supplies for the colonists on their way to Texas. He was in New Orleans making preliminary arrangements, when he heard of the arrival at Natchitoches of Messrs. Seguin and Veramendi, the commissioners sent on to conduct Moses Austin to his colonial grant. Stephen

started at once to meet these gentlemen. At Natchitoches he heard of his father's death, and he at once determined to carry forward the colonial enterprise. With the commissioners and fourteen companions, he left Natchitoches, for San Antonio, July 5th, 1821. The names of Austin's companions were Edward Lovelace, Neil Casper, Henry Holstein, William Little, Joseph Polly, James Beard, William Wilson, James Hewitson, (afterwards an Empresario,) W. Smithers, and Messrs. Belew, Beard, Marple, Barre and Erwine. Austin was cordially received by Governor Martinez, and, after exploring the country, selected the rich bottom lands of the Colorado and Brazos rivers upon which to plant his colony. He immediately returned to New Orleans to perfect his plans.

*Schooner Lively Lost.*—Mr. Austin's means were limited, but he found a friend in Joseph H. Hawkins, Esq., a former school-mate at Transylvania. Mr. Austin, on the 14th of November, 1821, acknowledged the receipt of \$4,000, and agreed to convey to Hawkins one-half of the lands and town lots which the empresario should receive. (See contract in Life and Events, page 31.) With the money thus secured, Mr. Austin purchased the schooner Lively, and placed on board a supply of provisions and agricultural implements. With eighteen persons on board, she sailed from New Orleans for the mouth of the Colorado River, November 20, 1821, and was never heard of afterward.

*Austin's Second Trip.*—The same day the Lively sailed, Austin started a second time to Texas by land. At Natchitoches he was joined by ten companions; among them Mr. Ran. Foster, of Fort Bend County, was the hunter of the party. This company crossed the Brazos River on the last day of the year, and camped on the bank of a creek, which they, the next morning, named New Year's Creek. Mr. Austin hastened to the coast, where he waited for weeks for the appearance of the schooner. She was finally given up for lost, and he started for San Antonio. On his way to the city he met his brother, James Brown Austin, and the two went together to San Antonio.

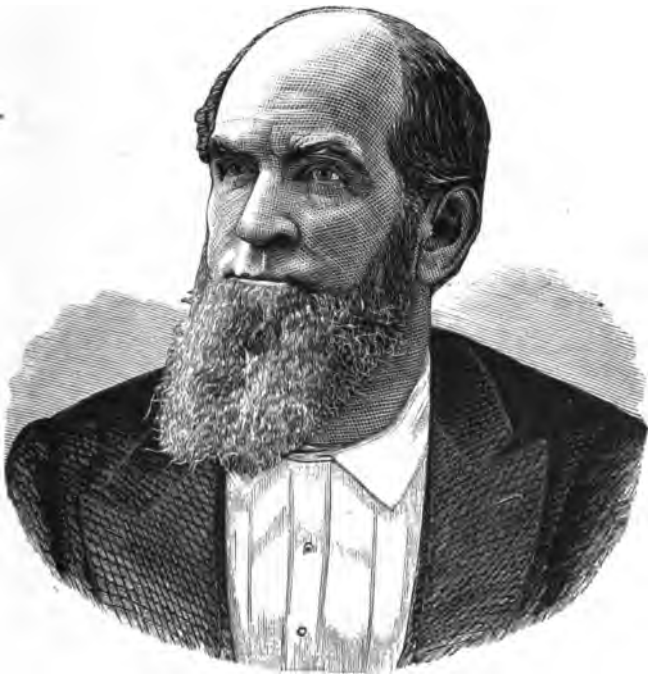
*Austin in Mexico.*—In the period which intervened since Moses Austin obtained his empresario grant, Mexico had thrown off the Spanish yoke and become a Republic. At San Antonio, Austin learned that it would be necessary to visit the City of Mexico to obtain a confirmation of his grant. He started with only two companions. They were intercepted on the Nueces River by a band of forty-four Comanche Indians. Fortunately the Indians were then at peace with the United States, though warring with Mexico. When they found out that Austin was an American, he was released and allowed to proceed upon his journey. From Monterey Austin had but a single companion, Capt. Lorenzo Christy who had been in Mina's expedition. To avoid being robbed, both were disguised, and appeared like very poor travelers. They reached the City of Mexico April 10th, 1822. Such was the unsettled condition of the country, ruled alternately by different factions, that Austin made but slow progress in his business. Finally, at the end of eight months he secured the passage of the general Colonization Law. This law was very generous, giving to each family a league of land for grazing purposes, and a labor of bottom land for cultivating. It also

made a liberal grant to the empresario who introduced the colonists. Finally, after a year's detention, Austin started back to Texas. He had acquired a knowledge of the language and institutions, which was of great value in his subsequent negotiations with the government. At Monterey, he was kindly received by the commandant, Philip De La Garza, and by the "deputacion," who invested him with ample authority to introduce his colonists, give them their land, and administer civil government.

*State of the Colony.*—Austin's long absence had a somewhat depressing influence upon his colonists, some of whom had abandoned the country; others had stopped in East Texas, and all felt insecure. His return, however, with a confirmation of all his authority, and with the Baron de Bastrop, who had been appointed Land Commissioner, soon changed the aspect of affairs. The town of San Felipe de Austin was laid out, and the land office opened and titles to their lands promptly issued to the settlers. Austin displayed admirable talents for his responsible position. His zeal for his colonists knew no bounds. As a legislator he prepared an admirable code of laws; and as the father and founder of the colony, he selected desirable homes for the immigrants, and gave them all practical assistance in preparing their houses and opening their farms. Combining in himself the functions of civil governor, military commander and judge of the court, he administered all departments with equal skill and fidelity. The colony prospered, immigrants continued to flock in, and during the year 1824 he had settled in the new colony the three hundred families required by his first contract.

*Other Contracts.*—Under the general Colonization Law, Austin, in 1825, entered into a second contract for the introduction of five hundred families, and in 1827 he took a third, for one hundred families, to be located above the San Antonio road, in Bastrop, Travis and Williamson Counties. Heretofore the coast leagues had been reserved from location, but in 1828 Austin took a contract to introduce three hundred families and place them on these littoral leagues. Of all the empresarios, Austin was the only one who was really successful in planting his colonies and fulfilling his contracts; and his success, considering the obstacles in his way, was remarkable. A report made to the Texas Senate by Austin's executor, James F. Perry, in 1837, states that he introduced in all 1,540 colonists, of whom 970 had received titles to their land before the land office was closed in 1835.

*Austin and the Fredonians.*—The part which Austin took in the troubles at Nacogdoches, in 1826-'7, has excited a good deal of comment and some severe criticism. Edwards had been badly treated; of that there can be but one opinion; but he and his friends acted hastily in unfurling the banner of Fredonia. They certainly should have consulted Austin and Bastrop and the people of the center of the colony, if they expected their co-operation. It has been assumed by most writers that at first Austin hesitated as to the course to be pursued. Foote intimates as much. But Foote was a warm personal friend of the Edwardses, with whom he unquestionably sympathized. Still, even he offers this excuse for Austin, "who," says Foote, "was unwilling to plunge into a war with a nation numbering 8,000,000 inhabitants. Entertaining such views, it is not at all astonishing that he



**RICHARD COKE.**





heard with deep regret of the revolt in Edwards' colony." In such a controversy, neutrality was impossible, and he did not attempt to occupy such a position. On the 22d of January, 1827, Austin issued the following address:

*"To the Inhabitants of the Colony:*

"The persons who were sent on from this colony by the Political Chief and Military Commandant to offer peace to the Nacogdoches madmen have returned—returned without having effected anything. The olive branch of peace which was held out to them has been insultingly refused, and that party have denounced massacre and desolation on this colony. They are trying to excite all the northern Indians to murder and plunder, and it appears as though they have no other object than to ruin and plunder this country. They openly threaten us with Indian massacre and the plunder of our property. \* \* \* To arms then, my friends and fellow-citizens, and hasten to the standard of our country.

"The first hundred men will march on the 26th. Necessary orders for mustering and other purposes will be issued to commanding officers. Union and Mexico.  
"S. F. AUSTIN."

Austin's course in this matter received the approval of his cotemporaries, and history will doubtless pronounce a similar verdict. Judge Burnet says: "It was quite inevitable, without supposing Austin an infatuated visionary, which he was not, that he should promptly unite with his lawful chief in suppressing an insurrection so wild and impracticable." On the same point Judge Bell says: "This Fredonian disturbance has been little understood, and when the details of it are made known it will be seen that the movement could lay no just claim to be considered as an honorable and praiseworthy effort in the cause of freedom and right, and that Austin's course in reference to it was the only one that a man of sense and honor could pursue."

*Austin in Congress.*—During the eventful years 1831 and 1832, Austin was at Saltillo, representing Texas in the Legislature of Coahuila and Texas. He did not therefore participate in the events which resulted in the capture of the Mexican garrisons at Anahuac, at Velasco, and at Nacogdoches. As soon as news of these transactions reached him, he hurried home. He came by water from the mouth of the Rio Grande, and was accompanied by General Mexia, who had been sent out by Santa Anna to secure the adhesion of Texas to the (so-called) Republican party, of which Santa Anna was then the champion. Their rallying cry was the Constitution of 1824. At a meeting of citizens of the colony, at Turtle Bayou, on the 13th of June, they had, with entire unanimity, upheld it. Austin was welcomed back by the people with every demonstration of joy, with balls, speeches, firing of cannon, etc., at the mouth of the Brazos, Brazoria, and especially at San Felipe. Six miles below the latter place he was met by a military company, under Lieutenant Gray, and escorted into town, where he was received and addressed by Wm. H. Jack, Esq., in behalf of his fellow-citizens.

"Such a boon then," says Col. Jack, "as is due to him who has faithfully discharged his duties, we grant to you, with an assurance that the man whom the people have delighted to honor, still has our most unbounded

confidence. The occasion of your most unexpected return to Texas will long be remembered. The present is an epoch in the political affairs of our country on which the pen of the historian will dwell with peculiar pleasure. In conclusion, I cannot, perhaps, better express my own feelings and those of our common countrymen than by saying, Well done, good and faithful servant; thou art welcome, thrice welcome to thy home and to thy friends; and may health and happiness always attend thee!"

This was a proud day to the father and founder of Texas. Austin replied in a happy speech, and was then received by the Mexican soldiers who had surrendered with Ugartechea at Velasco. These soldiers fraternized with the colonists. After these speeches, all sat down to a sumptuous banquet; speeches were delivered, cannon fired, toasts drank, and there was every demonstration of public joy.

*Commissioner to Mexico.*—Austin was not long permitted to remain at home. The great desire of the Texans now was to have a separate State government. The province had been temporarily attached to Coahuila. The population was now sufficiently large to form a State. In April, 1833, a Convention met at San Felipe, to form a State Constitution to present to the National Government. A memorial was drawn up, urging the necessity of erecting Texas into a State. Three commissioners were selected to carry the constitution and memorial to the city of Mexico. Austin was the only one who undertook the long journey. When he arrived at the National Capital he found the country in a state of feverish political excitement. Santa Anna had succeeded Pedraza as President, and was rapidly developing his plans for a purely personal and consolidated government. Moreover, the capture of the troops by the colonists in Texas had thrown suspicion upon the loyalty of the Anglo-American colonists. Under these circumstances, Austin had no easy task before him. While all parties were willing to trust the commissioner, they distrusted his constituents, and could not permit the liberty-loving, self-reliant colonists of Texas to have a government of their own and in their own hands. The better to carry out his purposes of self-aggrandizement, Santa Anna had retired to his hacienda, leaving Vice-President Farias to administer the government. Austin's papers were presented to Congress and referred to a committee. In the mean time, in addition to political troubles, the city suffered from a fearful visitation of cholera. During the long and vexatious delay, Austin became somewhat impatient, and urged his suit with such importunity that Farias became offended. Seeing no immediate prospect of obtaining his request, Austin, in one of his letters to the citizens of San Antonio, advised them to form a *de facto* government, under a provision of the Constitution of 1824. Finally, on the 10th of December, 1833, Austin started for his home. But some one in San Antonio had sent a copy of his letter back to Farias. That suspicious officer thought he detected treason in the epistle, and immediately dispatched a messenger for Austin's arrest. He was overtaken at Saltillo, carried back to the city, and thrown into a dungeon, where for a time he was even deprived of his books and papers, and pen and ink.

*Austin in Prison.*—What gave Farias mortal offense, was a sentence in

Austin's letter which recommended that "All the municipalities should come without delay to an understanding—organizing a local government for Texas as a State of the Mexican Confederation, under the law of the 7th of May, 1824." And he added in his letter to the municipality of Bexar, "I trust you will lose no time in addressing a communication to every corporation, exhorting them to concur in the organization of a local government, independent of Coahuila, even should the Supreme Government of Mexico refuse its consent."

During his imprisonment, Austin was visited by his old friend, Father Muldoon, a priest who had ministered to Austin's colonists. Muldoon furnished him with a blank memorandum book and a pencil. With this the prisoner whiled away his lonely hours. In these musings we see the character of the man. We make some extracts: "In my first exploring trip in Texas, in 1821, I had a very good old man with me, who had been raised on the frontier, and was a very good hunter. We had not been many days in the wilderness, before he told me, 'You are too impatient to make a hunter.' Scarcely a day passed that he did not say to me, 'You are too impatient—you wish to go too fast.' Before my trip was ended, I saw the benefit of his maxim, and I determined to adopt it as a rule in settling the colony which I was then about to commence in Texas. Some have accused me of adhering to this rule and to a system of conciliation with too much obstinancy. I do not think I have; though perhaps, I am not a competent judge. I can, however, say, that I believe the greatest error I ever committed was in departing from that rule as I did in the city of Mexico, in October, 1833. I lost patience at the delays in getting the business of the people of Texas dispatched, and in a moment of impatience, wrote an imprudent and perhaps an intemperate letter to the Ayuntamiento of Bexar. This was October 2d.

"I can say with truth that a combination of circumstances occurred about that time to make me impatient; and my intentions were pure and patriotic, as a Mexican citizen. I had every reason to believe that the people of Texas would not suffer the month of November to pass without organizing a local government, and in that event, it is very evident that it would have been much better to organize a harmonious consultation of the respective local authorities of the municipalities, than by a popular commotion. The circumstances of the case, and the purity of my intentions, are certainly worthy of consideration. Texas, when I left in April, was almost in a state of nature, as to its local government; it was in danger of anarchy, on the one hand, and of being destroyed by the uncivilized and hostile Indians, on the other. These things crazed me, and I lost patience." While these reflections show that Colonel Austin was in a depressed state of mind, and a little disposed to blame himself unnecessarily, they reveal the singular purity and strict conscientiousness of the man.

We add another short extract from the sad record of his prison musings. It is dated Sunday, February 23d, 1834: "Philanthropy is but another name for trouble. I have labored with pure intentions to benefit others, and especially to advance and improve my adopted country, and what have I gained? Enemies, persecutions, imprisonment: accused of ingratitude to

Mexico, which is the most unjust of all accusations that could possibly be brought against me. If I have been ungrateful to any one, it is to myself and family, for I have neglected my own and their interests to labor for others. My poor sister, who removed to the wilderness of Texas with her large family, owing to my solicitations; and left a comfortable home and a large circle of warm and kind friends. My poor sister! How she is suffering on my account! How happy I could have been on a farm alongside of my brother-in-law, free from all the cares and difficulties that now surround me! But I thought it was my duty to obey the call of the people and go to Mexico as their agent. I have sacrificed myself to serve them, and in all probability the only return I shall receive will be abuse and ingratitude. It is horrible that I should have lived to find myself on the verge of misanthropy—soured and disgusted with mankind." But we have given enough from the sad record of Austin's prison life.

The imprisonment of their empresario and commissioner produced a profound impression in Texas. On the 28th of April the Ayuntamiento of San Felipe, R. M. Williamson, Chairman, and W. B. Travis, Secretary, prepared and sent to Mexico a long memorial, praying for his release. The other municipalities adopted similar measures, and Peter W. Grayson and Spencer H. Jack were selected to carry these petitions to Mexico. Though they did not secure Austin's release, these proceedings afforded him great satisfaction, as showing the interest felt for him in Texas.

On the 12th of June, 1834, Austin's condition was somewhat improved, as he was transferred to more comfortable quarters. There was some talk of trying him for treason, and he earnestly desired to have his case judicially investigated, but he could find no court of competent jurisdiction. The judges all refused to have anything to do with the case. They knew that there were no real charges against him, and that his imprisonment was wholly unwarranted.

*Austin's Enemies at Home.*—Writing from his prison on the 25th of August, Austin alludes to certain plotters in Texas, of whom it is painful to speak. We would remain silent, but the truth of history requires exposure. He says:

"President Santa Anna is friendly to Texas, and to me, (of this I have no doubt,) and would have set me at liberty long since; and in fact, issued an order to that effect in June, had not some statements arrived about that time from the State Government of Coahuila and Texas against me; which I understand, have contributed to keep me in prison so long. It is said the report is founded solely on the statement of some influential persons who live in Texas. Who these persons are I know not. It is affirmed they are North Americans by birth, and I am told if I am not imprisoned for life and totally ruined in property and reputation, it will not be for want of exertion and industry on the part of some of my countrymen who live in Texas. Whether all this be true, I know not. I know I am unwilling to believe it. I am also told that no efforts were left untried last winter and spring to prejudice the members of the Legislature and State Government against me at Monclova, last winter." The persecutions to which Austin in this letter alludes were originated and carried out by a merciless party of land-

sharks who had flocked to Monclova. That corrupt Legislature sold or gave away to these men eight hundred leagues of land. They well knew that if Austin were at liberty he would expose their rascality. He had already mortally offended one of this party by prohibiting him from locating some eleven-league claims on the best unoccupied land in his colony. Austin was determined that the good land should be reserved for *bona fide* settlers. In a letter to D. C. Barrett, Esq., in 1835, Mr. Austin, alluding to these transactions in Texas lands, says: "In 1833 thirty square leagues of land were voted by the State Legislature to a young man, (who had previously received a grant of eleven leagues,) as pay for one year's salary as judge! Some eight hundred square leagues were sold by these legislators in 1834 and 1835, to speculators, principally foreigners, and to themselves; for the same legislators who passed the law, for a part of this sale, were purchasers at from fifty to seventy-five and a hundred dollars per square league." It is no wonder that such a class of unmitigated scoundrels wanted so incorruptible a man as Austin kept out of the way, even if he languished in a Mexican prison. What made them more anxious on the subject was the fact that Austin while in prison had been re-elected to the Legislature. It was well known that if he appeared and took his seat in the Legislature, all these plundering schemes would be at once exposed and defeated.

We again quote from his letter to Barrett: "At one time I am villified for being too Mexican; too much the friend of Mexicans; too confiding in them. At another I am abused for yielding to the popular opinion, and for representing that opinion in good faith." Those familiar with the history of those times and men cannot doubt that Austin was truly loyal to his adopted country, and faithful to the interests of his colony; but he shared the fate of most conservatives; he incurred the hatred of extreme men of all parties.

*His Welcome Home.*—Finally, after an absence of two years and four months, Austin was permitted to return to Texas, about the first of September, 1835. On the eighth, at a meeting of about a thousand of the citizens, Austin said: "I cannot refrain from returning my unfeigned thanks for the flattering sentiment with which I have just been honored, nor have I words to express my satisfaction on returning to this, my more than native country, and meeting so many of my friends and companions in its settlement. I left Texas in April, 1833, as the public agent of the people for the purpose of applying for the admission of this country into the Mexican Confederation as a State separate from Coahuila. This application was based upon the constitutional and vested rights of Texas, and was sustained by me in the city of Mexico to the utmost of my abilities. No honorable means were spared to effect the objects of my mission, and to oppose the forming of Texas into a Territory, which was attempted. I rigidly adhered to the instructions and wishes of my constituents, so far as they were enumerated to me. My efforts to serve Texas involved me in the labyrinth of Mexican politics. I was arrested and have suffered a long imprisonment. I consider it my duty to give an account of these events to my constituents, and will therefore, at this time merely observe that I have never, in any manner, agreed to anything that would compromise the

constitutional or vested rights of Texas. These rights belong to the people, and can only be surrendered by them. \* \* \* \* The revolution in Mexico is drawing to a close. The object is to change the form of government, destroy the Federal Constitution of 1824, and establish a consolidated government. The States are to be converted into provinces. \* \* \* With these explanatory remarks, I will give as a toast, 'The Constitutional rights and the security and peace of Texas; they ought to be maintained; and jeopardized as they now are, they demand a general consultation of the people.'"

In reference to this reception, Yoakum says: "The old pioneers who had come with Austin to the country gathered around and received him as one risen from the dead. Such demonstrations of regard were fully reciprocated by Austin. He was a genial lover of his race, and especially of those to whose happiness he had devoted the best energies of his life. If there was any one desire nearer to his heart than any other, it was to see his colony prosper. He was greatly distressed to find Texas in her unsettled condition. "I had hoped," said he, "to have found her in peace and tranquility, but regret to find commotion; all disorganized, all in anarchy, and threatened with immediate hostilities." This state of things was mostly due to the revolution in the Siamese-twin-sister State of Coahuila; where there were then two capitals and two rival governors. As Texas recognized neither of these governors, she was without an established civil government. However, by common consent, San Felipe was looked upon as the capital of the Province, and the committee of safety which had been organized there was expected to give a general direction to public affairs. Austin was at once elected chairman of this committee or council.

*Austin Commander of the Army.*—The volunteers who had repulsed Castenado at Gonzales were still in camp on the Guadalupe river, but without any recognized leader; nor could any man in camp harmonize the conflicting elements. Under these circumstances, some of the most prominent men, including Grayson, Dr. Miller, P. C. Jack, and others, wrote to San Felipe requesting that Austin be sent out as commander. To this the committee assented, and Austin started immediately for headquarters. On his arrival, the volunteers by acclamation elected him as their commander.\*

The new commander promptly reorganized the army and started for San Antonio. He reached the Mission La Espada on the 20th of October. Wishing to approach nearer the city, on the 27th he sent forward a reconnoitering party of about ninety men, under Colonels Fannin and Bowie. This party fought the battle of Concepcion on the 28th. On the 2d of November, Austin moved up nearer and prepared for a close investment of the

\*The following gentlemen constituted his staff: Warren D. C. Hall, Adjutant and Inspector-General; David B. Macomb, Assistant Inspector; William H. Watson, Judge Advocate; W. P. Smith, Surgeon-General; Patrick C. Jack, Quartermaster-General; Valentine Bennett, Assistant Quartermaster; Peter W. Grayson, and William T. Austin, Aide-de-camp. Moses Austin Bryan was his Private Secretary. John H. Moore was elected Colonel; Edward Burleson, Lieutenant-Colonel, and Alexander Somervell, Major. William H. Jack was appointed Brigade Inspector.

city. Occasional skirmishes took place, and the fight known as the "Grass Fight," occurred on the 26th of November.

*Commissioner to the United States.*—Two days after the Grass Fight, Austin was officially notified that it was the wish of the Executive Council that he should go to the United States as one of the commissioners to secure funds to aid the cause of Texas. He immediately resigned the command of the army. In presenting his commission, the Council also gave him a very flattering compliment, and commended him to the people of the United States as "one in whose aid we repose the strongest hopes in our present struggle for freedom and existence, and that we extend to him the hand of parting love and greeting, with hopes of his success and speedy return to the bosom of his grateful countrymen." This mission was a difficult and delicate one. Texas had not at that time declared her independence. The aim, at first, was for a Province still owing allegiance to Mexico. The commissioners met with greater success than they could have anticipated. "General Austin," says Yoakum, "was particularly successful. His long service in Texas, and his known truthfulness and simplicity of character, gave great weight to what he said. His address at Louisville, which was widely published, presented the claims of Texas upon the civilized world for sympathy and aid in such a manner as to bring her both." It is stated that he pledged his private fortune for the repayment of the loans advanced in the cause of the country. ✓

On the 9th of May, 1836, he left Washington City on his return to Texas. When he arrived he found the country very much excited over the contemplated release of Santa Anna. The captive President had great confidence in Austin, and in a private interview requested him to use his influence to secure the friendly offices of General Jackson as a mediator to secure Santa Anna's release. Austin wrote to Jackson, and also wrote to General Gaines, suggesting the propriety of the latter removing his headquarters to Nacogdoches, to overawe the Indians. With this request General Gaines complied, but he was soon ordered back east of the Sabine.

*A Candidate for President.*—Soon after Austin returned, President Burnet issued his proclamation for a general election. Austin's friends urged him to become a candidate for the Presidency. To this general call he responded: "Influenced by the great governing principle that has governed my actions since I came to Texas, which is to serve this country in any capacity in which the people might see proper to employ me, I shall not decline the highly responsible and difficult one now proposed, should the majority of my fellow citizens elect me." As the canvass proceeded, party spirit ran high, and the most absurd charges were openly made or secretly insinuated against Gen. Austin. These charges, though groundless, affected the people; especially those who had recently immigrated to the country, and were personally unacquainted with the empresario. And they deeply grieved his sensitive nature. In a letter to Gail Borden, published in the *Texas Telegraph*, he replied at length to these charges. After showing their absurdity, he says: "The people ought to be competent to analyze these matters and judge for themselves. They are, however, liable to be misled by wrong impressions, but will do justice in the end, and I

assure you that it will be no personal mortification to me individually, if I am not elected, while such erroneous impressions exist. I have one proud consolation which nothing can deprive me of, and that is the approbation of my own conscience, and the certainty that all I have done since I came to Texas, in 1821, will bear the test of the most rigid scrutiny. I do not pretend by this to say that I have not erred in judgment, and perhaps, from imprudent counsel, but I do say, that no man has labored with purer intentions, or with a more ardent and disinterested desire to promote the prosperity and happiness and liberty of Texas; and I also say, that I consented to become a candidate at the election with great reluctance. I have been absent from Texas, on public business, for about three years. During this time my individual affairs have been neglected, and much of the old colonizing business remained unclosed. It was my wish and intention to devote this year to these objects, at the same time giving all the aid I could, as a citizen, to the public cause." He failed to be elected. The *eclat* which the victory of San Jacinto had given to Houston secured the elevation of that gentleman to the Presidential chair of the new Republic.

*Austin Secretary of State.*—Under the new order of things Austin became Secretary of State; and entered immediately upon his duties. A prime measure with the Administration was to secure the annexation of Texas to the American Union: The people had almost unanimously approved that measure at the late election. One of the first acts of the Secretary was to prepare instructions for the diplomatic agents to be sent to Washington. He was a good part of three days, and portions of the nights, engaged in this work. The accommodations for the Government at Columbia, were very inadequate. The weather was cold, and Austin was compelled to write in a room without fire.

*His Death and Character.*—The exposure in an unfinished and unfurnished room brought on a cold, which was succeeded by an attack of pneumonia, of which he died, at the house of George B. M'Kinstry, in Columbia, December 27th, 1836. The following order was immediately issued from the War Department:

"The father of Texas is no more! The first pioneer of the wilderness has departed! Stephen F. Austin, Secretary of State, expired this day, at half-past twelve o'clock, at Columbia, As a testimony of respect to his high standing, undeviating moral rectitude, and as a mark of the Nation's gratitude for his untiring and invaluable services, all officers, civil and military, are requested to wear crape on the right arm for the space of thirty days. All officers commanding posts, garrisons or detachments, will as soon as information is received of this melancholy event, cause 23 guns to be fired, with an interval of five minutes between each; and also have the garrison and regimental colors hung with black during the space of mourning for the illustrious dead.

"By order of the President.

"WM. S. FISHER, *Secretary of War.*"

His remains were accompanied by President Houston and his Cabinet, both Houses of Congress, and other officers of the Government, to the family burying ground, at Peach Point, Brazoria county. His relatives





**RICHARD B. HUBBARD.**



have placed over the grave a marble slab bearing this inscription: "General Stephen F. Austin, son of Moses and Mary Austin, born 3d of November, 1793, in Austinville, State of Virginia. Departed this life on the 27th of December, 1836, at Columbia, Republic of Texas, aged 43 years, 1 month and 24 days."

General Austin was never married. His home when he came first to Texas was with the family of Mr. Castleman, on the Colorado river. After the removal of his brother-in-law, Mr. James F. Perry, to the colony, his home was with his sister at the Peach Point plantation, in Brazoria county. He always regarded his colonists as his family, and labored for their welfare with true paternal solicitude and fidelity. No one can study the history of his eventful life without forming a high estimate of his great abilities and moral worth. We give some extracts showing how those well qualified to judge have recorded their appreciation of his character.

Kennedy says: "We have seen the perils he braved; the obstacles he surmounted; his struggles with the marauders in the wilderness; his sufferings in a Mexican prison; his duties and entanglements, civil, military, political and financial. In every period of his career the spirit of order, equity, fortitude and perseverance is apparent. Even those who proscribed his patriotism paid homage to his personal worth." General Cos, when he first entered Texas and found Austin at the head of the insurgent force, addressed him individually in terms of high respect. Colonel Almonte has eulogized "the admirable constancy" with which he followed up his enterprise in Texas. For fifteen years did he pursue his object with unwavering rectitude and untiring zeal; and he lived long enough to lay the foundation of a flourishing State amidst the bloodshed and distractions of civil strife.

Ex-President Lamar says: "The claims of Stephen Austin upon the people of Texas were of the strongest kind. He was not only the founder of our Republic, but scarcely a blessing flowed to our country which may not be fairly attributed to his unwearied exertions for its welfare; while almost every calamity which has befallen it, might have been averted by adhering to his wise and prudent counsels. The world has afforded but few examples of superior intelligence and sagacity; and as for disinterested and extended philanthropy; his long suffering for the weal of others; his patient endurance under persecutions; his benevolent forgiveness of injuries, and his final sacrifice of health, happiness and life, in the service of his country—all conspire to place him without a rival among the first of patriots and the best of men."

We conclude this sketch with a paragraph from the pen of Judge James H. Bell: "When Austin entered the Province of Texas in the summer of 1821, there was but one settlement from the Sabine to San Antonio. This was Nacogdoches, and he says in his journal, that there were in that place but three unmarried men and one family, when he passed through it. The sound of the axe had never been heard in the virgin forests of the Brazos and Colorado. The tall savage roamed the woods and built his camp-fire by the crystal stream, without dreaming that the white man was coming to plant corn in his hunting grounds. How changed was the scene! The settlers came, following their young and adventurous leader to where

the tall cane-brakes attested the land's fertility. They brought with them the rifle, the axe, the plough and the seed corn. Soon the smoke ascended from a hundred chimneys; and where before the monarch oaks waved their proud branches, like so many scepters, over the subject forest, were now to be seen fields of luxuriant corn, yielding ample returns to the industry of man. The wild beasts of the woods had been driven from their lairs; and the wilder men, who strove with bow and spear to drive out the pale faces, had been subdued. When rebellion against the constituted authorities which the settlers had sworn to respect, raised its banner in a neighboring part of the State, Austin called on his colonists to do their duty in maintaining the laws, and he was promptly told that three hundred good rifles would follow him to battle. He might well be proud of his position and his achievements. He might well feel that he had acquired an indisputable title to the respect of mankind. And that respect his memory will certainly receive. Circumstances inseparable from the settlement and growth of a new country, and from changes of government, have had the effect to distract the minds of men from inquiry into his character and services. But history will one day adorn her page with a delineation of his high and spotless character, and with the story of his long, arduous and successful services to his country. His fame will grow as the State which he founded is destined to grow in prosperity and influence. And when the capital which bears his name shall have become a proud city, and when all the hills that rise around it, and the noble plains that are spread out before it, shall wear the splendid and blooming aspect which the plastic hand of art and industry creates, then the name of the pioneer who opened the way for civilization and for social refinements to enter where all before was wild and rude, and desolate, will have been placed on the bright roll that bears to future ages the names of the worthies of the past."

**AUSTIN, JAMES BROWN.**—A younger brother of Stephen, came to Texas in 1822. He spent a year in San Antonio learning the Spanish language, after which he became a merchant and a planter in Brazoria county. In partnership with John Austin, he erected the first cotton gin-house in Brazoria county. It was subsequently burned, and the place has been since known as the burnt gin place. In 1829 he went to New Orleans to buy goods and died of the yellow fever in that city.

**AUSTIN, HENRY.**—A cousin of the above; was, according to the statement of his sister, Mrs. Holly, in his seventeenth year, the commander of an East-India merchantman. He visited Mexico and obtained an empresario contract for introducing colonists on the Rio Grande river. The revolutionary state of the country interfered with the settlement of his colony, and he brought his vessel to the Brazos, and was the first to navigate that stream. His boat, the *Ariel*, was wrecked at Lynchburg. Captain Austin settled at Bolivar, Brazoria county. His son, Edward T. Austin, is a practicing lawyer in Galveston.

**AUSTIN, JOHN.**—Was a native of New Haven, Connecticut. Mrs. Holly says that when but a youth the spirit of adventure seized him, and he

enlisted as a common sailor before the mast. For years his parents had no word from him. Being in New Orleans when Long was organizing his expedition against Mexico, he joined him and was chosen captain of a company. Having shared the fate of that unfortunate command, he found himself a prisoner in the city of Mexico. It was fortunate for Austin that he had formerly been acquainted, at Yale college, with Mr. Poinsett, who was then the United States Minister at Mexico. Through Austin's influence with Poinsett Long's men were liberated, and those who chose to go were sent to Norfolk, Va., in the ship of war John Adams. S. F. Austin was then in Mexico; the two bearing the same name soon became acquainted, and John Austin and B. R. Milam determed to accompany the Empresario to his new colony. John Austin became an active and useful citizen. In 1832 he was elected one of the *alcaldes* of Brazoria. He was the commander of the Texans in the battle of Velasco, and to him Colonel Ugartechea surrendered the fort. In giving an account of this battle, subsequently, to General Mexia, Austin said. "We are farmers and not soldiers, therefore desire that the military commandants shall not interfere with us at all. Since 1830, we have been pretty much governed militarily, and in such a despotic manner that we were finally driven to arms, to resist (restrain) within their limits the military subalterns of the Government." After detailing the arbitrary acts of Bradburn, Austin goes on: "Consequently we were compelled to oppose them. We attacked Fort Velasco on the 26th of June, with 112 farmers, hastily collected, without discipline, and badly armed; and after an obstinate and bloody engagement of eleven hours, it surrendered on the terms expressed in the enclosed copy of the capitulation—every article of which has been strictly complied with on our part; besides furnishing the provisions needed for the troops." Mexia was satisfied with this representation. As the Texans had already declared for the Constitution of 1824, and for Santa Anna, its champion, the troops affiliated readily with them.

The gallantry and skill displayed by Austin in this battle secured his election to the office of Brigadier-General of the militia over the equally gallant William H. Wharton. In 1833, the Asiatic cholera visited Texas, and Austin fell a victim to its ravages. His aged father, who came to take charge of his son's family, also died of the same disease. Had John Austin lived, he would no doubt, says Mrs. Holly, have borne a conspicuous part in the Texas revolution.

AUSTIN, WILLIAM T.—Brother of the above; came to Texas in 1830. In 1835 he was Aid-de camp, successively, to S. F. Austin and to Burleson. The latter compliments him very highly, for gallant conduct at the taking of San Antonio. In 1836 he was Aid to Houston. While the army was falling back from Gonzales, Austin was sent to the Brazos for cannon. At Brazoria he met Adjutant-General John A. Wharton, who informed him that the guns and ammunition had already been forwarded to the army from Columbia. They never reached their destination. In excusing himself for the retreat from the Colorado, General Houston pleaded the want of the cannon for which he had sent. Why they failed to reach him has never been explained; at any rate the arrival of the Twin Sisters at the Brazos,

and the victory of San Jacinto, more than atoned for their loss. By the orders of General Wharton, Colonel Austin took command of the port of Velasco, and made such preparation as he was able to resist the expected advance of Urrea. He thus failed to be at San Jacinto. After the revolution, he filled a number of offices in Brazoria county, and was for years the clerk of the county court. In 1863 he was in the Confederate service, as Captain of the Coast Guards at Houston. He died in Galveston, in February, 1874.

**BAKER, MOSELY**—Came from Alabama to Texas in 1834 or 1835. He was one of the first to raise a company for the campaign in 1836, and one of those ordered arrested by Ugartechea, at San Felipe. It was Baker's company that offered effectual resistance to Santa Anna, and prevented him from crossing the Brazos, at that place. While Baker was in command at that point, the town was burned, Baker said by Houston's order. But Houston always contended that his orders had been misunderstood. Baker's company behaved with distinguished gallantry at San Jacinto, and he was himself slightly wounded. He represented Galveston in the Congress of the Republic in 1838-39; and died of yellow fever, in Houston, November 4th, 1848.

**BARRET, D. C.**—Was a lawyer by profession. He represented Bastrop in the Consultation in 1835, and was also a member of the Executive Council. He was one of the Commissioners sent by the Council to remonstrate with Cos against the arrest of certain citizens who had been proscribed. Barrett was a warm personal friend of Stephen F. Austin

**BASTROP, P. N. TUT**—Or, as Saucedo gives his name, Felipe Henrique Neri, Baron De Bastrop, was a native of Prussia, and when very young entered the army as a soldier of fortune, under the great Frederick. Soon afterwards he offered himself to the King of Spain, who sent him on a special mission to Mexico. While Louisiana was under Spanish domination, Bastrop, through the influence of De Galvez, obtained an empresario grant to settle thirty miles square, between the Mississippi and Red rivers. Bastrop ceded four hundred thousand acres of this land, lying on the Washita, to Aaron Burr, where the latter expected to plant a colony, as a nucleus for his expedition to the southwest. When Louisiana was re-sold to France, De Bastrop became a citizen of San Antonio, Texas. When that place was visited by Moses Austin in 1821, Bastrop became deeply interested in Austin's colonization scheme. He was then one of the alcaldes of the city. In 1824 he became Land Commissioner, and resided in the new town of San Felipe. In 1824, and again in 1827, he represented Texas in the Legislature of Coahuila and Texas; and died in 1828 or 1829.

**BAYLOR, R. E. B.**—Was a native of Kentucky, who in early life removed to Alabama. He became an active politician, and at one time represented his district in the United States Congress. He came to Texas during the days of the Republic, and was soon afterward appointed District Judge. He

was re-appointed to the same office after annexation, and held the office until he felt that advancing age required him to retire to private life. He was a member of the Constitutional Convention in 1845; and also a leading member and minister in the Baptist church; and his denomination named "Baylor University" in his honor. He died at his home, near Independence, Washington county, in December, 1872.

BEAN, ELLIS P.—Was a native of Tennessee. When but sixteen years of age, his father, at his own urgent solicitation, supplied him with a flat-boat load of western produce to trade on down the river. At the Muscle shoals the boat was capsized, and Bean escaped with nothing but the clothes he had on. He, however, continued the trip. At Natchez he formed the acquaintance of Philip Nolan, then collecting a company for catching mustang horses in Texas. Bean joined this expedition, and was elected second in command. When at the block house or fort, near the present town of Tehuacana, they were overtaken by a party of Spaniards under Musquis, on the 21st of March, 1801. Nolan was killed, and his companions made prisoners. Bean, upon whom the command devolved, was bitterly opposed to a surrender; but Musquis promised that the Americans should be sent to Natchez and released, and the others insisted on surrendering. On reaching Nacogdoches they were chained two and two, and marched to San Antonio, and then to the Rio Grande. According to Mexican custom, these prisoners were frequently moved from one prison to another. Bean resorted to various expedients to make money to supply his necessities. At San Luis Potosi, where he staid for more than a year, he followed shoemaking. At Chihuahua he set up a hatter's shop; and manufactured such superior hats that he soon enjoyed a monopoly of the hat trade. He was very ingenious. While at Acapulco he learned that they needed some one to prepare and set the fuse for blasting rocks, and he proclaimed himself an adept at the business, though in fact he knew nothing about it. He succeeded in blasting rocks and escaping his guard. But he was soon recaptured. He had secreted himself in an empty cask on board a vessel, and was betrayed by the Portuguese cook. He was returned to a dark cell, where he had previously been confined, and where he was cordially welcomed back by a white lizard he had previously tamed. He was next taken out to prepare some rude machinery for making powder, which he readily accomplished.

In 1811-12, the revolution was in progress, and the viceroy, who was in need of troops, offered Bean his liberty, if he would enlist in the royal army. This he readily consented to do; with the intention, as he said, of going over to the revolutionists on the first opportunity. This soon occurred, and the brave Morelos was but too glad to receive such an acquisition to the Republican ranks. The two became fast friends. Bean immediately set to work to build powder mills, and to prepare furnaces for casting cannon, and shops for preparing all kinds of arms and ammunition. He displayed such coolness in action that he soon rose to the rank of Colonel. He was in command of the troops that besieged, and finally captured, the city of Acapulco, where he had been so long imprisoned. Bean treated his prisoners with great generosity, and won the admiration both of friends

and foes. In the fall of 1814, Bean was sent by the Republicans as an agent to promote their cause in the United States. He found at Nautla, the "Tiger," one of Lafitte's boats, under the command of Captain Dominic. At Barrataria, Bean first heard of the war between the United States and Great Britain, and he and Lafitte determined to visit General Jackson's headquarters at New Orleans. As the British guarded the coast, the two threaded their way through the swamps and bayous to that city. Bean was well known to Jackson, and was at once placed in charge of a battery. Lafitte, also, was given a command; and both did heroic service in the great battle.

The times were unpropitious for Bean's success in the United States; and he returned to the coast of Mexico in one of Lafitte's ships. The next year he again returned to the United States in company with the diplomatist, Herrera.

In 1818, Bean visited Tennessee, and spent some time at his early home. He went next to Arkansas; but finally came to Texas as a colonist, and settled at Mound Prairie. In 1825, after the overthrow of the Spaniards in Mexico, Bean revisited that country. He was kindly received by his old companions in arms; his commission restored, and he was sent back to Texas as an Indian Agent. In 1832, he built Fort Teran, on the Neches river. An intimate personal friend of General Sam Houston, Bean kept the Indians in East Texas quiet during the exciting campaign of 1836. After the Texas revolution, Bean returned to Mexico. While fighting there in the Republican ranks, he had married an elegant lady, then a refugee in his camp. After the Mexican revolution, this lady recovered her property, and Bean spent the evening of his days very happily at her hacienda, near Jalapa, where he died, October 3d, 1846.

**BEAUMONT, JEFFERSON**—Was a leading merchant at Natchez, Mississippi. He came to Texas during the Revolutionary period. He was several years Chief Justice of Calhoun county, where he died, in 1863. Jefferson county and the town of Beaumont were named in his honor.

**BEE, BERNARD E. SR.**—Belonged to a distinguished family of South Carolina. He came to Texas at an early period. He was in the cabinet of Burnet, *ad interim*, and also in the cabinets of both Houston and Lamar. From 1830 to 1841, he was Minister to the United States. It was mainly through Bee's influence that General James Hamilton, his brother-in-law, was induced to take so deep an interest in the affairs of Texas. He died in South Carolina, in 1863.

**BELISLE, MONSIEUR DE.**—A distinguished Frenchman sent in 1719, with a company of about one thousand persons, to plant a colony at the mouth of the Mississippi river. Like the fleet of Lasalle, this fleet was driven too far to the west, and a landing was made for water, on the bay of San Bernardo, (Matagorda). While the sailors were procuring the water, Belisle and four companions went on shore to hunt. According to commonly received tradition, the hunters overstayed their time and the vessels hoisted sail and left them. Bossu, (the marvellous writer who tells the story of



Belisle), says the party were about to starve, hunting, as the reader will bear in mind, in Western Texas, then abounding in game and fish; but as the story goes, they were about to starve, when Belisle gave his dog to his companions to eat. The dog seems to have apprehended his impending doom, and wisely fled to the wilderness. Four of the men starved to death; and Belisle was about to share their fate, when his wonderful dog returned with an opossum in his mouth. After many strange and marvelous experiences among the Indians, Belisle finally made his way to the headquarters of St. Denis, at Natchitoches. In 1721, DeBienville, Governor of Louisiana, sent Belisle a second time to Matagorda bay; this time with men and means to build a fort and hold the country for France. He was not the man for such an undertaking, and finding the Indians hostile, and meeting other discouragements, he soon abandoned the country to the Spaniards, and returned to Louisiana, where he subsequently filled a number of important offices.

**BELL, JOSIAH H.**—A native of Kentucky, came to Texas among the very first of Austin's colonists. After remaining for a short time in the neighborhood of Washington, he descended the river, and settled in Brazoria county, at Bell's Landing, (now Columbia). When Austin went to Mexico in 1822, he left his colony in charge of Mr. Bell, who was appointed an alcalde by Governor Trespacios the same year. He died in 1838. Mrs. Bell died in 1856.

**BELL, P. HANSBOROUGH.**—Was a native of Virginia; landed at Velasco, in March, 1836, and walked up to Groce's, where the army was then encamped. He fought as a private at San Jacinto. In 1839 he was Inspector-General; 1845, Captain of Rangers; during the Mexican war he became a Colonel of Volunteers. He was Governor of Texas from 1850 to 1853, after which he represented the Western district two terms in the United States Congress. At the expiration of his second term, he married and settled in North Carolina, where he still lives.

**BENNETT, JOSEPH H.**—Was a Lieutenant-Colonel at the battle of San Jacinto. In 1842 he raised a battallion for the expedition under Somervell; but when they reached the Rio Grande river, by permission of the commander, Bennett and about two hundred of his men returned to their homes in Montgomery county. He died in Navarro county in 1849.

**BILLINGSLEY, JESSE.**—Commanded company C. in Burleson's regiment and was slightly wounded at the battle of San Jacinto. He had previously distinguished himself as an Indian fighter. He was a member of the first Congress at Columbia, and while a member of that body wore a buckskin suit he had captured from an Indian. During the session he slept upon his blanket. In 1838 and following years, he commanded a ranging company upon the frontier. In his autobiography, he says that "he supported eighty men on the frontier with the wild game of the forest, and clothed them with the skins of the wild animals slaughtered, and we were only chargeable to the Government for one sack of coffee and one sack of salt." After

annexation, Captain Billingsley represented Bastrop county in the Legislature. He still lives.

**BOGART, SAMUEL A.**—Was an officer in the battle of New Orleans; came to Texas about the time of annexation; was in the Mexican war; filled a number of offices, and died near M'Kinney, in 1861.

**BORDEN, GAIL, JR.**—Was a native of New York; came from Cincinnati to Texas in 1828; filled a number of civil offices, and was a member of the Convention at San Felipe in 1833. In 1835 he commenced the publication of the *Texas Telegraph*, the first permanent newspaper in Texas. The printers were working off a form of the paper at Harrisburg when Santa Anna's army appeared at the place, and threw the type and press into the bayou. Its publication was renewed early in the summer of 1836, at Columbia, but was, with the Government, transferred to the new town of Houston; and soon afterwards the paper was sold to Messrs. Moore and Cruger.

Mr. Borden was the agent of the Galveston City Company, and the first Collector of the Port of Galveston. After annexation Mr. Borden distinguished himself as an inventor. He secured a valuable patent for preserving meat in a form which he called "meat biscuit." He also secured a patent for a process of condensing milk; and Borden's "condensed milk" has become an important article of commerce. He died at Bordensville, in Colorado county, in January 1874.

**BORDEN, JOHN P.**—A brother of the above; was a Lieutenant in Mosely Baker's company at San Jacinto; and first Commissioner of the General Land Office. He lives at Bordensville.

**BORDEN, THOMAS H.**—Another and older brother of the above. He was a partner of Gail's in the publication of the *Telegraph*, and also in the survey and sale of the city lots in Galveston. He died in Galveston, in 1877.

**BOWIE, JAMES**—Was a native of Georgia, but in 1802 he removed with his family to Chatahoula parish, Louisiana. Here Rezin P. Bowie manufactured the celebrated knife which bears his name, and presented one to his brother James, to be used in hunting. The length of the original knife was nine and a quarter inches; its width was one and a half inches, with a single edge and a straight blade. James Bowie had a quarrel on hand, and had been once waylaid and shot. He was expecting another attack, and his brother gave him the knife to be used in case of necessity. Without any formal challenge, the two parties met on a sand bank or bar in the Mississippi river, on the 10th of September, 1827. At the first fire James Bowie was shot down, and Norris Wright, his antagonist, was advancing upon him, when Bowie drew the knife and killed him. One or two others were killed in the melee. Rezin Bowie long afterwards said that neither he nor his brother James had ever fought a duel. This statement was made to vindicate the character generally ascribed to the Bowies. Except in the fight on the sand bar, neither of them ever used the bowie, except in hunting, for which it was made. During the period of Lafitte's occupancy of



**HOUSTON AND SANTA ANNA.**



Galveston, the three Bowies—Rezin P., James and John—engaged in buying the African negroes taken from Spanish slavers by Lafitte's men, and carrying them through the swamps to Louisiana for sale. They are said to have made sixty-five thousand dollars by this contraband trade. The price of a negro in Galveston was one dollar a pound. On one occasion James Bowie started with about ninety negroes to Alexandria, when the whole number escaped and fled to the west. He followed them as far as the Colorado, but could never recover them. Perhaps they were carried off by the Indians. (A suggestion—We occasionally see Mexicans, who look very much as though they were slightly tinged with negro blood. May they not be the descendants of this runaway party?)

James Bowie was connected with Long's expedition in 1819, after which he remained most of the time in Mexican territory. On the 5th of October, 1830, he became a naturalized citizen at Saltillo, and soon after married the daughter of Vice-Governor Veramendi, of San Antonio.

*Fight on the San Saba.*—On the 2d of November, 1831, James and Rezin Bowie, and seven other Americans and two negro servants, started from San Antonio to hunt for the San Saba silver mines. Before reaching the old San Saba mission, they were intercepted by 164 Tehuacana and Caddo Indians. When the Americans found themselves confronted by such a party, they threw up temporary breastworks, which the Indians vigorously and repeatedly assaulted. Failing to dislodge the Bowies, the Indians set fire to the rich grass, hoping to burn them out. This expedient also failed. The fight had now lasted from sunrise to sundown. Never did men display greater courage and heroism than was displayed by the Bowies and their companions in this fight. Only one of their number had been killed, and three wounded. The Indians lost nearly half their number.

In August, 1832, James Bowie was at Nacogdoches, and, after the surrender of Piedras, he took charge of the prisoners and conveyed them to San Felipe, whence they were sent to Tampico. In 1838 he was with the army of Austin, and was second in command at the battle of Concepcion. In rank, Bowie was superior to Fannin, who was then only a captain, while Bowie was a colonel. But Austin had sent out the reconnoitering party under Fannin. It was perhaps this, together with the general dissatisfaction at the tardy movements of the army, which induced Bowie to resign his commission, which he did on the 2d of November. After the taking of San Antonio, Bowie was for a time connected with the army at Goliad. Houston, on the 17th of December, sent him an order to organize for a descent on Matamoras. But Bowie had left Goliad, and this order never reached him. Houston was opposed to an attempt to take Matamoras, and it was conjectured that the order to Bowie was intended to embarrass Johnson and Grant, who were also preparing to march to the Rio Grande. He soon returned to Goliad, where he met Houston January 16th, 1836. Houston sent him back to San Antonio, with orders to Colonel Neil to dismantle the fort and withdraw to the east side of the Guadalupe river. Had this order been executed, the sacrifice of the Alamo would have been averted. But Bowie found Travis in command at San Antonio, acting under orders of Lieutenant-Governor Robinson. or Governor Smith. Bowie was then in

feeble health, and when Santa Anna arrived, he, with the other Texans, entered the Alamo with Travis. During the siege, when Travis demanded that all who were willing to die with him defending the place should rally under a flag by his side, every man but one promptly took the place, and Bowie, who was sick in bed, had his cot carried to the designated spot. When the Alamo fell, he was found in bed, and killed by the Mexicans.

**BRADBURN, JUAN DAVIS.**—Was a native of the State of Virginia. He joined Mina's expedition in 1816, and accompanied that unfortunate General to Soto la Marina. By concealing himself in the mountains near Acapulco, he escaped the sad fate of his chief. Joining the rising chief, Guerrero, he rapidly rose to distinction in the Republican ranks. In 1830 he was sent to Texas, and appointed to command the small garrison at Anahuac. Here Bradburn exercised a most despotic sway. When negro slaves took refuge in his camp, he immediately enlisted them in the army, and would not permit masters to reclaim them. He abolished the municipality of Liberty, and created one at Anahuac. He closed all the ports of Austin's colony, and compelled the colonists to transact all their business at Anahuac. Finally, he, in a most arbitrary manner, arrested a number of citizens who had expressed themselves somewhat freely about his despotic course, and imprisoned them in the stockade. Among those thus arrested, were W. B. Travis, Patrick H. Jack, and Monroe Edwards. This produced an intense excitement, and a military organization was effected, under F. W. Johnson, for the rescue of the prisoners, whom Bradburn threatened to send to Vera Cruz for trial. Before any blood was shed, Piedras arrived from Nacogdoches, who, after inquiring into the subject, released the prisoners. Bradburn immediately left the Province. In 1836 he returned to Texas with Santa Anna, but being in the command of Urrea, he was not captured at San Jacinto.

**BRENHAM, DR. R. F.**—Was a native of Kentucky. He was one of the Commissioners sent by President Lamar, to accompany the Santa Fe expedition, and suffered the horrors of a long imprisonment. After his release and return to Texas, he joined Somervell's expedition, and on the Rio Grande, instead of returning with the main command, he joined in the Mier expedition, when he was again made a prisoner. When the Mier prisoners rose upon their guard at Salado, February 11th, 1843, Dr. Brenham, after disarming and killing one Mexican, was himself slain. The county-seat of Washington county was named in his honor.

**BRIGHAM, ASA.**—First Treasurer of the Republic, came from Massachusetts to Texas in 1832; served for a short time in the office of Alcalde, in Brazoria county; was a member of the Convention in 1836; died at his home, on the Brazos, in 1844.

**BRISCOE, ANDREW.**—Was in the Convention of 1836, and commanded a company of Regulars at San Jacinto. He was subsequently, for a number of years, Chief Justice of Harris county. He afterwards engaged in mercantile business in New Orleans, where he died.

**BROWN, HENRY S.**—Was born in Kentucky, in 1798; settled in Missouri in 1810; was in the battle of Fort Clark, Illinois, in 1813; in 1824 came to Texas, landing at the mouth of the Brazos with a stock of goods for the Mexican trade. He became conspicuous as an Indian-fighter, and was Captain of a company at the taking of Velasco in 1832. He died in Columbia in 1834.

**BROWN, JOHN.**—Brother of the above, came to Texas at the same time. In 1826 he was taken by the Waco Indians, and held a prisoner for more than a year; this gave him the name of "Waco Brown." He died in San Antonio, in 1831.

**BRYAN, MOSES AUSTIN.**—A nephew of Stephen F. Austin; came to Texas, landing at the mouth of the Brazos, in 1831; in 1835 he was private secretary, first to General Austin, and afterwards to General Burleson; and was in the battle of San Jacinto. In 1839, he was Secretary of Legation to the United States. 1879, Post Master at Brenham.

**BRYAN, GUY M.**—Brother of the above, came to Texas at the same time. After serving in the State Legislature, he represented the Western district in the United States Congress from 1857 to 1859. In 1874 he represented the Galveston district in the Lower House of the Legislature, and was the Speaker of the House. In 1879, again in the Legislature from Galveston.

**BURLESON, EDWARD**—Was born in North Carolina in 1798. When a mere lad, he went with his father, a captain in the Creek war. His father was uneducated, and took young Ed. along to act as secretary, and keep the muster roll of the company. He thus received his first lesson in military life under General Jackson. The family removed to Virginia, where he was elected Lieutenant-Colonel of the militia. They next removed to the western district of Tennessee, where he was elected Colonel of a regiment of militia. In 1831, he removed to Texas and settled in Bastrop county. This was then on the extreme frontier, and Burleson was soon called upon to lead his fellow-citizens to repel parties of marauding savages. His courage and ability soon inspired confidence, and the people upon the frontier learned to repose with security when Burleson was between them and the hostile Comanches.

At Gonzales, when Stephen F. Austin became commander of the Texans, Burleson was elected Colonel of the only regiment organized. A few weeks later, when Austin resigned the command, he was elected his successor. To him General Cos, on the 9th of December, surrendered his army of twelve hundred men.

At the reorganization of the army at Gonzales, in 1836, Burleson was elected Colonel of the first regiment. It was Burleson's regiment, at the battle of San Jacinto, which was placed immediately in front of the Mexican breastworks, and which stormed those works, drove out the enemy, and captured the cannon. It was a party of Burleson's men, set to watch the retreating Mexicans, that brought in Santa Anna as a prisoner. In 1837,

ne was elected Brigadier General of the militia, and in 1838, appointed Colonel in the regular army. He was ever watchful, and whether he had a command or not, was always ready to meet the wily foe. At Seguin he defeated the party of Cordova, and saved the settlements from the ravages of the Mexicans and Indians. He chastised the Indians that murdered Mrs. Coleman, and his regiment participated in the war for the expulsion of the Cherokees from East Texas. Towards the close of the same year, he defeated a party of Cherokees on Cherokee creek, in San Saba county. At the battle with the Comanches, at Plum creek, Burleson commanded one division of the Texans. In 1841, he was elected Vice-President. After the raids of Vasquis and Wall, in 1842, the people of Texas very generally thought it advisable to organize a raid into the States on the Rio Grande, as a retaliatory measure, and nearly all desired Burleson as a commander. President Houston announced himself in favor of the contemplated expedition, and appointed General A. Somervell to the command. Somervell had not sought the position, and would have declined it but for Houston's urgency in the matter. In a letter to Anson Jones, dated San Antonio, March 25th, 1842, Somervell says: "I arrived here on the 17th, to take command of the forces in the field, in accordance with the order of the President. The men and officers refused to obey, claiming the right, as volunteers, to select their own officers, which they did, and Burleson was elected without opposition." Notwithstanding this flattering expression in his favor, Burleson, who was as obedient to his superiors as he was brave upon the field, absolutely refused to take command, and the expedition which resulted so disastrously was led by Somervell. It is useless to speculate as to what would have been the result, had the brave and heroic leader selected by the men commanded them on the ill-fated expedition to Guerrero.

In 1849, he was a candidate for the Presidency, but was defeated by Dr. Jones, the candidate of the outgoing administration of Houston. Burleson was in Mexico during the war, on the staff of General Henderson. After his return to Texas, he settled his family at the beautiful spring which forms the San Marcos river, and was immediately elected to the State Senate, from the district including the capital of the State. At the meeting of the Legislature, he was elected President of the Senate. This was by a unanimous vote, on the motion of the venerable Jesse Grimes. At the close of his term he was re-elected again to the Senate. But his health was declining, and he died in the city of Austin, December 26th, 1851. The writer of a brief biographical sketch says: "His death produced a profound sensation throughout the whole length and breadth of a State, in which his name had become a familiar household word. Eloquent eulogies were pronounced in both houses of the Legislature, and resolutions, expressive of the general grief, adopted.

"A purer character than that of General Burleson is not to be found delineated in the history of any country. His reputation as a soldier, not won in a single victory, or single enterprise, but built up by years of service and success, was left behind him without a single stain; while the purity of his conduct as a legislator escaped even the breath of suspicion. No unhal-  
lowed ambition prompted him to brave the dangers of the battle-field—no



petty jealousy of the laurels won by others ever found a lodgment, for a single moment, in his noble and generous bosom. Brave, yet unambitious—modest, yet firm of purpose—simple in his manners, yet dignified—he won the friendship of the worthiest of the land, and never lost it. In him were happily blended the attributes of a successful warrior, with the republican and patriarchal simplicity of a quiet and unassuming country gentleman, whose bravery was unsurpassed by his open and cordial hospitality. In his personal intercourse with society, whether in the camp among his comrades in arms, or among his countrymen in the walks of private life, perhaps the most prominent trait of character, which was everywhere developed, was an inflexible love of justice, in its most extensive and significant sense. He seemed to be scarcely aware of the honors which crowded upon him as he passed through life.”

We add some extracts from eulogies delivered at his death. The first is from a speech of Hon. Ed. Tarver, of Washington, who had been intimate with the Burleson family from his boyhood. The second is from the eulogy pronounced by Hon. George M. Bryan, over the corpse, just before the funeral rites were performed by the Masonic fraternity, of which General Burleson was a shining light:

“These are the departing days of the present year; this is the time when most reflecting minds are disposed to take a general retrospect of the events of the outgoing year; and I imagine that the latter days of this will be remembered as the most gloomy which have fallen upon the land for many years. To-day, nature herself seems shrouded in mourning. All is blackness, darkness and desolation, as though she herself participated in our national sorrow and sympathized with us in our bereavement:

“There is a tear for all who die,  
A mourner o'er the humblest grave,  
But nations swell the funeral cry,  
And triumph weeps above the brave.”

“The deceased has filled for many years a prominent place among the citizens of Texas, and Western Texas in particular.

“In relation to her history and its soul-stirring events, he might truly say, “*cujus pars magna fui.*” He discharged the duties of the many important stations which he was chosen to fill in the councils of his country with a singleness of heart and purity of purpose that did honor alike to him and his country. Sir, I know his history from the beginning. His life has been one continued scene of peril, of suffering and of the most trying vicissitudes. Yet he has passed through all with a stainless and blameless reputation, unsullied by the imputation of wrong either in his public or private capacity.

“In contemplating his character, we are at a loss which most to admire, the childlike simplicity and unmixed goodness of the man, or the undaunted bravery of the soldier. In every relation of social life, there were none whose motives were so entirely unsullied by selfishness.

“He has been the prop and stay of the western frontier. In every expedition against the common foe, his name has been a rallying cry, around

which the bold frontiersmen have gathered and girded on their armor for the strife.

"This event has come so suddenly upon us, that, although for days past we have been taught to believe that he must die, I, for one, had still held out, hoping against hope; and not until I heard the funeral knell of this morning, could I bring myself to realize the sad fact that General Edward Burleson is no more. He had been standing for days,

"Where nature makes that melancholy pause,  
Her breathing moment, on the bridge where time,  
Of light and darkness, forms an arch sublime."

"He who had gone unharmed and unhurt through dangers so many; who has come the unscathed victor from so many hard-fought battles, has at last shared the common lot and yielded to the King of Terrors. He met death with that calmness and fortitude which become a soldier and a Christian.

"He was so much loved and respected by all, that we had fondly hoped that his life might be spared for years to come; that he might have many years of quiet enjoyment in the country whose prosperity and independence he contributed so much to establish. But Providence has willed it otherwise, and we must bow in humble submission to his decree.

"Of Edward Burleson there is nothing left us but the memory of his services and the remembrance of his virtues. Let such recollections be ever cherished."

"During the Mexican war, when General Taylor called upon Texas for volunteers, Burleson was among the first to respond. And the Rio Grande and the heights of Monterey attest his patriotism and valor.

"The hero of thirty battles, he was never known to retreat.' Brave without rashness, cautious without timidity, benevolent without weakness, he was the friend of the vanquished, as he was the terror of the enemy. But, it was not only as a soldier that General Burleson was conspicuous; he shone in the more peaceful walks of life. As a statesman, he long held a prominent position in Texas. As the Vice-President of Texas, as a candidate for the Presidency, as a Senator of the Legislature of the State since annexation, in all these positions he has been remarkable for his good sense, his honesty, his purity and his humility. No one who had so filled the public eye, could have worn honors more meekly than General Burleson. He was a man of softness and delicacy of feeling. He was as kind and gentle in his family, and in his intercourse with his fellow-men, as the most modest, benevolent and humane man could be. He was a Free Mason and a Christian, and carried into his private and public life the practical exemplifications of the pure and ennobling doctrines therein taught. He was a *good man*, and as such we revere him. He was a patriot, and as such we love him. He was a benefactor, and for this we praise him. He died as he had lived, in the *service of his country*. He has gone to his Creator, who will reward him—that mighty God, who by this act admonishes us of our frailty—'what shadows we are, and what shadows we pursue.' A few days since and he was amongst us, strong and in robust health. Behold him now! There he is, cold and lifeless, with no ear to hear, no mouth to

speak to the loved ones who throng around him. Old friend of my uncle—my own friend—the friend of Texas, fare thee well! ‘*Your body is buried in peace, but your name liveth evermore!*’”

“Associates, Senators and Representatives, let this practical lesson teach us *what we are.*”

“That though ‘we sit within the Halls of State,  
Or mount the Monarch’s throne;  
Our names are lauded to the skies,  
Yet earth is not our home;  
We soon must leave the joys of earth  
To wither, droop, and die;  
Our grandeur, titles, wealth and power,  
Must in the *cold grave lie.*’”

**BURLESON, EDWARD JR.**—Son of the above, became a brave and patriotic soldier on the frontier upon which he had been raised; won distinction as an Indian-fighter, and was highly esteemed as a citizen. He represented Hays county in the Constitutional Convention of 1875, and died in 1877, a few weeks after burying his wife.

**BURNET, DAVID G.**—Was born in Newark, New Jersey, in 1788. In 1806, he joined Mirandi’s expedition against Venezuela, served in the capacity of lieutenant, and commanded a launch in an attack upon a coast village. The enterprise not proving successful, he returned to New York; but joined Miranda again in his attack upon Caracas, in 1808. Mirandi was captured but Burnet escaped. In 1813, he became a citizen of Ohio; in 1817, engaged in mercantile business at Natchitoches, Louisiana. His health was very poor, and for three years he led a wandering life with the Comanches on the frontiers of Texas. His health having been thoroughly restored, he returned to Cincinnati and studied law. He became a citizen of Texas in 1826, and the next year obtained an Empresario contract. Finding it impossible with his limited means to settle his colony, he sold his contract to a New York company. Early in 1831 he married Miss Estis, of New York; and having purchased machinery for a saw-mill, he with his young wife sailed for Texas, in the schooner “Call.” The vessel was partially wrecked at Bolivar Point, and Mr. and Mrs. Burnet, at considerable peril, made their way through the breakers, and, drenched with the waters of the sea, reached the beach. Most of their wearing apparel was lost, but fortunately the boiler was hermetically closed, and floated off from the deck of the vessel, and was afterward recovered in Galveston bay. The saw-mill did not, however, prove a successful venture.

Mr. Burnet, whose home was on the San Jacinto river, represented Liberty in the Convention of 1833. He drew up the very able memorial to the Mexican Government, showing the absolute necessity of a separate State Government for Texas, apart from Coahuila. He also drew up a set of resolutions strongly denouncing the African slave trade. This met with violent opposition, as Monroe Edwards was already introducing Africans into the province; but the Convention finally passed the resolutions. In

1834, he was appointed a district judge for the department of the Brazos, and regularly held his court at San Felipe.

When the project of declaring Texas independent of Mexico was first agitated, Judge Burnet thought it premature. But the total destruction of civil liberty in Mexico by the personal despotism established by Santa Anna, left the true friends of republican institutions no alternative but independence, and he cordially espoused the revolutionary cause. At the organization of the government *ad interim*, March 16th, 1836, he was elected President of the young Republic. On the evening of the day he was inaugurated came the sad news of the fall of the Alamo and its brave defenders. This was followed in quick succession by the news of the defeat of Grant, the battle of Coleta, the surrender of Fannin, and the horrible massacre of Goliad. A panic seized the public mind; the members of the Convention hastily dispersed, leaving the Secretary to finish up the journals and prepare the Constitution for publication. To be nearer the principal seaport, the seat of Government was transferred from Washington to Harrisburg. President Burnet sent patriotic appeals to the country and to the United States, for aid in this time of peril and disaster. He did all in his power to collect provisions and army stores for the soldiers in the field. He also assisted families in escaping from the invading foe. He was sorely grieved that the army retreated without any show of fight, across the great rivers where he thought a stand ought to have been made. After Houston had crossed the Brazos, the President sent General Rusk, Secretary of War, to headquarters, to try to arrest the further retreat.

Two days before Santa Anna reached Harrisburg, Burnet left the place to secure the safety of his family, then at his home on the San Jacinto bay. He had just placed his family on a small sail-vessel at New Washington, when Almonte, at the head of a squad of Mexican cavalry, dashed into town. Burnet, with his rifle in hand, stood in the stern of the boat, ready for defence; but Almonte did not dream that the President of Texas was in that little craft, and made no effort to take it, and the boat with its precious cargo safely reached Galveston. Here, in conjunction with Mr. Potter, the Secretary of the Navy, and other members of the Government, he exerted himself to send forward supplies to the army, which had reached Buffalo Bayou. But they were not entirely safe at Galveston; it was known that Urrea was advancing along the coast towards that point. All available resources were called into requisition for the defence of the island. Fortunately the battle of San Jacinto relieved them from danger.

Several days elapsed before the news of the great victory reached the island. As soon as practicable, the President went up to Lynchburg, to adopt such measures as might be deemed necessary to secure the fruits of the victory. For better accommodation, the Government was transferred to Velasco. Though the country was now in no immediate danger from Mexico, the President found himself sorely embarrassed. He was without an exchequer, and yet an army must be supported in the field; an army that was constantly receiving large accessions, though there was no prospect of fighting. A large number of prisoners were to be fed and guarded. Civil law and order had to be evoked from chaos; diplomatic relations had



**TOM GREEN.**



to be established with other nations; in a word the whole business of instituting Government was to be done, and that without the requisite means. To augment the difficulties, the ordinance creating the Executive Department required that all measures and all appointments should have the sanction of a majority of the Cabinet. It was soon known that upon important questions, the Cabinet was divided. These differences were freely discussed among the people, and around the camp-fires of the soldiers, producing not only political strife, but personal animosities.

During this period, excitement ran so high that the President, and even Houston and S. F. Austin, were accused of bribery. This however, is not very remarkable. After George Washington was elected President, he was accused of being a tool of the British party; and it was said that John Adams secured his election as President by the proper distribution of British gold.

In the midst of this excitement, it was rumored that Burnet would be assassinated. On the night of the expected assault, Mrs. Burnet kept a light burning, and sat at an open window, with a cocked pistol in her hand, determined, if necessary, to die defending her noble husband. Her precaution perhaps prevented the attack. Soon after the receipt of the letter referred to above, Colonel Millard arrived at Velasco with informal orders to arrest the President and take him to the headquarters of the army for trial. The execution of this order, whose purport was to be kept a profound secret, was committed to Colonel A. Turner, who was then at Velasco. The order to Turner was very comprehensive. It read: "You are hereby ordered to proceed, (from Quintana to Velasco), and arrest the person of David G. Burnet; take into your possession the books and papers of his office; and you will also take into your possession the books, records, and papers of the Secretaries of State, of War, and of the Treasury, and them safely keep, and report forthwith." This order was signed by Colonel H. Millard. As Colonel Turner was determined in some way to counteract this revolutionary movement, he was in no hurry to execute this most extraordinary order. In the meantime, one of the men who came from the army with Millard got drunk and told the object of their visit to the seat of Government. When it became known that the army contemplated the subversion of the civil authority, a wonderful reaction took place in the public mind. Such citizens as T. F. M'Kinney, the Jacks, Whartons and others, resolved to stand by the President at all hazards. Some of them even threatened the lives of Millard and his companions. It was also fortunate for Burnet that a company of troops, known as the Buckeye Rangers had just arrived from Cincinnati, where they had been munificently entertained at the Burnet House, by the President's brother. This company declared unanimously and enthusiastically for the President. Millard became alarmed for his personal safety, and hastily left, and returned to the army.

To the President, this was a most trying period. One of his children died from exposure in an uncomfortable house. Believing that the proper time had come for the full restoration of civil law, he, on the 12th of July, issued a proclamation forbidding the further impressment of private property by

the army. On the 14th he revoked all commissions held by persons not actually in the army or navy. This last, though highly approved by the people, brought him into conflict with General T. J. Chambers, who was still operating in the United States as Major-General of the Reserve. July 23d, he issued a proclamation for a general election, to take place on the first Monday in September. The election was held, and Congress met in Columbia on the 3d of October. The Constitution, which had been almost unanimously adopted, fixed the second Monday in December for the inauguration of the new President. But Burnet felt that he could now safely turn over the responsibility of the Executive Department to his successor, and he tendered to Congress his resignation.\*

In 1838 he was elected to the office of Vice-President. President Lamar's health being precarious, Congress, in 1841, gave him leave of absence, and Burnet administered the government during the remainder of the term. During Governor Henderson's administration, Burnet was Secretary of State. In 1866 he was elected to the United States Senate, but was not admitted to his seat.

Mrs. Burnet died in 1858, leaving one son, who, at the breaking out of the civil war, entered the Confederate service as captain of artillery. He was killed while in command of a battery at Spanish Fort, near Mobile, March 31st, 1865. After the breaking up of his family by death, Judge Burnet found a home in the family of Mr. Preston Perry, of Galveston, where he died December 5th, 1870, aged eighty-three years. Just after his decease, a brief biography was published, prepared by Colonel A. M. Hobby, from which we make a brief extract: "Judge Burnet was distinguished by an active and honorable participation in the events of a revolution, the character of which his humane and generous influence impressed and his enlightened policy guided; and was a sincere and ardent friend of the human race; but above all distinguished by the more eminent qualities of inflexible political purity and personal virtue. These, we believe, are universally admitted as absolutely unquestioned, and alone should entitle the possessor to independent and durable renown; and when we add to these high moral distinctions, his unaffected indifference to wealth and fame; noble aspirations and tender charities; sympathy for the oppressed; generosity to the fallen; love of goodness and truth, and a mind incapable of harboring sentiments of envy, mischief or wrong, we have a character indeed so rare, that the thoughtful and the just will pronounce it almost perfect."

\*

EXECUTIVE DEPARTMENT, COLUMBIA, Oct. 22d, 1836.

*To the Honorable the Senate and House of Representatives:*

GENTLEMEN—The period having arrived when, in the estimation of the Congress, the constitutional government may be completely organized, and as I conceive such organization to be desirable, I request the Congress will not consider my incumbency as any obstacle to the immediate inauguration of the Executive officers elect.

Sensible of having discharged my duty to my adopted country to the utmost extent of my abilities and with a faithfulness unmingled by a selfish feeling, I shall retire from office with the inmost approbation of my own conscience, which I esteem more than the plaudits of men.

DAVID G. BURNET.



**BURR, AARON.**—The fact that Burr originated the first movement for the occupancy of Texas by the Anglo-Americans, has induced most writers of Texas history to pay some attention to his filibustering expedition. The brief personal incidents in his life are: that he was a native of New Jersey; a lawyer by profession; a gallant officer in the American revolution, though always distrusted by Washington. He became an active politician, and carried the State of New York for the Republican party in opposition to Alexander Hamilton. Running for President on the same ticket with Jefferson, there was a tie in the Electoral College, thus throwing the election into the House of Representatives. In that body, the Federalists casting their votes for Burr, there was a tie for thirty-eight ballots. Finally, Jefferson was elected President, and Burr became Vice-President. But he had lost forever the confidence of the Republican party, and he was himself very much dissatisfied with the result. He was growing unpopular and morose. In this state of mind, he quarrelled with his great political rival, and, in a duel fought July 11th, 1804, he killed Alexander Hamilton. (Of Hamilton, who was at the head of the Treasury during Washington's administration, Daniel Webster said: "He smote the rock of the National resources, and abundant streams of revenue burst forth; he touched the dead corpse of public credit and it sprung upon its feet.")

At the close of his official term, finding himself abandoned by all parties in the United States, Burr projected a grand scheme for a Southwestern Republic. The betrayal of this plot by his friend Wilkinson, and his own arrest, thwarted his plans; and he went to Europe and spent some time in comparative poverty. He returned to the United States in 1812, and the next year the cup of his private grief was filled to overflowing, by the loss at sea of his charming daughter, Theodosia, wife of Governor Alston, of South Carolina. He now resumed the practice of law in New York city, and recovered a handsome property for the celebrated Madam Jumel, whom he afterwards married. After a few years of turbulent matrimonial life, he and his wife quarreled and separated, and he died in New York, in September 1836, just after Texas had become an independent Republic.

There is not, perhaps, a more knotty question in American history than that connected with the movements of Aaron Burr. He at one time undoubtedly contemplated the dismemberment of the American Union. It was a period of violent political strife; especially in the West, over the closing of the Mississippi river. In Burr's trial for treason, William Eaton, Esq., to whom Burr had given his plans, testified that when the latter suggested that the Government at Washington might throw obstacles in his way, Burr replied: "He would turn Congress, neck and heels, out of doors; assassinate the President; seize on the Treasury and the Navy, and declare himself the Protector of an energetic government." But, as President Jefferson says in one of his letters, if Burr ever seriously entertained designs against the integrity of the American Union, that project was early abandoned, and his scheme was formed for operations entirely on Mexican territory. At that time it was confidently expected there would be war with Spain. President Jefferson, in his message to Congress, December 6th, 1805, used the following language, which was considered almost equivalent

**CALDWELL, JOHN.**—Came from North Alabama to Texas in 1830, and settled on the frontier in Bastrop county, and opened a cotton plantation. He represented that county in both branches of the Texas Congress, in the Convention of 1845, and subsequently in the State Legislature, and died in 1870.

**CALDWELL, MATTHEW.**—A native of North Carolina; came to Texas in 1833; was in the Consultation in 1835, after which he served in various capacities in the army. He was a Captain in the Santa Fe expedition; (spoken of by Kendall under the nick-name of "Old Paint.") In 1842 he was in command of the force that pursued Woll in his retreat from San Antonio. He died in Gonzales, December 28th, 1842.

**CALLAHAN, J. H.**—Came to Texas with the Georgia Battalion, in 1835; was in the battle of Coleta, but escaped the Fannin massacre by being a mechanic. In 1855 he was captain of a ranging company on the frontier. The Lipans having committed depredations in Texas, and having escaped across the Rio Grande, Captain Callahan pursued them into Mexico. In doing this he was compelled to take military possession of the village of Piedras Negras. Unfortunately the village was burned when Callahan evacuated it; but the Indians were chastised. In 1856, a difficulty occur-

pany them. They started on the morning of the 23d; took no provisions, because none were to be had, the commissary stores having been left at Harrisburg on the 20th. About noon they reached Ruth's place, where they expected to get dinner, but the Mexicans had been there and stripped the place of eatables, and nothing was to be had. At night they reached Spillman's island, and were fortunate in finding plenty of cornmeal, a side of bacon and plenty of chickens. There was no human being on the island. The next day they arrived at the head of the bay, and found it so rough that it was impossible to proceed across it in their leaky craft. The soldiers wanted to lie by until the wind shifted, but Calder insisted on going ahead if they had to coast it all the way to the island; and leaping into the water with a tow line, pulled the skiff along the edge of the bay. Franklin was unaccustomed to work, and soon gave out. The soldiers became tired, and most of the labor devolved upon Calder. While coasting along that evening, they saw a steamer far to the eastward going toward the mouth of the San Jacinto, but failed to make her see their signals, and thought perhaps she took them for Mexicans.

The party reached the Edwards place at Redfish bar about noon of the third day. Here they found some provisions and a box of fine Havana cigars. The only living being they saw was a wild African negro, probably one introduced by Monroe Edwards. By this time almost the entire labor of propelling the unwieldy craft devolved upon Calder, as the others were tired out. About sundown on the fourth day they reached the neighborhood of Virginia Point, and could see the shipping in the harbor. Tired and hungry, as they had very little to eat that morning, Franklin and Calder spread their blankets by the side of an old cottonwood which was lying on the beach, and disturbed a rattlesnake as they were preparing to lie down and sleep till morning. It had rained during the night, and when they awoke a norther was blowing, and their blankets were in the water. A few hours rowing brought them alongside of the war schooner *Invincible*, Capt. Wm. Brown. Through his speaking trumpet Brown inquired "What news?" "When I told him, his men," says Calder, "literally lifted us on board, and in the midst of the wildest excitement Brown took off his hat and gave us three cheers, and threw it as far as he could into the bay. He then

red between Captain Callahan and a family in the same neighborhood in which he lived, in Guadalupe county, by the name of Blassengame. Callahan and a friend of his by the name of Johnson were killed. Afterward a party of citizens killed two of the Blassengames.

CAMERON, EWEN.—A Scotsman by birth, who came to Texas in the early days of the Texas Republic. He was a captain in the Republican army which proclaimed the "Republic of the Rio Grande." During that campaign he had the misfortune to offend Canalis, one of the Mexican officers in command. Cameron was a captain in the Mier expedition; was in the break at Salado; but drew a white bean in the fearful lottery that followed their recapture, and was, of course, entitled to his life. A few days later, positive orders came to the command to "shoot Captain Cameron;" and he was shot. It is supposed that his former companion, Canalis, procured the order. Cameron was a brave, honorable and skillful officer. For him Cameron county was named.

shouted to his men, 'Turn loose Long Tom.' After three discharges, he suddenly stopped and said: 'Hold on, boys, or old Hawkins (the senior commodore) will put me in irons again.'" Declining to wait for anything to eat, they were treated to the best liquor on the ship. They entered the Captain's gig, and with four stalwart seamen started for the harbor. The Independence, the flagship of Commodore Hawkins, was anchored between them and the landing. As they approached the ship, Commodore Hawkins, with his glass, recognized Franklin and Calder, and began eagerly hailing for the news. When they were sufficiently near to be understood, a scene of excitement ensued begging description; and now it spread from vessel to vessel, reached groups on the land, and the welkin rang with shout after shout, until the people were hoarse. Hawkins fired thirteen guns. We suppose this was for the old thirteen colonies, as Hawkins had been in the U. S. navy. When the Commodore learned that they had been fasting for twenty-four hours, he had a sumptuous dinner prepared, and the party did not need much urging to stay and partake of the hospitalities of the old salt. They were staying a little too long, and finally Hawkins hinted that they had better get ashore and report to the President.

President Burnet, who was a great stickler for official prerogative, was a little miffed that everybody on the island should have heard the glorious news before he was officially notified of the battle and its result; and when the party reached the President's marquee they were received, as Calder says, "with stately courtesy—which at first we did not understand, thinking a little more cordiality and less formality would have suited the case and the messengers. This, however, (continues our narrative) gradually subsided, and the President, before the interview closed, treated us with that grace and genial courtesy for which, throughout life, he was ever distinguished."

Most of the families of refugees were already on the schooner Flash, Captain Falvel, ready to sail for New Orleans, and had orders to sail that morning, as Santa Anna was expected every day at the island. The captain declined to attempt to cross the bar until there was a change of wind; and while waiting, the messenger arrived with the news. The two soldiers who accompanied the party found their families, and Calder found the object of his most anxious solicitude.

After changing his clothes, Captain Calder was strolling, unknown, among the men eagerly talking over the wonderful achievements of the 21st, when he heard such complimentary remarks as these: "What! the whole Mexican army defeated, and Santa Anna a prisoner! No, gentlemen; those fellows are scoundrels and deserters. It is too big a story, and they ought to be taken into custody at once."

**CAMERON, DR. JOHN.**—An Empresario, who obtained a grant for colonizing a large scope of country on Red river. He had been for some time a citizen of Mexico. Decree Number 13, September 10th, 1827, declared him to be a "Coahuil-Texan," (a citizen of Coahuila and Texas). In 1835 he was a Secretary in the Executive Department of the Government at Moulclova; and when Cos dispersed the Legislature, Cameron was taken prisoner with Milam and others. They contrived to make their escape, and reached Texas in safety. Cameron assisted in the capture of San Antonio, and at Cos' surrender acted as Spanish interpreter. He became a resident of the valley of the Rio Grande, and in the contest which arose between the "Rohos" and "Crinolinos," in 1861, he was killed in one of their fights.

**CARSON, SAMUEL P.**—Once represented a district of North Carolina in the United States Congress. He was in Texas at the organization of the Government *ad interim*, and became Secretary of State. His health was feeble, and he resigned and went to Hot Springs, Arkansas, where he died in 1838.

**CASTRILLON.**—One of the bravest and most skillful of Santa Anna's officers, in 1836. He commanded the division that successfully scaled the walls of the fortress of the Alamo. The brave are humane, and Castrillon pleaded earnestly for the lives of the three or four Texans found alive in the Alamo, after all resistance had ceased. It was in vain! At San Jacinto, Castrillon commanded the column ordered to support the Mexican cannon. When the panic ensued, and he found it impossible to rally his men, he refused to fly with the others; but folding his arms, he stood erect, and received that death which, to him, was preferable to dishonor.

**CASTRO, HENRY.**—The pioneer of that portion of Western Texas situated west of the city of San Antonio, was born in France, in July, 1786, of rich parents, and descended of one the oldest Portuguese families; one of his ancestors, Zoao of Castro, having been fourth Viceroy of the Indies for the King of Portugal. In 1805, at the age of nineteen, he was selected by the Prefect of his department (Landes) to welcome the Emperor Napoleon, on the occasion of his visit to that department. In 1806, he was one of the guard of honor that accompanied Napoleon to Spain. In 1814, being an officer in the first legion of the National Guards of Paris, he fought with Marshal Moncey at the gate of Clichy. Having emigrated to the United States, after the fall of Napoleon, in May, 1827, he was Consul at the port of Providence for the King of Naples, having become an American citizen, by choice, the same year. He returned to France in 1838; was the partner of Mr. Lafitte, and took an active part in trying to negotiate a loan for the Republic of Texas. In 1842 he was appointed, in consideration of the services he had rendered to the Republic of Texas, Consul General of Texas at Paris. Having received large grants of lands under certain conditions of colonization, he immediately proceeded to comply with his contract, and, after great expense and labor, succeeded in bringing to this State four hundred and eighty-five families and four hundred and fifty-seven single men,



**THOMAS F. MCKINNEY .**

ment \$10,000; and further proposed to visit the United States and expend the same in procuring men and munitions of war. The Council accepted his proposition, and commissioned him Major-General of the reserve. General Chambers had no ready money, but expected to obtain his supplies by hypothecating his lands. According to the report of Mr. Borden the first Commissioner of the Land Office, Mr. Chambers had received five leagues of land for his services as Surveyor-General; sixteen leagues for his services as Supreme Judge; and five leagues each from Jose Manuel Berks and Alexander de la Garza. On these lands he realized a considerable amount of means. In his report to Congress, June 3d, 1837, he stated that he had sent to Texas 1,915 men, and expended of his own money \$23,621, and had sold bonds amounting to \$9,035. On the 12th of June, Congress passed a bill approving his course, and directed the auditor to settle with him. At a subsequent period, he settled in Chambers county, and represented it in the Secession Convention in 1861. He was several times an unsuccessful candidate for Governor of Texas. He was killed while sitting in his own house in 1865. No clue was ever obtained as to the perpetrator of the murder.

**CHILDRESS, GEORGE C.**—A lawyer by profession; member of the Convention of 1836; chairman of the committee that drew up the Declaration of Independence, and author of that declaration. He died by his own hands in 1840. He was boarding at Mrs. Crittenden's, and early one morning, presented himself at her door, before the lady was up, and begged her in piteous terms to save him from himself. Just as the lady opened her door, he plunged the fatal dagger to his own heart, the blood bespattering her dress. A letter in his room stated that pecuniary losses by his brother, in gaming, had prompted the fatal deed.

**CHRISMAN, HORATIO.**—Was born in Virginia in 1792. In early life he removed first to Kentucky and then to Missouri, where he engaged in surveying. In 1818, he married Miss Mary Kincheloe, and in the fall of 1821 prepared to emigrate to Texas with the Kincheloe family. They embarked on boats to descend the river, but winter coming on, they remained until the next spring; when Mr. Kincheloe preceded the party to New Orleans, where he chartered the schooner "Only Son," Capt. Ellison, and sent five or six young men to the Colorado to make corn. Mr. Chrisman, with the families of Kincheloe, Rawls and Prewett, left St. Louis in a flat boat, February 25th, 1822. At New Madrid the party was detained by sickness, and Mrs. Chrisman and her sister died. Being detained again at the mouth of the Red river, by continued sickness, some of the men who were well took a boat-load of bacon up Red river to Alexandria. All the river trade was then carried on in flat-boats. Arriving at New Orleans, Mr. Kincheloe again chartered the "Only Son" to convey them to Texas. They landed at the mouth of the Colorado, June 9th. A few days later, another vessel with immigrants landed at the same place. The supplies brought by both boats were left in charge of four young men, while the families went up to Wharton, where Mr. Kincheloe had raised a supply of corn. The young men

left at camp were killed by the Caranchua Indians, and the goods destroyed or stolen. In 1823, Mr. Chriesman assisted in making a crop at the Clay place, near Independence.

When Colonel Austin returned from Mexico, Mr. Chriesman was appointed Surveyor for the county. The first tract surveyed was for Josiah H. Bell; the tract afterward settled by Amos Gates, five miles below Washington, on the Brazos river. Mr. Chriesman held the office of surveyor until the Revolution. His assistants were Ross Alley, Bartlet Sims, Seth Ingram, Wm. Selkirk, Thos. S. Borden, Moses Cummings and John S. Mooney, in Austin's colony. In Robertson's colony, F. W. Johnson and Wm. Moore. In 1825, Mr. Chriesman married the second time. His choice fell upon Miss Augusta Hope. As there were no priests to perform the ceremony, and magistrates were not authorized to do so, they were married by bond before Mr. Cole, the Alcalde. While holding the office of surveyor, he was appointed a Captain of the militia, and participated in a good many Indian fights and skirmishes. In 1835, when the Texans invested San Antonio, he was a member of Captain Swisher's company, but was detailed to convey intelligence to the Government at San Felipe, and was thus absent when the city capitulated. Subsequently, Gen. Houston placed him on detached service to assist in the removal of families, so he was not at San Jacinto. He also, at an early period, filled the office of Alcalde at San Felipe. As an illustration of the hardships endured by early pioneers, we give an incident which occurred the year he made a crop at Independence: Having a few days leisure, he visited the family of Mr. Whitesides, on the east side of the Brazos. He found Mr. Whitesides absent on a trip to the East, and his family without meat or bread. With his trusty rifle, he soon secured a good supply of venison. As a further illustration of the generosity of the old Texans, we have heard an anecdote of Captain Chriesman. At a period when land was cheap and plentiful, his friend, Dr. M., needed a league of land to give in exchange in some trade he was consummating. Capt. Chriesman, without a word, loaned him the league of land. As it was never very convenient for the doctor to replace it, the debt remains still uncanceled. Up to the period of annexation, Capt. Chriesman lived at the Gay Hill neighborhood, in Washington county. He subsequently removed into Burleson county. Mrs. Chriesman died many years since, and the old gentleman died at the residence of his son-in-law, Thomas C. Thomson, Esq. in Burleson county, in November, 1878.

**COKE, RICHARD.**—Was born in Virginia, in 1829; graduated at William and Mary College; and studied law. In 1850, immigrated to Texas and settled at Waco, which is still his home. In 1865, he was appointed District Judge, and the next year was elected one of the Associate Justices of the Supreme Court. He was elected Governor in 1873, and on the adoption of the new Constitution, was re-elected in 1876. A few days after his second inauguration as Governor, he was elected to the United States Senate; and on the first of December, 1876, he relinquished the executive office, and in March following, took his seat in the Senate.

**COLE, JOHN P.**—One of the first settlers in Washington county; was Alcalde from 1828 until the revolution; and the first Chief Justice of the county. In 1840 he represented the county in Congress. He died in 1846, and his widow in 1873.

**COLEMAN, ROBERT M.**—Was a Colonel in the army of the Republic, and in command on the Colorado. He was drowned at Velasco, in 1838. He was in the Convention in 1836. One year after his death, his widow and son were killed by the Indians, at their home on the Colorado.

**COLLINSWORTH, JAMES.**—Was a native of Tennessee; and had filled the office of United States District Attorney, before coming to Texas. He was a member of the Convention in 1836; and after the adjournment of the Convention was sent as a commissioner to the United States. In 1838 he was appointed Chief Justice of the Republic; and about the same time became a candidate for President. During the canvass, which was waxing warm and bitter, he drowned himself, by throwing himself off a steamer in Galveston bay.

**COOKE, WILLIAM G.**—Came to Texas from Virginia. Having been elected a Captain of the New Orleans Grays in that city, he arrived at San Antonio, November 8th, 1835, and participated in the capture of the city, being one of the party that stormed the Priest's house. At San Jacinto he was on Houston's staff. In 1837 he commenced the drug business in Houston. In 1839 he was Quartermaster-General; in 1840, one of the commissioners sent by President Lamar with the Santa Fe expedition. In 1844 he married Miss Navarro, of San Antonio, and represented Bexar county in Congress. After annexation, he was Adjutant-General during Henderson's administration, and died near Seguin in 1847.

**COOK, LEWIS P.**—Came to Texas with the New York battallion, in 1836; was Secretary of the Navy in 1839. Having been accused of killing young Peyton, in Washington, he went to the Rio Grande; was a sutler in Taylor's army in 1846. He and his wife died of cholera, in 1849.

**CORDERO, ANTONIO.**—Was Governor of Texas in 1806. He was one of the officers brought from Spain by de Galves, to reform the administration in Spanish America. He was with Herrera on the Sabine, and disapproved the pacific arrangement which the latter entered into with Wilkinson. Pike, who enjoyed Cordero's hospitality, in San Antonio, in 1807, speaks of him as "an accomplished gentleman, universally beloved and respected, and by far the most popular man in the internal provinces." He spoke the Latin and French languages well; was generous, gallant, brave, and sincerely attached to his king and country. He was one of the victims of the horrid butchery at San Antonio, in April, 1813.

**CORTINA, JUAN N.**—Is a native of Comargo, but spent his early life on a ranche on the Texas side of the Rio Grande. In 1859 a difficulty occurred



at his mother's ranche, and he left Texas and became a partizan leader in Mexico. With a party of his men, in October 1859, he crossed the river into Brownsville, and committed murders and other depredations; but was soon driven back. His next attempt was to capture the steamboat Rancho. In this he was thwarted by the vigilance of Colonel Ford, of the Rangers. He was severely chastised by the troops under Ford and Heintzleman, of the United States army. In 1861, Cortina with several hundred men crossed the Rio Grande and burned Roma. In 1863, he was a General in the ranks of the Rohos at Matamoras; in 1871, a General under Juarez, and Acting Governor of Tamaulipas. In 1872, he was indicted in Brownsville for cattle-stealing; in 1875, Mayor of Matamoras, and General in the Mexican army. For refusing to obey orders, he was arrested and conveyed to Mexico. In 1877, he was released, and he returned to his old haunts on the Rio Grande, but was soon re-arrested.

**Cos, MARTIN PERFECTO DE.**—Was a revolutionary leader under Morelos, in 1811. In 1835, he was sent by Santa Anna, his brother-in-law, to the command of the Eastern internal provinces. In May he dispersed the Legislature in session at Monclova; and in September, with five hundred men, came to Texas by water, landing at Matagorda bay. He advanced to San Antonio, where he established his headquarters. One of his first despotic acts was to demand the surrender of a number of patriots, who had become especially odious to Santa Anna. They were not given up. This demand aroused the Texans to resistance, and he soon found himself shut up in the city by the army of Austin. Cos surrendered to Burleson on the eleventh of December, he and his men giving their parole not to serve again against Texas, during the present war. Cos returned with Santa Anna in the spring, and commanded one of the attacking columns, in the assault upon the Alamo; but failed to effect an entrance to the fort, until the column under Castrillon had made a breach in the wall. Cos was left behind in the advance to San Jacinto, but arrived with his division on the morning of the battle. During the Mexican war in 1847, he was in command in Tuspan.

**CROCKETT, DAVID.**—An ex-member of Congress from Tennessee, who came to Texas in 1835. At Nacogdoches, when required to take the oath of allegiance to the new government, or any other which might be established in Texas, he declined to subscribe it until the word "republican" was inserted. He was one of the victims of the Alamo. Several dead Mexicans were lying near his body. Colonel Crockett's widow came to Texas after annexation, and died in Johnson county, in 1866.

**DARNELL, NICHOLAS H.**—During the Republic he represented San Augustine in Congress, and was Speaker of the House. He was a member of the Convention in 1845, and a candidate for Lieutenant-Governor at the first election for State officers. The vote between himself and Horton was very close, and the returns came in slowly, and when the Legislature met, it appeared that Darnell was elected, and he was accordingly inaugurated;

but subsequent returns coming in from the west, changed the majority to his opponent, and Darnell promptly resigned, and Horton became Lieutenant-Governor. He was in the Legislature in 1861, and during part of the term, Speaker of the House. In 1874, he was Sergeant-at-arms of the House of Representatives; and a member of the Constitutional Convention in 1875.

**DAVENPORT, SAMUEL.**—One of the first Americans who settled in Texas. This was in 1799. He applied for and received letters of citizenship, as a Spanish subject. He was a man of enterprise and wealth, and a leader of society at Nacogdoches. He acted as quartermaster to Magee's expedition, in 1812; but declined to co-operate with the Fredonian movement in 1826.

**DAVIS, EDMUND J.**—A native of Florida; came to Texas in 1848; 1850-52, deputy Collector of Customs on the Rio Grande; 1853, District Attorney; 1855 to 1860, District Judge. After the breaking out of the civil war, Judge Davis left Texas and entered the Federal lines. In 1862, he raised a regiment of cavalry for the Union army; was promoted to the rank of Brigadier-General in 1864. At the close of the war he returned to Texas, and was elected to the first Reconstruction Convention, in 1866; was also a member and President of the second Reconstruction Convention. In November, 1869, the Government of the State was in the hands of the military. By order of General Reynolds, an election was held for Governor and State officers. Judge Davis was declared elected, and became Governor, January 18, 1870, and held the office until January 13, 1874. At the expiration of his official term, he resumed the practice of law in the city of Austin.

**DAVIS, H. CLAY.**—A prominent citizen of Western Texas; was Collector of Customs on the Rio Grande, and served one term in the State Senate. At the breaking out of the civil war, he entered the Confederate service and rose to the rank of Brigadier, but died before the war closed.

**DAWSON, NICHOLAS H., *Defeat of.***—When Woll entered San Antonio, in 1842, Lieutenant Dawson, who had been in the battle of San Jacinto, raised a company in Fayette county, to reinforce the Texans in the West. He arrived in the neighborhood of the Salado creek September 17th, the day of the battle between Woll and Caldwell. While trying to lead his men to the Texan camp, he was discovered and surrounded by an overwhelming number of the Mexicans as they were retreating from the battle ground to the city of San Antonio. After about one-half of his men had been either killed or wounded, Dawson raised a white flag; it was fired upon and the fight renewed. Dawson behaved with the utmost gallantry, but seeing the hopelessness of continuing the unequal combat, he surrendered his pistol to a Mexican officer. After having thus disarmed himself, a Mexican lancer assaulted him, when the heroic soldier seized and would have slain his assailant, but other lancers coming up, put him to death. Of the fifty-three men in his company, thirty-three were slain in battle; fifteen surrendered, five of whom were wounded; two escaped unhurt. one of

whom, Henry Gonsalvo Wood, had lost his father and his brother, and had given up his own arms, when a Mexican on horseback attacked him. He disarmed the lancer, killed him and escaped on his horse. Poor Gonsalvo, after escaping that massacre, was killed by desperadoes, probably mistaking him for some one else, in 1869. Of those who surrendered, the following were sent to the castle of Perote: John Beard, James Shaw, Edward Manton, William Trimble, J. E. Konnegy, Richard Barclay, Nat. W. Faison, Joel Robinson, Allen H. Morrell. These were released with the Mier prisoners. In September, 1848, the bones of Dawson's company were collected and taken to Fayette county, and buried with appropriate ceremonies, on Monument Hill, opposite the town of Lagrange.

**DELEON, MARTIN.**—An Empresario; was a native of Tamaulipas. In 1810, he settled on the Nueces river, and about 1823, at Victoria, on the Guadalupe. His colonists were Mexicans, who settled on the Garcitas creek. Mr. DeLeon died of cholera, in 1834.

**DIMITT, PHILIP.**—Came to Texas in 1822. Ten years later he established a trading house at the old fort built by LaSalle, on the Lavaca river. The place has been since known as Dimitt's Point. In 1835, he was in command of the Texans at Goliad, and took an active part in a public meeting which declared for the independence of Texas. In 1836, he was in command at Victoria, but retreated on the approach of Urrea, and thus escaped the fate of Fannin. In 1841, he prepared to engage in mercantile business on the Nueces river, fifteen miles from Corpus Christi. Before his house was finished, he and his companions were taken prisoners by a raiding party of Mexicans. They were carried first to Matamoras; then to Monterey, and were started to the city of Mexico. At Agua Nueva they made their escape from the guard, but were soon retaken. Seeing no hope of escaping from a horrible imprisonment, Dimitt terminated his life by taking morphine.

**DUVAL.**—Three brothers of this name, sons of Governor Duval, of Florida, have figured in our history. B. C. Duval was one of the unfortunate victims of the Fannin massacre.

**DUVAL, JOHN C.**—Was one of Fannin's men, who, when led out to be shot, was unhurt at the first fire, but fell down and feigned death until he saw an opportunity to escape. He has written some semi-fictitious tales, giving life-like and graphic descriptions of soldier life on the frontier.

**DUVAL, THOMAS H.**—A lawyer who settled in Austin, when that city became the permanent capital of the State. In 1857, when the Western Judicial District was formed, he was appointed United States District Judge, an office he still holds.

**EDWARDS, HAYDEN.**—An Empresario, who attempted to introduce colonists into Eastern Texas. His contract was annulled by Governor Blanco, October 2d, 1826. Though the Fredonians were for a time driven from

Texas, Edwards returned after the Revolution, and at one time represented his district in the Texas Congress. His brother, Benjamin W. Edwards, was raising a company in Mississippi, for the Texas army, in 1836, when he heard of the battle of San Jacinto. In 1837, he was a candidate for Governor of Mississippi, but died during the canvass.

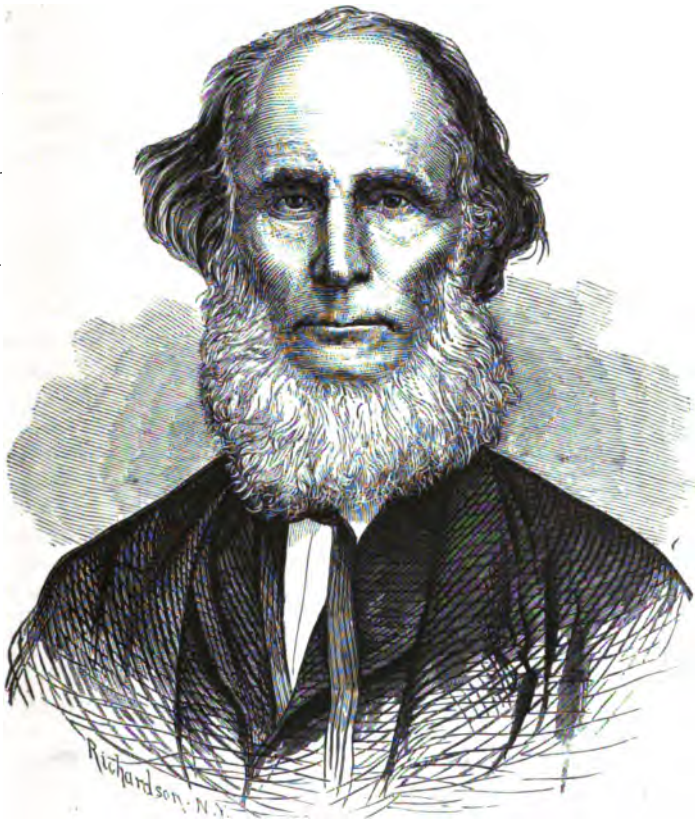
**EDWARDS, MONROE.**—First appeared in Texas as a merchant's clerk, at Anahuac, where he was arrested and kept in custody by Bradburn. In 1840, he introduced a cargo of African negroes into the country. His partner, Mr. Dart, charged him with forgery, and he was arrested, but made his escape. He next appeared in England as a philanthropist, laboring to secure the emancipation of the slaves whom he introduced into Texas. On his return to the United States, he was convicted of forgery, and sent to Sing Sing prison, New York, where he died in 1847.

**ELISONDO, Y.**—Was at one time associated with the patriot Hidalgo, of Mexico, but afterwards betrayed and shot his leader. In 1813, he brought a Spanish army to San Antonio, to defeat the Republicans. In the battle of Alasan, June 5th, he was totally defeated. He again returned to Texas with the army of Arredondo. Elisondo was sent, after the battle of Medina, in pursuit of the fugitive Republicans. At the Trinity he found some seventy or eighty unable to cross the river. These he cruelly put to death.

**ELLIS, RICHARD.**—Was a prominent citizen on Red river, and represented that municipality in the Convention of 1836, and was the President of that body. There was, however, some doubt as to which government the Red river country belonged, and to be certain to have representation at the right place, Mr. Ellis's son, who lived in the house with him, represented the same district in the Arkansas Legislature, as a citizen of Miller county, Arkansas. Mr. Ellis died in 1849.

**EVANS, LEMUEL DALE.**—A native of Tennessee, came to Texas in 1843, and settled in Fannin county, which he represented in the Annexation Convention, in 1845. In 1855, he was elected to Congress from the Eastern District. During the war he espoused the Union cause. In 1868, he was in the Reconstruction Convention, and in 1870, appointed Chief Justice of the Supreme Court. His term expired in 1873. In 1875, he was United States Marshal at Galveston. He died in the city of Washington, July 1st, 1877.

**FANNIN, JAMES W.**—A mournful interest attaches to the name of Fannin. He was a native of Georgia, and received a military education at West Point. He came to Texas in the fall of 1834, with money furnished partly by friends, to purchase slaves and open a plantation. When the difficulty about the cannon occurred at Gonzales, he raised a company called the "Brazos Guards," and hastened to the West. He continued in the service, and it was Fannin's company that was sent forward from the Espada Mission to select a camping-ground nearer San Antonio, and which fought the



**JOHN CALDWELL.**



battle of Concepcion. In that fight Fannin won the admiration of the army, and the title of "the hero of Concepcion." At the reorganization of the army after Austin's resignation, the Executive Council at San Felipe selected Fannin and Rusk as recruiting officers, and agents to collect men and munitions of war. Rusk was sent east and Fannin west of the Trinity.\*

On the 21st of December, Houston ordered Fannin to establish his headquarters at Velasco. In the meantime, the Council had, without consulting the Commander-in-Chief, greatly enlarged his authority as *agent*, and had directed him to collect forces at, or near Copano, for a descent upon Matamoras.

January 8th, 1836, Fannin, at Velasco, issued an address calling for volunteers. He announced that "an expedition to the West had been ordered by the General Council, and the volunteers from Bexar, Goliad, Velasco, and elsewhere, were ordered to rendezvous at San Patricio, between the 24th and 27th instant, and report to the officer in command. The fleet convoy will sail from Velasco under my charge on or about the eighteenth, and all who feel disposed to join it and aid in keeping the enemy out of Texas, and at the same time cripple the enemy in their resources at home, are invited to enter the ranks forthwith." There was at this time an inextricable confusion both in the civil and military affairs of the country. The Governor and Executive Council were at loggerheads. The Governor had been deposed by the Council, but declined to surrender his office. Both Governor Smith and Lieutenant-Governor Robinson assumed to exercise Executive functions, and both issued orders to army officers, frequently contradictory. General Houston recognized the authority of Smith, and Fannin acted under orders from Robinson and the Council.

Governor Smith had, on the 17th of December, ordered Houston to make a demonstration upon Matamoras, and on the same day Houston ordered Bowie, then at Goliad, to organize a force for this purpose. To add to the confusion, the Executive Council also ordered Colonels F. W. Johnson and James Grant to lead an expedition against the same place. Here then, were three independent commands organizing for the same purpose. Houston arrived at Goliad about the middle of January and proceeded on to Refugio, where he learned, for the first time, of the expeditions of Fannin and Johnson and Grant. He considered that his authority as Commander-in-Chief had been superseded, and he allowed the citizens of Refugio to elect him to the Convention, and immediately returned to the Brazos. Fannin

\* December 10th, 1835, the Council appointed the following persons as assistants of Colonel Fannin in collecting supplies for the volunteer army: For Cole's settlement, H. Chrisman; Washington, John Lott; New Year's Creek, Philip Coe; Mill Creek, Samuel Pettus; San Felipe, Mosely Baker; Colorado, J. S. Lester and Jesse Burnham; Navidad, William Thompson and Elijah Stapp; Menifee, (Egypt), Thomas Rabb; Fort Settlement, (Richmond), Randall Jones; East of Brazos, E. Waller; Lake Creek, James J. Foster; Harrisburg, E. Mathieu; Columbia, W. D. C. Hall; Brazoria, J. L. D. Byrom; Bay Prairie, Daniel Rawls and R. H. Williams; Gonzales, William A. Matthews; Spring Creek, Abraham Roberts; and for Mina (Bastrop), L. C. Cunningham.

arrived at Goliad about the first of February, and soon afterwards an organization of the volunteers took place. Most of the men were from Georgia, and Fannin was elected Colonel, and Ward Lieutenant-Colonel. Notwithstanding this election and his appointment by the Council, Fannin still doubted his authority to command. In a letter to Governor Robinson, dated February 14th, he says: "I hope soon to receive some intelligence from General Houston, and to see him at the head of the army. I am delicately situated, having received no orders from him, or your Excellency. I am well aware that during the General's furlough the command naturally, and of right, devolves on me; but the fact has not been communicated to me *officially*, either by the General or the Governor. The steps I have taken are those of prudence and for defence, and would be allowed as Colonel of the volunteers. May I ask for *orders*, and a regular communication from you, that I may be fully apprised of what is doing for us? I will obey orders, if I am sacrificed in the discharge of them; but if you are unable to afford us reasonable aid, and that in time, it would be best to destroy everything and fall back." On the 16th he wrote again, as follows: "If General Houston does not return to duty on the expiration of his furlough, and it meets your approbation, I shall make headquarters at Bexar, and take with me such of the forces as can be spared." He wrote to Governor Robinson again on the 22d: "I am critically situated. General Houston is absent on furlough, and neither myself nor army have received any *orders* as to who should assume command. It is my right, and in many respects I have done so, when I was convinced the public good required it." These extracts prove conclusively that Fannin was more than willing to occupy a subordinate position; and in view of subsequent events, they have a peculiar interest. He has even since his death been accused of acting contrary to the orders of the Commander-in-Chief; and we have thought it necessary to give these facts in vindication of his character. His position was extremely embarrassing. His authority was not recognized by all the officers at Goliad. Captain Dimitt wrote to the Council, suggesting the appointment of General Zavalla to the command. When this appointment was not made, Dimitt and his company retreated to Victoria, in obedience, as he said, to orders from Houston.

Undoubtedly, Fannin's intention was to retreat before the advancing Mexicans, as he had intimated to Governor Robinson; and when he was advised of the advance of Urrea, he ordered San Patricio evacuated. This order was not obeyed, and Yoakum says it was because Colonels Johnson and Grant, who were there, had independent commands, and did not recognize Fannin's authority over them. Besides this question of authority, Fannin had a serious distrust of his own ability; a distrust very remarkable, not to say unparalleled in military men. In one of his letters to Robinson he says: "I am not practically an experienced commander, and may, and in all human probability, have erred. I do not desire any command, and particularly that of chief. I feel, I know, if you and the Council do not, that I am incompetent. Fortune and brave soldiers may favor me, and save the State, and establish for me a reputation far beyond my deserts." Again: "I am a better judge of my military abilities than others, and if I



am qualified to command an army, I have not found it out. I well know I am a better company officer than most now in Texas, and might do, with regulars, for a regiment, but this does not constitute me a commander."

When, on that fatal Palm Sunday after the battle of Colita, he was marched out with his comrades to slaughter, Fannin was told that if he would kneel his life might be spared. He replied that he had no desire to live after his men had been killed. A soldier attempted to tie a handkerchief over his eyes. He seized the handkerchief and tied it himself. To the officer in command he handed his watch, with a request that it might be sent to his family; and he made one further request: that he might be shot in the breast and not in the head; and further, wished to be decently buried. Having made these requests, he deliberately took his position in a chair, and bared his bosom; the signal was given, and the gallant Texan leader was a lifeless corpse! With a perfidy which language is hardly adequate to portray, the officer kept Fannin's watch; had him shot in the head, and left his body unburied!

As a commander, Fannin distrusted himself and made serious mistakes — mistakes for which he paid with his life; still the views he expressed in his correspondence were eminently correct and praiseworthy. To the Georgia volunteers he wrote, advising them to have nothing to do with the political squabbles of Texas until after the war, when they would become peaceful and permanent citizens. He wrote to the Council deploring the fact that there were so few Texans in the army, but requested that those sent might be infantry, and organized before they reached headquarters, as elections in camp were very demoralizing. To Colonel Nail, at Bexar, he wrote suggesting the propriety of withdrawing the cannon from that exposed position. He also suggested to the Council the propriety of evacuating both Goliad and Bexar, and establishing a line of defense on the east side of the Guadalupe river. He further gave it as his opinion that if Santa Anna entered the country with five thousand men, he would penetrate to the interior of the country, and probably cross the Brazos before his progress could be arrested.

The tender solicitude which Fannin expressed for the welfare of his family, shows him to have been a man of strong domestic attachments. He was modest, brave, generous, and patriotic. Among the Texas martyrs to liberty, the name of FANNIN will occupy a conspicuous place. Texans of future ages will hold it in profound veneration; and his memory will be cherished by all, in every clime, who appreciate soldierly daring and moral worth.

The bodies of the victims of the horrible massacre were left unburied, though partially burned up in a brush fence. Late in the summer, when the Texan army under Rusk occupied Goliad, their bones were collected and buried with proper funeral rites.

Dr. Shackelford, Captain of the Red Rovers, from Alabama, in reviewing the events of this disastrous campaign, says Fannin erred in sending off King and Ward, and thus giving the enemy a chance to cut him up in detail. Fannin erred again in not retreating more rapidly and placing the Guadalupe river between himself and the enemy. The Doctor further

states that Fannin, as well as many others in the command, had too great a contempt for the prowess of the Mexicans. They did not believe Urrea would venture to follow them. In answer to the question, "Why did they not retreat the night after the battle?" the Doctor said: "Their teams were either killed or scattered, and they could not transport their wounded, and would not leave them; and they still hoped Horton would return from Victoria with reinforcements. They surrendered in good faith. Neither Fannin nor any one of his men would have surrendered except upon the pledge of being treated as prisoners of war in honorable warfare. The Mexicans were alone responsible for the subsequent violation of the terms of surrender and the bloody massacre."

As the Texas people of all coming time will feel a profound interest in the bloody holocaust at Goliad, we subjoin Dr. Shackelford's account of the horrible massacre:

"The dawn of day, Palm Sunday, March 27th, we were awakened by a Mexican officer calling us up, and saying he wanted the men to form a line that they might be counted. On hearing this, my impression was that, in all probability, some poor fellows had made their escape during the night. After leaving the church, I was met by Colonel Guerrero, said to be an Adjutant-General of the Mexican army, who requested that I should go to his headquarters, in company with Major Miller and his men, (Miller had been taken at Copano, but without arms, hence not put to death), and that I would take my friend and companion, Dr. Joseph H. Barnard with me. We accordingly went to his tent, about one hundred yards in a southwest direction. On passing the fort I saw Ward's men in line with their knapsacks on. Inquired of them where they were going; some of them said they were to march to Copano, and from thence to be sent home. (The evening before they had been playing the tune, "*Home*," on their flutes.) After reaching Colonel Guerrero's tent, to attend to some wounded, as we supposed, we sat down and engaged in familiar conversation. In about a half hour we heard the report of a volley of small arms, towards the river and to the east of the fort. I immediately inquired the cause of the firing, and was assured by the officer that he did not know, but expected it was the guard firing off their guns. In fifteen or twenty minutes thereafter, another such volley was fired directly south of us and in front. At the same time I could distinguish the heads of some of the men through the boughs of some peach trees, and could hear their screams. It was then, for the first time, that the awful conviction seized upon our minds, that treachery and murder had begun its work. Shortly afterwards Colonel Guerrero appeared at the mouth of the tent. I asked him if it could be possible they were murdering our men? He replied that it was so; but he had not given the order; neither had he executed it. He further said he had done all in his power to save as many as he could; and that if he could have saved more he would have done so. The men were taken out in four divisions, and under different pretexts—such as making room in the fort for the reception of Santa Anna going out to slaughter beef, and being marched to Copano to be sent home. In about an hour, the closing scene of this base and treacherous tragedy was acted in the fort; and the cold-blooded murder of all the wounded who were unable to be marched out, was its infernal catastrophe. Fannin was the last victim. About eleven o'clock we were marched into the fort and ordered to the hospital. We had to pass by our butchered companions, who were stripped of their clothes, and their naked, mangled bodies thrown in a pile. The wounded were all hauled out in carts that evening, and some brush thrown over the different piles, with a view of burning their bodies. A few days afterwards I accompanied Major Miller to the spot where lay those who were dear to me while living; and whose memory will be embalmed in my affection until this poor heart itself shall be cold in death—and oh! what a spectacle! The flesh had been

burned from off the bodies; but many hands and feet were yet unscathed. I could recognize no one. The bones were all still knit together, and the vultures were feeding upon those limbs which, one week before, were actively played in battle."

**FIELDS, RICHARD.**—A half-breed Cherokee chief, who, in 1821-22, visited Mexico to make arrangements to settle the tribe in Texas. He was accompanied by Bowles. They obtained a verbal promise of lands, and settled in what is now Cherokee county. These Indians were called civilized, and lived by cultivating the soil. But the government was slow in giving them titles to their land, and Fields and some others joined the Fredonians, in 1826. He was assassinated by those who refused to join the league. He was a Master-Mason.

**FIELDS, WILLIAM.**—A native of North Carolina, but came from Tennessee to Texas in 1837; served in the Legislature from 1847 to 1855; in 1856 was appointed State Engineer; and died in Hempstead, in 1858. He was the author of "Fields' Scrap Book."

**FISHER, S. RHODES.**—Was a native of Philadelphia; came to Texas in 1831, and settled at Matagorda; represented that municipality in the Convention of 1836, and was appointed Secretary of the Navy. He died in Matagorda in 1839.

**FISHER, WILLIAM S.**—In 1835 represented Gonzales county in the Consultation; commanded a company at the battle of San Jacinto; in 1837 was Secretary of War; in March, 1840, was in command at San Antonio when the Comanche chiefs were killed in the Council House. In 1840 he joined the army of the Republic of the Rio Grande, at San Patricio, at the head of two hundred men. At the termination of that unsuccessful campaign he returned to Texas, and was elected Captain of a company in the Somervell campaign, in 1842. When Somervell left the Rio Grande, Fisher was elected commander of the Mier expedition; was severely wounded at the battle of Mier, and died in 1845.

**FLORES, MANUEL.**—A Lieutenant in Seguin's company at San Jacinto; afterwards at Nacogdoches, was concerned in an attempt to get up a rebellion against the Texas authorities; in 1839 he went to Matamoras, when General Canalizo employed him to visit the Indians on the Texas frontier, and rouse them to hostilities. He, with about twenty-five Indians, was discovered, May 14th, on the Gabriel river, by a company of Rangers under Lieutenant James O. Rice. Flores was killed and his dispatches captured.

**FORD, DR. JOHN S.**—A native of South Carolina; came to Texas in 1836; after serving in various capacities in the army, he, in 1843, commenced the practice of medicine in San Augustine; in 1844 he was elected to Congress; in 1846 he was Adjutant in Hays' regiment, and in command of a spy company in the Mexican war; in 1849, in connection with Major Neighbors, he laid out a road from San Antonio to El Paso and Santa Fe. He then re-

sided in Austin, and in 1852, on the death of General Burleson, Ford was elected to his place in the State Senate. In 1858 he was in the Ranging service, and commanded a battalion which had a severe fight with Indians on the Canadian river; about sixty Indians were killed. In 1860-61, he was in command on the Rio Grande, and had several skirmishes with Cortina. During the war he was employed in various capacities in the Confederate service on the Rio Grande. At the close of the war he started a paper at Brownsville, but was soon called to lead a company against border cattle and horse thieves. In 1873 he was cattle and hide inspector for Cameron county; in 1874, Mayor of Brownsville; in 1875, in the Constitutional Convention; in 1876, in the Senate from Brownsville.

**FRANKLIN, B. C.**—Was a member of Deaf Smith's spy company in 1836; fought as a private at San Jacinto, and was soon afterward appointed to a District Judgeship, by President Burnet. He was one of the first settlers on Galveston Island. He frequently served as District Judge, and also represented the county in the State Legislature. He was elected to the Senate from the Galveston district in 1873, but died before the Legislature met.

**GAINES, JAMES.**—A native of Virginia, and a relative of General E. P. Gaines; came to the Sabine river and established a ferry in the first years of the present century; was a captain in Magee's army in 1812; but took sides against the Fredonians in 1825. He was a brother-in-law of Norris, the Alcalde deposed by the Edwards party. Gaines entered heartily into the Revolution in 1836, and was a member of the Convention that declared the independence of Texas. Before the Revolution he had filled the office of sheriff and alcalde, and after the establishment of the Republic represented his district in Congress. About the time of annexation he removed to Bastrop, and in 1849 to California, where he died.

**GALVES, DON JOSE BERNARDO.**—For whom our chief commercial city was named, was a native of Malaga, Spain. His father was viceroy of Mexico. In 1765, young De Galvez was appointed Visitor-General of New Spain. After a thorough inspection of the country, he projected many needed reforms in the administration, and unwilling to trust the officers already in the country to carry forward his reforms, he brought a number of accomplished Spaniards and entrusted them with the administration. Having returned to Spain, he was for a short time President of the Council of the Indies. In 1777 he was appointed Governor of Louisiana. This was during the American Revolution and De Galves strongly sympathized with the struggling colonists; and assisted in sending them arms and ammunition up the Mississippi river. In 1779 Spain declared war against Great Britain, and De Galves immediately prepared to expel the British from West Florida. He captured Fort Bute on the fifth of September, and Baton Rouge on the 21st, thus extending the Spanish boundary to Pearl river. In March, 1780, he captured Mobile, taking possession of the country as far as the Perdido, and completed the conquest by capturing Pensa-

cola on the ninth of May. His authority then extended from Florida to the Rio Grande; and from the Gulf of Mexico almost to the great lakes. In 1789 he was made Captain-General of Cuba and the two Floridas and Louisiana; but his father dying the same year, he was appointed viceroy of Mexico. He proved to be one of the most enlightened and liberal rulers that ever occupied the vice-regal throne in Spanish America. He introduced many reforms; increased the number of judges, and created intendencies, an office especially designed for the protection of the Indian tribes. This arrangement gave a species of local government to the people. Texas was then attached to the intendency of San Luis Potosi. It has been said that the Mexicans, restive under the Spanish yoke, were anxious to throw it off and to create De Galves their king; but that he, following the example of our own Washington, declined the honor. An immense concourse at the Capital actually proclaimed him king, when he rode out into the crowd and prevailed on the people to disperse. As they did so, De Galvez cried out, "long live his Catholic Majesty, Charles IV." Another uprising in his favor in a distant province was also suppressed. During these excitements the viceroy erected an almost impregnable fortress at Chepultepec; (afterward captured by General Scott). Various reasons were assigned for this; some thought he did it for a place of refuge in case of a popular uprising. He was not without enemies; and they conjectured that he possibly meditated a revolution against the king, and prepared this castle as a place to raise the standard of revolt. He died very suddenly, in August, 1794, just after a hunting excursion. His friends believed he was poisoned by spies of the king, who was jealous of his influence with the populace.

**GATES FAMILY.**—This family was originally from Kentucky, and settled in Miller county, Arkansas, in 1819, and in the fall of 1821 started for Austin's colony in Texas; reached Nacogdoches December 27th, and continued their journey westward; found all the rivers fordable and reached the Brazos, in the neighborhood of Washington, early in January, 1822. At the crossing of the Trinity they overtook Andrew Robinson, who came to the Brazos and established a ferry. William Gates, senior, died in 1829; his sons, Charles and William, in 1822; Ransom in 1828, and Samuel in 1836. Amos Gates settled six miles below the town of Washington, on the first league of land surveyed in Austin's colony, where he still lived in 1877.

**GIDDINGS FAMILY.**—Giles A. Giddings came from Pennsylvania to Texas in 1835, and was negotiating for an empresario contract when the revolution broke out. He joined Houston's army at Groce's; was wounded at the battle of San Jacinto, and died soon afterwards, from the effects of the wound.

**GIDDINGS, J. D.**—Came to Texas in 1838, and settled in Washington county; was for a time connected with the army; and was in Bogart's company in the Somervell campaign; he filled various offices, and represented his county in the Legislature in 1866; died in Brenham in 1878.

**GIDDINGS, JOHN JAMES.**—Came to Texas in 1846; was surveyor for the German colony introduced that year into Texas; while traveling on the overland stage, in 1861, when near Tucson, Arizona, the stage was surrounded by Indians, when the driver and he, with five other passengers, were killed.

**GIDDINGS, GEORGE H.**—Was one of the original proprietors of the overland stage line. During the war was Lieutenant-Colonel in Ford's regiment; is still living.

**GIDDINGS, DR. FRANK M.**—Was killed by a desperado, in El Paso, in 1858

**GIDDINGS, D. C.**—Came to Texas in 1850; was in the Confederate army, with the rank of Lieutenant-Colonel, during the war; was elected to Congress in 1870; was re-elected in 1872, and in 1876.

**GILLESPIE, JAMES.**—(In some reports spelled Gillaspie). A captain at San Jacinto; afterwards in the Ranging service; in 1846 he captured the town of Laredo; and was killed May the ninth, in the battle of Resaca de la Palma.

**GILLESPIE, R. A.**—Came to Texas in 1837, and commenced a mercantile business in LaGrange; in 1839 was in Jordan's expedition to the Rio Grande; in 1840 in the battle of Plum Creek, and also in Colonel Moore's Indian campaign to the head waters of the Colorado; in 1841 a Lieutenant in Tom Green's company of Rangers; in 1842 with those Texans who drove Vasquez out of the country, and also in the Somervell campaign; in 1844, while a leader of Green's company, was severely wounded in an Indian fight; in 1846 he was a captain in Hays' regiment. He greatly distinguished himself at the battle of Monterey, where he led in a charge in which ten of the Mexican guns were captured. Subsequently, while leading a desperate charge on the Bishop's palace, Gillespie was mortally wounded. His remains, with those of Colonel Walker, were conveyed to San Antonio for interment. Gillespie county bears his name.

**GRANT, DR. JAMES.**—A native of Scotland; became a naturalized citizen of Mexico. In 1825 he became a large landholder in the neighborhood of Parras. In company with Dr. J. C. Beales, he, in 1833, obtained an empresario contract for settling eight hundred families between the Nueces and Rio Grande rivers. Fifty-nine of these colonists sailed from New York in the schooner Amos Wright, on the eleventh of November, 1833. On the sixth of December, the schooner entered Aransas pass. The company proceeded with great difficulty, *via* Goliad and San Antonio, towards their designated territory. They arrived at a little stream called the Las Moras, on the sixteenth of March, 1834, where a village called "Dolores," was duly laid off into streets. The name seemed prophetic; the village was never built up, and the settlement was soon abandoned. Dr. Grant



**O. M. ROBERTS.**

Johnson and his party. Placido wished to return with us, but Grant persuaded him to start forthwith for Goliad, and give Fannin information of Urrea's arrival. We had been absent from San Patricio some ten or twelve days. As Grant and myself approached to join our party, the dragoons opened their line, and we passed in. We at once saw that most of our party had already been killed, and we decided to sell our own lives as dearly as possible. My horse was quickly killed with a lance, but Grant told me to mount Major Morris' horse, as Morris had just been killed. I did so, but without seeing any object to be accomplished by it. Just at that moment the horses took a stampede, and broke the lines of dragoons, and Grant and myself finding ourselves then the only survivors of our party, followed in the wake of the horses, the dragoons shooting after us, and wounding our horses in several places, but not badly. As we were flying, a dragoon rushed upon me with his lance set, but I knocked it one side and shot him, holding my pistol almost against his breast; and scarcely stopping, I fled with Grant, the Mexicans following, and some of them occasionally coming up with us, and crying out to us to surrender and our lives would be saved. But we knew better, and continued to fly, but the number of those overtaking us became larger and larger, and after we had run six or seven miles, they surrounded us, when, seeing no further chance of escape, we dismounted, determined to make them pay dearly for our lives. As I reached the ground a Mexican lanced me in the arm, but Grant immediately shot him dead, when I seized his lance to defend myself. Just as he shot the Mexican, I saw Grant fall, pierced with several lances, and a moment after I found myself fast in a lasso that had been thrown over me, and by which I was dragged to the ground. I could do no more, and only regretted that I had not shared the fate of all the rest of my party.

After Grant fell, I saw some ten or a dozen officers go up and run their swords through his body. He was well known to them, having lived a long time in Mexico. They had a bitter grudge against him.

**GRAY, WILLIAM FAIRFAX.**—Was a Clerk of the House of Representatives in 1837, and subsequently District Attorney at Houston, an office which he held when he died in that city in 1841.

**GRAY, PETER W.**—Son of the above, was appointed District Attorney on the death of his father; was a member of the first Legislature of the State; and for many years filled the office of District Judge. During the war he represented his district in the Confederate Congress; after the war he resumed the practice of his profession; was appointed one of the Justices of the Supreme Court in 1874, but after a few months service, was compelled, on account of ill-health, to resign. He died in Houston, October 8th, 1874.

**GRAYSON, PETER W.**—Was an Aid to General Burleson at San Antonio in 1835; in 1836, Attorney-General during the government *ad interim*; soon afterwards was sent to the United States in the diplomatic service, where he remained two years. At the close of General Houston's first term as President, Grayson became a candidate for the office, with flattering prospects of success. During the canvass, which was very bitter, he died by his own hands, at Bean's station, in Tennessee. In colonial times Grayson had faithfully served Texas, at one time taking twenty-five of his own negroes out to fight the Indians.

**GREEN, THOMAS.**—Fought as a private at San Jacinto; was surveyor of Fayette county in 1838, and afterwards in the Ranging service. He was in



the Mexican war with the rank of Captain. He was the Clerk of the Supreme Court of the State from its organization until the breaking out of the civil war. He entered the Confederate army with the rank of Colonel; won distinction in the Arizona expedition, and also in the battle of Galveston. He rose to the rank, first of Brigadier, and then of Major-General; was killed at the battle of Blair's Landing, on Red river, in Louisiana, April 12th, 1864.

**GREEN, THOMAS JEFFERSON.**—Was a native of North Carolina; educated at West Point; resided successively in Tennessee, Mississippi and Florida. Came to Texas in 1836, arriving while the army was at Groce's. Here, says Foote, he was induced to accept the commission of Brigadier-General, and to return to the United States for volunteers. Foote adds: "Green's uncommon activity enabled him to throw more men, provisions and munitions of war into the country in the short space of a month or two, than any other individual whatever had succeeded in contributing." He returned to Texas in charge of some volunteers, on the schooner *Ocean Queen*, landing at Velasco on the 3d of June. He and his men bore a conspicuous part in the forcible disembarkation of *Santa Anna* and his suite. In 1842, he was in the *Somervell* campaign, and remained on the *Rio Grande* when that General returned. In the reorganization which took place for the descent upon *Mier*, Green was chosen to command the men who went down the river in boats. At *Mier* he fought gallantly, and was bitterly opposed to the surrender; and rather than give up his sword to *Ampudia*, he broke it across his knee. He made his escape from the Castle of *Perote*, in the spring of 1843, and arrived at Velasco in June, just on the eve of an election, and was elected to Congress from *Brazoria* county. After annexation he went to California, where he served one term in the State Senate; and was elected Major-General of the militia. Returning to the Atlantic States, he settled again in his native State, where he died January 12th, 1864.

**GREGG, JOHN.**—For whom the county was named, was a native of North Carolina. Came to Texas in 1854, and was a member of the Secession Convention in 1861. At the adjournment of the Convention, he entered the Confederate army as a Colonel; was promoted to the rank of Brigadier in 1862; and was killed at the battle near *Charles City*, Virginia, October, 1864.

**GRIMES, JESSE.**—Was a native of North Carolina; born in 1778. Removed to Alabama in 1817, and came to Texas in January, 1826, and settled in the county which bears his name. Was in the Convention of 1836; served in both branches of the Congress of the Republic, and of the State Legislature, after annexation. Died at his home, March 16th, 1866.

**GROCE, JARED E.**—Came with his family and about one hundred negroes to the *Brazos* river, in the fall of 1821. Under the regulations of *Austin's* first colonial grant, he was entitled to 80 acres of land for each slave intro-

duced. He brought seed-corn, but such was the scarcity of breadstuffs, that after the corn was planted, he had to watch the field to keep the negroes from scratching it up to eat. When the corn was in roasting ears, the field had to be guarded night and day, to prevent the bears and other wild animals from destroying it. He also brought a few cotton seed, and planted the first in Texas, and at Groce's Retreat he, in 1828, built the first cotton-gin house in the country. As an illustration of the moderate estimate placed upon land, we may state that Col. Groce bought the league upon which the town of Courtney now stands, for a bolt of domestic and a riding-pony. The Indians were troublesome, and on several occasions he armed a company of his slaves, and went out on Indian scouts. He died in 1836. A modest monument surmounts his grave at his old home, Groce's Retreat.

**GUTIERRES, BERNARDO**—Was one of the patriot leaders, under Hidalgo, in Mexico; was sent by the Revolutionary party, in 1811, as an Ambassador to the United States. After the death of Hidalgo, Bernardo, as he is usually called, made his home at Nachitoches, Louisiana. At the organization on the Sabine, in 1812, of "The Republican Army of the North" Gutierrez became the nominal commander, though the real authority was exercised by Magee. After the death of Magee and the taking of San Antonio, in March, 1813, Bernardo began, among his own countrymen, to exercise more authority. He organized a governing junta in the city, after the Mexican fashion; and after the same fashion fourteen Spanish officers, who had surrendered as prisoners of war, were put to death. After this barbarous deed, Bernardo was for a time displaced from command, but was restored again on the arrival of Elisondo, with a fresh Spanish army, in May. He acted with great energy, and marched out and totally defeated the Spaniards in the battle of the Alazan, June 5th. Soon after this he was succeeded in the command by Toledo, and he, with his family, retired again to the east side of the Sabine, thus escaping the disastrous battle of Medina. In 1819, Bernardo was appointed a member of the Supreme Council, organized by Long at Nacogdoches, but he never heartily entered into Long's scheme of conquest. On the establishment of the Republic of Mexico, in 1821, Bernardo became Governor of Tamaulipas. In company with his young friend, Almonte, he sailed from New Orleans to Matamoras, and entered at once upon the discharge of his duties. It was his good fortune, in 1823, to capture the exiled Emperor, Iturbide, soon after he landed at Soto la Marina. As Congress had already decreed that if Iturbide returned to Mexico, he should be shot, Gutierrez without any unnecessary delay proceeded to carry out the sentence. At the expiration of his term as Governor, he disappeared from public life. Bean, in his personal narrative, under date at San Carlos, June 25th, 1825, says: "I found Don Bernardo Gutierrez, with about four hundred troops, in command of the place. He was my old friend, and I was very glad to see him, as my horses and mules were giving out, and my money also; but to my misfortune, I found him very poor and unable to help himself." In his old age, Bernardo supported himself by keeping a small saddlery-shop in Guerro.

**HALL, WARREN D. C.**—Commenced the practice of law in Natchitoches, Louisiana, in 1812, and the same year became a captain in Magee's expedition. After the battle of Rosillo, and the murder of the Spanish prisoners by Delgado, Hall, with a number of other Americans, returned to the United States, thus escaping the disastrous battle of Medina. In 1817, he accompanied the expedition to Soto la Marina, but fortunately returned to the Texas coast with Aury, thus avoiding the fate of those who remained with Mina or returned by land with Perry. He became for a time a citizen of Brazoria County, and was, in 1835, one of the Committee of Safety at Columbia. While Rusk was absent in the army, in April, 1836, Hall was Acting Secretary of War, with Burnet, at Galveston. The last years of his life were spent at the place known as the Three Trees, on Galveston Island, where he died in 1868.

**HALL, C. K.**—A native of Connecticut; became a merchant at Victoria in 1838. When that place was burned by the Indians, in 1840, he removed first to Houston and then to Bastrop; became largely interested in mail stage-lines; in 1868, was Collector of Customs at Galveston. He died in Austin in January, 1873.

**HAMILTON, JAMES**—A native of South Carolina, which State he represented in Congress, and of which he was Governor. It was he who signed the Nullification Act, which came near plunging the country into civil war during the administration of President Jackson. For many years Hamilton was the commercial and diplomatic agent of Texas in Europe. While engaged in this service, it is said he became involved in pecuniary embarrassments which consumed his private fortune. In 1857, he started for Texas in hopes of obtaining relief, but was lost in the wreck of the steamship Opelousas. In 1820, General Jackson proffered him the mission to Mexico, which he declined. He also declined a seat in the United States Senate, tendered to him on the death of Mr. Calhoun, and the command of the Army of Texas, tendered to him by the Congress of the Republic.

**HAMILTON, MORGAN C.**—A native of Alabama; came to Texas in 1830, and for six years was a clerk in the War Department, and at one time Acting Secretary of War, and also of the Treasury. In 1867, he was appointed Comptroller of the State Treasury; in 1868, he was a member of the Reconstruction Convention, and, in 1870, elected to the United States Senate, a position held until 1877. He resides in Austin.

**HAMILTON, ANDREW J.**—Brother of the above, and also a native of Alabama; came to Texas in 1846; was Attorney-General in 1849; after which he was a member of the State Legislature; in 1859, elected to Congress, where he opposed secession. During the progress of the war he left Texas, and in the summer of 1865 was appointed Provisional Governor by Andrew Johnson. He was a member of the second Reconstruction Convention, and mainly instrumental in getting the very liberal electoral bill engraved in the Constitution of 1868. In 1860 he was the conservative candi-

date for Governor, and his friends thought him elected, but after a canvass of the votes by General Reynolds, his opponent, General Davis, was declared elected. Governor Hamilton died in Austin, in April, 1875.

**HANCOCK, JOHN**—A native of Alabama; came to Texas in 1847; in 1851 he was a District Judge; in the Legislature in 1860, and in the Constitutional Convention in 1866. He was elected to Congress in 1870; re-elected in 1872, and again in 1874. Lives in the city of Austin.

**HANDY, R. E.**—One of Houston's aids in the San Jacinto campaign; died in Richmond in 1838. "When Handy died," said Lamar, "I lost my best friend."

**HANSFORD, JOHN M.**—A Representative in the Texas Congress from Shelby county, in 1838, and Speaker of the House. Died in 1843.

**HARDIMAN, BAILY**—Secretary of the Treasury during the government *ad interim*. Died in October, 1836.

**HAWKINS, CHARLES**—Was in early life a lieutenant in the United States navy; next in the Mexican navy; was with Mexico in his expedition to Tampico, and then a commodore in the Texas navy. Died of small pox in New Orleans in 1837.

**HAWKINS, JOSEPH H.**—A schoolmate of Stephen F. Austin at Transylvania, and also a partner of Austin in his Colonial Scheme. In a contract drawn up in New Orleans, November 14, 1821, Austin acknowledges the receipt of \$4,000 from Hawkins, for which he covenanted to give Hawkins one-half part of the money, effects, property and profits arising from the sale of lands, lots or from any other source growing out of the grant of lands; and all lands, lots, and other property, so derived, were to be from time to time divided between the parties in equal moities. (See *Life and Events*, pages 132-3.) Hawkins died in New Orleans in 1823. He left three children. One fell with Fannin; Thomas died in Texas in 1847; a daughter, Mrs. Victor, lives in Kentucky.

**HAYS, JOHN C.**—Was a famous Texas ranger. He was a captain in the Somervell campaign 1842; he was the colonel of the first regiment of Texans mustered into service in the Mexican War. When the term of service of the regiment expired, Hays was appointed a major of infantry in the regular army of the United States. In 1840 he was Indian Agent in New Mexico, and soon afterwards conducted a caravan across the continent to California, where he has since resided. In 1852 he was surveyor general of that State.

**HEARD, WILLIAM J. E.**—Came in 1830, with quite a colony, from North Alabama to Texas, and settled first in Jackson county and afterwards in Wharton. He commanded Company F, in Burleson's regiment, in the battle of San Jacinto. His company was immediately in front of the Mex-

ican battery. When within one hundred yards of the guns, at the flash of the cannon, his men all fell down, but rising instantly, he shouted to them that they must capture the cannons before the gunners had time to reload; and it was done. Sixteen dead Mexicans were lying near the captured pieces. Beside his sword, Captain H., carried his trusty rifle, which he fired sixteen times during the battle. In 1840 Captain Heard accompanied Colonel John H. Moore in a campaign against the Indians on the upper Colorado. Subsequently, he filled the office of Chief Justice of Wharton county. After the close of the civil war, he removed from his model plantation in Wharton county to Chappell Hill, where he died in August, 1874.

**HEMPHILL, JOHN**—A native of South Carolina; graduated at Jefferson College, Pennsylvania, in 1826, and studied law; came to Texas at an early period, and was appointed Chief Justice of the Republic in 1840; in 1842, was Adjutant to General Somervell; in 1845, in Annexation Convention; in 1846, re-appointed Chief Justice, an office he held until 1859, when he was elected to the United States Senate; resigned when the State seceded, and was sent as one of the delegates of Texas to the Convention at Montgomery, Alabama. He did not return to Texas, and was defeated in his election to the Confederate Senate. Died in Richmond, Virginia, in January, 1862. His remains were brought to Austin for final interment.

**HENDERSON, J. PINCKNEY**—A native of North Carolina; after receiving license to practice law, removed to Mississippi. In 1836, he raised a company of volunteers and brought them to Texas, landing at Velasco June 13th. At the inauguration of President Houston, in November, he became Attorney-General, and at a subsequent period, Secretary of State. In 1837, was Minister to England and France; returned to Texas in 1840, and resumed the practice of his profession. His partners were K. L. Anderson and T. J. Rusk. In 1844, he was sent as special Minister to the United States; and in 1845 he was elected Governor. By the authority of the Legislature, he commanded the Texans in the Mexican war, with rank of Major-General of Volunteers. For his gallantry at Monterey, the United States Congress voted him a sword. In 1857, he was elected to the United States Senate to fill the unexpired term of Senator Rusk, but his health was then declining and he died before taking his seat.

**HERRERA, SIMON DE.**—A native of the Canary Islands. In early life traveled extensively, especially in the United States. Married an English lady at Cadiz. He was one of those selected by De Galves and sent out from Spain to reform the administration in the new world; he was appointed Governor of Nueva Leon. Pike, who in 1807 enjoyed his hospitality, says: "If ever a chief was adored by his people, it was Herrera. When I saw him, he had been absent from his capital about one year; during which time, the citizens of rank in Monterey had not suffered a marriage or baptism to take place in any of their families; waiting until their common father could be there to consent, and give joy to the occasion by his presence." Herrera was sent both as commander and diplomatist to the Sabine, in

1806, to repel the threatened invasion by the Americans under General Wilkinson. He was imperatively ordered to drive back the Americans, and all parties expected war. But Herrera and Wilkinson entered into negotiations, and the treaty of the "Neutral Ground" was formed. His colleague, Cordero, disapproved the arrangement, and both officers sent reports to their superior officers. "Until an answer was returned," said Herrera to General Pike, "I experienced the most unhappy period of my life; conscious that I had served my country faithfully, at the same time that I had violated every principle of military duty." To his relief, the commandant, the viceroy and the king of Spain approved his course. The discovery and the defeat of the scheme of Aaron Burr for revolutionizing Northern Mexico, was the object attained by the diplomacy of Herrera. This, in the estimation of the Spaniards, more than atoned for the disobedience to orders. Herrera was one of the unfortunate victims of the massacre of Delgado, at San Antonio, April 5th, 1813.

**HERRERA, JOSE MANUEL.**—A priest who early joined the Republican party in Mexico. He was, in 1816, the diplomatic agent in the United States. He resided mostly in New Orleans, and in company with Commodore Aury, took possession of Galveston and established Republican headquarters on the island. In 1823, he was in the cabinet of Iturbide, and warmly espoused the colonization scheme of Austin, who was then in the city of Mexico. When Iturbide was deposed, Herrera fled from the capital and was twenty years in exile. In 1844, he reappeared upon the theater of Mexican politics, and was for a short time entrusted with the chief executive power. To defeat the prospect of annexation to the United States, he consented to the acknowledgement of her independence, on condition that Texas should remain an independent Republic. But this proposition came too late; preliminary steps had already been taken for the accomplishment of this object, and in spite of the remonstrances of Mexico, Texas became one of the States of the Union.

**HEWITSON, DR. JAMES.**—One of Austin's companions to Texas in 1821. Decree No. 13, September 10th, 1827, constituted him a Coahuil-Texan, (a citizen of Coahuila and Texas). The same year, in conjunction with James Power, he obtained an empresario contract for settling a colony on the coast west of Goliad. For many years he carried on an extensive mercantile and manufacturing business at Saltillo, where he died in 1870.

**HIGSMITH, SAMUEL.**—A native of Kentucky, but came from Missouri to Texas in 1826, and settled on the frontier, where he rendered efficient service as Captain of a company of rangers. In 1849 he commanded the escort that guarded the commissioners sent to open the road from San Antonio to El Paso. The hardships of the trip brought on a fever, from which he died soon after his return to San Antonio.

**HILL, B. F.**—A clerk in the eighth Congress and also in the first Legislature; for a time he filled the office of Adjutant-General. Was killed in Victoria, in 1866.



**THOMAS J. BUSK.**





**HOCKLEY, GEORGE W.**—Was Inspector General at the battle of San Jacinto; Secretary of War under Houston in 1843, and was sent by Houston to Mexico to negotiate a peace. He died in Houston, in 1854.

**HORTON, ALBERT C.**—Came in an early day from Alabama to Texas, and opened a large plantation on Caney, in Wharton county. In the spring of 1836, he collected a small cavalry company and marched to Goliad to assist Fannin, taking some oxen to be used in the transportation of cannon. He arrived at Goliad on the 16th of March, and on the next day crossed the river and had a skirmish with the cavalry of Urrea. Shackelford, who saw the fight, says, "Horton behaved with great gallantry, and made a furious charge upon the enemy; but, encountering a heavy force of infantry, he retreated in good order." On the 19th, the morning of the retreat from Goliad, Horton was sent in advance to examine the crossing of the Coleta. While at the stream awaiting the arrival of Fannin, that officer had been completely surrounded by the army of Urrea. Horton was anxious to attempt to rejoin Fannin, but his men thought it impracticable to do so, as they were too few to attempt so hazardous a feat. Horton, then, says Shackelford, resolved to go to Victoria and procure reinforcements; but Dimitt, the commander there, had already retired towards the Colorado river. Dr. Shackelford adds: "Horton should not be censured; he had done all in his power to relieve his companions, and an attempt to reach the battle-ground would almost inevitably have resulted in the death or captivity of the whole party." During the Republic, Horton represented his county in Congress; and at the first election after annexation, was elected Lieutenant-Governor. Soon after his inauguration, Governor Henderson left the State to command the Texans in the Mexican war, and Horton became Governor. He died at his plantation in 1865, soon after the surrender of the Confederate armies and the emancipation of the slaves.

**HOUSTON, SAM.**—Was born in Rockbridge county, Virginia, in 1798. When fourteen years old, his father died, leaving his family in destitute circumstances. The widow, with her nine children, removed to Blount county, Tennessee. Young Sam spent his time alternately at school, at farm work, and as a clerk in a store. Without any assignable cause, he left home and joined a band of Cherokee Indians hunting in the neighborhood. Having contracted some debts for clothes, he returned home and engaged in school-teaching until he made enough to pay his debts. In 1813 he enlisted as a soldier in the Creek war, and greatly distinguished himself at the battle of the Horse Shoe, on the Tallapoosa river, March 24th, 1814. Major Montgomery, the first to ascend the Indian breastworks, was instantly killed. Ensign Houston, who was just behind him, was severely wounded with an arrow, and also by two rifle balls. His gallantry won the admiration of General Jackson, and a life-long friendship sprung up between the two. It was nearly a year before Houston had sufficiently recovered to return to his home. In November, 1817, he was appointed Indian Agent. Complaints were made by dissatisfied contractors, of Houston's management, but after a full investigation he was honorably acquitted. He soon afterwards re-

signed the agency, and at the same time surrendered his commission as a Lieutenant in the army.

He now determined to devote himself to the law, and commenced its study. In 1819 he was elected District Attorney of Davidson county, and at the same time Major-General of the militia. In 1823 he was elected to Congress, and re-elected in 1825. At the close of his second term he was elected Governor of Tennessee; and in January, 1829, he married a Miss White. No man ever enjoyed a higher degree of popularity than did Houston at that time. He was elected by an overwhelming majority; and there was scarcely a breath of opposition to his administration in the Legislature. To all outward appearance he and his beautiful bride lived in perfect conjugal felicity. One morning in April, the citizens of Nashville were thunderstruck with the announcement that Mrs. Houston had returned to her father's house in Gallatin, and that Houston had resigned the Gubernatorial chair and fled from the city in disguise. But it was so. He had taken passage on a steamer, and gone to rejoin his old companions among the Cherokees, then living on the Arkansas river, in the Indian Territory. Curiosity has in vain attempted to ascertain the cause of the domestic trouble. The lips of the two persons most deeply involved remained sealed until they were forever closed in death; and the mystery is still unsolved.

On the 29th of October, 1829, Houston was formally admitted to citizenship among the Cherokees. In 1832 he visited the city of Washington in the interest of the Indian tribes, and secured the removal of some unworthy agents. This provoked opposition, and Houston had a personal rencounter with a member of Congress from Ohio. He was arrested and fined five hundred dollars; but President Jackson remitted the fine. When he left the Capital he bore in his pocket a commission as Confidential Indian Agent among the tribes of the Southwest, to whom he was sent to negotiate treaties.

This opens a new career in Houston's life. A man like him, conscious of his own abilities, and who, in early life, had been so remarkably successful, could not long remain content in the solitude of the wilderness, with no companions but the half-civilized aborigines. His visit to Washington, and the cordial reception given him by his former commander, had revived his love for civilized life, and his ambition to re-enter the political arena. The circumstances were auspicious. He had already been meditating a settlement in Texas, and the establishment of a stock ranche on some of her beautiful prairies. He determined to visit the Province, partly to look for a new home, and partly to fulfill his mission to the Indian tribes within her territory. He crossed Red river, at Jonesborough, December 10th, 1832, and proceeded to Nacogdoches, passing but two houses on the route. At San Felipe, he met James Bowie, who invited him to visit San Antonio and have a "talk" with some Comanche chiefs, then camped in the neighborhood of that city. From this period Texas became his home, and for thirty years his character forms her principal historical figure; and her soil entombs his mortal remains. Houston had his faults—and who has them not?—but with all his faults he was the man for the times; the man that

Texas needed at that period of her history. He had had experience as a legislator, as an executive, and as an officer in the United States army. His youth had been passed in severe struggles with poverty, and nearly his whole life had been spent on the frontier. He was a pioneer among those hardy adventurers who are constantly enlarging the boundaries of civilization. He was still in the prime of manhood, and his fine physical form pointed him out as one born to command. Around the camp-fires, in the company of his comrades in arms, he was jovial—perfectly at home; could barbecue his own meat, and, if he enjoyed such a luxury, could prepare his own cup of coffee. Self-reliant and self-helpful, he exacted no service from his soldiers that he was himself unwilling to undertake. When planning a campaign, or conducting a battle, he was equally self-reliant, but more reticent, seldom advising with his brother officers. He also possessed the rare and wonderful gifts of a popular orator. He could sway the multitude as the trees of the forests are bent by the passing tornado. He could, on any occasion, on a moment's notice, address his fellow-citizens, or his fellow-soldiers, in such strains of convincing eloquence as inspired his auditory with his own lofty sentiments. The advent of such a man into Texas properly forms an epoch in our history.

The first service he rendered his adopted country was as a member of the Convention at San Felipe, in 1833. He was the chairman of the committee that drew up a Constitution for the State as it was to be, when separated from Coahuila. It was a brief, but model document, and might even now be studied with profit, though, owing to the subversion of the Mexican Constitution by Santa Anna, it was never adopted, and Texas never became a Mexican State.

In 1834, a project was formed for introducing into East Texas a large number of Creek Indians. This, Houston assisted in defeating.

Houston did not at that period think it best for Texas to attempt a separation from Mexico. As late as August, 1835, he introduced a series of resolutions, at a public meeting at Nacogdoches, declaring for the Constitution of 1824. He was a member of the General Consultation at San Felipe, in 1835, and still opposed a declaration of independence. But Coahuila was in a state of revolution, and Texas was almost without the semblance of civil government until this body organized a Provisional Government. This was on the thirteenth of November. Hostilities then actually existed, and Houston was elected commander of the forces in the field.

Houston remained for sometime at San Felipe, assisting the Executive Council in framing ordinances for the efficient organization of an army. An immediate Mexican invasion was not anticipated, and many Texans thought a descent upon Matamoras both practicable and expedient. While other parties were getting up voluntary expeditions, Governor Smith, on the 17th of December, formally ordered General Houston "to make a demonstration upon Matamoras; or at least to secure Copano, and harass the enemy in that direction;" and Houston, says Yoakum, ordered Colonel James Bowie to raise, if possible, a sufficient force and march upon Matamoras. Again, on the 6th of January, 1836, the Governor ordered Houston, says Yoakum, "to

repair to Bexar, or such other point on the frontier as he might deem most eligible, and establish his headquarters." Houston, instead of going to San Antonio, went directly to Goliad, reaching that place on the 16th of January. On the day he arrived there, he ordered Major Morris to Refugio with his command, and sent Bowie with thirty men to Bexar, with a letter to Colonel Neill desiring him to demolish the fortifications of that place, and bring off the artillery, as it would be impossible to hold it. When the General arrived at Refugio, he was shown an act of the council that empowered Colonel Johnson to lead an independent force against Matamoras, and learned that Colonel Fannin had similar authority. Considering that his authority had thus been set aside, he immediately returned to Washington and made his report to Governor Smith. The few citizens and soldiers at Refugio elected Houston to the Convention which was to assemble in March at Washington.

Among other acts of the Council, it passed a solemn decree to secure the confidence and respect of the civilized Indians in East Texas: that they would guarantee to the Indians the peaceable enjoyment of their rights to their lands; that all surveys, grants and locations made within these limits, after the settlements of the Indians, are, and of right ought to be, null and void. On Houston's return to Washington, Governor Smith gave him a furlough till the first of March, and directed him, in conjunction with Messrs Forbes and Cameron, to bear this solemn declaration to the Indians, and enter into a treaty with them; and added: "Your absence is permitted in part by illegal acts of the Council, in superseding you, by the unauthorized appointment of agents to organize and control the army, contrary to the organic law and the ordinances of their own body." He and Mr. Forbes proceeded to the east and effected the treaty—a treaty which undoubtedly kept the Indians quiet during the exciting period which immediately succeeded.

Houston took his seat in the Convention which met on the first of March. The declaration of independence took place on the second; and on the fourth, Houston was elected Commander-in-Chief, and two days later left for the army, then on the bank of the Gaudalupe. We need not repeat the incidents connected with the retreat from Gonzales, and the march to the battle-ground.

On the morning of the ever-memorable 21st of April, Santa Anna was reinforced by the arrival of Cos with five hundred additional troops. Houston sent Deaf Smith, with a few companions, to burn Vince's Bridge on Simms' Bayou. This was done to cut off the retreat of the Mexicans. About 12 m., a council of officers was held at Houston's headquarters, and a plan of battle arranged. A little after three, the bugle sounded and the troops paraded for action. Burleson's regiment occupied the center; Sherman was on Burleson's left; and the artillery, commanded by Hockley, and the regulars under Millard, with the cavalry under Lamar, were on the right. Spontaneously, as the men rushed impetuously to the charge, the shout ran along the line, "Remember the Alamo—remember Goliad!" The fine form of the Commander-in-Chief was conspicuous in the front of the ranks. Some of Houston's enemies have stated differently, but Ben.

M'Culloch, who was in command of one of the cannon, stated that on one occasion, when about to fire, he withheld the discharge of his piece until Houston could pass, as he was immediately in front. Among the comparatively few Texans injured on that day, so glorious in our history, Houston was severely wounded in the foot. The enemy, after a few rounds, fled in the utmost disorder from the field. The victory was complete. Six hundred and thirty Mexicans lay dead on the battle-ground; two hundred and thirty-eight were wounded, and seven hundred and thirty were prisoners in the Texan camp.

The loss of the Texans was inconsiderable: eight killed and twenty-five wounded. The day after the battle, Santa Anna was brought a prisoner into camp. Notwithstanding the recent massacres at San Antonio and Goliad, the captive chief was treated with great magnanimity; his personal baggage was restored, and he was permitted to have the society of his personal staff. General Houston's wound proving very painful, he obtained leave of absence, and on the fifth day of May, embarked on one of the Government vessels for New Orleans, for surgical aid. On the 4th of June he wrote as follows to Lamar: "My wound has improved; some twenty or more bones have been taken out of it; my general health improves steadily, but it is only within the last four or five days that I have been enabled to sit up any portion of the day." When sufficiently restored, he started back to Texas, reaching San Augustine on the fifth of July. His talents, his former experience in political life, and especially the splendid victory achieved under his command at San Jacinto, pointed him out as the most suitable person to fill the executive chair of the young Republic; and at the election held in September, he was elected President of the Republic. It is hardly necessary to review the various measures of his administration. Towards the Indians he always pursued a liberal and pacific policy. He enforced the most rigid economy in the various departments of the government, even first furloughing and then disbanding the army to curtail expenses. The English was substituted for the Spanish system of judicature. By the constitution, the first President held office only two years, and was ineligible at the next ensuing election. He was succeeded by Vice-President Lamar, but was re-elected President in 1841. When he again became President, he found the public credit at the lowest ebb; the Indians hostile; the seat of government on the extreme frontier, at Austin, and the Mexicans threatening another invasion. He soon succeeded in improving the financial situation, in quieting the Indians and improving the general tone of feeling throughout the country. But in March, 1842, a Mexican force under Vasquez captured San Antonio, and another party took possession of Goliad. Houston, thinking the public archives were too much exposed on the frontier, removed the seat of government, first to Houston then to Washington, on the Brazos. This provoked great opposition to his administration in the west.

The Navy was another source of trouble. It had cost an enormous sum, and had been of very little advantage to the country. A bitter personal controversy arose between the President and Commodore Moore, which finally resulted in the suspension of the latter from his command. By

Houston's recommendation, Congress had passed a secret bill for the sale of the ships. When this was known at Galveston, it produced such a state of excitement that the law was repealed. Again: the prisoners in Mexico, taken first in the Santa Fe expedition, and afterwards in the Mier expedition, caused trouble; many thinking that the President did not exert himself for their release. Added to this, the miserable failure of the expedition sent out by his authority, under Snively, added to the annoyances of his second administration. Again: the subject of annexation to the United States was now becoming the question, in Texas. It was thought Houston, if he did not oppose this measure, was at least indifferent to its success. In this he was undoubtedly misjudged. He was in favor of annexation, but he thought the best way to secure that measure was to appear comparatively indifferent. In the meantime, he did secure an armistice with Mexico, which continued until annexation was consummated during the administration of his successor, Dr. Jones. Jones had been Secretary of State under Houston, and was the choice of Houston's friends as his successor.

General Houston was elected a member of the Annexation Convention, from Montgomery county, but for some unexplained reason never appeared and claimed his seat. At the first session of the State Legislature, in 1846, he was elected to the United States Senate, and was re-elected in 1847, and again in 1851. An old Jackson Democrat, he naturally associated with the dominant party in Congress, the party that had annexed Texas to the Union, and was carrying on the Mexican war. He was in favor of a rigid construction of the Constitution, and opposed to banks and a paper currency; opposed to all monopolies, and in general to all subsidies by the general and State governments. He opposed giving State aid to railroads, asserting: 1st, that the money would be in danger of being lost; and 2d, that if so used, it would create such powerful moneyed corporations as to endanger the liberties of the people. In a speech, in Austin, in the latter part of 1853, he declared, "that he would rather see every dollar in the Treasury sunk in the Colorado river, than to see it loaned to railroad corporations."

As early, however, as 1848-49, he began to be suspected by some of his Southern friends, as having a leaning towards the North. The question was upon the extension of the Missouri Compromise over the newly-acquired territory on the Pacific coast. He voted against the extension of the thirty-six degrees thirty minutes line across the Continent, thus virtually excluding slavery from the Pacific coast. In a speech, in the Senate, he said: "It could not be for the interest of the North to destroy the South. \* \* The intelligent and manly spirit of the North would rise up to defend the Union. He wished no separation of the States. He had too much confidence in the North to fear any injury from that section, and he thought the South, (and he was a Southern man), should make some sacrifices for the purpose of reconciliation." Long before this, Houston had taken a decided stand for the Union. He was in Texas during the Nullification excitement in South Carolina. He wrote to President Jackson: "I have with much pride and inexpressible satisfaction seen your message and proclamation, touching the Nullifiers of the South, and their peaceable

measures. God grant that you may save the Union! It does seem to me that it is reserved for you, and you alone, to render millions so great a blessing. I hear all voices commend your course, even in Texas, where is felt the liveliest interest in the preservation of the Republic."

In 1854, Senator Douglas introduced into the Senate, in his Kansas and Nebraska bill, his famous doctrine of Squatter Sovereignty; giving Territorial Legislatures the right to say whether slavery should, or should not exist in their respective Territories. Houston, and John Bell, of Tennessee, were the only Southern Senators who voted against Douglas' bill. Houston opposed the bill on the ground of expediency; admitting, however, that the principle was correct, that the citizens should decide whether they would tolerate or exclude slavery from their State. Houston contended that if this bill passed, which was a virtual repeal of the Missouri Compromise, the new Territories would exclude slavery. The North, being the most populous, would pour into them a tide of immigrants, who would never consent to the existence of slavery. The result vindicated this view of the Senator. Both Nebraska and Kansas became free States.

About this time, Houston, for a period, affiliated with the Know-Nothing party. His course was severely condemned by many in Texas, and he was often called upon to defend himself. We copy some extracts from one of his speeches delivered at Nacogdoches, December 21st, 1855. The first extract refers to the bill for the naturalization of foreigners, allowing every one to vote on a six months' residence in the country. He contended this was in contravention of the laws of the United States, which required a longer residence. "This bill," said he, "relinquishes the acknowledged right of the South to slave States south of thirty-six degrees thirty minutes. It was a concession of every benefit the South might claim from the Compromise of 1820. It gave to aliens the right to suffrage in six months after they came to the Territories, no matter where they came from—whether fresh from the prisons and poor-houses of Europe, with the mark of the fetters or the parish garb upon their limbs,—they stand upon the soil as free as the American who has shed his blood in defense of his country; and with such privileges given such a class, the fallacious hope was indulged by Southern gentlemen that slavery would go into the Territories. The son of the soil, with his slaves and his sturdy boys, all capable of advancing and defending the interests of the Territories, are to be weighed in the balance with the pauper or the felon, who has been hurled from European society as a blot too foul for endurance; and by this means, slavery is to go into Kansas! The South repudiated this, and stood by Mr. Clayton's amendment on the first vote upon the bill, but receded from its position when the bill came back from the House with the amendment stricken out, and swallowed the bill. I could not do it. The times have changed. Europe is emptying her vials of wrath upon us in the shape of thousands of her worst population, and it is time that a more cautious policy should be adopted. There are honorable exceptions, but the mass is a vile compound of all the dangerous tendencies of trans-Atlantic society. The South found herself powerless to check the evil, and it gave way. I could not do it, and whether I am to stand alone, or not, I will always be found resisting

the encroachments of foreign influence upon our government. My vote shall never be found in favor of allowing the vote of the foreigner, who has been on our soil but six months, to weigh against the vote of a native or a naturalized citizen, in moulding the institutions of a sovereign State of this Union. Never!

“Southern men are expected to embrace the Nebraska bill because it proclaims a correct principle and establishes the doctrine of non-intervention. I accept no guide for my action but the Constitution and my constituents. Because the entire South was wrong, should I be wrong too? I saw in that bill what the results have proved to be in it—disruption and disunion. I told them that generations yet unborn would reap the direful consequences if they repealed the Compromise. What is the establishment of an empty principle, if nothing is to be gained by it? What does the South gain by having the right to carry slaves to Nebraska, if slavery cannot go there? Nothing. The affirmation of a correct principle, when evil will grow out of it, is worse than nothing; and can any one point out the benefits which have accrued to the South by this means? Under the Missouri Compromise the South did realize benefits, by the accession of slave States; but now that there is no line between slavery and free soil, where will it end? Population, with anti-slavery tendencies, will make free States at your very doors. You can point to no compact by which the limits of free soil were fixed, and Texas will be like Kentucky, with a receptacle for her runaway negroes on her borders. True, the Missouri Compromise did not compel States south of thirty-six degrees thirty minutes to be slave States, but have any free States been found south of that line? And has it not always been conceded that they were to be slave States? The standard of free soil was not planted in Louisiana or Missouri; and why? Because the Missouri Compromise was a line of demarkation between slavery and free soil, and the North, aggressive as it has been, never has crossed that line. Who can foretell the result of the Compromise of 1850? I stood side by side with the statesmen North and South, in the support of those measures. And did they not soothe the waves of discord that dashed at the foot of the Capitol? As if a Savior spoke, so calm and smooth became their glassy surface! Did it not quiet the discordant croakings of the Abolitionists, and lull into security the fears of the American people? It was a re-affirmation of the faith of compromises; and when the repeal of the Missouri Compromise was asked, I would have been untrue to every political act of my life, untrue to the repeated instructions of my constituents, had I not resisted it. A thousand kind memories cluster around the Compromise. It was hallowed by the devotion of the valiant defenders of the Constitution. Under its rule the country had witnessed peace and prosperity. I told them I would stand astride the line of thirty-six degrees thirty minutes, if needs be, and there would do battle, and there I would perish in defense of the rights of the South.”

Houston, judging correctly, from the tone of public sentiment in Texas, that he would not be returned to the Senate, in 1857 announced himself an independent candidate for Governor. He was beaten by Hon. H. R. Runnels, the regular Democratic nominee. We believe this was the only time he ever was defeated in an election before the people.





**SIDNEY SHERMAN.**



At this period political excitement ran high, and the small cloud was already visible which portended a fearful civil strife. Perhaps to divert attention from sectional animosities, Houston, on the 20th of April, 1858, introduced a most remarkable resolution into the Senate. It was nothing less than a proposition looking to the establishment of a protectorate over Mexico! He was a strong advocate of what is called the Monroe doctrine: that America must control the political affairs of her own continent; and he feared that Mexico was about to pass under European domination. In 1848, he had advocated the policy of taking possession of Yucatan, when it was thought that peninsula would fall into the hands of Spain. The following was Houston's resolution:

"WHEREAS, the events connected with the numerous efforts of the people of Mexico to establish upon a reliable basis an orderly system of self-government, have invariably resulted in a complete failure; and whereas, the condition of Mexico is such as to excite alarming apprehensions that she may precipitate herself into a wild condition of anarchy; and the more so as she has demonstrated, from time to time, her utter inability to suppress her intestine commotions and to conquer the hosts of bandits with which she is infested; and whereas, the United States of America, on account of the continental policy which they cherish and desire to enforce, can never permit Mexico to be re-subjugated by Spain, or placed under the dominion of any foreign power; and whereas, one of the most important duties devolving upon civilized governments, is to exact from adjoining nations the observance of good neighborhood, thus shielding themselves against impending, or even remote, injury to their border security: Therefore—*Resolved*, That a committee of seven be raised to inquire and report to the Senate, whether or not it is expedient for the government of the United States of America to declare and maintain a protectorate over the so-called Republic of Mexico, in such a form and to such extent as shall be necessary to secure to this Union good neighborhood, and to the people of said country the benefits of orderly and well-regulated Republican government."

In 1859, Houston again became an independent *Democratic* candidate for Governor. In his letter of acceptance he said: "The Constitution and the Union embrace the principles by which I will be governed, if elected. They comprehend all the old Jackson Democracy I ever professed or officially practiced." In a circular addressed to his constituents, he said: "I would lay down my life to defend any one of the States from aggression which endangered its peace, or threatened its institutions. I could do no more for the Union. I could wish to do more; for the destruction of the Union would be the ruin of all the States."

Governor Runnels was nominated for re-election by the regular Democratic Convention. Some of Mr. Runnels' supporters were ardent advocates for the re-opening of the African slave trade, though the Convention which nominated him refused to endorse that iniquitous measure. After an active canvass, in which Houston spoke in most of the prominent cities of the State, proclaiming his devotion to the Union and his hostility to the re-opening of the slave trade, he was elected by a handsome majority. He, however, found himself embarrassed from the commencement of his admin-

istration. The Indians were troublesome upon the frontier; incendiary fires occurred in various parts of Northern and Eastern Texas. These were said to be caused by Abolition emissaries, and this intensified the excitement. Houston was a pronounced opponent of secession, and it was soon evident that a majority of the Legislature were in favor of that measure. Houston was willing to co-operate with the border slave States in any measure deemed necessary for mutual protection. But this did not satisfy the Secessionists, who were resolved that Texas should link her destiny with her sister Southern States. The Legislature convened in extra session January 21st, 1861. By common consent, the people had, on the 8th of January, elected delegates to a Convention which assembled at Austin on the 27th of the same month.

Fearing the United States property on the frontier might be seized by irresponsible parties, Houston, on the 20th of January, wrote to General Twiggs, in command at San Antonio, inviting him to turn the property belonging to the army over to the State authorities. In his reply, dated the 22d, Gen. Twiggs said: "I am without instructions from Washington as to the disposition of public property here. After secession, if the executive of the State makes a demand of the commander of the department, he will receive an answer." The property was promptly surrendered to the commissioners appointed by the Secession Convention.

The ordinance of secession was passed on the 1st of February, after which the Convention adjourned. The popular vote was taken on the 23d, and secession prevailed. The Convention re-assembled on the 2d of March. It was now too late to oppose secession, but Houston, among his friends, advised Texas to resume her former position as a Republic, and refrain from attaching herself to the Confederacy which had just been formed at Montgomery, Alabama. The Convention, however, on the 5th of March, passed a bill uniting Texas to the new Confederacy. All State officers were required, on the 14th, to take the oath to support the new government. This Houston refused to do. He was joined by Mr. Cave, his Secretary of State. The two were displaced from office. On the 16th, Lieutenant-Governor Clark was inaugurated Governor. Houston made no serious opposition to retiring to private life. He, however, published an address to the people of Texas, in which he said: "I protest, in the name of the people of Texas, against the acts of this Convention, and pronounce them null and void."  
\* \* \* "I love Texas too well to bring civil strife and bloodshed upon her. To avert this calamity, I shall make no endeavor to maintain my authority as Chief Executive of this State, except by the peaceful exercise of my functions. When I can no longer do this, I shall calmly withdraw from the scene. \* \* \* Fellow-citizens, think not that I complain of the lot which Providence has now assigned me. It is, perhaps, meet that my career should close thus. I have seen the statesmen and patriots of my youth one by one gathered to their fathers, and the government which they had reared rent in twain, and none like them are now left to reunite it again. I stand almost the last of a race who learned from them the lessons of human freedom."

Two days after sending forth this appeal, the Legislature met, and Hous-

ton, still claiming to be Governor, sent in a message. Referring to his deposition from office, he said: "The Executive can, therefore, but await your action, and that of the people. If driven at last into retirement, in spite of the Constitution of the State, he will not desert his country, but his prayers for its peace and prosperity will be offered up with the same sincerity and devotion with which his services were rendered while occupying public station." As the Legislature promptly recognized Clark as Governor, Houston soon left the Capital and retired to private life. He still, however, watched, with great interest, the progress of events. When martial law was proclaimed in Texas, he addressed an earnest protest to Governor Lubbock against this anti-republican expedient.

In Houston's retirement, he was not happy. He looked upon secession as an accomplished fact; he viewed with inexpressible grief the war measures adopted by both contending armies; he feared that republican institutions would be superseded by two centralized despotisms, in which the liberties of the people would be swept away; and the prospect saddened him. His last appearance before a public audience was in the city of Houston on the 18th of March, 1863. We copy the opening paragraph of his speech:

*"Ladies and Fellow-Citizens:* With feelings of pleasure and friendly greeting, I once again stand before this, an assemblage of my countrymen. As I behold this large assemblage, who, from their homes and daily toil, have come to greet once again the man who so often has known their kindness and affections, I can feel that even yet I hold a place in their high regard. This manifestation is the highest compliment that can be paid to the citizen and patriot. As you have gathered here to listen to the sentiments of my heart, knowing that the days draw nigh unto me when all thoughts of ambition and worldly pride give place to the earnestness of age, I know you will bear with me, while with calmness, and without the fervor and eloquence of youth, I express those sentiments which seem natural to my mind, in the view of the condition of the country. I have been buffeted by the waves, as I have been borne along time's ocean, until shattered and worn I approach the narrow isthmus which divides it from the sea of eternity beyond. Ere I step forward to journey through the pilgrimage of death, I would say that all my thoughts and hopes are with my country. If one impulse arises above another, it is for the happiness of these people; the welfare and glory of Texas will be the uppermost thought, while the spark of life lingers in this breast."

Houston's health was now sensibly declining, and he died on the 26th of July, 1863. In announcing his death, the *Houston Telegraph* used the following language: "Let us shed tears to his memory, due to one who has filled so much of our affections. Let the whole people bury with him whatever of unkindness they had for him. Let his monument be in the hearts of those who people the land to which his after years were devoted. Let his fame be sacredly cherished by Texans, not less to his distinguished services than to their own honor, of which he was always so jealous and so proud."

To Houston Texas owes a lasting debt of gratitude. It was under his leadership that our independence was secured at San Jacinto. During his entire life, he labored to preserve for educational purposes our immense

public domain. For thirty years his energies were exerted to promote the welfare of our great commonwealth; and yet his bones, without a stone to mark the place, sleep beneath our soil.

Comparisons have been instituted between Austin and Houston, though, in fact, there are few points of analogy in their character or providential work. Austin was the man to introduce population into a wilderness, organize society, and found a State; and nobly did he accomplish his work. Houston was the man for the revolutionary period—to fight the battles of liberty and establish permanently the great principles of the American Constitution. We can but indulge in a feeling of regret that he was removed from the earthly scene while the clouds of civil war obscured the political horizon. But he now, doubtless, from his higher state, with clearer vision, views with delight the new era of prosperity upon which his beloved country has entered.

**HOWARD, GEORGE T.**—Was Captain of a Ranger company in Hays' and in Bell's regiments, during the Republic; was severely wounded in the fight with the Comanches, in the Council House, in San Antonio, in 1840. In 1852 he was Indian Agent, and accompanied Major Neighbors to Santa Fe. He died in Washington City in 1865.

**HOWARD, VOLNEY E.**—Came from Mississippi to Texas; was a member of the Annexation Convention, and also represented Bexar county in the State Senate in 1846; from 1849 to 1852 he represented the Western district in Congress. At the close of his Congressional term he was sent as Government Agent to settle land claims in California, and never returned to Texas.

**HUBBARD, RICHARD B.**—Was born in Georgia, in 1834; graduated at Mercer University in 1851, and at Harvard Law School the next year. With his father's family, he came to Texas in 1853, and settled at Tyler. In 1856 he was appointed United States District Attorney; in 1858 he represented his district in the Lower House of the Legislature; in 1860 he was an elector on the Breckenridge ticket, and also a delegate to the Charleston Convention. At the breaking out of the civil war, and after having commanded the Twenty-second regiment of Texas infantry, he was promoted to the command of a brigade. In 1872 he was an elector on the Greeley ticket; in 1873 he was elected Lieutenant-Governor, and re-elected in 1876. On the first of December, 1876, Governor Coke resigned, and Mr. Hubbard became Governor.

**HUNT, MEMUCAN.**—A native of North Carolina, came to Texas after the battle of San Jacinto, landing at Velasco during the excitement about the release of Santa Anna. General Hunt filled a number of public offices, having been at one time Secretary of the Navy; he was also, in the pompous language of diplomacy, "Minister Plenipotentiary and Envoy Extraordinary, from the Republic of Texas to the United States of America;" and he was the Commissioner on the part of Texas, to run the

boundary line between Texas and the United States. He met Mr. Overton, the Commissioner on the part of the latter government, at the mouth of the Sabine, but they made poor progress in running the line. Mr. Overton contended that according to the treaty, the line should come to the west line of the Lake, while Mr. Hunt insisted upon running it in the middle of the Lake. The controversy lasted until the appropriation on the part of Texas was exhausted, when the Commission dissolved, leaving the question still unsettled. After annexation, General Hunt removed to New Orleans, and engaged in mercantile business.

**HUNTER, WILLIAM L.**—Came to Texas in 1835, as one of the New Orleans Greys; was in the Fannin massacre, but almost by a miracle, escaped death. He was a member of the Annexation Convention; has filled the office of Chief Justice of Goliad county, in which he still lives.

**HUNTER, JOHN DUNN.**—When a mere boy, was taken captive by the Indians; had no recollection of his parents or childhood home. He was about eighteen years of age when he was discovered by a party of Missouri fur traders. One of these traders, by the name of John Dunn, took a deep interest in the rescued boy, who took the name of his friend in addition to that of Hunter, which the Indians had given him. Young Hunter acquired a very fair English education, and traveled extensively in the United States, and also visited England, where he received marked attention from persons belonging to the nobility. While in England he published an account of his life and of the customs of the American Indians. After his return he still interested himself in Indian affairs. In 1825-26, the Cherokees sent Dunn as their agent to the city of Mexico, to secure a home for their tribe in the Province of Texas. He obtained a pledge that the Indians should remain in undisturbed possession of their homes on the Neches river; but he failed to secure proper titles to the lands. Fearing that they might be disturbed, Hunter, Fields, and a few other chiefs, entered into a league with Edwards and the party of Fredonians, in resisting Spanish authority. But Colonel Bean, the Spanish Indian Agent, succeeded in detaching most of the Indians from this ill-advised league. But Hunter, Fields, and two or three companions started, in good faith, to join the forlorn hope at Nacogdoches. When near the Anadaqua village, while Hunter's horse was drinking in a creek, he was deliberately shot by one of his treacherous companions. The first shot was not immediately fatal, and the wounded man implored the murderer to spare his life. "It is hard," he said, "thus to die by the hands of my professed friends." The appeal was in vain. Another fatal shot closed the career of this extraordinary man.

**HUSTON, FELIX.**—Arrived in Texas after the battle of San Jacinto. In the summer of 1836, when Rusk resigned the command of the army, to take his seat in Houston's cabinet, General Felix Huston succeeded to the command. Soon afterwards President Houston sent General A. S. Johnston out to assume the command. This produced a personal controversy between the two Generals. A duel was the result, in which General Johnston

was so severely wounded as to be unable to take command of the army. The duel was fought February 7th, 1837, at Chalk Bluff, on the Lavaca river. Huston remained for some years in Texas, and commanded in the battle of Plum Creek, in the summer of 1840. After this he returned to Mississippi and resumed his planting operations. He died near Natchez, in 1857.

**INGRAM, IRA.**—Was the first alcalde of Matagorda municipality, in 1834; in 1836 he was a member of the Texas Congress, and Speaker of the House of Representatives.

**INGRAM, SETH.**—Was one of Austin's surveyors; laid out the town of San Felipe, and surveyed most of the land on Old Caney and Peach creeks, and the Lower Colorado river; died in Matagorda, in 1857.

**ISELL, WILLIAM.**—A pioneer in Texas, had been on Indian campaigns during the colonial period; was one of the storming party that took San Antonio, in 1835; a private in Captain Heard's company, in 1836, at San Jacinto. During the Republic was a member of Captain Mark B. Lewis' Ranging company; lived in Burleson county; became blind in 1856, and died in 1877.

**JACK, PATRICK C.**—A lawyer; came from Alabama to Texas in 1832, and was soon afterward arrested by Colonel Bradburn, at Anahuac. In 1837-8 he was in the Texas Congress, and soon after the close of his Congressional term was appointed a District Judge. He died of yellow fever, in Houston, August 4th, 1844.

**JACK, WILLIAM H.**—A brother of the above, came to Texas in 1830; was a member of the Committee of Safety of Columbia in 1835, and also connected with the army of the West the same year; fought as a private at San Jacinto; the same year was in Burnet's cabinet as Secretary of State. At a later period he represented Brazoria county in the Texas Congress. He contracted the yellow fever in Galveston, and was taken down with the disease after he reached Runnel's plantation, on the Brazos, and died August 20th, 1844, sixteen days after his brother had died of the same disease in Houston.

**JOHNSON, FRANK W.**—Was born in Virginia, in 1794; came to Texas in 1826; in 1830 was surveyor in Ayish district; in 1831, alcalde at San Felipe; in 1832 he was elected commander of the forces assembled at Anahuac to resist the arbitrary measures of Bradburn, and to release Jack, Edwards, and other prisoners; in 1835 was Adjutant, first to Austin and then to Burleson; commanded one of the storming parties that entered San Antonio, and, after the death of Milam, was in command of the whole party when the city surrendered. In the spring of 1836, he, in company with Grant and Morris, was preparing for a descent upon Matamoras, when his small party was completely surprised at San Patricio, by the Mexicans



under Urrea. The Mexican citizens of the place had been notified of the approach of Urrea, and advised to keep lights burning in their houses, so that their friends might not interrupt them. As it happened, that night Johnson was writing till a late hour, and by this means, he, and two or three companions escaped, and made their way safely into the interior of Texas. Colonel Johnson is still living in Austin.

**JOHNSON, MOSES.**—Treasurer of the Republic under Jones' administration. Died of yellow fever at Lavaca, in 1853.

**JOHNSON, M. T.**—A native of South Carolina; came to Texas in 1839, and settled in Shelby county, which he represented in Congress during the Republic; in the Mexican War he was Captain of a company; afterwards Lieutenant Colonel of Bell's regiment of rangers, and in command of the district of Red River; in 1860, by order of Governor Houston, he raised a regiment of rangers for frontier defence. In 1866, Colonel Johnson was a member of the Reconstruction Convention. His health was failing and he died in May, after the adjournment of the convention, in the city of Austin.

**JOHNSTON, ALBERT SIDNEY.**—A native of Kentucky; graduated at West Point, in 1826, and was assigned to duty in the Sixth Infantry. After having served in the Black Hawk War, in 1832, he resigned his commission in the army; in 1836 he came to Texas, and early in 1837 was appointed by President Houston commander of the army in the West. He was to supersede General Felix Huston. A personal difficulty occurred between the two generals, resulting in a duel, in which Johnston was severely wounded. Unable to assume command, he resigned, and opened a plantation in Brazoria county. When Lamar became President, Johnston was appointed Secretary of War, and in 1839 organized the expedition for the expulsion of the Cherokees from East Texas. In 1846 he was elected colonel of the Second Regiment of Texas volunteers in the Mexican War. At the expiration of their term of service, he was re-commissioned in the regular army and appointed Inspector General. In 1849 he was Paymaster, and soon afterward assigned to the command of the Second Cavalry, then doing duty on the Texas frontier. For a number of years Colonel Johnston made his home in the city of Austin. In 1855, he went with General Harney to the plains, and the next year, Colonel Johnston was assigned to the command of Salt Lake, where his energetic movements completely overawed the Mormons, and prevented a serious outbreak among them. In 1860 he was transferred to the Department of the Pacific, with headquarters at San Francisco. The next year, he resigned his commission in the army, with the view of offering his sword to the Confederacy. He came overland, through Texas, and was at once assigned to the command of the army then before Bowling Green, in Kentucky. He rightly conjectured that, with the opening campaign in 1862, the Federals would attempt to penetrate the Confederacy through Kentucky. He therefore strongly fortified a line of posts, beginning at Columbus, and including Island No. 10, in the Mississippi river, and extending east to Fort Henry, Fort Donaldson, Bowling Green, Mill Springs

and Cumberland Gap. The success which had crowned the Confederate arms in the East, inspired those in the West with great confidence. They believed that Nashville would be as easily protected as Richmond had been. General Johnston, however, was not so sanguine. The army was only about half as large as he expected to find it; nor was it in as thorough a state of organization as the army in Virginia. He had a much longer line of defence than that in front of Richmond; and in a territory penetrated by rivers navigable by gun-boats.

As Johnston expected, the campaign of 1862 opened early and vigorously. The first point in his lines assailed was Mill Springs. This was captured by General Thomas, January 19th; the Confederate General Zollicoffer having been killed in its defence. Just at this juncture, there was an extraordinary rise in the Cumberland and Tennessee rivers. A flotilla of gun-boats, under the command of Commodore Foote, ascended the Tennessee, and on the sixth of February attacked and destroyed Fort Henry. Immediately descending the stream, he was able to ascend the Cumberland for a combined naval and army attack upon Fort Donelson. On the 16th of February, after a three-days' fight, this important post, with its garrison of 12,000 men, surrendered to General Ulysses S. Grant. General Johnston's headquarters were still at Bowling Green; but the loss of these important posts rendered a retreat to a new line of defence a matter of absolute necessity. He accordingly fell back to Corinth, Mississippi, leaving the most of Tennessee in the hands of the Federals. To the Confederacy, this was an irreparable loss; and it was keenly felt. The newspaper press, and it was said some of Mr. Davis' Cabinet, reflected severely upon General Johnston. These criticisms keenly touched his sensitive nature, and he determined, when an opportunity offered, to retrieve his reputation, though no imputation had ever been cast upon his personal courage or patriotism. Grant, flushed with his victory at Donelson, hastened up the Tennessee to Pittsburg Landing, far in advance of the support expected under General Buel, and Johnston seeing this, by forced marches, hoped to fall upon Grant before he could receive reinforcements. It was a bold move and successfully executed. The Federals were taken completely by surprise. During the fight on the first day, April sixth, the Confederates captured 3,000 prisoners and a number of battle-flags, and at night had possession of the battle-ground. Late in the afternoon, while Johnston, in an exposed position, was giving some orders, he received a rifle-ball in his leg. Had he attended promptly to his wound, it would not necessarily have been mortal, but it was neglected, until, faint with the loss of blood, he had to be lifted from his horse. He soon afterward expired; dying on the battle-field, as a true soldier would prefer to die. Grant massed his forces on the bank of the river, under the protection of his gun-boats; that night his reinforcements arrived, and the next day the tide of battle turned and the Confederates, under Beauregard, retreated. The remains of General Johnston were temporarily buried in New Orleans. In 1866, the Legislature of Texas made an appropriation to have his remains brought to his old home in Austin for final interment in the State burying-ground, in that city. Albert Sidney Johnston was a man of marked ability, amiable disposition, unaffected modesty, dauntless courage, and irreproach-



**THOMAS WILLIAM WARD.**

against the Centralists. Jordan hastened to New Orleans, to enlist men for the new revolutionary leader. By some mishap, the vessel in which he and his recruits expected to embark for Yucatan, sailed without them. This, with other disappointments, preyed upon his mind, and while depressed in spirits he took an overdose of laudanum and terminated his life.

**KARNES, HENRY**—Was a native of Tennessee; early in life he attached himself to a company of trappers on the frontier of Arkansas. The company disbanded on the head of Red River. Karnes and three companions crossed the country to the Trinity River, where, the Indians having stolen their horses, they constructed a canoe and descended the stream to Robbins' Ferry. From there Karnes crossed over to the Brazos, and for a considerable time found employment as an overseer on the Groce plantation. He responded to the first call for volunteers at the breaking out of the revolution in 1835, and distinguished himself at the taking of the city of San Antonio. He siezed a crowbar and dashed forward and dug a hole through a stone wall, into a house, for a new and advanced position. He proved one of the best cavalry scouts and spies, and commanded a company of cavalry at San Jacinto. After the battle he went west to Matamoras to effect an exchange of prisoners, and was himself thrown into prison; he, however, soon effected his escape. In 1837, he was Indian Agent; in 1838-9, in the Ranging service, and in the latter year received a severe wound in a single combat with a chief. At one time he was taken prisoner, and the savages attempted to wash his red hair white. He died in San Antonio, in 1840, from the effects of the wound received the previous year. Captain Karnes was wholly uneducated. It is questionable if he knew how to spell his own name, which in early documents is variously spelled; but he was inured to hardships; cool, reticent, watchful, and a stranger to the sensation of fear; one of a class of men to whom Texas owes a lasting debt of gratitude.

**KAUFMAN, DAVID S.**—A native of Pennsylvania; came to East Texas in 1837, and was the next year elected to Congress. He was aid to General Rusk in the Kickapoo fight, in 1839. In 1845, President Jones sent him as a diplomatic agent to Washington, but as that government had already adopted the bill for annexation, he was not received in his official capacity. In 1846, he was selected to represent the Eastern District in the United States Congress, a position to which he was twice re-elected. He died in the city of Washington, on the last day of the year 1851, from the effects of a wound received some years previously, in Austin.

**KEENAN, DR. C. G.**—Had been a surgeon in the United States army; came to Texas in the days of the Republic; was elected to the first Legislature of the State, and was Speaker of the House; died in Huntsville, in 1870.

**KEMPER, SAMUEL**—Was a native of Virginia, and an officer in the expedition organized by Magee for the invasion of Texas, in 1812. After the death of Magee, at Goliad, Kemper was elected to the command, and was

the commander of the Americans at the battle of Rosillo. To him Salcedo surrendered, as he declined to hand his sword to his former friend, Gutierrez. After the massacre of the Mexican officers by Delgado, Kemper returned to his native State. We may add, that Kennedy is authority for the statement that Kemper returned to Texas just in time to participate in the disastrous battle of Medina, but we believe this a mistake. He lived and died in his native State.

**KENDALL, GEORGE WILKINS**—The founder, and for a long period, the editor-in-chief of the New Orleans *Picayune*; was, in 1840, connected, as an invited guest, with the Santa Fe expedition. Though a citizen of the United States, with a passport from the Mexican Consul at New Orleans, he, with the other members of the ill-fated party, was disarmed and treated as a prisoner of war. After suffering untold hardships and indignities, he was finally, at the solicitation of the American Minister at Mexico, released. He wrote a history of the Santa Fe expedition, in two interesting volumes. After annexation, Mr. Kendall established a sheep-ranche in Western Texas, in the county that bears his name, where he died in 1867.

**KERR, JAMES**—A native of Missouri; came to Texas in 1825, and was surveyor in DeWitt's and DeLeon's colonies. He first settled in Gonzales, but that settlement having been broken up by the Indians, he settled on the Lavaca River, in Jackson county; was a member of the Convention at San Felipe, in 1833, and of the Executive Council, in 1835. In January, 1836, he issued an address advising against a declaration of Texas independence, as he then thought it premature. When it was made, he entered heartily into the measure; was elected to the Convention, in 1836, but could not leave his family in their exposed condition to attend its sessions. He died at his plantation, in 1850.

**KINNEY, H. L.**—A native of Pennsylvania; came to Western Texas in 1838; in 1846, was one of the founders of Corpus Christi; after annexation, served several times in the Legislature; in 1855, he attempted to get up a filibustering expedition to Central America. He contracted for 30,000,000 acres of land, for which he was to pay \$500,000; the land was in the Musquito Territory. He became a candidate for Governor of Greytown, but failed to be elected. All his Central American schemes fell through, and his men went to Nicaragua and joined William Walker, who was then called "The Grey-eyed Man of Destiny," though his star, too, went speedily into eclipse. Kinney returned to Texas, and was filling some minor office on the Rio Grande, when, in 1861, he became involved in the contests in Matamoras, between the Rohos and the Crinolinos. In one of their petty fights, while attempting to pass through a breach in a wall, he was shot and instantly killed.

**KUYKENDALL, ABNER**—A son-in law of William Gates; came with the Gates family to the Brazos, in 1821-2. He brought several head of cattle and a few hogs. In colonial times, he was a captain in several expeditions

against the Indians. In 1834, he was killed in the town of San Felipe, by a man by the name of Clayton. Clayton was arrested, tried, convicted, and hung for the murder. This was probably the first regular legal execution in Texas.

**LABADIE, DR. N. D.**—A surgeon of Anahuac, in 1832, and also in the battle of San Jacinto. He was one of the first to engage in business in Galveston, where he opened a drug store. He died in that city in 1869.

**LAFITTE, JEAN.**—Who has been called the Pirate of the Gulf, was a Frenchman by birth, and a sailor by profession. In a duel in Charleston, South Carolina, about an affair of the heart, he killed his antagonist; after which he adopted the life of a buccaneer. In 1810, he took up his headquarters at Barataria. In 1813, Governor Claiborne, of Louisiana, offered \$500 reward for Lafitte's head. The latter, not to be outdone in that species of generosity, offered \$5,000 for the head of the Governor. Lafitte's cruisers were seriously interfering with the commerce of the Gulf, and on the 16th of June, 1814, the establishment at Barataria was broken up by Commodore Patterson, of the United States navy. Lafitte declined a commission in the British navy, during the war with the United States, but was finally employed by General Jackson, in the defence of New Orleans. For his services in the great battle, January 8th, 1815, Lafitte received a full pardon from the President of the United States. But after peace he returned to his old piratical calling. In 1817, after the departure of Aury from Galveston, Lafitte established his headquarters on that island, where he built a village called Campeachy. Lafitte, at that time, had a commission from Herrera, the Minister of the Republicans in Mexico, then at New Orleans; and in the name of the Mexican Republic he denominated himself Governor of Galveston. Lafitte's orders were not to interfere with American commerce, but his men were reckless, and rarely permitted a valuable cargo to escape. This became so notorious that, in 1821, Lieutenant Kearney, with the United States brig *Enterprise*, was sent to warn Lafitte to leave the island. The pirate received Kearney, and entertained him with a princely hospitality; but when he found that the Lieutenant's orders were imperative, he called together his followers, and paid them off; and taking his favorite ship, the *Pride*, with Lieutenant Cochran and about 100 picked men, he sailed out of the harbor, leaving forever the Texas coast. On the day Lafitte left Galveston, Long and Milam entered the harbor on their way to the West. Cochran became a Commodore in the Mexican navy. Lafitte died at Silan, in Yucatan, in 1826.

**LALLEMAND, GENERAL.**—An exiled officer of Napoleon, in 1817 attempted to form a settlement on the Trinity river, in Texas. Randal Jones, who visited the settlement, thought they intended to revive the French claim to the province. The Spaniards viewed them with suspicion; the Indians were troublesome, and the exiled Frenchmen were poor colonists. The attempt to raise grapes for a vineyard was unsuccessful, and the settlement

dissolved. Lallemand became a citizen of the United States, and published a Treatise on Artillery.

**LAMAR, MIRABEAU B.**—Was born in Louisville, Georgia, August 16th, 1798; belonged to an old Huguenot family. In early life was private secretary to Governor Troupe. In 1828, he was editor of a States'-rights paper and a candidate for Congress. The nominating Convention imposed some conditions, to which he was unwilling to submit, and he was defeated. In 1835, he visited Texas, and made a formal declaration of his intention to become a citizen, and in a public speech at the town of Washington, advocated the declaration of Texan independence. He revisited his native State to complete his arrangements for a removal. When he heard of the invasion of the country by Santa Anna, he hurried back, landing at Velasco in March; where, not finding any mode of conveyance to the interior, he started up the river on foot. He reached the army when encamped at Groce's and enlisted as a private soldier. In the preliminary skirmish at San Jacinto, on the 20th of April, he greatly distinguished himself by rescuing Col. Lane, who was surrounded by a body of Mexican cavalry. Lamar heroically dashed over one Mexican, killed another, and disarmed a third. On the next day, so famous in our history, Lamar commanded the cavalry. General Houston, in his official report, says: "Our cavalry, sixty-one in number, commanded by Colonel M. B. Lamar, (whose gallant and daring conduct on the preceding day had attracted the admiration of his comrades, and called him to that station,) placed on our extreme right, completed our line. Our cavalry had charged and routed that of the enemy upon the right, and given pursuit to the fugitives, which did not cease until they arrived at the bridge."

Soon after the battle, Lamar was invited into Burnet's cabinet, as Secretary of War. He opposed the treaty by which Santa Anna was set at liberty, but generously sustained the President when that officer was threatened with a drum-head court-martial. He even said that posterity would, with great unanimity, approve the humane policy pursued towards the captive President of Mexico. General Rusk having asked to be relieved from the command of the army in the West, Lamar was sent to relieve him; but when he arrived, there was a prospect of another Mexican invasion, and the men desired Rusk to retain the command, and he did so. At the first election, Lamar was elected Vice-President. The duties of this office he discharged with such satisfaction that, when Gen. Houston's first term was out, Lamar was, by a very handsome majority, elected President of Texas.

The Texas Almanac for 1858 contains a biographical sketch of President Lamar, from which we take the following extracts:

"The policy of Lamar's administration embraced four leading objects. First—the defense of the country, and especially that of the frontier, which was crying aloud for protection against the merciless savages. Second—the obtaining of the recognition of our independence by the principal maritime powers of Europe, and of establishing with them the best commercial relations. Third—the purification of the different departments of Government, and establishing a rigid responsibility among public officers of every

grade and class. Fourth—the creation of an educational fund by adequate appropriation of land for that purpose. These ends were not only carried out effectually by Lamar, to the honor of himself and glory of the nation, but the blessings that flowed from them were immediately felt by the peace and safety that reigned at home, as well as by the character and importance which the country acquired abroad.”

“We will close this part of our hasty and imperfect sketch with one remark respecting the expenses of Gen. Lamar’s administration. It will be remembered that he came into office when the nation had neither credit nor money. Yet he had the frontier to protect—the seat of Government to remove on the extreme borders—to erect all necessary public buildings—to support the Government—pay our foreign ministers—provide for the army—keep the navy on the Gulf—extensive mail routes to establish—and to meet a multiplicity of demands, growing out of unforeseen contingencies, incidental to the condition of the country; and yet he contrived to achieve all these ends, without exceeding in a single instance, to the amount of one cent, the annual appropriations made by Congress for the support of the Government, including even the expenses of the Santa Fe Expedition, the surveying of the University lands, and other heavy disbursements which he was compelled to assume the responsibility of making. It may be safely asserted that no Chief Magistrate ever effected so much with so little expense to the nation he ruled, and that he should have accomplished so much in so short a period, and secured so many blessings with such limited resources, must ever be a matter of surprise, and cannot fail to place General Lamar among the wisest statesmen and the purest patriots of the age.”

At the commencement of the Mexican war, Lamar was appointed Division Inspector, under General Henderson. At the taking of Monterey, he behaved with conspicuous gallantry. In 1847 he was Post Commander at Laredo, where he effectually held the Indians in check. On his return to Texas he was elected to the Legislature. In 1851 he married, for his second wife, Miss Maffit, daughter of the celebrated Rev. John Newland Maffit, and sister of Commodore Maffit of the Confederate Navy, and settled on a plantation near Richmond, Fort Bend county. After this, he was for a short period United States Minister to the Argentine Confederation. He died at his home, in Texas, December 19th, 1859.

The loss of his first wife, and death of a charming daughter, cast a cloud over the early years of General Lamar’s manhood. Nor did the cares of public life seem to dissipate his gloom. At that period, those in his company often noticed a deep-drawn sigh, as from a bosom still pierced with anguish. Such was the state of his mind when the writer first formed his acquaintance. In later years the elasticity of his spirits returned. He possessed a fine literary taste, and wrote some popular poetry. We transcribe a stanza, descriptive of his domestic state, published in 1857:

“Like yon declining sun, my life  
Is going down all calm and mild,  
Illumined by an angel wife,  
And sweetened by a cherub child.”





**R. M. WILLIAMSON.**

Joutel, with thirty men, remained at the fort, near Alligator Head, until July, when they joined their companions at Fort St. Louis, (now Dimitt's Point). During the summer, various parties were sent to hunt for the Mississippi river. In one of these excursions, the "Belle" was sent across Matagorda bay, and was lost somewhere near Dog Island. This left the little party with no means of leaving the coast.

In January, 1686, La Salle left Joutel in charge of the fort, and, with twenty companions, started to the eastward. He went as far as the Brazos river, which, as he had the misfortune to have one of his men devoured by an alligator, he called the "Maligne." He returned to the fort in March, having lost five of his men; but he had satisfied himself that he was entirely too far west for what Joutel calls the "fatal river." The subsequent events of his expedition have been reviewed in the early chapters of this volume.

La Salle was one of the most distinguished of that class of adventurers that Europe, in the seventeenth century, sent to make explorations in the wilderness of the new world. He was a knight of spotless purity, of dauntless courage, and of unbounded self-reliance. His loyalty to his sovereign was of the nature of a religious sentiment; while his devotion to the Church would have stood the test of martyrdom. "For force of will and vast conceptions," says Bancroft, "for various knowledge and quick adaptation of his genius to untried circumstances, for a sublime magnanimity that resigned itself to the will of Heaven and yet triumphed over affliction by energy of purpose, and unfaltering hope, he had no superior among his countrymen. \* \* \* After the beginning of the colonization of Upper Canada, he projected the discovery of the Mississippi, from the falls of St. Anthony to its mouth; and he will be remembered, through all time, as the father of colonization in the great central valley of the West."

**LATHROP, J. T. K.**—A Captain in the Texas Navy. In 1840 he was in command of the steamer Zavalla. After the loss of that vessel he entered the merchant service, and took command of the steamship Neptune, running between New Orleans and Texas. He died in Houston in 1844.

**LESTER, JOHN S.**—Came to Texas in 1834; the next year he went on an Indian campaign with Colonel John H. Moore, and was in the Consultation, as a representative from Bastrop; in 1837-38, he was in the Texas Congress, and was afterwards Chief Justice of Fayette county, in which he still lives.

**LEWIS, IRA R.**—A prominent citizen of Matagorda, who acted a conspicuous part in the Revolution of 1835-36. He died in 1867, at the residence of his son-in-law, Major M. Austin Bryan, at Independence.

**LEWIS, WILLIAM P.**—The betrayer of the Santa Fe expedition, was a native of Philadelphia. Before he appeared in Texas he had been a merchants' clerk in Constantinople and various points on the Mediterranean sea, and in France. In 1835 he was in the employment of William H. MaGoffin, then engaged in the Santa Fe trade. He started from Santa Fe to

Texas in the spring of 1836; had four companions, Wallace, Howland, Beaumont and Laws; on the way, in a fight with the Indians, Laws was killed and Howland wounded; (the latter was afterwards killed in the Santa Fe expedition). Wallace died just after reaching Victoria, and Beaumont was killed by the Indians in 1837. Lewis was a Captain in the expedition to Santa Fe; and as he was well acquainted there, and could speak the language, he was sent with the advanced party. He secured his own safety and a share of the goods taken out, by betraying his companions. His treason excited the disgust of the citizens of Santa Fe, and he left the Continent for the Sandwich Islands.

**LINN, JOHN J.**—A native of Ireland; engaged in mercantile business in Victoria in 1831; in 1832 was Mayor of Victoria; in 1836 he was in the Executive Council at San Felipe, and in the Texas Congress in 1838. He still lives in Victoria.

**LIPSCOMB, ABNER S.**—Was born in South Carolina in 1789; studied law in the office of John C. Calhoun, and commenced to practice in Alabama in 1810; in 1819 he was District Judge, and from 1823 to 1835, held the office of Chief Justice of Alabama; came to Texas in 1839, and was Secretary of State under Lamar; was a member of the Annexation Convention in 1845, and was appointed one of the Associate Justices of the Supreme Court at the organization of the State government, and held this office until his death in 1856.

**LUBBOCK, FRANK R.**—Was born in South Carolina; came to Texas and commenced a mercantile business in Houston in 1836; in 1837 he was a clerk in the Texas Congress; in 1838 he was Comptroller of the Treasury; from 1841 to 1857, he was District Clerk of Harris county; in 1858, Lieutenant-Governor; in 1860, a delegate to the Charleston Convention; in 1861, Governor of Texas; in 1864 he was on the staff of President Davis, as volunteer aid; since the war he has resided in Galveston; in 1878, was elected to the office of State Treasurer.

**LUBBOCK, THOMAS S.**—Brother of the above; came to Texas with the New Orleans Greys in 1835; in 1840 he was a Lieutenant in the Santa Fe expedition, and while a prisoner made his escape by leaping from the balcony of the Convent of Santiago; he was a Captain in the Somervell campaign in 1842; in 1861 he went into the Confederate army as Lieutenant-Colonel of the Terry Rangers. At the death of Colonel Terry, he was elected Colonel of the regiment; but he was then in feeble health, and died at Nashville, Tennessee, in January, 1862.

**MANCHACA, ANTONIO.**—A native of San Antonio, born in A. D. 1800; was Sergeant in Seguin's company, in the battle of San Jacinto; in 1838 sent to Nacogdoches to pacify Cordova, and other dissatisfied Mexicans in East Texas. Mr. Manchaca still (1878) lives in his native city.

**MARGIL, FATHER.**—A zealous Franciscan Missionary, who visited Texas from Mexico in 1718. "He found thousands of people scattered up and down the valley of the San Antonio river, for twelve or fifteen miles, and soon saw that it was a suitable position to establish churches." Through his influence the Government of New Spain undertook the grand enterprise of establishing "missions" in Texas. He died in the City of Mexico, in August, 1726.

**MARTIN, WYLIE.**—Was born in Georgia, in 1776. In early life he taught school, was clerk in a store and a soldier. In 1805, became connected with Aaron Burr; in 1812 a scout under General Harrison in the army of the Northwest; 1814, with Jackson at the battle of the Horse Shoe; was promoted for gallantry; subsequently, fought a duel in which his antagonist was killed; resigned his Captain's commission, and, in 1825, immigrated to Texas. He was soon appointed an Alcade in Austin's colony, and became acting political chief of the Department. At the breaking out of the Revolution, he opposed the Declaration of Independence, as premature; but raised a company, and joined Houston's army at Columbus. Martin's company was sent to Fort Bend, to guard the crossing of the river; but had too few men to guard both ferries, and while the enemy engaged his company at the upper ferry, some of the Mexicans crossed at the lower crossing, where Richmond now stands. He was chagrined that so small a force had been sent to so important a place, and when he reached General Houston's headquarters, east of the Brazos, he gave up the command of his company, and was sent by the General to assist families in crossing the Trinity and escaping from the country. Captain Martin died in Fort Bend county, in 1842. He was at the time of his death a member of the Texas Congress.

**MAVERICK, SAMUEL A.**—Became a citizen of San Antonio in 1835; was a member of the Convention in 1836; after annexation served several terms in the Legislature; and at the secession of the State, was appointed one of the Commissioners to receive the public property turned over by General Twiggs. Mr. Maverick was the owner of an immense stock of cattle, and his stockmen claimed all the unbranded yearlings in the range. From this circumstance, unbranded yearlings are commonly called "Mavericks." He died in San Antonio, in 1870.

**M'CULLOCH, BENJAMIN.**—A native of Tennessee; came to Texas to participate in the Revolutionary struggles; enlisted as a private, but was ordered to the command of one of the cannon in the battle of San Jacinto; in 1840, represented Gonzales county in Congress, and was most of the time on the frontier, as Captain of a ranging company. He was a Quartermaster during the Mexican War; in 1853, United States Marshal of Texas; in 1855, sent by President Buchanan to settle a difficulty among the Mormons in Utah. At the breaking out of the Civil War, a few hundred men rallied to M'Culloch, to assist, if necessary, in capturing the Government stores in the neighborhood of San Antonio. He was appointed a Brigadier General in

the Confederate ranks, and ordered to Arkansas; fought bravely in the battle of Wilson's creek, where the Federal General Lyon was killed. General M'Culloch was killed in the second day's fight at Pea Ridge, Arkansas, March 24, 1862. His remains were brought to Austin for interment.

**M'HENRY, JOHN.**—Was a pilot in Long's expedition to Goliad, in 1819, and with the other members of that unfortunate expedition, was sent a prisoner to Mexico. In 1837 he was Chief Justice of Victoria county, in which he died in 1878. Mrs. Long is still living.

**M'FARLAND, THOMAS S.**—Was aid to Major Bullock in the fight with Piedras, at Nacogdoches, in 1832. In 1833, he laid off the town of San Augustine; in 1836, in the army under Rusk; in 1842, in the Texas Congress; afterward served several terms as Chief Justice of San Augustine county; lives at Bleakwood.

**M'KINNEY, COLLIN.**—Was one of the earliest settlers in Bowie County; was in the Convention of 1836, and served several terms in the Texas Congress. Died in 1861, aged 85 years.

**M'KINNEY, THOMAS F.**—A merchant formerly engaged in the St. Louis and Santa Fe trade. During the revolutionary period, he was an agent of the Provisional Government; bought the first vessels for the Texas navy; and the firm of M'Kinney & Williams transacted nearly all the financial business of the new government. The same firm built one of the first wharves on Galveston Island. After annexation, Mr. M'Kinney removed to Travis county, which he at one time represented in the Legislature. He died at home on Onion creek, in 1873.

**M'LEOD, HUGH.**—A graduate of West Point; became identified with Texas during the Revolution; was aid to General Rusk, in his fight with the Kickapoos, in 1838, and in the fights with the Cherokees, in 1839. In 1840, he was commander of the Santa Fe expedition. In 1844, settled in Galveston, and after annexation represented that city in the Legislature. In 1861, entered the Confederate army, as Colonel of the First regiment of Texas infantry, in the army of Virginia; died at Dumfries, Virginia, in 1861. His remains were transferred to Austin for burial.

**MENIFEE, WILLIAM.**—Was one of a large company of Manifests, Heards, Whites, Devers, Sutherlands, etc., that immigrated from North Alabama to Texas in 1830. He was a member of the Convention in 1836; and of the First and Second Congresses; the first Chief Justice of Colorado county, and one of the commissioners to locate the new capital. It was largely through his influence that Austin was chosen. He first settled on the Navidad, in Jackson county; removed thence to Egypt, on the Colorado, and, after annexation, to Fayette county; and represented that county in the Legislature in 1853; died October 28th, 1875.

**MEXIA, JUAN ANTONIO.**—First appeared in Texas in 1832. He had been sent by Santa Anna in charge of a naval force for the capture of Matamoras. Having accomplished that, he received Stephen F. Austin, just returning from a session of the Legislature at Saltillo, on his ship, and ran up the coast of Texas and entered the Brazos river. He, as well as Santa Anna, then professed to be ardent Republicans. He visited New Orleans in the fall of 1835, to fit out an expedition for the capture of Tampico. By the aid of William Christy, Captain Hawkins and others, a small schooner, the *Mary Jane*, was secured, and a promiscuous crowd of Americans, French and Germans embarked upon her. These men understood that they were to sail for Texas, and a free passage was offered. Instead of entering a Texas port, the *Mary Jane* steered for Tampico, where they found a steamer ready to tow her into the harbor. Here the men were first informed that there was a Revolutionary General and his staff on board. Partly by force and partly by persuasion, the men took guns in their hands, though they had never gone through the manual of arms. A fort was occupied without opposition. The population did not rally to his standard, and when they were attacked by the Centralists, Mexia and most of his men seized a vessel and fled. Thirty-one, however, fell into the hands of the Centralists. Three of the prisoners died, and the others were condemned to be shot. Twenty-eight of these men, a few hours before their execution, signed a declaration that they had been deceived as to the object of the expedition, and abducted from their country.

Mexia returned to Texas, and on the 6th of December the Executive Council passed a resolution instructing William Pettus and Thomas F. McKinney to aid him in getting up an expedition to operate against Santa Anna in the interior of Mexico. The capture of the city of San Antonio soon afterward, by the Texans, changed the whole aspect of public affairs, and Mexia's enterprise was abandoned. In 1839, Mexia was again at the head of the Revolutionary party in Tampico. There, he was for a time successful, and captured and shot his former Texas friend, General Piedras. After some advantages gained, he was joined by General Urrea, who still claimed to be a Republican. To meet the formidable army thus arrayed on the Revolutionary side, Bustamente left Santa Anna to manage the government in Mexico, and took command in person of the Centralist troops. The two armies met near Puebla, at Acajeta. Bustamente gained a complete victory. Urrea made his escape, but Mexia was captured, and, according to Mexican precedents, soon afterward marched out and shot.

**MILAM, BENJAMIN R.**—The hero of San Antonio, was a genuine son "of the dark and bloody ground." He distinguished himself as a soldier in the war of 1812, and at its close became a trader and an adventurer among the Indian tribes, on the head waters of the Texas Rivers. We next read of him at Galveston, in 1816; then on his way to Mexico to enlist in the ranks of the Republicans, who were trying to disengage themselves from the Spanish yoke. After having rendered valuable services in Mexico, in 1819, he visited New Orleans, where, in conjunction with Trespelacios, he organized an expedition for the capture of Tampico. When Iturbide proclaimed himself

Emperor, Milam joined the party opposed to these pretensions. He was taken by the Imperial troops and thrown into prison, where he languished for a year, and was finally released by an uprising among the people. For his services in the Republican cause, he received, first, one league of land, which was afterward increased to eleven; but unfortunately he located too far east, and when the boundary line was run, Milam's invaluable tract of land was in Miller county, Arkansas. He was interested in the colonial contracts with General A. G. Wabell, an Englishman, in planting a colony on Red River. At his invitation, a good many families came in, and became permanent settlers. This was in 1828. He was then an inmate of the family of Judge Ellis, though he had opened a ranche of his own, on land which proved not to be in Texas. He subsequently obtained an empresario contract for settling the country at the head of the San Marcos River. Dr. Beale was probably interested in this, as it is marked in some of the old maps as Beale's grant. It was sold to the house of Baring Brothers, London. Nothing was done toward introducing colonists. Milam was in the fight at Nacogdoches, in 1832. In 1835 he was at Saltillo, and procured from the Legislature the exclusive right to navigate the Colorado River. While there, the despotic plans of Santa Anna began to be unfolded. These were denounced in unmeasured terms by the stern and incorruptible Milam. The result was, Milam was again arrested and thrown into prison at Monterey. He soon won the confidence of the jailer, by whose connivance, and the assistance of an outside friend, who furnished a fleet horse, he made his escape and fled toward Texas. He reached Texas at a most opportune moment. It was just after the skirmish about the cannon at Gonzales. Captain Collinsworth had raised a company for the capture of Goliad. Milam was stealthily making his way eastward, when he fell in with Collinsworth's men. He at first supposed they were Mexican soldiers, and prepared to sell his life as dearly as possible, preferring death to another imprisonment. Listening closely, he thought he heard his own language spoken, and to his inexpressible joy soon discovered that he was among friends. Nothing could have afforded Milam more pleasure than to become one of the storming party that captured Goliad.

We have but meager accounts of this most distinguished patriot. He once remarked to Judge Burnet that he had been in almost every prison between the Rio Grande and the city of Mexico. He was now in Texas, and Texas was struggling to resist the usurpation of Santa Anna. After the capture of Goliad, Milam went to the Texas army, then preparing for the capture of San Antonio. The prospect was disheartening. The city was well fortified; with a garrison of veteran troops, numbering largely more than the Texans could muster. A council of war in the Texas camp had decided that the attempt to carry the place by storm would be too hazardous. At this juncture, when the army appeared undecided, and was in danger of disbanding through dissensions, by the advice of Burleson, Milam stepped out in front of the headquarters, and announced that Old Ben Milam was going into San Antonio, and wanted volunteers to go with him. With a shout, the men rallied to the standard of the brave old soldier. In the hour of victory, when reconnoitering with his glass for the final assault,

he was pierced with a rifle-ball, which instantly killed him. He was temporarily buried in the yard of the Veramendi House, where he fell. His remains were subsequently transferred to the Protestant burying ground in the city.

**MILLARD, HENRY**—Was a member of the Consultation, from Liberty. At the organization of the army, he was appointed a captain, and commanded the Regulars in the battle of San Jacinto. He was subsequently connected with the attempt to arrest President Burnet. He died in 1842.

**MILLER, DR. JAMES B.**—A native of Kentucky; came to Texas in 1829; first engaged in the practice of his profession with Dr. Peebles; subsequently became a partner of Alexander Somervell in a store in San Felipe; was a member of the Convention at San Felipe, in 1833, and of the Legislature at Saltillo, in 1834. While in the Legislature, the Department of the Brazos was created, and Dr. Miller was appointed Political Chief. With many others, he thought the declaration of Texas independence was premature, but when the measure was adopted he went heartily into it. In 1837, he was Secretary of the Treasury; in 1843, Chief Justice of Fort Bend county. In 1847, and again in 1849, he received a handsome vote for Governor; in 1851, he was appointed one of the commissioners to investigate fraudulent land titles west of the Nueces River. He died in 1854.

**MINA, XAVIER**.—A Spanish soldier of fortune, who, having been imprisoned, made his escape to England, where he collected about 200 followers and sailed for America. His first intention was to co-operate with Toledo in the conquest of Florida. Failing in this, he landed at Galveston, November 24th, 1816. In March following, he, in conjunction with Aury and Perry, planned an expedition for the capture of Soto la Marina, on the Santander river, in Mexico. The place was taken without a fight. The commanders then differed on questions of rank, and separated. Aury sailed for the Texas coast with all the vessels. Perry started for Texas by land; and Mina, enlisting a few followers, determined to remain and operate against the Royalists in Mexico. His first fight was at Valle de Mais, where, with 300 men, he totally defeated 400 Spanish cavalry. This was on the 8th of June. June 14th, he gained another victory at Peotillas; on the 18th, captured Real de Rinas with its garrison of 300 men, and afterwards the celebrated hacienda of the Marquis of Jaral, from whom he extorted \$300,000. In the meantime, Arredondo had re-occupied Soto la Marina, and was concentrating all his available forces for the capture of Mina. The native Republicans distrusted Mina because he was a Gachupin, and did not rally in force to his standard. With diminished numbers, he bravely encountered the veteran Arredondo at Venadita, September 27th. He was defeated and captured. By order of the Viceroy, Apodaca, he was shot at Remedios, November 11th, 1817.

**MOORE, COMMODORE E. W.**—Was a Lieutenant on the U. S. sloop Boston; resigned his commission and was appointed a Post Captain in the navy of





**HOUSTON PIERCED WITH AN ARROW.**



**Texas.** During Houston's second administration, a serious misunderstanding arose between Commodore Moore and the President. A court martial was convened, consisting of S. Sherman, E. Moorehouse, A. Somervell, James Riley and Thomas Sybert, with Thomas Johnson, Judge Advocate. Moore was acquitted. By the terms of annexation he ought to have been transferred to the United States navy again. But his present rank would have placed him over men who were his superiors in the old navy at the time he resigned. This, and other unsettled points, prevented his reception in the navy. In 1857, he had an appointment in connection with the custom-house in Galveston. He died in Virginia, in 1860.

**MOORE, DR. FRANCIS, JR.**—Was a native of New York; but came from Ohio to Texas in 1836, with the Buckeye Rangers. Arriving at Velasco, he was tendered the position of surgeon in the army. In the spring of 1837, he became one of the proprietors of the Texas *Telegraph*, and for twenty years he was its editor-in-chief. During that period it was the leading newspaper in the Republic, and its files are to-day invaluable to the historian. Dr. Moore was several times elected Mayor of Houston. In 1841-43 he represented Harris county in the Senate, and was a member of the Annexation Convention in 1845. In 1860 he was appointed State Geologist, but was removed in a short time. He then went north and entered the service of a copper-mining company, and was sent to Lake Superior. In 1864, he died from injuries received from a fall. A few weeks later, his life-long friend and business partner in the *Telegraph* office, Mr. Creeger, followed him to the spirit land.

**MOORE, JOHN H.**—One of the earliest settlers upon the Upper Colorado. He was a bold and successful Indian-fighter. In 1834 he led an expedition against the Tehuacanies and Wacoos on the Upper Brazos. For twenty-one days he followed their trail. In one fight eleven Indians were killed. Moore was one of the earliest and most zealous advocates for Texan independence; and for this his arrest was ordered by General Cos, in 1835. When the volunteers assembled at Gonzales, to hold forcible possession of the cannon, Moore was elected to command them. In 1840, he was in command of an expedition against the Indians on the headwaters of the Colorado. A large village of the Comanches was completely surprised and destroyed. A large number of warriors were killed, and some prisoners taken. Col. Moore was the original proprietor of the town of Lagrange. He still (1878) lives on his plantation, which has been his home for more than a half a century.

**MORGAN, JAMES.**—Came to Texas about 1828; in 1830 he was a merchant at Anahuac, and in 1836 at New Washington, or Morgan's Point. His store-house was plundered and burned by Santa Anna, just before the battle of San Jacinto. Colonel Morgan was then in command of Galveston island, and rendered President Burnet efficient service. He filled various public trusts with honor and fidelity. He was blind during the last years of his life.

**MURRAH, PENDLETON.**—Was a native of South Carolina, a lawyer by profession. He went in early life to Alabama, and came from that State to Texas, and settled in Harrison county. In 1857 he represented that county in the Legislature; and was elected Governor in 1863. At the dissolution of the Confederate armies, in June, 1865, Governor Murrah left the capital and sought a refuge in Mexico. He died in Monterey, the following July.

**NAVARRO, JOSE ANTONIO.**—Was born in the city of San Antonio, in 1795. His father was from Corsica. Mr. Navarro was, in 1834–35, land commissioner for Bexar district and Dewitt's colony; a member of the Convention in 1836, and again in 1845; in 1838, in Congress; in 1840, commissioner to Santa Fé. Santa Anna, for some cause, cherished a special hatred towards Colonel Navarro, and he was thrown into the castle of San Juan d'Ulloa and kept in solitary and dreary confinement, until Herrera became President, when he was liberated and permitted to return to his home in Texas. After annexation, he represented Bexar district in the State Senate. He died in his native city in 1870. He was a staunch Republican; a man of great simplicity of manners, united with a Spanish dignity; pure in morals, upright in all his dealings, and an incorruptible patriot.

**NEIGHBORS, R. S.**—Came from Virginia to Texas in 1837, and entered the army. In 1849, in company with Colonel Ford, he surveyed a route from San Antonio to El Paso, and was then sent by Governor Bell to organize the county of Santa Fe. He found Santa Fe in possession of the United States, and returned to Texas, and was a member of the Legislature in 1851; in 1855 he was U. S. Indian Agent, and collected the Indians on the reserves. He was killed at Fort Belknap, August 14th, 1859.

**NEIL, JOHN C.**—Commanded the artillery at the taking of San Antonio in 1836, and also in the battle of San Jacinto, in which he was slightly wounded. In 1842, he led an expedition against the Indians on the Upper Trinity, and in 1844 was one of the Commissioners sent to treat with the Indians. Died soon after his return, at his home on Spring creek.

**NEWELL, JOHN D.**—Came from North Carolina to Texas in 1830; was a member of the Convention in 1833. He was a successful planter, having lived to raise forty-five cotton crops in Texas. He died in Richmond, in December, 1875.

**ODIN, REV. J. M.**—Was sent to Texas by Bishop Timon, of Missouri, in 1840; March 6th, 1842, was consecrated Bishop of Claudiopolis, and Vicar Apostolic of Texas; in 1847, Bishop of Galveston, which then included the whole State; in 1861, he was transferred to New Orleans, and soon afterwards created Archbishop. He died in his native village in France, in 1870.

**OCHILTREE, WILLIAM B.**—Came from North Carolina to Texas in 1839; in 1844, was Secretary of the Treasury; in 1845, in the Annexation Conven-

tion, after which, for a number of years, he was District Judge. He was a member of the Secession Convention in 1861, and sent as a delegate to the Convention at Montgomery, Alabama; died in Jefferson, Texas, December 27, 1867.

**OLDHAM, WILLIAM S.**—Was in the Confederate Senate, from Texas, during the war; died in Houston in 1868.

**OWEN, CLARK L.**—Was from Kentucky. In 1840, he was with John H. Moore in his expedition against the Indians; was a Captain in the Plum creek fight with the Comanches. He declined a position in Houston's Cabinet, but was appointed to the command of the troops in the Southwest. Such was Houston's unbounded confidence in Colonel Owen, that he authorized him, at his discretion, to proclaim martial law at Corpus Christi, for the more effectual suppression of thieving and robbing; but he succeeded in restoring order without resorting to that extreme measure. He was an original Union man, but after the secession of the State, Captain Owen raised a company for the Second Texas Infantry, and was killed at the battle of Shiloh.

**PADILLA, JUAN ANTONIO.**—Was for a short time Land Commissioner in East Texas, in 1829. The next year, in conjunction with Judge Chambers, he obtained an Empresario contract; in 1834-36 he was Secretary of State of Coahuila, Texas; was elected to represent Victoria county in the Convention of 1836, but, owing to the unsettled state of the West, did not attend. He paid a visit to the city of Houston in 1839, and died while at that place.

**PARKER, ISAAC.**—A venerable member of a historic family; has represented his district, both in the Congress of the Republic and in the State Legislature. He lives, at the advanced age of 86, near Weatherford in the county that bears his name.

**PARMER, MARTIN.**—Whose name is to the Texas Declaration of Independence, was a native of Virginia; moved in early life to Missouri; was Indian Agent; served in the Convention that formed the Constitution of that State, and also in the Legislature; settled at Mound Prairie, Texas, about the year 1825; was one of the leaders in the Fredonian emeute, in 1826-7; and died soon after the Revolution.

**PATRICK, GEORGE M.**—Came to Texas, by sea, in 1827. Thomas Jamison, late of Matagorda, and John H. Moore were on the same vessel returning to the country, having been absent on a visit. Mr. Patrick knew something of the management of a ship, and when a storm arose and drove their vessel to sea, after reaching the coast, the Captain being drunk—he took the control and brought the vessel into Galveston. In 1832, Mr. P., was Regidor (Recorder) at Anahuac; in 1835, he was in the General Consultation; in 1836, with President Burnet, first at Morgan's Point, then at

Galveston, where, for a time he had command of the schooner *Flash*. In 1837, he was Surveyor of Harris county; subsequently, for many years, he was Chief Justice of Grimes county, in which he still lives (1878).

**PEASE, ELISHA M.**—A native of Connecticut; born in 1812 and a lawyer by profession. He came to Texas in 1835, and was appointed Secretary of the Executive Council at San Felipe; in 1836 he was Clerk, first in the Navy, then in the Treasury Department, under the Provisional Government. In 1837 he was Comptroller of Public Accounts. He held this office but a short time. When he resigned it, he entered upon the practice of his profession in Brazoria county. He was a member of the House of Representatives of the First and Second Legislatures, and Chairman of the Judiciary Committee. He was transferred to the Senate of the Third Legislature. He was elected Governor in 1853 and re-elected in 1855. This was a period of unparalleled prosperity. At the close of his official term he took up his residence in Austin. On the removal of Governor Throckmorton, in 1867, Pease was appointed Governor by General Sheridan. This office he resigned the next year. In 1874, without his knowledge, he was appointed Collector of Customs for Galveston, an office he declined to accept. Was reappointed Collector at Galveston in 1879, and took charge of the Custom House Feb. 1.

**PEEBLES, DR. R. R.**—Came from South Carolina to Texas in 1829, and was appointed Land Commissioner for Austin and Williams' colony. In 1851 he represented Austin county in the Legislature; lives in Waller county.

**PERRY, HENRY.**—Was the commander of the Americans in the battle of Alazan, near San Antonio, in 1813. He is also generally reported as having been in the battle of Medina, a few weeks later; though another account states that Perry, having been warned by a Mexican girl that Musquis and other Mexicans, in the Republican ranks, had made arrangements to desert to the Royalists, left the city before that disastrous battle. In 1815, he was in Louisiana attempting to get up a filibustering expedition to Texas, but was thwarted by the vigilance of the United States Marshals. In 1816 he joined Commodore Aury at Galveston, and accompanied Aury and Mina to Soto la Marina. After the departure of Aury with the ships, Perry thought their force too weak to maintain themselves in the heart of Mexico, and he, with fifty-one followers, started for Texas. The party reached Goliad in safety, and might have passed on to the interior of the country, but they summoned the small garrison in the old fort to surrender. While parleying before the walls, a body of two hundred cavalry sent by Arredondo for the capture of Perry arrived. A desperate fight ensued. The Spanish account of the battle is, that after all Perry's men were slain in battle, the brave commander, rather than surrender, killed himself. This is possible, but it has been conjectured that a part, at least, of Perry's men surrendered, and shared the fate of the unfortunate Fannin and his command at the same place, twenty-five years later.

**PERRY, JAMES F.**—A brother-in-law of Stephen F. Austin (having married Mrs. Bryan, Mr. Austin's sister, in Missouri); came to Texas in 1831, and settled in Brazoria county, at Peach Point. From this time forward this was General Austin's home. Mr. Perry died in 1852; his wife having died the previous year

**PILLSBURY, TIMOTHY.**—Came to Texas from Maine. In 1840, he represented Brazoria county in the Texas Congress; and was soon afterward elected Chief Justice of the county. He was the first to represent West Texas in the Congress of the United States, after annexation. At the end of his second term, he retired to private life. He died near Henderson, in 1858.

**POTTER, ROBERT**—Was Secretary of the Navy during the government *ad interim*, and subsequently represented the Red River District in the Texas Congress. He was killed at his home, near Lake Soda, in 1840.

**POWERS, JAMES**—An Irishman, by birth; in 1828, engaged with Dr. Hewitson in a colonization contract; was a member of the Convention of 1836; was captured by raiders at his home, at Live Oak Point, but was immediately released by order of Santa Anna.

**PUTNAM, MITCHELL**—A private in Captain Hurd's company, at San Jacinto. In 1838, he settled near Gonzales, and the same year the Comanches carried off four of his children. In March, 1840, when the Comanches came into San Antonio to make a treaty, they brought in one of Mr. Mitchell's children. After the fight in the Council House, another was surrendered. One died soon after being carried off. An interesting little girl was still missing, and for twenty-six years her father and family were ignorant of her fate. In 1865, Judge John Chenault, who had been an Indian Agent in Missouri, immigrated to Texas and settled in Gonzales. There was a woman, an inmate of Judge C.'s family, then thirty years old, whom he had ransomed when a little girl from the savages. The child was too young when carried off to remember anything of her parentage, or even her name. Something in her appearance induced Mr. Putnam to suspect this was his long-lost daughter. There was on her person a peculiar flesh-mark, well remembered by her parents. This indelible mark established her identity. Though much attached to her foster-father, she was greatly delighted to find her real father and to dwell with her kinsmen.

**RAINS, EMORY**—A native of Tennessee; settled in Texas, in 1816, in Lamar county; in 1836, represented Shelby county in the Texas Congress; filled many offices of trust, and died at a good old age, in the county that bears his name, in 1878

**REAGAN, JOHN H.**—Came to Texas in 1840 from Tennessee, and engaged in surveying; in 1846, he was Probate Judge in Anderson county; 1847, in the Legislature; from 1852 to 1857 he filled the office of District Judge.

During the latter year he was elected to Congress, and re-elected in 1859. At the breaking out of the civil war he resigned his seat in Congress, and at the organization of the Confederate government, was invited into President Davis' Cabinet as Postmaster-General. At the fall of Richmond, Mr. Reagan left the city in company with President Davis, and they were still in company when they were captured by the Federal soldiers. While Mr. Davis was sent to Fortress Monroe, Mr. Reagan was sent to Fort Warren, Boston harbor. On being released, he returned to his old home in Palestine, and resumed the practice of his profession. In 1873, his political disabilities were removed, and the next year he was elected to Congress, and also to the Constitutional Convention of the State. He was re-elected to Congress in 1876, and also in 1878.

**RILEY, JAMES**—Represented Harris county in Congress in 1840, and was soon afterward sent as Minister to the United States; in 1846, he commanded a Texas regiment in the Mexican war; in 1856, was United States Minister to St. Petersburg, Russia; in 1861-2, a colonel in the Arizona Brigade, but most of the time in Mexico on diplomatic service. Returning from that expedition, he was assigned to duty in Louisiana, and killed in the battle of Franklin, April 13, 1863. Mrs. Riley died in Jefferson, Texas, in January, 1877.

**ROBERTS, ORAN M.**—Is a native of South Carolina; born in 1815. He was educated at the University of Alabama; studied law, and entered upon the practice of his profession in 1838. After serving one term in the Legislature of Alabama, he immigrated to Texas in 1841, located at San Augustine, and commenced the practice of his profession. He was District Attorney in 1844; the next year District Judge. After annexation, he resumed the practice of his profession and continued it until 1857, when he was elected one of the Associate Justices of the Supreme Court. He was a member of the Secession Convention in 1861, and was the President of that body. In 1862, he raised a regiment for service in the Confederate army, and was assigned to duty in the division of General Walker. While in the army, he was elected Chief Justice of the State. He was in the first Reconstruction Convention, in 1866, and was chairman of the Committee on the Judiciary. The ensuing Legislature elected him and the late Judge Burnet to the United States Senate; but they were not permitted to take their seats, as Congress set aside the reconstruction administration of President Johnson. He resumed the practice of his profession, and, in conjunction, taught, in 1868, a law school in Gilmer. In 1874, when the Supreme Court was re-organized under Governor Coke, Justice Roberts was returned to his place as Chief Justice of the State, and under the new Constitution was re-elected in 1876. Inaugurated Governor January 21, 1879.

**ROBERTS, SAMUEL A.**—A native of Georgia, educated at West Point; resigned his commission and studied law at Mobile, Alabama. In 1838, he came to Texas, and was soon afterwards sent as Minister to the United States; in 1840 he was Secretary of State in Lamar's cabinet. After annex-



tion he settled in Bonham, and engaged in the practice of his profession. During the civil war he had a military commission under the Confederate Government. He died in Bonham, in 1872.

**ROBERTSON, JEROME B.**—Jerome B. Robertson is by birth a Kentuckian. Before he attained his majority, the attention of the people of the United States was fixed upon the struggle then existing between the Texas colonists and the military despotism then ruling Mexico. The colonists were weak in numbers and resources, while their enemies were strong and vindictive. The colonists were widely scattered over a new country, struggling to maintain constitutional and religious liberty against absolute despotism and the exertions of the centralists. Hence, the fluctuations of that struggle excited the public mind of the United States far more than this generation can understand. The subject of this sketch has always been prompt to coin his convictions into deeds, and from his early youth was characterized by fine social qualities, and an active zeal in promoting public enterprises. These qualities, joined to an ardent love of liberty, and a sympathy for the weak, which could not be restrained, stimulated young Robertson to actively espouse the cause of Texas; and in the beginning of the year 1836, he openly declared his intention to embark in the cause of Texan independence. With eighty-six other brave men, he formed a company at Owensboro, Daviess county, Kentucky, who promptly manifested their appreciation of his capacity by electing him their Captain upon their arrival in Texas. The trip down the river to New Orleans was a continuous ovation, but the real hardships of the new life began at that point. A delay of several weeks was here met by the failure of the agents of Texas to procure transportation; and an unusually long voyage of nineteen days across the Gulf, from the mouth of the Mississippi to Velasco, Texas, followed by weary marches and the tedious though necessary restraints of camp life, were alone sufficient to severely test the soldierly qualities of the men. Texas was without money to pay her defenders, and without stores with which to feed and clothe them; yet did not her soldiers falter, but pushed onward until victory crowned their noble efforts.

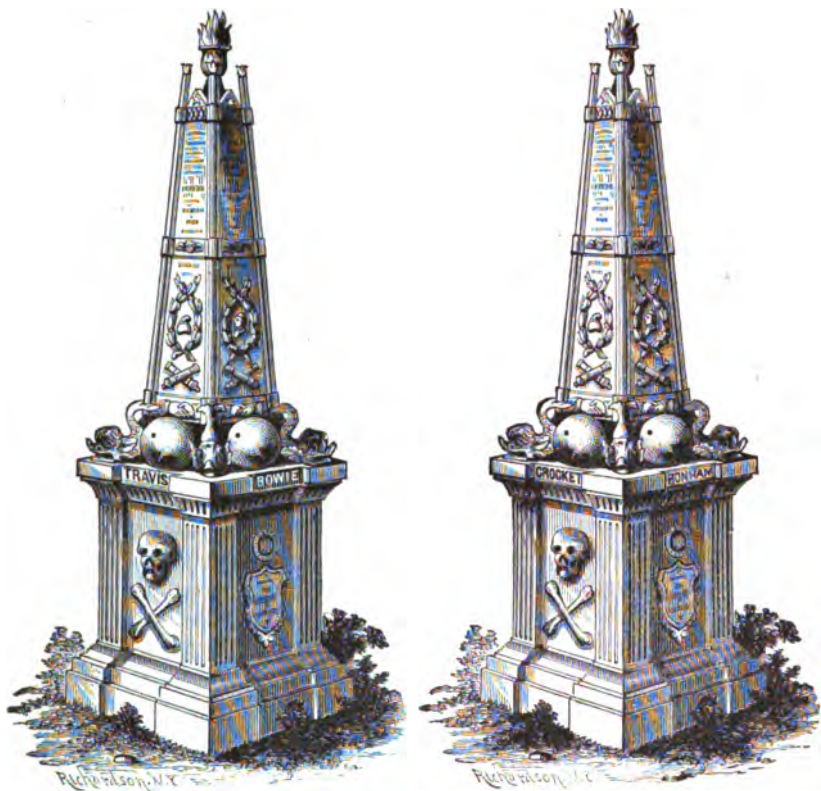
With the cessation of hostilities and the achievement of independence, the restoration of social order demanded the best efforts of Texans. The work was begun and carried out with an energy and breadth of wisdom which has not been improved upon in later days. The provisions made by Texas for public education, were among the first acts of the young Republic, and were munificent, and then far in advance of the times. Upon his discharge from the army, Captain Robertson settled in the town of Washington, Washington county, at the close of the year 1837, and commenced the practice of medicine, which he had studied in Kentucky; and continued the practice of that profession, when not in public service, until 1874. During that period, he filled many minor civil offices, and participated in most of the campaigns against the Mexicans and Indians during the existence of the Republic, including the Somervell campaign of 1843. He was a member of the Lower House of the State Legislature in 1847-49, and served two terms in the State Senate. He was a member of the Secession Conven-

tion in 1861. His previous services for Texas did not prompt him to remain in peaceful ease when Texas bade her sons to go forth to battle again, but he promptly volunteered, and was elected Captain of a company formed at Independence. The company was ordered to Richmond, Virginia, in the fall of 1861, and became a part of the Fifth Texas regiment, of which Captain Robertson was made Lieutenant-Colonel. After the battle of Seven Pines, he was promoted to the Colonelcy, and with his regiment participated in the glories and hardships of the Army of Northern Virginia. Upon the promotion of General J. B. Hood to the rank of Major-General, Colonel Robertson was advanced to the position of Brigadier-General, and commanded Hood's old brigade.

After the close of the war came the trying process of Reconstruction. General Robertson had endured too much for Texas, to despair of better times, even in that dark hour; and his age, character, and public services, gave him great power to influence the more intemperate spirits in his distracted State. He counselled, always, forbearance and peaceful methods, but never ceased to labor and to hope for Texas. He was made Superintendent of the State Bureau of Immigration, in 1874, and his able and energetic administration of that important office received the universal commendation of the press and people. He is now laboring to advance the railroad interests of Western Texas, as the means of developing the vast wealth of that hitherto comparatively unknown section of the Empire State of Texas.

From any cause he thought good, he never withheld his voice, his purse, or his hand. He never took counsel of selfishness, nor sought an unworthy end.

**ROBERTSON, STERLING C.**—An Empresario, who, next to Austin, introduced the largest number of families into Texas. He visited the country as early as 1823. Mr. Leftwich, after securing a contract and introducing a few families, went back to Tennessee and died, and his contract fell into the possession of the Nashville Company, of which Mr. Robertson was an active manager. In 1830, Mr. Robertson, in conjunction with Mr. Alexander Thompson, introduced a number of families, about the time of Bustamente's decree interdicting all immigration from the United States. The immigrants, finding obstacles in the way of settling the Robertson colony, stopped, for a time, in the colony of Austin. The Mexicans appear to have had a special spite at Mr. Robertson; and a decree of the Legislature annulled the contract, and banished him from the province. At the same time, a contract for settling the same territory was given to Austin and Williams. Robertson visited Saltillo, and on his representation of his preparations to introduce colonists, his contract was renewed in Decree No. 285, issued April 29th, 1834. The fickle Legislature, on the 18th of May, 1835, in Decree No. 317, declared that the former decree in favor of Sterling C. Robertson, foreigner, was null and void, and the Governor was directed to return the contract to Austin and Williams. As the revolution was then in progress, this last decree did not seriously injure the Robertson colony. Mr. Robertson was a member of the Convention in



## MONUMENT ERECTED

— TO —

## THE HEROES OF THE ALAMO,

AND NOW STANDING AT THE ENTRANCE TO THE STATE HOUSE AT AUSTIN, TEXAS.

**INSCRIPTION ON THE SHAFT—NORTH FRONT.**—To the God of the fearless and free is dedicated this altar made from the ruins of the Alamo. March 6th, 1836, A. D.

**INSCRIPTION ON THE WEST FRONT.** Blood of Heroes hath stained me; let the stones of the Alamo speak that their immolation be not forgotten. March 6th, 1836, A. D.

**INSCRIPTION ON THE SOUTH FRONT.**—Be they enrolled with Leonidas in the host of the mighty dead. March 6th, 1836, A. D.

**INSCRIPTION ON THE EAST FRONT.**—Thermopylae had her messenger of defeat, but the Alamo had none. March 6th, 1836, A. D.



1836, and raised a company for service in the San Jacinto campaign. He died in the county which bears his name, March 4th, 1842.

**ROBINSON, JAMES W.**—A native of Ohio, and a lawyer by profession. He was a member of the Consultation in 1835, from Nacogdoches. At the organization of the Provisional Government, he was elected Lieutenant-Governor, and when the Executive Council deposed Governor Smith, he became Governor; but Smith never surrendered the insignia of his office. (That insignia was a brass button on his coat, which happened to be a star, and for want of a seal, was used to make the impression upon public documents dispatched to the United States. That brass button gave birth to the single star, the emblem of the new Republic). Mr. Robinson fought as a private at the battle of San Jacinto. At the organization of a Constitutional Government, he was appointed District Judge. He resigned his office rather than to preside at the trial of a personal friend, charged with a capital offence. He was in San Antonio in September, 1842, when so many of the members of the court were taken prisoners by Woll. From his prison in Mexico he addressed a letter to Santa Anna, who had been restored to power. In that letter he suggested a basis for an agreement between Texas and Mexico. Robinson probably did this to secure his liberty. Santa Anna released him, and sent him with letters to Mr. Houston. The negotiation thus begun, finally resulted in the establishment of an armistice between the two countries. In 1849, Judge Robinson removed with his family to California. Not liking the country, he started back to Texas, and died at San Diego, in 1853.

A number of anecdotes are current among the legal fraternity, of which Robinson was the occasion. It is told that on one occasion, when holding court in Houston, a man had been convicted of a crime for which the penalty was thirty-nine lashes. A motion was duly made and entered for a new trial, which the Judge promised to attend to the next morning. In the meantime, he directed the sheriff to whip the culprit and turn him loose. At the opening of the court in the morning, the Judge listened very patiently to the arguments for a new trial. The attorney, seeing an unaccountable merriment in the court-room, inquired the cause; when the Judge, in the blandest possible manner, informed the gentleman that his client had already received his punishment and been discharged. On another occasion, he perpetrated a grim joke at the expense of a still greater criminal. He was holding court in a town on the western frontier. A man had been clearly convicted of a willful murder. The Judge pronounced the death penalty, the sentence to be carried into execution the next day. But he then remarked to the sheriff that the jail was very uncomfortable and he had better execute him that night. The truth was, the criminal had a large number of friends, and the Judge knew full well that he would be rescued during the night.

**ROBINSON, JOHN C.**—Came with his family to Texas in 1831—landing at the mouth of the Brazos. At New Orleans he had his negroes passed through the custom-house, so that if he found it necessary he could return

with them to the United States. They were also indentured as Peons, according to the Mexican laws. Mr. Robinson was in the battle of Velasco, in 1832; in 1833, settled on his headright league on the west side of Cummings creek, in Fayette county; was a member of the first session of the first Congress. It was made the duty of the members of Congress to administer the oath of office to the newly-appointed Magistrates. On the 26th of November, 1836, he and his brother rode over to the house of Mr. Stevens, on Clear creek, to administer the oath of office to Mr. Stevens. As the two brothers were returning, they were met by a party of Indians and both killed. Later in the day, the same Indians killed the Gotier family, still higher up on the headwaters of Rabb's creek.

**ROBINSON, JOEL W.**—Son of the above; was in the Velasco fight in 1832, and also in the battle of San Jacinto. It was Mr. Robinson's good fortune to be with the party that captured Santa Anna, and the fallen chief rode into the Texan camp behind Robinson, both on one horse. The prisoner, of whose identity they were then ignorant, complained that his feet were sore, and he was thus permitted to ride. Joel Robinson has frequently represented his county in the State Legislature, and was a member of the Constitutional Convention in 1875. He lives on his father's headright league; the one he first settled and the one upon which he was killed.

**ROMAN, RICHARD.**—A native of Kentucky; a soldier in the Black-Hawk war in 1832, and a Captain in the battle of San Jacinto; in 1839, represented Victoria county in Congress of the Republic; in 1849, emigrated to California and served two terms as Treasurer of the State. He was subsequently appointed Appraiser of Merchandise in San Francisco. He died in that city in 1876. He was blind during the last years of his life.

**ROSS, ———.** A native of Virginia; was a Captain in the expedition of Magee in 1812, and Goliad in 1813. After the death of Magee, when Kemper was elected commander, Ross was selected as Major. After the cruel murder of the Spanish officers at San Antonio, he abandoned the enterprise and returned to his native State. After the triumph of the Republican cause in Mexico, he visited that country in hopes of receiving some remuneration for his services. While traveling toward the city of Mexico, he was murdered by robbers.

**ROSS, REUBEN.**—An Aid to Felix Huston in 1837; was with Jordan in the Army of the Republic of the Rio Grande, in 1839; returned to Texas and was killed in a personal rencontre at Gonzales, at a Christmas party, in 1839.

**ROYALL, R. R.**—One of the first settlers at Matagorda; represented that precinct in the Convention of 1833; was chairman of the Central Committee which, at San Felipe, exercised a general supervision of public affairs before the meeting of the Consultation in 1835. He was also a member of that Consultation. He died in Matagorda, in 1840.

**RUNNELS, HIRAM G.**—Ex-Governor of Mississippi; came to Texas in 1840, and opened a plantation on the Brazos river; was a member of the Annexation Convention in 1845; died in 1857.

**RUNNELS, HARDIN R.**—Came from Mississippi to Texas in 1841, and opened a cotton plantation on Red river; represented Bowie county eight years in the Legislature; was Speaker of the House in 1853–55; in 1855 was elected Governor; died at his home in Bowie county in 1878.

**RUSK, THOMAS JEFFERSON.**—The soldier, jurist, and statesman, was of Irish descent, and born in Pendleton district, South Carolina, December 5th, 1803. While yet a boy, bright and precocious, young Rusk attracted the favorable notice of the celebrated John C. Calhoun. Mr. Calhoun greatly assisted him in securing an education, and also in acquiring his profession. Soon after procuring his license as a lawyer, young Rusk removed to the State of Georgia, where he soon obtained a lucrative practice. In an unfortunate mining speculation, he lost nearly all his earnings. Dishonest agents seized the funds and fled to the West. Rusk followed some of them to Texas, but failed to recover his lost money. This was in 1834. He was so delighted with the country that he determined to make Texas his future home, and located at Nacogdoches. He at once took an active part in public affairs, and the same year, as secretary of a vigilance committee, wrote an earnest protest against the further introduction of Indians from the United States. In 1835 the Executive Council elected him Commissary of the Army. He was in the Convention of 1836, and his name is signed to the Declaration of Texan Independence. At the organization of the government *ad interim*, he entered Burnet's Cabinet as Secretary of War. By the direction of the President, he joined the army on the Brazos river, and was the confidential friend and adviser of Houston. Arriving at Harrisburg, he made a most patriotic address to the men, assuring them that they would soon have an opportunity to avenge the butcheries of San Antonio and Goliad. He performed a most gallant part in the ever-memorable battle of the 21st of April. It was to him that Colonel Almonte surrendered. After all resistance had ceased, Rusk exerted himself to arrest the killing of the fugitives. When General Houston resigned, to go to New Orleans for surgical aid, Rusk was appointed Commander-in-Chief; and followed the retreating army of Filisola as far west as Goliad, where he had the remains of the men massacred with Fannin carefully collected and honorably interred.

In the fall of 1836, at the organization of the Constitutional government, Rusk was appointed Secretary of War; but he soon resigned to attend to his private business, which had been very much neglected during the stirring revolutionary times. The people would not permit him long to remain in private life, and in 1837 he was sent to the Texas Congress. A band of Kickapoos having become very troublesome, he collected a company of his neighbors and severely chastised them. Rusk was always ready to draw his sword to repel invasion, or to protect the frontier from the savages. In 1839 he commanded a regiment in the war with the Cherokees. He was

the same year appointed Chief Justice of the Republic, but soon resigned the office and resumed the practice of law at Nacogdoches. His partners were J. Pinckney Henderson, and Kenneth L. Anderson. In 1843 he was elected Major-General of the Militia. In 1845 his fellow-citizens sent him to the Annexation Convention, and he was elected President of that body. At the first session of the Legislature of the State of Texas, General Rusk was elected to the United States Senate; a position he continued to hold until his untimely death by his own hands in 1857. We make some selections from a sketch of his life, which appeared in the Texas Almanac for 1858:

*“General Rusk as Chief Justice of the Republic.*—According to that only record of the judicial decisions of the Supreme Court of Texas extant, Dallam’s Digest, at the fall term, 1840, of the Supreme Court of Texas, Thomas J. Rusk was acting as Chief Justice of that Court, assisted by Wm. J. Jones, John T. Mills, A. B. Shelby, and John Hemphill. These gentlemen were all District Judges at the time; and the Supreme Court, like that of the United States, was then composed of the Circuit Judges sitting in *banco*. The only opinions of Chief Justice Rusk, which Dallam has handed down to posterity, are five short and sententious judgments, covering about five pages of that excellent book. They do not display great learning, to be sure; but then it is to be recollected that during the first two terms of the Supreme Court of the United States, all the Judges did not write half so much. The Chief Justice proved himself adequate to the times; if, in his sententious opinions, he quoted no authorities, he displayed more wisdom than some of his fellows, who quoted from schools and systems which had never been introduced into Texas.”

“The first Legislature of Texas conferred upon him the office of United States Senator, in March, 1846, and in that position he has ever since continued to serve his country with his fidelity, until the day of his death. In that august body of which he was a member, he held a proud and influential position. For several terms he was at the head of the Post Office Committee, and on the election of Mr. Buchanan to the Presidency, the voice of the whole nation seemed to unite upon the name of Rusk, as the most proper and acceptable in connection with the Postmaster-Generalship of the new Cabinet. It was understood that this appointment was offered to him by the President elect, and that Mr. Rusk peremptorily declined it. Early in the last session of Congress, Mr. Rusk was chosen to the high and responsible position of President *pro tem.* of the Senate, in which he continued until the close of the session, administering the duties of the chair with all that dignity, impartiality and ability, so necessary to their acceptable discharge, and winning the unanimous commendation of the members. No one, in fact, was more popular among his fellow-Senators, and none more trusted, honored or beloved. Seldom rising in his place to deliver a set speech, he was nevertheless watchful of the interests of his constituents, and the honor and welfare of the Union, and when he did address the Senate his words had their designed effect. The weight of his influence was more generally felt in the committee of which he was a member, and in his private intercourse with his colleagues, where his sound practical sense, yet



modest and unassuming manners, carried the force of conviction with the charm of integrity.

“Had Thomas J. Rusk lived, he could have reached any official position in this Union to which he would have aspired. Retiring in his disposition, it was with difficulty that his own best friends, who knew and appreciated his true worth, could induce him to accept the honors they were ever ready to confer upon him. Social and domestic in his habits—warm in friendship and devoted in his attachments—he preferred the quiet joys of a private life at home to the noisy plaudits of the multitude abroad; yet while he sought not the latter at any time, he often yielded the former at the call of his constituents, and for the benefit of his country. But the death, last year, of the life-long partner of his bosom, who had shared with him the sorrows of exile and the dangers of revolution, as well as the pleasures of honorable distinction and pecuniary prosperity, seemed to unnerve him for the conflict of a public career, and cause him to shrink from the world into the sacred retreat of home. It was to him like the rupture of his strong heart-sinews, and the tearing asunder of the chords of life. Other causes may have contributed to his fatal despondency, but this was undoubtedly the heaviest weight of sorrow that dragged him down to death. Only noble and sensitive natures are capable of such depth and intensity of woe. Let us throw the white veil of charity over the scene of his final struggle. Let us wash away that purple stain with the fast-flowing tears of sympathy. With reverence let us consign that noble form to the mausoleum of the past, and with gratitude inscribe upon the tablet of our memory the record of his manly virtues and his patriotic deeds.”

We add a few paragraphs from the eulogy pronounced on Rusk, in the Hall of the House of Representatives of Texas, November 7th, 1857, by Chief Justice Hemphill:

“His deep interest in railroad improvements, and his efforts and services in giving an impulse to the great line which is to span the continent, and link the Atlantic and Pacific together as with bands of iron, were most important, but are too familiar to have been forgotten, or even obscured in the recollection.

“He was rarely absent from his post in the Senate. With untiring assiduity he examined thoroughly the questions before that body, and his opinion when formed, especially on subjects before committees to which he was attached, had a force almost irresistible.

“No man ever served in public life more entirely free from even the suspicion of corrupt, mercenary, or improper motives. With integrity, purity and singleness of purpose, he devoted his great talents to his country, unswerved by selfish designs, or the impulses of an ill-regulated ambition. He was endowed with moral courage in an eminent degree. As an illustration, on the boundary question, he expressed his determination to vote for a proposition which he thought Texas might with honor accept, though, from information on which he relied, he felt conscious that by so voting he would forfeit his seat in the Senate. This anticipation, happily for the country, proved to be groundless. Texas did accept the proposition. But his resolution showed that even against a justly indignant public sentiment

—but exasperated in his opinion to such a degree as to be deaf to the suggestions of prudence—he had a spirit which could boldly stand up for what he deemed the true honor and interests of the State, though at the risk, nay, the certainty of the sacrifice of himself.

“He was generous, magnanimous, brave and humane. He was largely endowed with that fine electric quality which seems the gift of nature—the result, perhaps, of a rare combination of the higher qualities of the intellect and of the heart, which inspires confidence, and exerts, in a mystical way, a control over surrounding persons; which exacts obedience from a soldier more from attachment and a high and implicit trust, than from the force of discipline; which, in the hour of danger, draws all to him as the pilot who must weather the storm; which arbitrates and settles the difficulties of others, makes friends everywhere without effort, and in legislative assemblies, gives an influence which no mere talent, intellect, energy or efforts to please can ever possess.

“General Rusk had all the essentials of genuine eloquence. He mastered the strong points of the subject—had clear conceptions, sound practical common-sense views. These were expressed with clearness, force, simplicity, directness, and with a bold and impassioned earnestness if required by the occasion, and these, aided by his lofty presence, full voice, and beaming and expressive countenance, seldom failed to propel the minds of his hearers before him, and produce conviction, the object of all eloquence.

“Without discussing particularly his character as a lawyer and as a judge, we may say that he combined the important elements necessary to constitute a great lawyer. He had a thorough knowledge of the principles of the law—a vast fund of common sense, a familiar acquaintance with the springs of human action—a spirit of investigation carried to any extent required to enable him to master the great points in the facts and law of the cause.

“In his private relations, he was hospitable and kind, beloved of all his neighbors. He lived in patriarchal simplicity. All were welcome at his house; the humblest visited him, and were equally welcome and at home with the richest and greatest of the land. In the words of a friend, benevolence and kindness were more conspicuous in him than in any man he ever knew. He was deeply affectionate and tender in his family circle; no word of unkindness to any member of his family was ever heard to flow from his lips. His wife, the partner of his bosom in youth and in age, in misfortune and in prosperity, was cherished by him with an indescribable fervor and depth of tenderness, love and affection; and her death in the previous year was a blow to his heart from which he never recovered. But it avails not to enumerate his virtues, public or private, or his services, or the hopes of his country untimely blighted. He is gone! so far as a great man who lives in the imperishable records of his country's history can die. He has left us a bright heritage of liberties won by his valor, and sustained and invigorated by the wisdom of his counsels, and he has left a glorious example of exalted abilities and noble virtues all devoted to the service of his country.

“The manner of his death is the only shade on the grand and brilliant

picture of his long, glorious and useful life. He had been weak and sick for some time. The death of his wife had been to him a crushing affliction. His grief, acting through the disordered state of his physical system, produced such an increasing degree of gloom and melancholy, as finally to weaken the control of reason, and in a moment of temporary insanity to produce the melancholy catastrophe which has filled the country with lamentation and woe. Let the tears of sympathy flow for this sudden collapse of one of the finest of mental organizations, striking as it did from life and from his country forever, one of her most illustrious and venerated patriots and statesmen.

“Death cometh to all as surely as the sun runneth his daily course, but it cannot obliterate the services which this great man has rendered to his country. It cannot diminish the brightness of his memory, shining as a star in the political heavens, and exerting for ages in the future its benign agency over the political destinies of the people. But, fellow-citizens, I will not attempt to detain you longer by this feeble tribute to the memory of the deceased. We may not look on his like again. His place may be filled, but who can fill the void in the hearts of his countrymen? We may, however, attempt to imitate his example, to emulate his virtues, to love our country with devoted, uncalculating affection, to give it our hearts and souls, and if necessary, ‘the first and the last drop of blood that runs in our veins,’ to sustain the honor and rights of our beloved State against all opposition and to every extremity, and to fervently hope with him that this mighty, this growing Republic, may be perpetuated over a people enjoying all the blessings of liberty, and all the beneficent glories of a union of patriotic fraternal feeling, and of constitutional and equal rights.”

**RUSSELL, WILLIAM J.**—A native of North Carolina; came to Texas in 1826; in 1832, gathered with the indignant citizens to demand of Bradburn, at Anahuac, the release of Jack, Travis, and others, whom he had arbitrarily arrested. Russell was sent with John Austin to Brazoria for a cannon. Ugartechea, at Velasco, refused to let the cannon pass that place. Austin determined to attack the fort. Russell participated in the fight as captain of the vessel on which the cannon had been placed for transportation to Anahuac. In 1838, he represented Brazoria county in the Senate. After annexation, Captain R. removed to Fayette county, which he represented in the Legislature in 1849; he was also for several years Chief Justice of that county. He is President of the Texas Veteran Association, and resides in Austin.

**SANTA ANNA, ANTONIO LOPEZ DE.**—The connection which this distinguished Mexican General and statesman had with Texas affairs renders it proper that a brief summary of his life should be given. He was born at Jalapa in 1798, and early in life became distinguished as a leader among the Republican patriots who were seeking to throw off the Spanish yoke. In 1822, he assisted in expelling the Royalists from Vera Cruz, and the next year pronounced against Iturbide, who had proclaimed himself Emperor. In 1828, he took the field against Pedraza and secured the elevation of Guer-

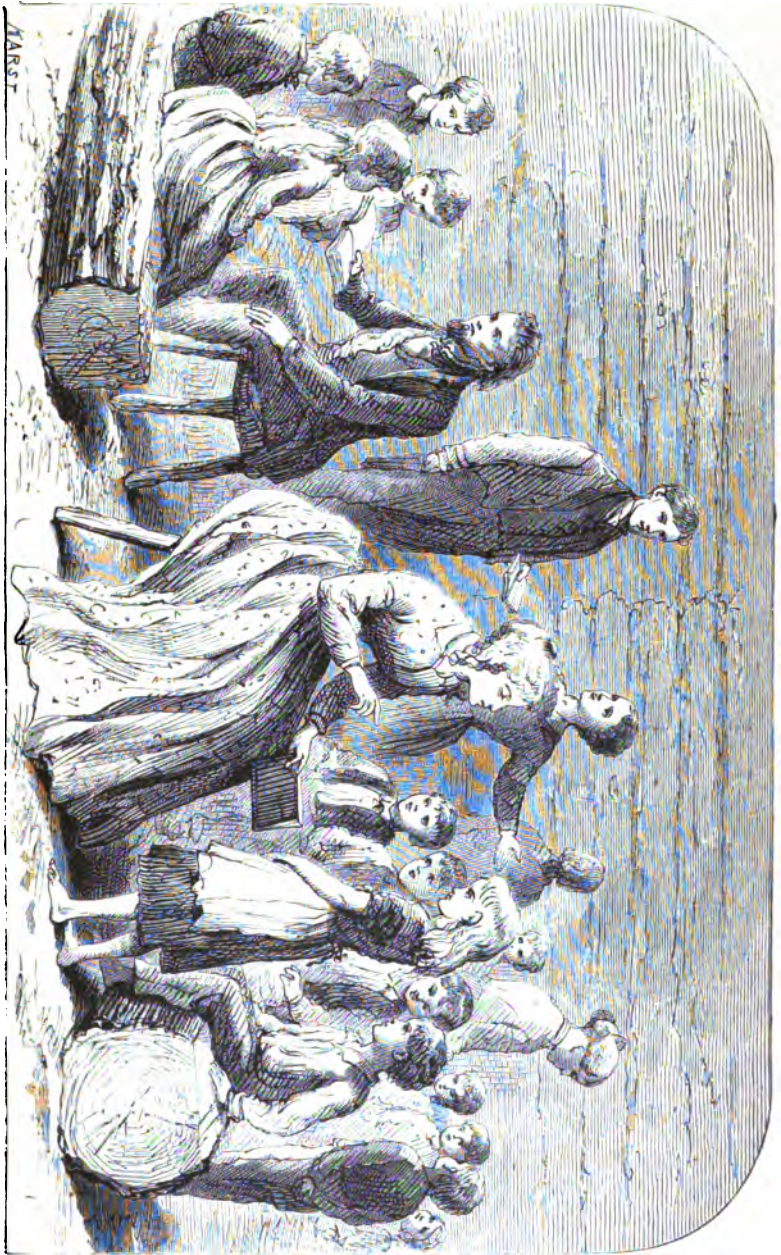
raera to the Presidency, during whose administration Santa Anna had the portfolio of War. In 1830, he was an active partisan of Bustamente, who was elected President; and, three years later, Santa Anna was himself elevated to the Presidential chair. He now deserted the party with which he had always acted, and formed an alliance with the Church, or Reactionary party. On the 3d of October, 1835, he issued his celebrated order dissolving the Legislature, and virtually establishing a military despotism. We need not recount his experiences in Texas! Suffice it to say, that he attempted to justify the Alamo slaughter on the ground of the stubborn resistance of the garrison; but even this poor excuse cannot be offered for the slaughter of Fannin and his men, who were put to death in cold blood after they had surrendered as prisoners of war. That was a butchery—barbarous and wholly unjustifiable on any principles of civilized warfare.

The most perplexing question that agitated the government of Texas *ad interim* was the disposition of the captive President of Mexico, after his capture at San Jacinto. Not a few of the leading men—among them Lamar, Potter, Sherman, W. H. Jack, Mosely Baker, and many of the officers of the army—thought he ought to be tried by drum-head court martial; while Burnet, Houston, Rusk and others contended, as he had been recognized as a prisoner of war, and had ordered Filisola to retreat, since his capture—an order that General was but too willing to obey, Santa Anna ought to be sent home, as had been agreed upon in the treaty with President Burnet. As we have elsewhere said, it was thought the schooner Passaic entered the Brazos with a plan for rescuing Santa Anna and his suite, who were prisoners at Orazaba. When this failed, it was reported that the discouraged prisoner attempted to take his own life by poison.

When he reached home, after his ill-starred Texas campaign, he was coldly received, and retired at once to his hacienda, at Mango de Clavo. He was in the army again in 1853, and in a battle at Vera Cruz, in which the French were handsomely repulsed, but in which he lost a leg.

In 1841, at the head of 10,000 men, he pronounced against Bustamente; defeated that General, and became virtual Dictator of Mexico; but was overthrown and banished in 1845. During the invasion of the country by the army of General Scott, Santa Anna was recalled, and it is confidently asserted that the American blockading fleet permitted him to land under the pledge that he would speedily negotiate a treaty of peace—a promise like that made to the Texans, on the battle-ground of San Jacinto, which he made no effort to fulfill. He at once took the command of the army, and was in the battle of Buena Vista, February 22d, 1847; Cerro Gordo, April 18th; Contreras, August 19th; Churubusco, August 20th, and Molino del Rey, September 9th; after which Scott's army entered the City of Mexico. Santa Anna, though he had displayed his youthful energy in mustering his forces for these consecutive battles, had been defeated, and retired to voluntary exile; and the Americans had, literally, to create a government with which they could establish terms of peace.

Santa Anna was recalled to Mexico, and restored to power in 1853. This time he was appointed President for life, with the privilege of naming his successor. A successful revolution having occurred, he abdicated August 16th,



MARST

THE PIONEER SUNDAY SCHOOL.

the same city, in 1857. In 1822 Seguin was sent by Governor Martinez to introduce Austin into the country, and assist in selecting a location for his colony. At a subsequent period he represented Texas in the Legislature at Saltillo. At the breaking out of the Revolution he was Postmaster of San Antonio. He was an ardent advocate for a separate Government for Texas. During the Revolution he lost a valuable stock of cattle and horses, taken or destroyed by the invading army. He was a high-toned gentleman of truly honorable and patriotic sentiments.

SEGUIN, JUAN N.—Son of the above, was political chief of the Department of Bexar; espoused the Revolutionary cause, and entered the Alamo with Travis; was sent to Goliad for re-inforcements, and thus escaped the massacre; in command of a company, joined Houston's army at Gonzales; was with Mosely Baker in resisting the advance of Santa Anna at San Felipe; and in the battle of San Jacinto.

The Seguins and other Mexican families that espoused the cause of Texas could not remain in the West, when Santa Anna invaded the country. Erasmo Seguin, with his family and the families of his sons, and his neighbors' families, retreated to the East. In the journey they suffered incredible hardships. When they reached San Augustine, they were all stricken down with fever. Erasmo Seguin lost a brother, a son, and several other relatives. Enfeebled by disease, and impoverished by losses, after the battle of San Jacinto they started back to their once delightful home in the West. "The train," says our narrator, "presented a spectacle which beggars description. Old men, women and children, lying in wagons; and for several days Captain Manchaca, who was the only person able to stand up, had to drive the whole train, as well as attend to the sick." Arrived in the West, they found their homes desolate and their immense herds of cattle, horses and sheep, destroyed.

After the retreat of the Mexicans, John N. Seguin was promoted to the rank of Colonel and appointed commander of his native city. He performed the patriotic task of collecting the remains of the victims of the Alamo, and gave them an honorable burial. San Antonio was so far on the frontier that the Texans almost despaired of ever being able to defend it; and at one time an order was issued for the destruction of the city and the transfer of the population to the east side of the Guadalupe river. Seguin made so earnest a protest that it was revoked. In 1839 he represented Bexar county in the Senate. At a subsequent period, he had serious personal misunderstandings with some of the Americans of San Antonio; his life was threatened, and he left the country. His friends think he was badly treated; but that furnishes no excuse for his subsequent conduct. When Woll invaded Texas, in 1842, Seguin was one of his staff officers, and fought against the Texans in the battle of Salado. He was a Colonel in the Mexican army at the battle of Buena Vista. He resigned soon afterwards, and, with the assistance of some American officers, made his way back to Texas with his family. He now (1878) lives with his son, at Santiago, near Comargo, Mexico.

**SHACKLEFORD, DR. JOHN.**—Brought to Texas from North Alabama, in 1836, a company called the Red Rovers, composed of some of the leading young men of the country, his own son being one of the number. His company was with Fannin, and surrendered at the Coleta and was marched back to Goliad, and shared the fate of that unfortunate command. Dr. S. being a surgeon, was spared to attend the wounded. He died in Tuscumbia, Alabama, in 1857.

**SHAW, JAMES.**—Came to Texas in schooner Hope, in 1831; was in the Texas Congress in 1841-42, and in the Legislature in 1853; and now lives in Burleson county.

**SHERMAN, SIDNEY.**—Was a native of Massachusetts; a descendant of Roger Sherman, of Revolutionary fame. In early life he removed to Cincinnati; in 1835, was in Newport, Kentucky, engaged in the manufacture of bagging by machinery. At the call for volunteers for Texas, he abandoned his business, raised and equipped a company of fifty men, and started for the theatre of war. He arrived on the Brazos in February, and hurried forward to Gonzales, intending to go to the relief of Travis, then shut up in the Alamo; but failed to get a sufficiently large force to justify him in the undertaking. At the organization of the first regiment at Gonzales, Burleson was elected Colonel, and Sherman Lieutenant-Colonel. When the army reached the Brazos, another regiment was organized, of which Sherman was elected Colonel.

At San Jacinto, on the 20th of April, 1836, Colonel Sherman led the small squadron of cavalry (sixty-eight in number) in an attack upon a detachment of the enemy, that occupied an island of timber between the hostile camps. He conducted the attack with admirable gallantry, but soon discovered that he was about to become involved in a contest with a force greatly outnumbering him. He adroitly extricated himself, with small loss, and returned to camp. On the 21st of April, in the battle of San Jacinto, of world-wide fame, he commanded the left wing and opened the onslaught. He first sounded the war-cry—“*Remember the Alamo! Goliad and the Alamo!*” It was a day of vengeance and deep retribution; and Colonel Sherman acted a full and conspicuous part in its consummation.

After remaining with the army several months in the West, and finding the enemy not disposed to return, Colonel Sherman asked permission to return to Kentucky, where he had left his wife. President Burnet did not accept his resignation, which he had tendered, but gave him a commission as a Colonel of a regiment of cavalry in the regular service, with orders to proceed to the United States and enlist his men, etc. Before leaving the Brazos, he was taken sick and confined to his bed for ten weeks, and was for some time in a very critical condition, his recovery being very doubtful. When about to leave his companions in arms, the Secretary of War presented him with the stand of colors which he had brought to the country, accompanied with the following note:

WAR DEPARTMENT, VELASCO, August 6th, 1836.

This stand of colors, presented by the ladies of Newport, Kentucky, to Captain Sidney Sherman, is the same which triumphantly waved on the memorable battle-field of San Jacinto; and is by the Government presented to the lady of Colonel Sidney Sherman, as a testimonial of his gallant conduct on that occasion.

A. SOMERVELL, Secretary of War.

*Approved,* DAVID G. BURNET.

Colonel Sherman was again taken sick in Louisiana, on his way home, and was confined six weeks. In consequence of his exposures and fatigues in the army, his health was seriously impaired for a long time. Notwithstanding his very infirm health, soon after reaching home, he sent out some troops and a quantity of clothing for those in the field, who were very destitute. In January, 1837, he arrived with his family in Texas, and shortly after settled upon the San Jacinto Bay, where he resided for several years. In 1842, he was elected a Representative in the Texas Congress, for Harris county, and was appointed Chairman of the Military Committee. His health being still but partially resuscitated, he was able to occupy his seat but for a small portion of the session. As Chairman, etc., he introduced a bill providing for the election of a Major-General of Militia, and the protection of the frontier. This bill was vetoed by President Houston, but passed both Houses of Congress by a constitutional majority. The election was to be by joint ballot of both Houses, and hold for one year, the people afterwards to elect a Major-General for the term of four years. The expediency of the first election was suggested by the very exposed and suffering condition of the inland frontier. Colonel Sherman was urged to be a candidate for that office, but he declined in favor of General Rusk, who was elected. At the expiration of General Rusk's term, Sherman was elected Major-General by a popular vote, which office he held until annexation and the State Constitution. While in that office, he was appointed by the Congress, President of the Court-Martial for the trial of Commodore Moore and other naval officers. The Court sat for six weeks, and the parties charged were honorably acquitted.

On his retirement from military service, Sherman lost none of the energies which had characterized him in the field, but displayed in the occupations of private life useful enterprise and creative talents of a valuable order.

In 1846, he conceived the idea of rebuilding the town of Harrisburg, which had been destroyed by Santa Anna in 1836. With this view, he purchased a large interest in the town-site and 4,000 acres of land adjoining it. He then proceeded to Boston, where he enlisted capitalists and organized a company to build a railway from Harrisburg westward. The difficulties to contend with were neither few nor small. The country was new and but imperfectly known abroad; the population and agricultural productions were inconsiderable, and labor of every character difficult to obtain. Yet his unabated perseverance removed obstacles, and success finally crowned the enterprises: the rebuilding of the town and the construction of the first railway in Texas.

The shrill whistle of the "General Sherman" was the first glad sound of the locomotive that broke upon the solitude of Texas forests, and roused to



new life the slumbering energies of her hardy people. This locomotive was the first that appeared west of the Sabine, and the second west of the Mississippi—one at St. Louis was introduced a few months before. Thus Sidney Sherman will not only be remembered as a chivalrous soldier, whose best years were spent in the service of Texas, but as the father of a railroad system which has conferred inestimable blessings upon the people, and whose future benefits will be more profoundly appreciated when our population shall be quadrupled and the whole area of our extensive territory traversed by a net-work of railways.

In chronicling the events of the past few years of his life, it is but the record of successive misfortunes. In 1853, he lost a valuable saw-mill by fire. Subsequently his dwelling in Harrisburg was burned, then one of the finest buildings in the State. Being homeless, he sent his family to Kentucky, and removed to the railroad office, which was shortly afterward consumed by fire. His remaining possessions and valuable papers, which had been accumulated for thirty years, were destroyed. They were not only important to himself, but, as relating to public affairs, would have been of great value to the future historian of our country.

General Sherman was one of the unfortunate passengers on the ill-fated steamer *Farmer*, which exploded her boilers within a few miles of Galveston, occasioning the loss of some thirty or forty lives, and seriously injuring many others. He was thrown from his berth, with a portion of the wreck, some hundred yards into the water, but, though injured, succeeded in saving himself on the fragments of the wheel-house.

Like most of the soldiers and statesmen who participated in the early struggles of the country, he derived little material benefit from its redemption.

In 1863, at the retaking of Galveston by the Confederates, under Magruder, General Sherman's promising son was killed. He died in Galveston ten years later, his wife and daughter having preceded him to the Spirit Land.

**SMITH, DR. ASHBEL**—Came from Connecticut to Texas in 1837, and was soon afterward appointed Surgeon-General in the army. In 1842-5, he was Minister to France; in 1846, connected with Taylor's army in Mexico; in 1849, he was President of the Board of Examiners at West Point; in 1856, in the Legislature from Harris county; in 1861, entered the Confederate army, with the rank of Captain, and was afterward promoted to the rank of Colonel of the Second Texas Infantry. In 1866, he was again in the Legislature; 1878, the Commissioner from Texas to the Paris Exposition. He lives on Galveston Bay, in Harris county, which he represents in the Legislature in 1879.

**SMITH, BEN. FORT.**—A native of Kentucky; in early life, removed to Mississippi; at 16 years of age, fought in the battle of New Orleans; represented Hines county in the first Legislature of Mississippi, after which General Jackson appointed him Indian Agent. When the Revolution broke out in Texas he raised a volunteer company; arrived at Victoria too late to participate in the taking of Goliad; fought as a private at San Jacinto in the cavalry company. In 1837, he was President of the Board of Land Com-

missioners of Harris county; was in the Texas Congress in 1840, and died in Montgomery county in 1841.

**SMITH, ERASMUS (Deaf).**—The famous guide and spy in Western Texas; was a native of New York; visited Texas as an adventurer in 1817; became a permanent citizen in 1821. Being hard of hearing from his childhood, he was inclined to solitude. In company he was reticent and seemed absorbed in thought. Bold, fearless, enterprising, cautious, and a close observer of nature, he was the very man for the frontier.

Smith was with the first families of DeWitt's colony that settled at Gonzales in 1825, but when that infant settlement was broken up by the Indians he went to San Antonio, where he married a Mexican lady. When the difficulties first arose between the Americans and the Mexican government, it was reported that Smith was disinclined to take any active part, as he was connected with a Mexican family. But the arrest of Zavalla, Williamson, Sam Williams, Moore, and others, decided him to cast his lot and influence with Texas, and Texas had no truer or braver defender. He joined the army under Austin, then marching for San Antonio, and his thorough acquaintance with the country, his coolness and his courage, pointed him out as the proper one to command a spy company. He piloted Fannin from the Mission Espada to Concepcion, and was the first to fire a gun in the fight which ensued. In the attack on San Antonio, he marched at the head of Johnson's division as guide. In the progress of the fight, he, with a few trusted companions, ascended to the top of the Veramendi House, near which Milam was killed, and while on the top of the house, he and Lieutenant John L. Hall, of the New Orleans Grays, were wounded. At Gonzales, when General Houston heard of the fall of the Alamo, he dispatched Smith, Henry Karnes, and R. E. Handy toward the city to ascertain the truth. After proceeding about twenty miles, they met Mrs. Dickinson with her child, Sam, a servant of Travis, and Ben, a free negro servant of Almonte, who fully confirmed the sad intelligence. In the retreat from Gonzales, Smith, with a small company, remained in the rear of the main army, to protect families and watch the movements of the Mexicans. At San Felipe an incident occurred which he deeply regretted. He was not only hard of hearing, but his eyesight was somewhat defective, especially at a distance. He and one of his men were out for observations, when they saw what appeared to be an army approaching the town. His companion said it was the advance of the Mexican army, and they hastened to town to report. The town was burned, and many goods and provisions destroyed. It was a false alarm, the enemy not appearing for several days. It has never been ascertained by whose order the town was destroyed; Baker declaring that Houston ordered it, and Houston denying that he ever gave such an order. It was done probably through a misunderstanding.

While the Texans were at Harrisburg, Smith had the good fortune, while out reconnoitering, to capture a Mexican courier, with an important mail. From this the Texans learned that Santa Anna was with the advance division of his army, then at Morgan's Point. On the morning of the 21st of April, Smith, with a few companions, was detailed for the dangerous and important service of destroying Vince's bridge, which was accomplished.

The day after the battle, and after the capture of Santa Anna, Deaf Smith was sent to the camp of Filisola, with the orders of the President for him to retreat westward. In 1837 he was Captain of a ranging company in the West. He left San Antonio March 6th, and on the 16th was camped at the Chacon, a small stream within five miles of the town of Laredo. Here he was discovered by the scouts of the enemy. Anticipating an attack, he took a position in a mesquite thicket. A company of Mexican cavalry, of twice their number, advanced to the attack, but after having ten killed and as many wounded, they retired to the town. Two of the Texans were wounded. On retiring to civil life, Smith became a resident of Richmond, and in company with John P. Borden established a land agency business. He died at that place, November 30th, 1837. The *Houston Telegraph*, draped in mourning, and announcing his death, said: "This singular individual was one whose name bears with it more of respect than sounding titles. Major, Colonel, General, sink into insignificance before the simple name of *Deaf Smith*. That name is identified with the battle-fields of Texas. His eulogy is inseparably interwoven with the most thrilling annals of our country, and will long yield to our traditionary narratives a peculiar interest."\*

SMITH, HENRY.—Governor of Texas in 1835; was a native of Kentucky, but went in early life to Missouri. In 1821, entered Texas and after spending some time in the settlement on Red river, became a permanent resident of Brazoria County, where he taught school in 1827; he was wounded in the battle of Velasco, in 1832; was a member of the Convention in 1833; and an Alcade, and acting political chief the next year; was a member of the General Consultation in 1835, and was appointed Provisional Governor of the new State, which was then expected to remain a member of the Mexican Confederation. A serious misunderstanding between the Governor and the Executive Council led the latter body to depose him; but he declined to surrender his office, and the controversy was still unsettled, when the Provisional Government was displaced by the new Government *ad interim*, after the Declaration of Independence in 1836. At the election in the fall of 1836, Smith was a candidate for President; was defeated but invited by President Houston to the office of Secretary of the Treasury—a position he filled with marked ability, notwithstanding the affected sarcasms of Gouge, in his Fiscal History. At the close of Houston's term, Smith retired to his home in Brazoria county. In 1840 he emigrated to California, where he died in 1853. At the time of his death he was making preparations to return to Texas.

SMITH, JAMES.—For whom Smith county was named, was commander of the militia called into service in 1844 to quell the disturbances between the Regulators and Moderators.

\* Many apocryphal incidents have been interwoven with the name of Deaf Smith. The last that has passed under our notice was that of a duel about the Archive War. The difficulties growing out of the removal of the Archives occurred in 1842-43. Smith died in 1837.

**SMITH, THOMAS I.**—A native of Tennessee, came to Texas in 1836, and joined the army then under the command of Felix Huston; was wounded in the fight with Woll's men, at Salado creek, in 1842; and was soon afterward dispatched with a small force to remove the public archives from Austin. In this he was unsuccessful. The next year settled on Chambers creek, Ellis county; in 1844 conducted a scouting party, against the Indians, into the Wichita mountains; in 1847 was in command of a ranging company, with headquarters on Richland creek; and died in Austin, in 1847.

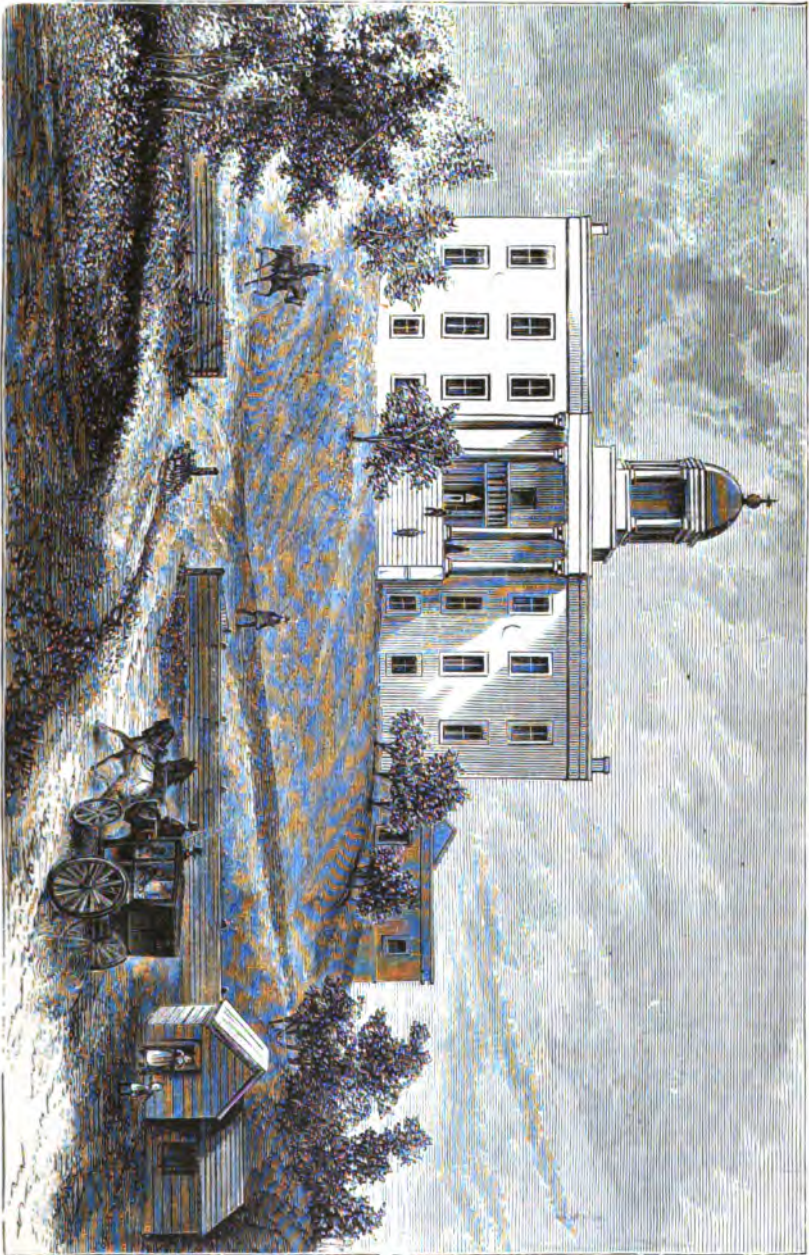
**SMYTH, GEORGE W.**—A native of North Carolina; came to Texas during Colonial times, and was Land Commissioner in Jasper county; was in the Convention in 1836; in 1837, President of the Board of Land Commissioners of Jasper county; 1845, in Annexation Convention; 1848-1852, Commissioner of General Land Office; 1853-55, in United States Congress; in 1866 a member of the Reconstruction Convention, and died in Austin during the session.

**SOMERVELL, ALEXANDER.**—Came to Texas in 1833, and in company with James F. Perry opened a store in San Felipe. At the organization of the army at Gonzales in 1836, he was elected Major in Burleson's regiment, and when the re-organization took place, on the Brazos, he became Lieutenant Colonel, and commanded the right wing of the regiment at San Jacinto. He was, for a time, Acting Secretary of War in Burnet's Cabinet, and afterwards Senator in the Texas Congress. In 1841, he was elected Brigadier General of the militia; and the next year, commanded an expedition ordered to the Rio Grande by General Houston. After his return from the West, he was appointed Collector of Customs at Saluria, and held that position until annexation, when he was re-appointed to the same office, and held it until his death, in 1854. No satisfactory statement of the manner of his death has ever been given to the public. He started from Lavaca to Saluria, in a small boat, carrying a considerable amount of money. When found, the boat was bottom side up, and General Somervell was lashed to the timbers. Whether he was killed for money, which was never found, or the boat capsized, will probably never be known.

**STAFF, DARWIN M.**—A native of Kentucky; came to Texas in 1830; joined the army in 1835; was in the State Legislature in 1850-54; in 1856-1864, Collector of Customs at Indianola; in Secession Convention in 1861, and died in Victoria, in 1875.

**STERNE, ADOLFUS.**—A native of Germany; settled in East Texas in 1826; was an active patriot during the Revolutionary period, and after annexation, served in the Legislature; died in New Orleans, in 1852.

**STEWART, DR. C. B.**—Came from South Carolina to Texas in 1820; was Secretary of the Convention in 1835, and a member of the Convention in 1836; was in the Legislature in 1850-51, and again in 1875. Resides in Montgomery county.



THE CAPITOL AT AUSTIN IN 1870.



**SUTHERLAND, GEORGE.**—Came from North Alabama to Texas in 1830, and settled on the plantation on which he died, in 1855, in Jackeon county. He was in the Convention in 1833; had a horse killed under him at San Jacinto, April 20th, 1836; was a member of the Second Congress of the Republic.

**SWISHER, JAMES G.**—Immigrated to Texas during the Colonial period and settled in Washington county; was Captain of a company at the taking of San Antonio, in 1835, and a member of the Convention in 1836. After annexation he removed to Austin, where he died in 1862. Mrs. Swisher lived until 1875.

**TARRANT, E. H.**—Was born in North Carolina, in the year 1800; fought in the battle of New Orleans; came to Texas in 1835; served successively in the Congress of the Republic and in the army. He was in command on the Northern frontier, and was in the battle in which John B. Benton was killed, in 1841. He was a member of the Annexation-Convention, and afterwards in the State Legislature. He died in Ellis county in 1858.

**TEEL, HENRY.**—A Captain at San Jacinto; was sent as one of the Commissioners with Santa Anna's order to Filisola; was imprisoned at Matamoras; he made his escape, and while with the army camped on the Lavaca river in the fall of 1837, was shot while asleep in his tent. The murderer was a man by the name of Shultz, who, though not suspected at the time, was afterwards tried in Galveston for another murder, and confessed to the killing of Teel. Shultz had formerly belonged to the Murrell band in Mississippi.

**TERAN, J. MIER Y.**—A violent Centralist of Mexico, who was, in 1830, commander of the Eastern internal provinces. He visited Texas in 1831, and established the posts of Teran, on the Neches, and Anahuac, on Galveston bay. It was his intention to bring Texas into complete subjection to the Centralist party, and he sent garrisons to our principal posts. On the triumph of the Liberal party in 1832, Teran killed himself rather than fall into the hands of the Republicans.

**THROCKMORTON, J. W.**—Was born in Tennessee in 1825; immigrated with his father's family to Texas in 1841, and settled in Collin county. (His father, Dr. William E. Throckmorton, for whom Throckmorton county was named, died in Collin county, in 1842). J. W. Throckmorton was in the Legislature from 1851 to 1856, when he was elected to the Senate, and remained in that body until 1861; was in the Secession Convention, and one of the seven who voted against secession. He gave his *No!* with an emphasis. This was hissed in the gallery, when he exclaimed: "When the rabble hiss, patriots may tremble!" After the adjournment of the Convention, he raised a company and entered the Confederate service, first in Young's, and afterwards in B. Warren Stone's regiment, of which he became Major. He was with M'Culloch at the battle of Elk Horn, and

afterwards in the army of Dick Taylor. He was again elected to the Senate in 1863. In 1864, Governor Murrah commissioned him as a Brigadier-General, and assigned him to the command of the Northern frontier, with headquarters at Decatur, Wise county. Early in 1865, General E. Kirby Smith appointed him general Indian Agent, with special authority to treat with the wild Indians. After consulting with Generals M'Culloch at Bonham, Maxey at Fort Towson, and Cooper at Fort Washita, he, in May, collected at the latter post, large numbers of chiefs and warriors of the Choctaws, Cherokees, Seminoles, Creeks, and Osages, of the more friendly tribes, and representatives of various bands of Comanches, Cheyennes, Caddoes, Arapahoes, Lipans and Kickapoos, and a few Sioux. He made a treaty very advantageous to Texas; but when he returned General Lee had surrendered, and the Confederate armies were on the point of disbanding. He was elected to the first Reconstruction Convention in 1866, and called to preside over that body. At the ensuing popular election, he was elected Governor of the State. After filling the gubernatorial chair for a little over a year, General Sheridan, then in command at New Orleans, which included Texas, pronounced him "an impediment to reconstruction," and removed him from office. His political disabilities having been removed, in 1874 he was elected to Congress, and re-elected in 1876. In 1878, he was a prominent candidate before the Democratic State Convention, for the office of Governor, but failed to receive the nomination. He resides in McKinney.

**TOLEDO, DON ALVAREZ.**—A Cuban patriot of splendid abilities; joined Morelos in his attempt to revolutionize Mexico, and when that effort failed, he, in 1813, appeared at San Antonio, and was elected commander of the Republicans then in possession of the city. He displayed wonderful energy in organizing his forces, and preparing to defeat the Royalist army approaching under Arredondo. The treachery of some of the Republican officers caused his defeat, and he fled to the United States; and was indicted for attempting to get up another expedition against Mexico. He and Mina next formed a plan for the conquest of Florida. Here he was again thwarted; and his next move was to visit New York, for an interview with Aaron Burr, in hopes of reviving the project once entertained by that gentleman. Burr was without means or influence; and Toledo finally made his submission to the king of Spain, and re-entered the service of that sovereign.

**TORRY FAMILY.**—During Houston's first Presidential term, the Torry brothers established a trading post at the old Waco village, on the Brazos river. In 1840, the trading-house was removed to the neighborhood of Comanche Peak, about one hundred miles above Waco. In 1843, David Torry was an Indian agent, and died while at Bird's Fort, on the Trinity, negotiating a treaty. David S. Torry was killed by the Apaches, in 1850. John S. Torry, another brother, lives in New Braunfels, where he established a cloth factory.



**TRAVIS, WILLIAM B.**—The hero of the Alamo; was a native of North Carolina, but was raised in Alabama. In early life he taught school, and studied law. He married one of his pupils, and a year later, leaving his family in Alabama, he came to Texas. He located in Anahuac, where Bradburn was then exercising his petty tyrannies. Commenting somewhat freely on the conduct of the commander, he was seized and confined a prisoner in the barracks, with others who had incurred the displeasure of the haughty officer. After his release, he removed to San Felipe, the capital of the colony. He then had to compete, in his profession, with such men as R. M. Williamson, T. J. Chambers, Ira R. Lewis, William H. and P. C. Jack, Mosely Baker, Luke Lassussier, and others of less note. While Secretary of the Ayuntamiento, in 1834, he drew up an able petition, praying for the release of General Austin, who was then confined in the city of Mexico. In the spring of 1835, Santa Anna sent a small squad of troops, under a Captain Tenorio, to garrison the post at Anahuac. Travis, smarting under the wrongs he had suffered from Bradburn, raised a company, and captured, and disarmed Tenorio and his men. But this act was promptly disavowed by the authorities, and the men released, and their arms and papers restored. On the first of September, 1835, Ugartechea, then in command at San Antonio, ordered the arrest of some obnoxious Texans, Travis among them. Nothing daunted by this order, Travis hastened west and joined the army under Austin. In November, while out on a scout, he captured two hundred Mexican horses, about forty miles below the city. Among the very singular orders issued by General Houston, when elected Commander-in-Chief, was one sending Travis to San Felipe and Fannin to Velasco, on recruiting service. We say singular, because it would have been supposed that such soldiers would have been needed in the front.

If Travis went to San Felipe, he did not long remain there. Early in December, the Council elected Neill Lieutenant-Colonel and Travis Major of Artillery. Yoakum says that Governor Smith ordered Travis back to San Antonio, and when Neill, in obedience to Houston's order, left that city, Travis became commander. He found less than one hundred soldiers on duty, most of those who had assisted in the capture of the city having returned to their homes, or having joined the party of Grant and Johnson in their expedition to the Southwest. One of Travis' first calls was for five hundred recruits, and he requested that they should be Regulars, supplied with all necessary arms and clothing. The recruits never reported, but he made all practicable preparation to meet the foe, who was massing his forces on the Rio Grande for the Texas campaign.

Santa Anna's advance division reached the Alamo, in the neighborhood of the city, February 22d, 1836, when Travis, with his brave band of one hundred and forty-five men, retired to the fortress of the Alamo, which had been put in a state for defense. On the 24th he wrote as follows: "To the people of Texas and all Americans in the world—Fellow citizens and compatriots: I am besieged by a thousand or more Mexicans, under Santa Anna. I have sustained a continual bombardment and cannonade for twenty-four hours, and have not lost a man. The enemy have demanded 'a surrender

at discretion,' or that the garrison will be put to the sword when taken. I have answered the summons with a cannon-shot, and our flag still waves proudly from the walls. *I shall never surrender or retreat.* Then I call upon you, in the name of liberty, patriotism, and everything dear to the American character, to come to our aid with dispatch. The enemy are receiving reinforcements daily, and will doubtless in a few days be increased to three or four thousand. Though this call may be neglected, I am determined to sustain myself as long as possible, and die like a soldier who never forgets what is due to his own honor and that of his country. *Victory or death!*" In a postscript he added: "The Lord is on our side. When the enemy appeared in sight, we had not three bushels of corn. We have since found in deserted houses eighty or ninety bushels, and got into the walls twenty or thirty beeves."

On the 3d of March, he wrote again to the Convention at Washington: "I am still here, in fine spirits, and well to do. With one hundred and forty-five men, I have held the place against a force variously estimated from 1,500 to 6,000; and I shall continue to hold it until I get relief from my countrymen, or I will perish in its defense. We have had a shower of bombs and cannon-balls continually falling among us the whole time; yet none of us have fallen. We have been miraculously preserved. \* \* \* Again, I feel confident that the determined spirit and desperate courage heretofore exhibited by my men will not fail them in the last struggle; and although they may be sacrificed to the vengeance of a Gothic enemy, the victory will cost that enemy so dear that it will be worse than a defeat. \* \* \* A blood-red banner waves from the church in Bexar, and in the camp above us, in token that the war is one of vengeance against rebels. \* \* \* These threats have had no influence on my men, but to make all fight with desperation and with that high-souled courage which characterizes the patriot who is willing to die in defense of his country's liberty and his own honor. God and Texas! Victory or death!!"

In a private note to a friend, Travis adds: "Take care of my little boy. If the country should be saved, I may make him a splendid fortune; but if the country should be lost, and I should perish, he will have nothing but the proud recollection that he is the son of a man who died for his country."

Three days after these last letters were sent off, the final grand assault of the enemy was ordered, and the Alamo fell. According to the most reliable reports we have of the final struggle, Travis was in command of a gun on the south wall, and fell early in the action. Kennedy says: "Travis received a shot and fell as he stood on the walls, cheering his men. When he dropped, a Mexican officer reached forward to dispatch him. Summoning up his powers for a final effort, Travis met his assailant with a thrust of his sword, and both expired together." So perished WILLIAM BARRETT TRAVIS, the hero of the Alamo. He was in his twenty-eighth year. In person, he was about six feet high, weighed 170 pounds, light hair, blue eyes, with reddish beard and whiskers, fair complexion, round features, well proportioned, fine looking figure. His son, Charles, died in 1870. A daughter, Mrs. Grissett, lives in Washington county.

**TURNER, AMASA.**—A native of Massachusetts; born in 1800; came to Texas in 1835, and settled in Bastrop; was the first to receive a Captain's commission from General Houston, after his appointment as commander of the army in 1835; went to Alabama and enlisted a company of regulars to serve in the Texas army during the war; reached Texas and reported to Houston February 27th, 1836; commanded his company at San Jacinto. After the battle, was for a time commander of the post of Galveston. While at Velasco on business connected with his command, he thwarted the attempt to arrest President Burnet and overthrow the civil government. During the Republic, Colonel Turner resided at Galveston, having been one of the first to settle upon the island; after annexation, opened a cotton plantation in Lavaca county; served in the Legislature in 1850 and 1851, and in the Senate in 1852-53. During the civil war, was Provost-Marshal of Lavaca county; at the close of the war removed to the town of Gonzales, where he died, July 21st, 1877.

**VANZANDT, ISAAC.**—Was a member of the House of Representatives of the Fifth Congress; Minister to the United States in 1842; in 1847 was a prominent candidate for Governor, but during the canvass died of the yellow fever in Houston.

**WALKER, SAMUEL H.**—Was one of the Mier prisoners; wounded when they overpowered the guard at Salado; wounded again in 1844, while in Hays' Ranging company, in a fight with the Indians; was one of the first Texas Captains to join Taylor's army on the Rio Grande, and appointed Captain of a scouting and spy company. In a few weeks, in this daring service, he lost one-half of his men. He was first a Captain and then a Lieutenant-Colonel of a newly-formed regiment of dragoons; distinguished himself at the battle of Monterey, and was killed at the battle of Humantla, in 1847. His body, with that of Captain Gillespie, was brought back to Texas and interred at San Antonio.

**WALLER, EDWIN.**—Came from Virginia to Texas in 1831; was slightly wounded in the battle of Velasco, in 1832; in 1833, he was Alcalde at Brazoria; 1835, in the Consultation; 1836, in the Convention at Washington; 1838-39, Commissioner to lay out the new city of Austin and sell the lots; for a time filled the office of Postmaster-General. After annexation, he was for twelve years Chief Justice of Austin county, and represented that county in the Secession Convention in 1861. In 1873, he was President of the Texas Veteran Association; lives in Waller county.

**WARD, THOMAS WILLIAM.**—A native of Ireland; came to Texas in 1835 with the New Orleans Grays; at the taking of San Antonio, was Captain of Artillery, and lost a leg; he subsequently lost an arm by the accidental discharge of a gun. A wooden leg gave him the name of "Peg-leg" Ward. In 1840, he was Mayor of Austin; 1841-48, Commissioner of General Land Office; 1853, American Consul at Panama; 1867, Collector of Customs at Corpus Christi; was defeated for the office of Land Commissioner in 1869; and died in Austin in 1872.

**WATROUS, JOHN C.**—Was a native of Shelby county, Alabama, and Attorney-General under President Lamar. After annexation, he was appointed United States District Judge, and held the office until he was stricken with paralysis in 1869; he died in 1874.

**WEBB, JAMES.**—Came from Florida to Texas; was Secretary of State under Lamar; and after annexation, District Judge; he died in 1856.

**WHARTON, WILLIAM H.**—A native of Virginia; came from Nashville, Tennessee, to Texas, in feeble health, in 1829. His health improved and he commenced the practice of law; married the daughter of Jared E. Groce, one of his first clients; was President of the Convention in 1833; in 1835, was with the army at San Antonio; but was sent by the Consultation, as one of the Commissioners to the United States; 1836-37, Minister to the United States; on his voyage back, was captured on the Gulf and imprisoned in Matamoras; made his escape, and represented Brazoria county in the Senate in 1838-39. While mounting his horse at Mr. L. Groce's, was mortally wounded by the accidental discharge of his pistol. This was in March, 1839.

**WHARTON, JOHN A.**—Brother of the above; was in the Consultation in 1835; Adjutant on Houston's staff at San Jacinto, and afterwards Secretary of the Navy; member of Congress from Brazoria in 1838, and died the same year. In a eulogy pronounced by President Burnet, he said. "A nobler spirit than John A. Wharton's does not adorn the annals of Texas."

**WHITE, S. ADDISON.**—Found his first employment in Texas as an overseer on the plantation of Judge Waller, and while so employed, found time to read law; was in the Congress of the Republic, and after annexation, served in the State Legislature. In 1865 he was appointed District Judge under the Provisional Government. He, for many years, conducted a newspaper in Victoria. He died in Indianola, in 1869.

**WILBARGER FAMILY.**—Came from Kentucky to Texas in 1830, and settled on a creek that bears their name, in Bastrop county. In 1833, Josiah Wilbarger and two companions, while out hunting, were attacked by Indians. One was instantly killed; young Hornsby escaped on a fleet horse to Bastrop; Wilbarger was scalped and left for dead. He had sufficient life to crawl to a water-hole, where his neighbors found him the next day, still living. He survived twelve years, and married, but finally died from the effects of the wound. His brother Matthias, Surveyor of Milam Land District, died of the small-pox in Georgetown, in 1852.

**WILLIAMS AUGUSTUS W.**—Brought a company to Texas in 1842; represented Fayette county in the Ninth Congress; in a duel, growing out of a political canvass, just before the extra session of Congress, he killed Mr. Gaudinier, the sheriff of Fayette county. Mr. Williams was a member of the Annexation Convention, after which he removed to Brownsville, where he died in 1847.

**WILLIAMS, ROBERT H.**—Came from North Alabama to Texas in 1830, and settled on a plantation in Matagorda county; lost an eye in the battle of Velasco in 1833; is still living (1878).

**WILLIAMS, SAMUEL M.**—Was a native of Baltimore; while young, spent several years in Mexico, where he acquired a thorough knowledge of the language. He met in Mexico Colonel Jared E. Groce, who invited him to Texas. He arrived at the mouth of the Colorado in 1822, in the same vessel with Jonathan C. Peyton, Mrs. Eberle, Messrs. Clopton, Clare and other colonists. At the opening of the Land Office in San Felipe, in 1824, Mr. Williams became the Secretary, and he kept the records of the Land Office for Austin's colony during the whole colonial period. In reference to these books, Judge Burnet, who had frequent occasions to consult them, says: "There cannot be found so nice, clear, correct and legible a volume of manuscript as that which contains the land titles of Austin's colony, the work of his pen." Judge James H. Bell says also: "Williams was, of all men, best qualified for this position. His labors in the extension of titles to lands, and in a variety of services, were immense, and justly entitle him to honorable remembrance."

He formed a partnership with Thomas F. M'Kinney, and during the financial difficulties of the Revolutionary period the firm of M'Kinney & Williams transacted nearly all the business of the Government, and frequently advanced money to meet the necessities of the Public Treasury. This firm, in 1837, transferred their business from the mouth of the Brazos to Galveston, and were the first to open a regular commercial business on the island.

On the 30th of April, 1835, Mr. Williams obtained from the Legislature of Coahuila a charter for a bank, in the Department of the Brazos; the charter to run twenty years. By an Act of Congress, of February 3d, 1841, the Congress of Texas fully recognized the validity of Williams' bank charter, and authorized the firm of M'Kinney & Williams to issue \$30,000 in paper, to circulate as money. Mr. Williams opened his bank in Galveston, in 1846. He was the first and only President of "The Commercial and Agricultural Bank of Galveston." After his death, which occurred in 1858, the affairs of the bank went, we believe, into liquidation.

**WILLIAMSON, ROBERT M.** (*Three-legged Willie*).—A native of Georgia; in early life afflicted with a white swelling, which stiffened one of his knees; came to Texas in 1827, and located at San Felipe in the practice of law; was Alcade in 1834; in 1835 commanded a company in a campaign against the Indians, and was one of the Committee of Safety at Bastrop, where he then lived; was in the General Consultation the same year. In 1836, he was District Judge; in 1840, entered the Texas Congress and was re-elected to represent Washington county until annexation; and for several years represented the same county in the State Senate after annexation.

Of all the popular leaders during the period of the Texas Revolution, none wielded a more potential influence than R. M. Williamson. He deserves a more extended notice, and we copy some of the closing paragraphs of a sketch of his life which appeared in the Texas Almanac for 1861:

"Although his opportunities for acquiring wealth and independence were unequalled by those of any other man, yet was he of such generous and improvident nature, that he was often embarrassed in his pecuniary affairs. Like Mr. Jefferson, Mr. Monroe, and many other greater men, he not unfrequently felt the iron pressure of '*Res angusta domi.*'

"It may be stated as creditable to his integrity, that in the midst of corruption and speculation he lived and died in poverty.

"In 1857, he had a severe attack of sickness, which seriously affected his intellect. The death of his wife, a daughter of Colonel Edwards, of Wharton county, occurred shortly afterwards. From these combined shocks, his mind never entirely recovered until the time of his death, which transpired peacefully and calmly on the 22d December, 1859, in Wharton county.

"We have thus traced rapidly and imperfectly a few of the leading events in the life of this distinguished patriot. It has been done under unfavorable circumstances, and without pretense to absolute certainty as to dates, etc. Yet in no instance have the value of his services been magnified knowingly. His character deserves a higher and more extended notice.

"He was in many respects a remarkable man. He possessed a wonderful hold upon the affections of the masses, over whose passions and sympathies his control was unbounded. The reckless daring of his own character contributed largely to this influence. This, aided by a generous, unselfish spirit, and captivating manners, made him, wherever known, the idol of the people.

"Inaccessible to threats or bribes, he was an upright and honest judge, who unflinchingly administered the law. In Congress and the Legislature he had no self-h purpose to subserve; he was therefore the able and watchful guardian of the people's rights.

"His intercourse with his brethren of the bar was marked with great courtesy. Towards the younger members, he ever extended a helping hand, and breathed a kind word of encouragement. The writer is but one of hundreds who remember gratefully the kindness extended to them in days long past, by Judge Williamson.

"The eloquence of Judge Williamson more nearly resembled that of John Randolph than of any other historical character.

"When fully aroused, there was a fire and vigor in his speech that surpass all description. True, there was a quaintness and eccentricity, but it was all stamped with the originality and power of genius.

"He was not only a wit of the first class, but a humorist also; and like all great humorists, he bore a burden of melancholy which was only brightened by these sudden sallies, as the storm clouds are illumined by the sheet-lightning. In an appeal to the people, and as an advocate before a jury, he was unsurpassed.

"We are of those who believe that '*life is not without its purposes.*' For example, admonition, encouragement, or reproof, the lives of our predecessors are most eloquent. We do not present the subject of this sketch as free from blemish. Far from it—he was mortal and therefore fallible. He had one fault, and a most grievous one it was. One of '*the fears of the brave and follies of the wise.*' This might well and properly be



**RUINS OF LAFITTE'S FORT.**





ascribed to the 'temper of the times' in which a large portion of his life was spent—the wild and disorderly state of society then existing.

"The fate of our distinguished men have been most deplorable—Collingsworth, Grayson, Rusk and Jones died by their own hands. May I supplicate for Robert M. Williamson (who, if he was a great sinner, was also a great sufferer) the kind charity of all Christians, and close this article by the following lines from the *Light-House*. which no voice sang so sweetly as his own:

"In life's closing hour when the trembling soul flies,  
And death stills the heart's last emotion,  
Oh! then may the seraph of mercy arise,  
Like a star on eternity's ocean."

**WILSON, JAMES C.**—Was a native of England; came to Texas in 1837; was one of the Mier prisoners, in 1842–43, refused to claim British protection, even to secure his liberation; said he was a *Texan*; finally made his escape. In 1844, was Clerk of the District Court of Brazoria county; in 1856, Commissioner of the Court of Claims; was afterwards sent to the Senate from the Matagorda District. At the end of his term, renounced politics and entered the itinerant ministry in the Methodist Episcopal Church, South; died at Gonzales in 1861.

**WILSON, ROBERT, (*Honest Bob*).**—Came to Texas in 1828; was at the capture of San Antonio, in 1835; represented Harris county two terms in the Senate of the Republic, and died in Houston, in 1856.

**WOOD, GEORGE T.**—Was a native of Georgia; came to Texas in 1836; was for several terms a member of the Texas Congress, and elected Brigadier General of the militia; in 1846, raised a regiment for the Mexican War, and served with distinction; after his term expired, he returned home and was elected to the State Senate. Was elected Governor in 1847, and at the close of his term, retired to private life. Died in Panola county, in 1856.

**YOAKUM, HENDERSON**—The historian of Texas, was a native of Tennessee; graduated at West Point in 1832; resigned his commission and studied law; served one term in the State Senate of Tennessee; came to Texas in 1845; was in the Mexican war as a lieutenant. For a number of years he was engaged in preparing a most elaborate history of Texas, which was published in two large volumes, by Redfield, in 1856. He was a resident of Huntsville, and trustee of both the colleges located at that place. He died while on a visit to Houston, in 1856.

**YOUNG, WILLIAM C.**—Was a member of the Annexation Convention in 1845; in 1861, raised a company and captured a number of the United States forts in the Indian Territory. He and his brother, James Young, were way-laid and shot in 1862.

**ZAPATA, ANTONIO**—A Mexican Republican patriot in Jordan's expedition.

He was ever faithful to Republican principles, and was especially obnoxious to the Centralist party, by whom he was finally captured, beheaded, and his head stuck on a pole near the old Stone Rancho on the Rio Grande.

ZAVALLA, LORENZO DE—Vice-President of Texas during the government *ad interim*; was a native of Merida, Yucatan; born in 1781. His autobiography contains the following sketch. It was written in answer to a publication, charging him with being “a vagabond, libertine, and a wicked man.” This charge was brought by Tornel, Santa Anna’s Minister of War, in justification of the order for his arrest:

“I am now forty-one years old. I was at school till I was nineteen. Afterward I was elected Secretary of the City Council of Merida, which post I filled until 1812, 1813, and until July, 1814, when I was imprisoned at San Juan de Ulloa, as a Liberal, till 1817. During the latter part of this year and the following ones of 1818 and 1819, I was a physician in Merida, and maintained my good reputation until I was elected, in 1820 and 1821, Deputy to the Cortes of Spain. There I did what I could, and was the colleague of Pedraza. In February, 1822, I was elected Deputy to the Congress of Mexico, and continued in that post during 1823 and 1824; and afterward Senator, in 1825 and 1826. In March, 1827, I was Governor of the State of Mexico till 1830, when the revolution of Jalapa forced me to leave the Republic. In 1829, I was also Minister of Finance till October. I have also held other positions of trust, as Secretary of the Provincial Assembly of Yucatan, in 1820, before my election as Deputy; twice a member of the Junta of Electoral Censors of Mexico; and, lastly, I might have placed myself at the head of the party which to-day rules Mexico, and I would not.

“Is a man, I would ask, who has invited these trusts from his fellow citizens, a vagrant and a wicked man? I have been President of the General Congress, and my name stands first in the Constitution of Mexico. I have been President of the Senate, and to-day I am a colonist of the Province of Texas.”

In 1833, he was again elected to Congress, and also Governor of the State of Mexico—the House of Deputies passing, by a unanimous vote, a resolution permitting him to hold both offices. He was appointed Minister to France in 1834, which post he resigned in 1835, to carry out his long-cherished desire to establish a home in Texas.

In Santa Anna’s letter to Cos, ordering the arrest of Zavalla, he writes: “I give this supreme order, requiring you to provide and bring into action all your ingenuity and activity in arranging energetic plans for success in the apprehension of Lorenzo Zavalla, which person, in the actual circumstances of Texas, must be very pernicious. Spare no means to secure his person and place it at the discretion of the supreme government.”

The Texans hailed with joy the arrival of such a distinguished representative of Mexican Republicanism, and his advice was eagerly sought. In an address at a public meeting at Harrisburg he thus explains his views: “That Coahuila and Texas form a State of the Republic, and as one part of it is occupied by an invading force, the free part of it should proceed to organize a power which should restore harmony and establish uniformity in all

branches of the public administration, which would be a rallying point for citizens whose hearts now tremble for liberty. But as this power can only be organized by means of a Convention which should represent the free will of the citizens of Texas, it is my opinion that this step should be taken, and I suggest the 15th of October as a time sufficient to allow all the departments to send their representatives." Zavalla was one of the delegates from Harris county in the Consultation, in 1835, and in the Convention the following year. At the organization of the government *ad interim*, he was elected Vice-President. When the treaty was entered into with Santa Anna, at Velasco, it was expected Colonel Zavalla would go as one of the Texas representatives to Mexico, to conclude the final arrangements for peace between the two countries, but the forcible detention of Santa Anna in Texas interfered with the arrangement, and Zavalla, in feeble health, retired to his home near Lynchburg, where he died, November 15th, 1836.



PART IX.

---

THE COUNTIES OF TEXAS.

Their History, Topography &c.



## COUNTIES OF TEXAS.

---

1. **ANDERSON**—lies in latitude 32, between the Trinity and Neches rivers. Bounded on the north by Henderson, east by Cherokee, south by Houston, and west by Freestone. It was originally in Burnet's colony, but belonged to Houston county until 1846, when it was formed into a separate county and named for Vice-President Kenneth L. Anderson. Fort Houston, two miles southwest of Palestine, the county-seat, was occupied as a military post, by Captain Jewell's company, in 1835. Palestine is a thriving city, situated on the International railroad, 152 miles from Houston; 91 miles from Hearne, and 81 from Longview. In 1870 the county had a population of 9,229; assessed value of property in 1876, \$2,760,000. The soil is of four kinds: the first a light, sandy soil, easy of cultivation; the second a red, sandy land, very strong and enduring; the third a dark grey and covered with hickory, oak, etc; the fourth is creek and river bottom, exceedingly rich. The county is well-watered. Extensive pine forests are found in the eastern part, while oaks of different varieties, hickory, pecan, walnut, ash, elm, etc., may be found in other portions. All the ordinary products of the farm, garden and nursery are produced in the greatest abundance. A mineral ridge runs through the center of the county, in which an abundance of iron ore may be found. Two furnaces were in successful operation during the Civil War.

2. **ANGELINA**.—Lies between the Neches and Angelina rivers, and derives its name from the latter. Bounded on the north by Cherokee and Nacogdoches, east by Nacogdoches and San Augustine, south by Tyler, and west by Trinity and Houston. Homer is the county seat. This county lies on the route of travel of Governor Cordero, in 1806. In 1890, Gen. Mier y Teran visited Texas and laid out a town named for himself, on the Neches river, to which four leagues of land were given. He left Col. Bean in command. It was under the jurisdiction of Nacogdoches until 1846, when the county was created. The soil in the bottoms is black, sandy and very productive. A considerable portion of the uplands is also rich. The county is heavily timbered with pine, oak, beach, magnolia, hickory, sugar maple, ash, mulberry, etc. It is on the line of the E. & W. N. G. Road. Homer is 160 miles from Houston and 126 from Shreveport. Population in 1870, 3,985; assessed value of property in 1876, \$359,318.

3. **ARANSAS**.—A sparsely populated county lying on the Gulf of Mexico. Bounded north by Refugio, east by Espiritu Santo Bay, south

by the Gulf of Mexico, and west by San Patricio. It derives its name from the river of the same name. It is said that Aranzas is one of the names of a palace of the King of Spain. Rockport, the county seat, was selected as a shipping point for cattle and for putting up beef in 1866. The county was created in 1871.

4. **ATASCOSA.**—Was created from Bexar in 1856; named for the Atascosa creek. Pleasanton is the county seat, thirty miles south of San Antonio. Bounded on the north by Bexar, east by Wilson and Karnes, south by Live Oak and M'Mullen, and west by Frio and Medina. The Navarros, Salinas and others, established stock ranches in this county early in the present century, but during the revolution these ranches were broken up, and no permanent settlements were made until about 1853. It is mostly prairie, and admirably, adapted to stock-raising, especially hogs and sheep. A considerable portion of the land is suitable for cultivation, and there are fine farms on the Atascosa, the Borego, the San Miguel, and other creeks. In 1870 the population was 2,915; assessed value of property in 1876, \$825,428.

5. **AUSTIN.**—Lies on the west side of the Brazos river, about fifty miles from the city of Houston. It is bounded on the north by Washington, east by Waller, south by Fort Bend, and west by Colorado and Fayette. It was in the heart of Austin's first colony, and settled in 1822, by some of the first of his colonists. Among the early settlers were Wm. Robbins, Wm. Prather, George and Wm. Huff, John M'Farland, Wm. Petus, Wiley Martin, the Allcorns, Shipmans, Bordens, James Cochran, etc. The town of San Felipe was laid out in 1824 by Baron DeBastrop, and received four leagues of land. It was the capital of the colony until the period of the revolution in Texas; the headquarters of the land business and the residence of the land commissioner and Samuel M. Williams, the clerk. It was the first Alcalde's district in the colony. In 1822 Josiah H. Bell was Alcalde; he was succeeded in 1829 by Thomas Barnet and Thomas M. Duke; 1831, F. W. Johnson; 1832, Horatio Chriesman; 1833, Luke Lassasier; 1834, Robert M. Williamson.

In 1834, James B. Miller was political chief of the department of the Brazos. During this year occurred the first public execution in the colony: a man by the name of Clayton was hung in San Felipe for the murder of Abner Kuykendall. The Labor settlement was twelve miles above the town. There lived the Castleman family and others. It was on a creek then called Palmetto Creek; but Mr. Cummings built a mill near where Milheim now stands, and the name of the stream was changed to Mill Creek.

The Convention met in San Felipe, in 1833, and the General Consultation in 1835. On the 30th of March, 1836, the town was burned by the retreating Texas army under Houston, said to have been done by a misapprehension of the general's orders. After the revolution, Thomas Barnet was the first chief justice of the county. He was succeeded by Edwin Waller, who held the office for many years. In 1842, the county seat was removed to Bellville, named for Thomas Bell, an old settler. The county was named for Stephen F. Austin.





**COURT HOUSE. PARIS.**



During the colonial period a number of enterprising Germans settled in the county, and a considerable portion of the inhabitants speak that language. The assessed value of property in 1876 was \$2,362,385.

6. **BANDERA**.—Bandera, the county seat is on the Medina River, thirty-five miles northwest of San Antonio. Bounded on the north by Kerr, east by Kendall and Bexar, south by Medina and Uvalde, and west by Edwards. It derives its name from a mountain pass. A large Apache village formerly occupied the site of the present town of Bandera. The county has several creeks: Pipe, Red Bluff, Winding's, etc.; is pretty well timbered, having some fine cedar brakes, and plenty of building stone. Assessed value of property in 1876, \$236,536. It is a fine county for sheep.

7. **BASTROP**.—Lies on both sides of the Colorado River. Bounded on the north by Travis, east by Lee, south by Fayette, and west by Caldwell. A settlement, near the present town of Bastrop, was formed in 1828, and then called Mina, from General Xavier Mina. The town of Bastrop was laid out by Stephen F. Austin in 1830, and named in honor of Baron de Bastrop. Four leagues of valuable land was assigned to the town tract. The land title issued June 8th, 1832. Samuel Wolfenbarger was first Alcalde. In 1835, this municipality was the first to organize a committee of safety. Andrew Rabb was first chief justice after the revolution. The valley lands are exceedingly fertile, and most of the uplands are susceptible of cultivation. McDade, on the Western Branch road, is 128 miles from Houston and 87 from Austin. Elgin and Paige are railroad depots on the Western Branch road. In 1870 the population of the county was 12,200. Assessed value of property in 1876, \$2,514,479. Few counties are superior to this in the State. The land is rich and the population permanent and prosperous.

8. **BEE**.—Situated in the stock-raising portion of the Southwest. Created in 1857; named in honor of Bernard E. Bee, Sr.; Beeville is the county seat. It is bounded on the north by Karnes, east by Goliad, south by Refugio, and west by Live Oak. Its water courses are the Mission and Aransas rivers, and a number of smaller creeks. Population in 1870, 1,082; assessed value of property in 1876, \$625,922. Its principal trading point is Corpus Christi, 50 miles distant. The streams are the Aransas, the Blanco, the Medio, the Papelota, and the Chiltepin, all small and with very little timber. Bee is almost exclusively a stock-raising county, and the business of nearly all is to raise cattle and sheep. These do very well, and are raised at scarcely any expense.

9. **BELL**.—Lies in the very heart of the State; mostly rolling prairies; soil very productive; its staples are wheat, corn, cotton, etc. Bounded on the north by Coryell and McLennan, east by Falls, south by Milam and Williamson, and west by Burnet and Lampasas. Was created in 1850, and named for P. Hansborough Bell. Belton is the county seat. The county is well watered. The Leon, Lampasas and Nolan's Creek, unite near Belton and form Little river. Eleven miles from Belton is the Salado spring, one of the

boldest and most remarkable in Texas. This county was included in Robertson's colony, and attempts were made in 1834-5 to form settlements, by the families of Read, Fulcher, Early, Childress, and others; but the Indians were troublesome, and the settlement was abandoned until 1844, when population began to flow into the country. Belton became the county seat in 1851. Population in 1870, 9,791; assessed value of property in 1876, \$3,102,800.

10. BEXAR—Is by far the wealthiest and most populous county in western Texas; bounded on the north by Kendall and Comal, east by Guadalupe and Wilson, south by Wilson and Atascosa, and west by Medina. San Antonio, the county seat, is in the valley of the river of the same name, a few miles below where the spring flows out from under the rocks, a full sized river, one of the most picturesque and beautiful in the world. Adventurers settled on this river about the year 1692. In 1730, sixteen families arrived in the neighborhood from the Canary Islands. The presidio of Bexar, named for the Duke of Bexar, then viceroy of Mexico, was created November 28, 1730. Among the objects of great curiosity in San Antonio are the old mission churches, founded in the early part of the last century, for the benefit of the Indians. The *Alamo*—Poplar church—was founded May 8th 1744; it was not long used as a church, but is famous in Texas history. It is in the heart of the city, on the east side of the river, and gives name to the plaza upon which it stands. *Concepcion* is two miles below the city, on the left bank of the river; celebrated as the point at which the first battle, of the Texas revolution was fought in 1835. It is in a tolerably good state of preservation, and religious worship is occasionally celebrated at its altar. *San Jose*, four miles below the city on the right bank of the river, was one of the grandest of all the mission structures in Texas. Though rapidly going to ruins, some of its splendid statuary is still visible in its walls and niches, though the arched roof and dome have fallen in. *San Juan*, is six miles below the city on the left bank of the river; it is in ruins. *La Espada* is on the west side of the river, nine miles below the city; portions of the walls are still standing. *San Fernandes*, was a parish church, built for the colonists from the Canary Islands, in 1732. It is on the Military plaza in the city, and was re-built in 1868, as a cathedral. The dome of the old church was left standing; and forms the sacristy of the new one.

In 1730, San Antonio became the capital of the province of Texas, and continued to be the principal city until the revolution of 1835. It is the centre of a large trade with Western Texas and Northern Mexico. In 1877 the city was connected by rail with the railway system of the State. And since that time, there has been a large increase in its business and population. In 1870 the population of the county was 16,053. In 1876, the population of the city was 17,314. Assessed value of property, about \$10,000,000. The city is the headquarters of the Fifth Military District, and the government has recently erected a building for the Quartermasters' Department at a cost of \$100,000. There is also an arsenal and some other public buildings.

The following shows the export business of San Antonio for the year ending June 1st, 1878: Hides, 2,902,766 pounds; wool, 1,950,856 pounds;

merchandise, 5,272,225 pounds; cotton, 1,495 bales; live stock, 268 cars; bones, 144 cars. From February 25th to July 25th, 1878—during the very dullest portion of the year—199 houses were built. San Antonio has a street railroad, water-works, and is lighted with gas.

11. **BLANCO.**—Created in 1858; named for one of its principal streams; settled in 1852. Bounded on the north by Llano and Burnet, east by Travis and Hays, south by Comal and Kendall, and west by Gillespie and Llano. This is a stock-raising prairie county, though there is some timber; and a great deal of rich, arable land. All the cereals do well. Its principal water courses are the Blanco and the Pierdinales rivers. Blanco, the county-seat, is sixty miles from San Antonio, forty from New Braunfels, and fifty from Austin. In 1870, the county had a population of 1,187. Assessed value of property about \$400,000.

12. **BOSQUE.**—Created in 1854; named from its principal river. Bounded on the north by Somervell, east by Hill, south by M'Lennan and Coryell, and west by Hamilton. Meridian is the county-seat. The valley lands of the Brazos river and the Bosque are very rich and productive; the uplands somewhat hilly, but fine for grazing purposes. Population in 1870, 4,981; assessed value of property in 1876, \$1,338,703.

13. **BOWIE.**—Named for James Bowie; was created in 1840. It is the extreme north-eastern county of the State; bounded on the north by the Indian Territory, east by the State of Arkansas, south by Cass county, and west by Red river. The trans-continental railway, commencing at Texarkana, traverses the entire length of the county. In 1870, the population was 4,684. In 1876, the assessed value of property was \$948,976. Boston is the county-seat. It is well watered by Red river on the north, and a fork of the same river running along on its southern boundary, as well as by a number of smaller streams tributary to these. The surface of this county is rolling; a large proportion of which is heavily timbered, chiefly with post oak. The soil, away from the bottoms, is of a sandy character, usual in post oak lands. In the bottoms it is the rich red land so well adapted to the cultivation of cotton. Pears, Peaches and other fruits are successfully cultivated, and the apple is found in great abundance.

14. **BRAZORIA.**—Lies on the Gulf of Mexico, and includes the coast on both sides of the Brazos and Bernard rivers, and Oyster Creek. Bounded on the north by Fort Bend, east by Harris, south by the Gulf, and west by Matagorda. It contains one of the richest bodies of land on the continent. Its staples are sugar—of which it produces more than all the other counties in the State—cotton, corn, tobacco, etc., etc. The Brazos is connected by a canal with Galveston bay, and a railroad fifty miles long connects Columbia with Houston. The county is about equally divided between timber and prairie, and is adapted to either agriculture or stock-raising. The county was settled in 1823 by Josiah H. Bell, Brit. Bailey, Joseph H. Polly, Primm, Bradleys, Amos and Daniel Rawls, Damon; and a little

later, by David Tilley, James and John T. Beard, Thomas Westall, T. J. Pilgrim, the Fenns, Shipmans, John D. Pitts, John Brown Austin, W. D. C. Hall, the Alsbury's, Millburn, Mrs. General Long, and Major Calvitt, etc., etc. John Austin settled at the town of Brazoria in 1828; the town was laid out in 1831, and about that time Mr. Perry, the brother-in-law of S. F. Austin, arrived in the county, and settled at Peach Point. They had for neighbors, the M'Neils, Millses, Hawkins, Munsons, etc. In 1831 there were about thirty houses in the town, three of them being of brick. On the first of May, 1832, Decree Number 196 created the municipality of Brazoria, extending four leagues above the mouth of Big Creek, and westward to the Trespelacios. First John Austin, and afterwards Edwin Waller were Alcaldes. In 1834 the name was changed to Columbia, but was the next year changed back to Brazoria. In 1836, first Velasco and afterwards Columbia, were occupied by President Burnet as the seat of government. The Constitutional Government of the Republic was inaugurated at the latter place. Brazoria was then the most wealthy and populous municipality in Texas, and the place of residence of a large number of the leading citizens of the Republic. Its population in 1870 was 7,527, a majority of whom were colored. Assessed value of property in 1876, \$1,964,778. Besides the Brazos and Bernard rivers, there is little living water, and on account of the brackish and unwholesome character of the water, cisterns are largely used. The surface is level, about one-half of it being covered with a heavy growth of, perhaps, the noblest live oaks in the whole Union. It is from these bottoms that the Navy of the United States is hereafter to derive its most valuable ship-building material, the value of which is incalculable. The soil, as may be supposed, is exceedingly rich, red and deep, yielding luxuriantly. Peaches, quinces, oranges, lemons, and similar fruits are cultivated. Upon the coast the health is good; higher up and along the bottoms, chills and fever are prevalent at certain seasons, but generally the people enjoy excellent health.

15. BRAZOS.—Named for the river of the same name. Bryan, on the Houston & Texas Central Railroad, one hundred miles from Houston, is the county-seat. Bounded north by Robertson and Madison, east by Grimes, south by Washington, and west by Burleson. It is in the heart of the cotton region; the land is exceedingly fertile, and being on the railroad, is rapidly filling up with an agricultural population. The Agricultural and Mechanical College of the State is located four miles south of Bryan. Population of the county in 1870, 9,205; assessed value of property in 1876, \$2,330,779; the county was created in 1841; surface undulating; about an equal portion of prairie and timber.

16. BROWN.—Named for Henry S. Brown; created in 1856. Bounded north by Callahan and Eastland, east by Comanche and Hamilton, south by Lampasas and San Saba, and west by Coleman. Brownwood, the county-seat, is one hundred and ten miles from Waco, one hundred and thirty from Fort Worth, one hundred and forty from Austin, and one hundred and sixty from Dallas. This is in the wheat and stock region; is well watered,

having the Colorado river on the south, and Pecan bayou, Jim Ned creek, and numerous smaller streams. The valley lands are rich. Portions of the county are hilly, but well set with grass. Bituminous coal is found in paying quantities. It is a newly settled county. The population in 1870 was only 544. In 1876, the assessed value of property was \$619,774.

17. **BURLESON.**—Created in 1846; named for Edward Burleson. Caldwell, the county-seat, is about twenty miles from Bryan, and thirty from Brenham. Bounded north by Milam, east by Brazos, south by Washington, and west by Lee. The southern portion of the county was in Austin's first colony; that portion above the old San Antonio road, in Robertson's. In 1825, the families of Pancas, Earlys, etc., settled on the old road. In 1830, the Thomsons, Porters, Scotts, Shaw, etc., became permanent settlers. The county, lying on the Brazos river, and the Yegua and Davidson's creeks, is well watered and timbered, and has an immense body of rich land. It is both an agricultural and stock-raising country, and produces sugar, cotton, and wheat. Population in 1870, 8,072; assessed value of property in 1876, \$934,782. Tenoxticlan, and old Mexican town, was in this county.

18. **BURNET.**—Created in 1852; named for David G. Burnet; Burnet the county seat. Bounded north by Lampasas, east by Williamson and Bell, south by Travis and Blanco, and west by Llano and San Saba. About one-fourth of the county, situated on the Colorado river and Hamilton and other creeks, is susceptible of cultivation; the hilly portions are well adapted to grazing purposes; and are well supplied with an abundance of mountain cedar and other timber. Population in 1870, 3,658; assessed value of property in 1876, \$1,114,577. The water is excellent for drinking purposes; and along the river there are points at which the most valuable water-power can be obtained for manufacturing purposes. The surface is rolling, often mountainous. About one-fourth of the county is timbered with live oak, post oak, elm and cedar. The soil is the common red prairie soil.

19. **CALDWELL.**—Created in 1848; named for Matthew Caldwell; Lockhart is the county seat, situated near the head of Plum creek, and is abundantly supplied with spring water. The country is gently undulating; soil generally rich; well watered and timbered. Lockhart is thirty miles from Austin; Luling, on the Sunset Route, is 155 miles from Houston and fifty miles from San Antonio. About seven miles from Luling are two mineral springs, Cardwell's and Burdits, to which invalids resort. The county is bounded north by Hays and Travis, east by Bastrop, south by Gonzales and west by Guadalupe. Population in 1870, 6,672; assessed value of property in 1877, \$1,528,007. The league of land upon which the county seat is located, was granted to Byrd Lockhart by Jose Antonio Navarro, in November, 1831. The surface of this county is undulating, about one-third covered with post oak, live oak and cedar. The soil is dark prairie loam, intermixed with sand. There is a great deal of prairie known as "hog wallow"—rich and waxy.

20. **CALHOUN.**—Created in 1846; named for John C. Calhoun; Indianola is the county seat. Bounded on the north by Victoria and Jackson, east by Matagorda, south by the Gulf of Mexico, and west by Aransas and Refugio. It was at Pass Cavallo, in this county, that La Salle landed in 1685. Settlements were made in the county as early as 1828. In 1835, Cox's Point, opposite to Lavaca on the bay, became a place of business. Linville, four miles above Lavaca, became a shipping point in 1839; and was burned by the Comanches in 1840; after which Lavaca became the principal port. Indianola was founded a few years later, and soon became the principal seaport. It has a railroad to Qqero, in Dewitt county. Population in 1870, 3,448; assessed value of property in 1876, \$542,372. It is surrounded east, south and west, by water. Green Lake lies within it. Powder Horn Bay and Chocolate Bayou penetrate into it on the south. The surface is a dead level, about one-fifth part being sprinkled with scrubby live oak. The soil is of flat, sandy earth, not very productive; but fine for grazing purposes.

21. **CALLAHAN.**—Created 1858; named for James M. Callahan; organized in 1877; Bell Plain is the county seat; bounded north by Shackelford, east by Eastland, south by Coleman and west by Taylor. The county is about equally divided between prairie and timber; is a fine grazing county, with a fair proportion of good arable land. It is situated upon the waters of the Clear Fork of Brazos, Hubbard's creek and Pecan bayou, west of Eastland and north of Brown and Coleman counties. The East and West Caddo Peaks, prominent land marks, are in the south-eastern corner of the county. The Clear Fork of Brazos flows through the north-western corner; Pecan bayou, Jim Ned creek and their tributaries, drain the south-western part of the county; and the two prongs of Hubbard's creek, with their branches, the balance. There is an abundance of good timber and pure water in all parts of the county, and the soil is rich, particularly in the valleys. Several good military roads traverse the county from east to west, and north and south.

22. **CAMERON.**—Named for Ewin Cameron; created in 1848; Brownville is the county seat. It is bounded north by Nueces, east by the Gulf of Mexico, south by the Rio Grande, separating it from Mexico, and west by Hidalgo. Brownsville is connected by a railroad with Brazos St. Jago. It is 160 miles from Corpus Christi; 300 from San Antonio, and 340 from Galveston, with which it has regular communication by steamers. Before the revolution, this territory belonged to the State of Tamaulipas, and Mexican stock ranches were established early in the present century. In 1820, Father Bolli, to avoid the raids of hostile parties, took a large stock of cattle to Padre Island. But the same year a severe storm swept over the island, destroying the stock, and also the village of Brazos St. Jago. Brownsville was settled by Americans in 1848. During the civil war, 1861-4, it was a place of considerable trade, until it was occupied by the Federal army under General Banks, in 1864. The establishment of a free belt on the Mexican side of the river has greatly impaired the commercial interests of



the city, and the frequent raids for cattle stealing have diminished the stock in the range. In 1870 the population of the county was 10,999; assessed value of property in 1876, \$1,610,562.

23. **CAMP.**—Named for J. L. Camp; Pittsburg is the county seat; created in 1874. It is the smallest county in the State, containing but one hundred and eighty-six square miles; bounded north by Titus and Morris, east by Morris, south by Upshur, west by Wood. It is a timber country; well watered, and possessing a rich soil. The Tyler and Clarksville railroad passes through the county. Assessed value of property in 1876, \$504,648.

24. **CASS.**—Created in 1846; named for Lewis Cass; Linden is the county seat; bounded north by Bowie, east by Arkansas, south by Marion, and west by Morris. It is one of the timber counties of North-east Texas; well watered, with a soil which produces fair average crops. The railroad from Marshall to Texarkana passes through the county; the depots are Atlanta, Queen City and Kildare. There are some interesting Indian mounds on the line of the East Line railroad. Population in 1870, 8,875; assessed value of property in 1876, \$1,429,162; produces the greatest abundance of peaches, apples, etc.

25. **CHAMBERS.**—Is one of the prairie coast counties; created in 1858; named for Thomas J. Chambers; Wallisville is the county seat. It was included in Vohelin's colonial grant. In 1830, Anahuac, on the bay, became the principal port of entry, and the headquarters of Col. Bradburn, the military commandant. It was also the headquarters of the Galveston Bay Company, which purchased Burnet's and Zavalla's grants. N. D. Labadie was surgeon to the Mexican soldiers and afterwards to the Texans. At that early period, James Morgan, J. C. Reed, Wilcox and others, had goods for sale. There were in 1831 about thirty American citizens. The lawyers, P. C. Jack, W. B. Travis, R. M. Williamson, Dr. Dunlap, Munroe Edwards, George M. Patrick, Samuel T. Allen and Taylor White lived on Turtle Bayou. About the first of May, 1832, a meeting was held (says Dr. Labadie in Almanac, 1859) at Captain Dorsatt's, at which it was resolved to resist the payment of duties. This was the first movement against the Mexican government in Texas. A military organization was effected; P. C. Jack elected Captain. Soon afterward, Jack, Travis, Munroe Edwards and Allen were arrested and imprisoned. The citizens of Austin's colony rallied for the deliverance of their fellow citizens from the military prison, and during the controversy, Bradburn was displaced by Piedras, and the prisoners released. On the 13th of June, a meeting was held at Turtle Bayou, at which the citizens pronounced in favor of the Constitution of 1824, and for Santa Anna, who was then the Republican leader. During the revolutionary period, Anahuac ceased to be a place of much importance. The county is bounded north by Liberty, east by Jefferson, south by Galveston and the Gulf of Mexico, and west by Harris. Population in 1870, 1,503; assessed value of property in 1876, \$374,297. This is chiefly a prairie county, and though it has much good alluvial land

in the Trinity valley, yet stock-raising is the chief business. Hogs are also abundantly and cheaply raised in the bottoms. Products: corn, cotton, rice and sugar-cane. This county has the advantage of regular communication with Galveston by navigation over the bay and up the Trinity, so that its products can be easily placed in market at a good price. This county has abundance of fruits, such as peaches, apricots, nectarines and plums. It also has a large supply of good timber on both banks of the Trinity, and supplies Galveston market with much of its fuel. This, like most other coast counties, possesses the advantage of being easily inclosed by water on one or more sides of the farms and hedges on the other.

26. **CHEROKEE.**—Created from Nacogdoches in 1846; named for an Indian tribe which occupied a portion of the country from 1822 until 1830. The original Tehas village, which gave its name to the State, was in this county near the old San Antonio road, on the east side of the Neches river. It was known as the Bradshaw Place, or Mound prairie; and was settled by the Allcorns and Teels in 1822. The Cherokee village was on the Angelina river. The town of Rusk, the county-seat, was settled in 1846, and laid out as a town the next year. The county is bounded north by Smith, east by Rusk and Nacogdoches, south by Angelina and Houston, and west by Anderson. The surface is undulating; about three-fourths timber; soil excellent. The International railroad passes through the county, and a branch road connects Rusk with Jacksonville, a station on the main road. Population in 1870, 1,179; assessed value of property in 1876, \$1,482,463. Well supplied with peaches, apples, and other fruits.

27. **CLAY.**—Created in 1857; named for Henry Clay. Henrietta is the county-seat. Bounded north by the Indian Territory, east by Montague, south by Jack, and west by Archer and Wichita. This is one of the northern counties, bordering upon Red river. It is well watered, and has a fair supply of timber on its water courses, Red river and the two Wichitas, and their numerous tributaries. Immense herds of cattle are pastured here before being driven to Northern markets. The county was settled in 1868; in 1876 the assessed value of property was \$455,276.

28. **COLEMAN.**—Created in 1858, and named for R. M. Coleman. Coleman was selected as the county-seat in 1876. It is bounded on the north by Callahan, east by Brown, south by M'Culloch, and west by Runnels. The soil is good; country undulating; with some high points, of which the most conspicuous is Santa Anna's Peak, eight miles from the county-seat. The Colorado river runs along its southern boundary, and Makewater and other creeks furnish an abundance of water for stock. A village of the Anadquas was once located in the county, and Jim Ned creek bears the name of one of their famous chiefs. Camp Colorado has been for twenty years occasionally occupied by Rangers. Value of property in 1876, \$125,761. Coleman is about one hundred and forty miles from Austin, and the same distance from Dallas and Fort Worth.



**COURT HOUSE, SHERMAN.**



29. **COLLIN.**—Named for Collin M'Kinney, who settled in the county in 1842; was created in 1846. M'Kinney is the county-seat. Bounded on the north by Grayson, east by Hunt, south by Dallas, and west by Denton. The east fork of the Trinity takes its rise in this county, and it is watered by numerous creeks; it is well timbered, and the soil is of a very superior quality. M'Kinney is on the Houston & Texas Central Railroad, two hundred and ninety-six miles north of Houston. Population in 1870, 14,019; assessed value of property in 1876, \$4,952,750. First settled in 1841, by Dr. William E. Throckmorton, who died in 1842. It is a fine county for fruits.

30. **COLORADO.**—One of the original counties; named for the river on which it stands. Columbus is the county-seat; selected in 1836 by Eli Mercer, Robert Brotherton, and William D. Lacy, commissioners appointed by the Executive Council at San Felipe. In 1821, a settlement was commenced at the Atasca Sita crossing of the river, a little below the present town of Columbus. Among the early settlers were Leander Beeson, W. B. Dewees, Ross Alley, William Alley, Thomas Burnes, Peter and John Tumlimson, etc. In 1822, James Cummings was appointed Alcalde. He declined to serve, and John Tumlimson was appointed. Among early settlers were F. Pettus, Levi Bostick, — Hunt, John Matthews, Major Montgomery, David Cole, the Coopers, and others. In 1836 William Menifee was Chief Justice. The G. H. & S. A. R. R., passes through the county, crossing the river at Columbus. The county is in the heart of the State and admirably adapted to agricultural pursuits or stock-raising; well watered and timbered. Population in 1870, 8,326; assessed value of property in 1876, \$2,696,424.

31. **COMAL.**—Created in 1848; named for the Comal river. New Braunfels is the county-seat. The town was laid out and settled in 1845, by German immigrants, brought to the country by the Prince de Solms, to settle Fisher & Miller's colony. They found it impracticable, on account of the Indians, to proceed to the frontier, and the New Braunfels tract of land was bought as a temporary stopping-place; but became the home of a large and thrifty class of people. It is bounded north by Blanco, east by Hays, south by Guadalupe and Bexar, and west by Kendall. Population in 1870, 5,283; assessed value of property in 1875, \$1,346,950. The Comal river rises from copious springs some three miles above the town, and immediately becomes a deep stream of the purest water, in which even fish can readily be seen to the depth of ten or twelve feet. It is difficult to imagine a more beautiful stream. It empties into the Guadalupe at New Braunfels, and affords great water-power for several mills and factories, and an extensive valley may be irrigated by it. It has forty feet fall in a distance of three miles. One large cotton and woolen factory has been in operation for several years, and the water-power is sufficient for many more. Two or three flouring and grist-mills, and machinery for other manufactories, are run by the same power, and no better place can be found for a paper-mill, on account of the great purity of the water. The Guadalupe is a much

larger stream than the Comal, and passes through the county; and there are several other smaller streams, all skirted with timber, such as black-oak, post-oak, walnut, hickory, pecan, elm, etc.; but this is not generally good building material. The best building material is stone. All the products of the country are raised here. Peaches, grapes, and other fruits are grown, and some fine wine and table grapes are successfully cultivated. There are orchards of apples, pears, quinces, cherries, plums, etc.

32. **COMANCHE.**—Named for an Indian tribe; Comanche is the county-seat; created in 1856. Bounded north-east by Erath, south-east by Hamilton, south-west by Brown, and north-west by Eastland. It is watered by the Leon river and its tributaries; bottom lands good; one-third timber, but not of the best quality. Population in 1870, 1,001; assessed value of property in 1876, \$729,430. A fine stock-raising county.

33. **COOKE.**—Created in 1848; named for William G. Cooke; Gainesville is the county-seat. Bounded north by the Indian Territory, east by Grayson, south by Denton, and west by Montague. It is well supplied with water; has an excellent soil; is a very productive and desirable county. Population in 1870, 5,315; assessed value of property in 1876, \$1,565,363. Corn, wheat, barley, and all the cereals do well; and upon Red river there are several cotton plantations. The soil is prolific, except on the eastern side of the county, through which run the cross-timbers. Timber is fine, consisting of post-oak, ash, pecan, walnut, hackberry and elm, the best building timber being post-oak. Red river forms the northern boundary of the county. Elm Fork of the Trinity heads in the county, within a few miles of Red river, and runs south through the centre of the county. Upon this stream is situated the town of Gainesville. Clear creek and Jordan creek run through the county, the former on the western and the latter on the eastern side. These are fine streams, and their bottoms are both rich and well timbered.

34. **CORYELL.**—Created in 1854; named for James Coryell, (who was killed by Indians). Gatesville is the county-seat. Bounded north-east by Bosque and M'Lennan, south-east by Bell, south-west by Lampasas, and north-west by Hamilton. It is watered by the Leon and its tributaries; surface rolling; one-third timber; soil in the valleys rich. Population in 1870, 4,124; assessed value of property in 1876, \$1,343,675. Fine grazing county.

35. **DALLAS.**—Lies in the heart of the wheat section of Texas; was originally in Peters' colony, bounded north by Denton and Collin, east by Rockwall and Kaufman, south by Ellis and west by Tarrant. The first point occupied by whites in the county was Bird's Fort, about fifteen miles above the present town of Dallas. In 1843, Neely Bryan, Mr. Beeman and others settled the new town, which, in 1846, became county seat. It is on the Central Railroad, 250 miles north of Houston, and on the Texas Pacific Railroad, 189 miles west of Shreveport. It is also the southern terminus of

the Dallas and Wichita Railroad, now in progress of construction. In 1872, before railroads had reached Dallas, it had a population of about fifteen hundred. It now has as many thousand. It has a number of flouring-mills, two cotton compresses, street railroads. It is lighted with gas, and is well supplied with schools and churches. Population of the county in 1870, 13,314; assessed value of property in 1876, \$8,665,525. The land is black, sticky prairie, liberally interspersed with timber, in sufficient quantities for all agricultural and manufacturing purposes. The soil is exceedingly fertile, and when well cultivated most abundantly rewards the husbandman for his labor. Dallas is increasing in population more rapidly than any town in Northern Texas. Lancaster is a flourishing village, situated fifteen miles south of Dallas, and contains about five hundred inhabitants. Cedar Hill, Scyene, and Breckenridge are small villages, situated in the midst of an industrious and energetic population. The people are industrious, moral, and religious, and take great interest in the establishment of good schools. The principal products of the county are wheat, corn, oats, rye, and barley, each of which is raised in large quantities, and the yield per acre equals that of any section in the Union. At Lancaster there is a foundry, where all the castings required to repair mills, reapers, and threshers are made promptly and on reasonable terms. At Dallas, Cedar Hill, and Lancaster are machine-shops, where reapers and threshers, and all other agricultural implements, are manufactured.

36. DELTA—A small county, created in 1871. It is between the forks of the Sulphur river, and derives its name from its shape. Bounded north by Lamar, southeast by Hopkins, and west by Fannin and Hunt. Cooper is the county seat. It is a fine agricultural and fruit-growing county. Assessed value of property in 1876, \$565,484.

37. DENTON—Created from Fannin in 1846. Named for John B. Denton, who was killed by the Indians, on Denton creek, in 1843. Bounded north by Cooke, east by Collin, south by Dallas and Tarrant, and west by Wise. It produces in profusion all the cereals, cotton, fruits, &c. The county was settled in 1843-4 by Messrs. Medlin, Higgins, Holford, Wagoner, King, Eads, Miller, Gibson, Strickland, Carter, and others. Population in 1870, 7,251. Watered by the Elm fork of the Trinity, Clear, Duck, Hickory, Denton, and other creeks. There is a great variety and all qualities of soil; in a portion of the county, the black, waxy, which is from two to six feet deep prevailing, while in the Cross Timbers section the soil is sandy and of various qualities, the best being a black sandy loam from one-half to two or three feet deep, the foundation being clay. The prairies west of the Cross Timbers have also a variety of soil, some being rich, black and waxy, with an undulating surface, while in other portions the soil is thin and rocky, the surface being broken and hilly. In the middle and western portions of the county, as fine lands as there are in the State are found in the creek valleys, a portion being prairie. A good county for fruits, and for stock-raising.

38. DEWITT—Named for Green DeWitt, who, in 1825, obtained an em-

presario grant to plant a colony on the Guadalupe river, created from Gonzales and Victoria in 1846. Clinton was county seat until 1877. In 1873, the Gulf, West Texas and Pacific Railroad reached Cuero, and in 1877 that became the county seat. Bounded north by Gonzales, east by Lavaca, south by Victoria and Goliad, and west by Karnes. Cuero is seventy miles from Indianola. It is a fine agricultural and stock-raising county; well watered, and has immense bodies of rich lands. Population in 1870, 6,948, assessed value of property in 1876, \$1,987,996. The Guadalupe river runs through the center of the county, and into it flows a number of smaller streams. The surface is undulating, and covered with a small growth of oak, elm and mulberry. The soil is sandy loam on the high lands, and still richer in the bottoms, there being no poor land in the whole county, except along the post oak ridges. Health is good.

39. **DUVAL**—Bounded north by McMullen, east by Nueces, south by Starr, and west by Enignal. Named for the Duval family; organized in 1875. It is one of the stock-raising counties. San Diego is the county seat.

40. **EASTLAND**—Named for W. M. Eastland, one of the Mier prisoners, shot at Salado by order of Santa Anna. Created in 1858; Eastland the county seat. Bounded north by Stephens, east by Erath, south by Comanche, and west by Callahan. It is a new county in the stock-raising region, and is but sparsely populated. In 1876 the assessed value of property was \$23,420. Eastland county is on the dividing ridge between the waters of the Leon and those of Hubbard's creek. This divide consists of a succession of bold, rocky hills, east of which the county is covered with a dense growth of post-oak, black-jack, and shin-oak timber, and is a fine country for hogs. On the west there are some fine fertile valleys, covered with mesquite grass, and with good post-oak timber convenient.

41. **ELLIS**—Created from Navarro in 1849; named for Richard Ellis; Waxahachie is the county seat. In 1843, Captain Thomas I. Smith, with a company of Rangers, established a post on Richland creek, and a settlement was formed around it. The land is undulating, mostly rich prairie, with skirts of timber on the Trinity river and its numerous tributaries. The Central Railroad passes through the county. Ennis and Palmer are railroad towns, and there is a branch road projected to the county seat. The county is bounded north by Dallas, east by Kaufman, south by Navarro, and west by Hill and Johnson. Population in 1870, 7,914; assessed value of property in 1876, \$3,662,356. Rich, black, stiff and loamy, undulating, rolling prairie, finely adapted to the culture of all kinds of small grain, as well as cotton and corn, and affording a superior range for stock, constitutes a large portion of the county; the only timber found being on the river and creek bottoms, which is ample for ordinary farm purposes, and consists of oak, cedar, ash, pecan, cottonwood, bois d'arc, &c.

42. **EL PASO (the Pass)**.—Is next to Presidio, the largest county in Texas, having an area of between 9,000 and 10,000 square miles. It is nearly seven



hundred miles northwest from San Antonio, and has an elevation of about 3,750 feet above the sea level. Bounded north by New Mexico, east by Pecos and Presidio, south and west by New Mexico. It is in the mountainous and mineral region, though the valley lands are irrigable, and exceedingly productive. Isleta is the county seat. It is supposed the Rio Grande valley was visited by Marcus De Niza in 1537, and Coronado in 1540 took possession of the Puebla village of Isleta. The same place was visited by Espejo in 1582, and permanently occupied by the Spaniards since 1595. In 1627, a Spaniard named DeLeon obtained a grant to settle the valley on the Texas side of the Rio Grande, and constructed ditches for irrigation, which are still in use. In 1870 the population of the county was 3,761; assessed value of property in 1876, \$398,110. Late reports give the village of El Paso a population of 700; Isleta, fifteen miles south, 1,500; San Ildefonso, 1,200, and Socorro 800. The population is principally Mexican. The county was organized in 1850 by Major R. S. Neighbors. Among its productions are the celebrated El Paso onions, and wine of a superior quality.

In the fall of 1877 a serious difficulty occurred, said to have been caused by the location and occupancy by private parties of salt lakes, which had been previously considered public property. Several parties lost their lives, and quiet was not fully restored until the arrival of United States troops under the command of General Hatch.

43. ERATH—Created from Bosque and Coryell in 1856; named for George B. Erath. Bounded north by Palo Pinto, east by Hood and Somervell, south by Bosque and Hamilton, and west by Comanche and Eastland. Stephenville is the county seat, and was named for John M. Stephens, on whose land it was located. The county has about equal quantities of prairie and timber; uplands thin, but good for pasturage; bottoms rich and productive; county has numerous creeks, flowing into the Bosque river. Stephenville is nearly 2,000 feet above the sea level, and is very healthy. The county seat was settled in 1855. It had been previously occupied by a friendly band of Caddo Indians. These became troublesome, and in 1860 were driven off. Population in 1870, 1,801; assessed value of property in 1877, \$2,082,473.

44. FALLS.—Its name from a fall in the Brazos river; created in 1850. Marlin, the county seat, named for a pioneer family. Bounded north by M'Lennan, east by Limestone, south by Robertson and Milam, and west by Bell. Settled in 1838. (For account of Indian troubles, see Indian fights, 1839.) The river and creek bottoms are very rich, and well timbered; the uplands undulating prairies, arable and productive. Marlin is on the Waco Tap Railroad, 160 miles from Houston, and 17 miles from Waco. Population of county, in 1870, 9,871; assessed value of property in 1876, \$2,224,635

45. FANNIN.—Created from Nacogdoches in 1837; named for James W. Fannin; Bonham is the county seat, named for J. B. Bonham, one of the victims of the Alamo. It is one of the rich Red river counties, bounded north by the Indian Territory, east by Lamar, south by Hunt and west by

Collin and Grayson. About one-third of its area is timber, the rest undulating but rich prairie. It was first occupied by Captain William Gilbert, and his camp was called English's Fort, now Bonham. This was in 1837. Bonham is on the Trans-Continental railroad, 128 miles west of Texarkana. Population of county, in 1870, 13,207; assessed value of property in 1876, \$3,599,805. It is watered by a number of small creeks tributary to Red river. The surface is undulating, about one-third part supplied with walnut, post-oak, elm, ash, and many other varieties of timber, especially bois d'arc, which abounds. The soil is of the first quality, prairie and bottom being both of black loam, and well adapted to all small grains, as well as cotton. Most kinds of fruit abound, especially apples and peaches. Health and water are excellent.

46. **FAYETTE.**—Created from Bastrop and Washington in 1837; named for General Lafayette; LaGrange the county seat. The Colorado river meanders through the county and it has numerous creeks, with rich bottoms. The undulating prairies are also productive, and nearly every acre of land in the county is arable. In 1821, the Buckners, Aylot C. and Oliver, settled on the creek that bears their name. In 1823, the Castlemans settled on the west bank of the river, and S. F. Austin, for a time, made that his home. The Rabb family settled on Rabb's creek, and the Cummings family on Cummings creek, and the Rosses at Ross Prairie. In 1831, the half league of land upon which Lagrange now stands, was granted to John H. Moore. Ledbetter, on the western branch of the Texas Central railway, is in the eastern portion of this county, and Flatonia and Waelder, in the western portion, are on the Sunset Route. Population, in 1870, 16,863; assessed value of property in 1876, \$4,705,213.

47. **FORT BEND.**—Created from Austin in 1837; named from an old fort in the bend of the Brazos river; bounded north by Harris and Austin, east by Harris and Brazoria, south by Brazoria and Wharton, west by Wharton and Austin. Richmond is the county seat. It is thirty miles from Houston, on the Sunset railroad, which crosses the Brazos at that point. The land on the river bottom, which, with Oyster creek, is six miles wide, is of inexhaustible fertility. The prairies afford fine stock range. Wm. Little, who accompanied Austin in his first trip to Texas, selected the site of the town of Richmond. In 1822, four young men built a block-house there, in the bend of the river. William Morton settled on the east side of the river. During the same and following year, Randall and Henry Jones, William Styles, Jesse Thompson, Churchill Fulcher, Thomas Barnett, C. C. Dyer, Elijah Roarch, Thomas H. and Paschal Borden, William, Archibald and Robert Hodge, and James Frisbee, settled in the county. Randall Foster (died in 1878) obtained a league of land for supplying meat, as a hunter, to Austin and his party. Probably a larger number of the survivors of Austin's first three hundred colonists live in Fort Bend than in any other county in the State. Population, in 1870, 7,114; assessed value of property in 1876, \$2,254,724.

The San Bernard river is the western boundary of the county, and is a

small stream until it reaches tide-water in Brazoria county. Big creek, so called from its diminutive proportions, (*lucus a non lucendo*,) intervenes between the Brazos and San Bernard, and is tributary to the Brazos. Jones' creek empties into the Brazos one mile above Richmond, on the east side. Oyster creek rises in the northeastern part of the county, and, pursuing a course parallel with the Brazos, empties into the west bay of Galveston, several miles northeast of the debouchure of the main river into the Gulf. Fort Bend county is at the head of the true delta of the Brazos, as its waters, when high, run into Oyster creek, and at such times, the two channels are connected by a net-work of bayous and small lakes from Richmond to the Gulf. Both Oyster creek and Jones' creek are included in what is called the Brazos bottom on the east, and here are found our richest lands and largest plantations, the banks of both being lined continuously with fields in their entire extent through the county. The Brazos bottom, including both sides of the river, is from six to twelve miles wide, most of the timber being on the east side, the prairie on the west bluffing on the river in many places. It is estimated that three-fourths of the county is prairie. The timber is confined to the bottom lands, with the exception of a narrow belt of post-oaks in the northeastern part of the county, and consists of elm, ash, pecan, hackberry, cottonwood, and several varieties of the oak. On the Bernard there is considerable cedar and cypress. The undergrowth is cane, wild peach, and black-haw. The soil of the bottoms is a rich alluvium, from 20 to 35 feet deep; that of the prairies varies with the locality; in some places it is composed of sand and vegetable matter, the result of the decay of successive crops of grass, while in others you will find the black tenacious hog-wallow, without a trace of sand and with a substratum of clay and marl, the latter frequently cropping out on the surface.

48. FRANKLIN.—Created in 1875; named for B. C. Franklin; bounded north by Red River county, south by Camp and Wood, east by Titus and west by Hopkins. Mount Vernon is the county seat. Assessed value of property in 1876, \$481,093.

49. FREESTONE.—Fairfield is the county seat; created in 1850; bounded north by Navarro, east by Anderson, south by Leon and west by Limestone; it is a heavily timbered county on the west side of the Trinity river. The International railroad passes along its southeastern boundary, and the Houston and Texas Central on the northwest corner of the county. Population, in 1870, 8,139; assessed value of property, in 1876, \$1,870,007. A later census gives the population at 13,000, of whom 4,256 are colored.

50. FRIO.—Created in 1858; named for Frio (cold) river; Frio is the county seat. Bounded north by Medina, east by Atascosa, south by LaSalle and west by Zavalla. It is a sparsely populated, stock-raising county. It is watered by the Frio, Leona, Hondo, and San Miguel creeks and is tolerably well timbered. Assessed value of property, in 1876, \$295,308.

51. **GALVESTON.**—Created in 1838; named for the Count De Galvez; bounded north by Harris and Chambers, east by Chambers, south by the Gulf of Mexico. Galveston is the largest city in the State, and the center of the State's commerce. The island was occupied by Minister Herrera and Commodore Aury, in 1816; in 1817-19, it was the rendezvous of the pirate Lafitte. In 1830, it became a port of entry of the Mexican Republic; but Colonel Bradburn, then in command, transferred the business to Anahuac. In 1831, Colonel Piedras, in command at Nacogdoches, located an eleven-league claim so as to cover the island; in 1834, it was located by Colonel John N. Seguin; at the second session of the First Texas Congress, M. Menard, and others, who had bought Seguin's claim, paid the Republic \$50,000 for a clear title to the east end of the island, and at once organized the "Galveston Company" and surveyed and sold the lots. In 1837, a wharf was built, and M'Kinney & Williams transferred their business from the mouth of the Brazos to the new city, which rapidly grew, concentrating the trade of all central Texas at that point. Population, in 1870, 15,290; assessed value of property, in 1876, \$20,933,308.

52. **GILLESPIE.**—Named for R. A. Gillespie; Fredericksburg is the county seat; created in 1848. Bounded north by Mason and Llano, east by Blanco, south by Kendall and Kerr, and west by Kerr and Kimble. This county was settled by the Germans that came to Texas with Prince de Solms in 1846. As that was a dry year, the colonists suffered incredible hardships for want of food. At first the Comanches were friendly and brought into the settlements venison, etc. Herr Von Krewitz acted as Indian Agent, and pursued the policy adopted by Penn, and kept the Indians friendly until an unfortunate circumstance interrupted this state of peace. This is a prairie county, remarkable for health. Fredericksburg is 1,500 feet above the sea level. It is about 70 miles north-west of San Antonio. Population of the county in 1870, 3,566; assessed value of property in 1876, \$901,222. About eighteen miles north of Fredericksburg there is a conspicuous object in the landscape, known as the Enchanted Rock. It covers about twelve hundred acres of ground. It is a huge granite and iron formation, about 800 feet high, covering at its base several acres of space, its top being about 400 yards square. Its name was derived from its magnificent appearance, for when the sun shines upon it morning and evening, it resembles a huge mass of burnished gold. It is said to be particularly beautiful after a rain. Fully a half hour is required for the most expert climber to ascend to the summit of the Enchanted Rock. There the country for many miles around is overlooked. Within the scope of the eye the landscape is perfectly grand, the blue tops of Bulls-Head, House Mountain and Mount Nebo appearing to the view. At the base of the Enchanted Rock a cool spring bursts out, furnishing the adventurer, the explorer, or the curious person who may come to this spot, refreshing water. The approaches to this place are exceedingly rough, and strong signs of various minerals exist on every hand. Some of the granite rocks in this region are really beautiful. About fourteen miles east of here there is a very large cave, and within it names and paintings put there with pigment long ago.



SCENE ON COMAL RIVER.



53. **GOLIAD.**—One of the original counties of the Republic. The name is an anagram from Hidalgo. Goliad is one of the most famous places in the history of our State. It was first visited by De Leon in 1687. About 1715, a Mission was projected for the benefit of the Caranchua Indians. It was named La Bahia (the Bay) Mission. At a later period, a second Mission, probably for the Aranamas, a half-civilized tribe, who possessed considerable property and lived in comfortable houses, was established, called Espiritu Santo. In 1812-13, the place was occupied by the Republican army under Magee, and some severe battles were fought in the neighborhood. In 1817, Colonel Perry and his party were killed near this place, by Mexican soldiers sent by Arredondo. In 1835, it was captured by the Texans under Collingworth and Milam; evacuated by Fannin March 17th, 1836; battle of Colita fought same day; and Fannin and his brave men massacred March 27th, 1836. During the colonial period, Decree No. 73, (1829) constituted Goliad a town or municipality. Population in 1870, 3,628; assessed value of property in 1876, \$1,204,221. The county has some farms, but is mostly devoted to stock-raising.

54. **GONZALES.**—Named for Raphael Gonzales; bounded north by Guadalupe, Caldwell and Fayette, east by Lavaca, south by Dewitt and west by Karnes and Wilson. Gonzales, the county seat, is 65 miles from San Antonio. It has four leagues of land lying on the Guadalupe river, given to the corporation August 25th, 1832. In 1825, Green Dewitt, Francis Berry, James Kerr, Henry S. Brown and others, commenced a settlement near where the town now stands, but were driven off by the Indians. The town was laid out and a permanent settlement effected in 1832. At this point in 1835, occurred the first skirmish of the Texas Revolution. The Mexican authorities had given the citizens a cannon; Col. Ugartechea, in command, at San Antonio, sent to remove the piece to that city. The citizens resisted, and seizing the gun, advanced upon Castanado, the Mexican officer, and he hastily retreated to San Antonio. The county has a large quantity of good land, is well watered, and has plenty of timber for fencing purposes. Harwood, a station on the Sunset Route, is in the northern portion of the county. Population in 1870, 8,951; assessed value of property in 1876, \$2,792,929. This county has a large body of very rich bottom lands in the Guadalupe, San Marcos and Peach creek bottoms. These rivers afford an abundance of water and timber. There are some sulphur springs, and salt springs from which salt has been made. Cotton is the leading product, and a bale to the acre is a common product in good seasons. All the products of other counties are common to this, except that the cereals do not succeed as well as in the counties further north. Tobacco is raised for home use, and succeeds well.

55. **GRAYSON.**—Named for Peter W. Grayson; created from Fannin, in 1846; Sherman is the county seat; named for Sidney Sherman. Bounded north by the Indian Territory, east by Fannin, south by Collin and west by Cooke. Sherman is on the Texas Central railroad, 329 miles north of Houston, and on the northern branch of the Texas Pacific railroad, 155 miles west

of **Texarkana**. Population of county in 1870, 14,327; assessed value of property in 1876, \$6,019,837. Later estimates give Sherman a population of about 8,000, and Denison, nine miles north, about 4,000. A large number of small streams rise in it, flow northward and empty into the Red river. The surface is undulating, about one-fourth covered with elm, ash and post oak. The soil is of a dark chocolate loam, and is nearly all good. Peaches, apples, and almost every kind of fruit abounds. Health and water, with some exceptions, good, and these two things always go together.

56. **GREGG**.—Created in 1875; named for John Gregg; Longview is the county seat. It is on the Texas Pacific Railroad, 66 miles west of Shreveport. This is a small, agricultural county. Assessed value of property in 1876, \$1,029,828. No census has been taken of the county. Longview is estimated to have 500 inhabitants. It has a cotton compress, and does a large trade.

57. **GRIMES**.—Created from Montgomery in 1846; named for Jesse Grimes. Anderson is the county seat; named for Kenneth L. Anderson. Bounded north by Madison, east by Walker and Montgomery, south by Harris, and west by Washington. It lies on the east side of the Brazos river, and the Navasota meanders through the county. Colonel J. E. Groce settled in the county in 1822. He was soon followed by the Whitesides, Grimes, Walker and other families. The Central Railroad passes through the center of the county. Navasota is seventy miles north of Houston. Population of the county in 1870, 13,218; assessed value of property in 1876, \$2,498,907. It is well watered by numerous creeks, which empty into the Navasota, which unites with the Brazos river, near its southwestern corner. The surface of the county is rolling, a large portion of it being prairie, much of the soil being rich black loam. An abundance of timber, consisting of pine, oak cedar, ash, and other varieties, for ordinary purposes, are found. The principal productions are cotton and corn, wheat and other small grain having been introduced only to a limited extent, notwithstanding the soil appears finely adapted to their culture. Springs are numerous, many of them being strongly impregnated with sulphur; Kellum's spring, about ten miles north of Anderson, being one of the finest sulphur springs in the State.

58. **GUADALUPE**.—Created from Gonzales and Bexar in 1846; named for the river which passes through the county. Seguin is the county seat; named for Erasmo Seguin. Bounded north by Comal and Caldwell, east by Caldwell and Gonzales, south by Gonzales and Wilson, west by Bexar and Comal. Besides the Guadalupe river, it has the San Marcos on the east and the Cibolo on the west, with their numerous tributaries. It is well watered, has a tolerable supply of timber, and the soil is very rich and productive. In 1839, a company of soldiers had their encampment at the Willow Springs (Seguin) and a settlement was formed under the protection of the soldiers. Population in 1870, 7,282. The "Sunset Road" passes



through the county. Seguin is 172 miles west of Houston, and is 35 east of San Antonio.

59. **HAMILTON**—Created in 1858; named for James Hamilton, of South Carolina. Hamilton is the county seat. Though this is what is called the wheat region, it produces excellent cotton; is well watered, having the Leon, Cowhouse, and Bennet creeks and their tributaries; has enough timber for firewood, and excellent building-stone. Hamilton is about fifty miles from Waco and one hundred miles from Austin. It is bounded on the north by Comanche and Erath, east by Bosque, south by Coryelle and Lampasas, and west by Brown. Population in 1870, 733; assessed value of property in 1876, \$577,536.

60. **HARDIN**—Created from Liberty in 1858, and is named for William Hardin. Hardin is the county seat. It is bounded north by Polk and Tyler, east by Jasper, south by Jefferson, and west by Liberty. Population in 1870, 1,460. Assessed value of property in 1876, \$84,380. It is densely timbered. Soue Lake is becoming a favorite resort for invalids.

61. **HARRIS**—Named for John R. Harris, an early settler. The first name proposed for the municipality was Magnolia. Houston is the county seat, named for Sam Houston. It is bounded north by Grimes and Montgomery, east by Liberty, south by Galveston, and west by Fort Bend and Waller. This county was settled in 1822. The first steam saw-mills erected in Austin's colony were in this county, one by Judge Burnet and the other by Mr. Harris. In 1832, Mr. Lynch opened a store at Lynchburg. The municipality of Harrisburg was created by the Executive Council, January 1st, 1836. At the organization of the government *ad interim*, this municipality furnished both the President, Judge Burnet, and the Vice-President, Don Lorenzo de Zavalla. For a time Harrisburg was the seat of government, but was burned by Santa Anna, as was also New Washington on the bay. It was in this county that the decisive battle of San Jacinto was fought. In 1836, after the battle, Messrs. A. C. and J. K. Allen bought the league of land above the Harris league, which was held at too high a price, and laid out the town of Houston. Four thousand dollars were paid for the league. During the fall the "Old Capitol" was built, and the seat of government transferred to the new town. In 1840, Austin became the seat of government, but in 1842 it returned for a short time to Houston. The first railroad started in Texas was the one from Harrisburg toward the Brazos, in 1856. Houston is now the principal railroad center in South eastern Texas. Population of the county in 1870, 17,375; assessed value of property in 1876, \$12,355,925.

62. **HARRISON**—Created from Shelby in 1839; named for a pioneer settler. Marshall is the county seat. Bounded north by Marion, east by Louisiana, south by Panola, and west by Rusk and Gregg. Marshall is on the Texas Pacific Railroad, forty-two miles west of Shreveport. Population of county in 1870, 13,241; assessed value of property in 1876, \$3,969,363. Before the

civil war, this was one of the leading counties of the State in point of population and wealth. Since the war other counties have increased more rapidly. It is well watered by the Sabine and numerous creeks, which flow into it on the south, and Big Cypress and other creeks, which flow into the lakes upon its northern borders. The surface is rolling, with some portions broken and hilly. There is a variety of soil, a sandy loam predominating. An abundance of timber is found in every section, consisting of post, red, white, and other species of oak, pine, cypress, ash, gum, sassafras, mulberry, and other varieties. Cotton and corn are the staple products, though wheat and other small grains are raised to a considerable extent. Water freestone, and quite pure. Health generally good. Peaches, apples, plums, pears, and other kinds of fruits are raised. Game abundant, consisting of deer, wild turkeys and ducks, which frequent the lakes during the winter in vast numbers, while catfish, trout, bass, white, black and yellow perch are obtained from the lakes.

63. HAYS—Created from Travis in 1848; named for John C. Hays. San Marcos is the county seat. It is bounded north by Travis, east and south-east by Travis and Caldwell, southwest by Comal, and northwest by Blanco. The San Marcos Spring, just above the town, is one of the finest in the State. It was selected by the fathers of the College of Santa Cruz for a mission, in 1729, but as the adjacent ground was too high for irrigation, the location was changed to the San Antonio river. This county was included in Milam's grant, and was settled in 1844-5, by General Ed. Burleson and others. The scenery in this county is most picturesque; the undulating prairies are very rich; and there is a supply of mountain cedar for fencing. San Marcos is thirty miles south-west of Austin, on the line of the projected International Railroad, towards San Antonio. Stages connect also with Luling, on the Sunset Route. Population of county in 1870, 4,088; assessed value of property in 1876, \$1,304,445.

64. HENDERSON.—Created from Houston and Nacogdoches in 1850; named for J. Pinckney Henderson; Athens is the county seat. It is bounded north by Kaufman and Vanzandt, east by Smith, south by Anderson and west by Navarro. It is an agricultural county, with an abundance of good water, timber and soil. Population in 1870, 6,786; assessed value of property in 1876, \$960,000. The first settlement made in this county was in 1846; T. Ball and S. J. Scott settled on Walnut creek; Mr. Godard settled Buffalo, a town on the Trinity; Chas. Sanders settled near Buffalo; H. and J. A. Mitcham settled Wildcat creek, in the south-west corner of the county; Dr. Adams and Wm. Hytower settled in the east end; Judge Roberts presided over the first court ever held here, which was under the shade of an oak tree, near the centre of the county, which tree is still preserved. Mr. J. A. Mitcham, who gives us these statements, also adds, that on the bluff on Cedar creek, in the west end of the county, a number of human bones have been found, together with some guns, etc.; this discovery was made in 1851. The surface is rolling and well timbered with pine, oak, etc; the soil upon the uplands is a light sandy loam, producing cotton and

corn abundantly, during favorable seasons. Springs of pure water are found in all sections, and well-water is generally good and cool.

65. HIDALGO.—Named for Guadalupe Hidalgo, a leader of the Revolution in Mexico. Edinburg, on the Rio Grande, is the county seat. Bounded north by Nueces, east by Cameron, south by Mexico, and west by Starr. It is a very large county, having an area of 8,200 square miles; was created from Cameron in 1852. In the southern part of the county, on the river, the land is good; the northern part is sandy. It is a stock-raising county. Population in 1870, 2,387; assessed value of property in 1876, \$300,705. The county has a wonderful salt lake, (*Sal del Rey*). The lake is about one mile in diameter, in a flat surrounded by higher land. It is supposed to rest on a salt mine, as the water is very strongly impregnated with saline matter; and when the salt is removed it immediately fills up again with salt by precipitation; so the supply is inexhaustible. It is situated forty miles north of Edinburg and eighty-five from Brownsville. During the civil war it furnished salt for a large portion of Southern Texas.

66. HILL.—Created from Navarro and Ellis in 1853; named for George W. Hill; Hillsborough is the county-seat. Bounded north by Johnson, east by Ellis and Navarro, south by Limestone and McLennan, and west by Bosque. Fort Graham, on the Brazos river, was settled by Mr. Kimble in 1834. It is a prairie county, well adapted to agriculture or stock-raising. It is watered by the Brazos river and Noland and Aguilla creeks. Population in 1870, 7,453; assessed value of property in 1876, \$1,764,648.

67. HOOD.—Created from Johnson in 1866; named for John B. Hood. Granbury, named for General Granbury, is the county-seat. Bounded north by Parker, east by Johnson, south by Somervell, and west by Erath and Palo Pinto. It is small, having but 450 square miles. The county has a fair supply of timber and the land is rich and productive. Population in 1870, 2,585; assessed value of property in 1876, \$689,523. Granbury is thirty-five miles from Fort Worth, the present terminus of the Texas Pacific Railroad. The county is situated on both sides of and embracing in its boundaries, nearly two hundred miles of that crooked stream, the Brazos river, into which Long, Rucker's, Walnut Fall, and George's creeks in the east, and Palox, Squaw, Stroud's, and Robinson's in the west, all supplied by springs and clear as crystal, empty. This county presents the combined advantages of abundant pure spring and well water; plenty of conveniently located timber; numerous fertile valleys, elevated rich post-oak table land, mingled prairie and timber lands, profusion of superior building-stone, while its location between the 32d and 33d degrees, and its romantic, picturesque, and, to a considerable extent, broken and rugged surface, renders its climate mild, equable, and salubrious. No malarious swamps, hog wallow prairies, or miasmatic ponds of stagnant water exist to sow disease and death. Near the centre rise the huge outlines of Comanche Peak, towering some 600 feet above the Brazos, a noted land-mark, and visible from nearly all parts of the county. The eastern and western edges of the

county consist of prairies, bisected every few miles by beautiful, limpid running creeks, fringed with timber, and through the center runs the Brazos river, with its belt of timber from five to ten miles wide, and dotted here and there with many large, thrifty, and productive valley farms. The Brazos and its numerous tributaries furnish abundant water-power, and hundreds of fine manufacturing sites can be found at its countless falls, and in the numerous bends of the river.

68. HOPKINS.—Created in 1846, from Lamar and Nacogdoches; named for a pioneer family. Sulphur Springs is the county seat. It is bounded on the north by Delta, east by Franklin, south by Wood and Rains, and west by Hunt. It is a rich agricultural county, well watered, and with an abundant supply of timber. Population in 1870, 12,651; assessed value of property in 1876, \$1,855,581.

69. HOUSTON.—Created from Nacogdoches in 1837; named for Sam Houston. Crockett is the county-seat. It is bounded north by Anderson, south-east by Cherokee, south-east by Trinity, and west by Madison and Leon. One of the old routes of travel, one hundred and fifty years ago, passed through this county, and it is probable that the old mission *La Trinidad*, one of the first projected in Texas, was at the river, near the present town of Alabama. Relics have been picked up there; among others a bell bearing date 1690. The county possesses an abundance of timber; has good land, and is well watered. Crockett is on the International Railway, one hundred and fifteen miles north of Houston. Population of county in 1870, 8,197; assessed value of property in 1876, \$1,764,648.

70. HUNT.—Created in 1846 from Fannin and Nacogdoches; named for Memucan Hunt. Greenville is the county-seat; named for T. J. Green, (Mier prisoner). Bounded north by Fannin, east by Delta and Hopkins, south by Rains, Van Zandt and Kaufman, and west by Rockwall and Collin. This is a fine agricultural and stock-raising county, about equally divided between timber and prairie. From Greenville it is thirty-five miles to M'Kinney, on the Texas Central Railroad; thirty miles to Terrell, on the Texas Pacific, and thirty-three miles to Bonham, on the Trans-continental Railroad. Population in 1870, 10,241; assessed value of property in 1876, \$1,852,681. It is abundantly watered by numerous creeks and branches, which form the head waters of Sabine river; springs are frequent; the surface is rolling, and in some sections, quite hilly, and very well supplied with post-oak, elm, ash, bois d'arc, etc. The soil is black and rich, both on bottom and prairie, producing wheat, corn, cotton, potatoes, etc.

71. JACK.—Created from Cooke in 1856; named for William H. and P. C. Jack. Jacksborough is the county seat. It is bounded north by Clay and Montague, east by Wise, south by Parker and Palo Pinto, and west by Young and Archer. The country is undulating, with prairie and timber lands; is suitable for small farmers and stock raisers; is watered by the

Trinity river and a number of creeks. Population, in 1870, 694; assessed value of property, in 1876, \$403,509. Jacksborough is 2,000 feet above the level of the sea.

72. JACKSON.—Named for Andrew Jackson. Texana, at the head of navigation on the Navidad river, is the county seat. It is bounded north by Lavaca, east by Wharton and Matagorda, south by Calhoun and west by Victoria. It was at Dimitt's Point, in this county, that La Salle built Fort St. Louis in 1686. The county was settled by Austin's colonists in 1827-28. In 1833, the Ayuntamiento of Brazoria created the precinct of Santa Anna, afterwards changed to Texana. In 1836, Patrick Usher was Chief Justice. The first Declaration of Texas Independence was made at a public meeting on the Navidad river, July 10th, 1835, of which James Kerr was Chairman and Samuel Rogers, Secretary. Jackson is one of the coast counties; it is well adapted to the raising of cotton and sugar; and has a fine range for stock. Population, in 1870, 2,278; assessed value of property, in 1876, \$670,512.

73. JASPER.—Named for Sergeant Jasper, of the American Revolution. It is bounded north by Angelina, San Augustine and Sabine, east by Newton, south by Orange, and west by Hardin and Tyler. Jasper is the county seat. This is one of the heavily-timbered counties of Southeastern Texas, and has water communication *via* Neches river, with Sabine Pass, and is accessible to the Houston and New Orleans Railroad. The first settlement in the county was known as Bevilport, from John Bevil. In 1830, Antonio Padilla, the Land Commissioner, organized the precinct, in connection with the Municipality of Nacogdoches, and laid out a town on the Neches, to which the name of Teran was given. Teran had four leagues of land and a small garrison of Mexican soldiers under Colonel Bean. December 1st, 1835, the Executive Council changed the name from Bevilport to Jasper. Population in 1870, 4,218; assessed value of property in 1876, 393,194. George W. Smyth furnished the following interesting historical sketch of old Jasper, and some of the neighboring counties:

"When my acquaintance first commenced with the region of country now embraced in Jasper county, which was in 1830, in consisted of a settlement of about thirty families, scattered from the Sabine to the Neches, and known as 'Bevil's Settlement,' from John Bevil, Esq., the 'oldest inhabitant.' Bevil's Settlement, was, at that time, separated from the settlement above, known as the 'Ayish Bayou Settlement' (now the counties of San Augustine and Sabine) by a wilderness of forty miles, and from that below, as 'Cow Bayou Settlement,' by an uninhabited region of seventy miles. This county was included in the colony granted in 1829, to Lorenzo de Zavalla, by the State of Coahuila and Texas, with the consent of the general government of Mexico. In 1830, it was organized into a precinct of the Municipality of Nacogdoches, with a 'Commissario of Police,' by Juan Antonio Padillo as Commssioner. In 1834, it was created into a separate municipality by the name of the 'Municipality of Bevil,' and the town of Jasper, as the seat of the municipality, located under the authority of George

Antonio Nixon, Commissioner of Zavalla's colony. At the first organization of counties after the revolution, the 'Precinct of Bevil,' as it is called in the Constitution of the Republic, became one of them, under the name of Jasper. The county of Jasper at first included both Jasper and Newton, but was divided into two, when the counties were re-organized under the State Constitution. Among the early settlers of this county, I may mention Messrs. John Bevil, James Chesshur, Thomas Watts, John Watts, John Saul, Isaac Isaacs and Hardy Pace. All of these, I think, emigrated before 1828."

74. JEFFERSON.—Beaumont, the county seat; both named for Jefferson Beaumont, afterward Chief Justice of Calhoun county. Created by the Executive Council, in 1835, it was included in Zavalla's colony. It is bounded north by Hardin, east by Orange and Sabine Lake, south by the Gulf of Mexico, and west by Liberty and Chambers. It is a stock-raising county, with some very rich land adapted to the cultivation of sugar, rice, etc. Beaumont is thirty-five miles, by water, from Sabine Pass, and about ninety-five from Galveston. It is on the Houston and New Orleans railroad, eighty-three miles from Houston. Population of the county, in 1870, 1,906; assessed value of property in 1876, \$832,941.

75. JOHNSON.—Created from Ellis and Navarro, in 1854; named for M. T. Johnson. Cleburn, (for Pat. Cleburn) is the county seat. It is bounded north by Tarrant, east by Ellis, south by Hill and Bosque, and west by Somervell and Hood. In 1854, Captain Charles E. Bernard established a trading post in the county, around which settlements were formed. The trade of the county goes to Fort Worth and Dallas. It is a splendid county of land, producing both cotton and wheat, and all the cereals; and an abundance of fruits. Population in 1870, 4,923; assessed value of property in 1876, \$2,186,402.

The Brazos river runs through the western part of this county, and Nolan's river, Chambers' and Cedar Bluff creeks head in the county. East of the Brazos the surface is rolling, and west of that river it is very hilly. There are some vegetable and animal petrifications. In these hills Comanche Peak is the highest elevation, being two hundred feet above the surrounding country, and Caddo Peak rises like a potato hill, about one hundred and fifty feet. The former is four miles west of the Brazos, and the latter in the west edge of the Cross Timbers.

76. KARNES.—Created from Bexar and Goliad, in 1854; and is named for Henry Karnes; Helena is the county seat. It is bounded north by Wilson, east by Gonzales and DeWitt, south by Goliad and Bee, and west by Liveoak and Atascosa. This is emphatically a stock county, a considerable portion being inclosed in large pastures. There are some small farms; and when the ground is well cultivated, it produces remunerative crops. Population in 1870, 1,705; assessed value of property in 1876, \$922,556.

77. KAUFMAN.—Created from Harrison, in 1848; named for David S. Kaufman; Kaufman is the county seat. It is bounded north by Rockwell



**COURT HOUSE, DALLAS.**





and Hunt, east by Van Zandt, south by Henderson and west by Ellis and Dallas. The Texas Pacific Railroad runs through it. Population in 1870, 6,895; assessed value of property in 1876, \$2,316,676.

It is watered by the Bois d'Arc, or East Fork of the Trinity, which flows through its west side, and by numbers of creeks tributary to it; the surface is rolling, and the southeastern portion generally timbered with a variety of oak, elm, etc., while the northwest consists almost entirely of prairie, away from water courses, which are bordered by a scrubby growth of elm, and other varieties; bois d'arc is found in large quantities, and of good sized trees, attaining a growth of a foot and a half or more in diameter; the soil of the prairies and bottoms is black and waxy generally, and a number of feet in depth, finely adapted to wheat and small grain; large crops of corn are also made during favorable seasons.

78. **KENDALL.**—Created from Bexar and Kerr, in 1862, and named for George W. Kendall. Boerne is the county seat. It is bounded north by Gillespie and Blanco, east by Comal, south by Bexar and Bandera, and west by Kerr. This is a hilly region, noted for its health. It is a splendid stock range, especially for sheep. There are, also, a goodly number of small farms in successful cultivation. Boerne, thirty miles northwest of San Antonio, is 1,200 feet above the level of the sea. Population in 1870, 1,536; assessed value of property in 1876, \$419,737.

Agricultural products, wheat, corn, rye, barley, oats, sorghum, sweet and Irish potatoes, good yield; climate is one of the best in the world, with health unsurpassed; soil, black loam; seasons nearly regular; timber, cypress, cedar, live-oak, post-oak, white-oak, black-jack, elm, poplar, walnut, hackberry, with a good variety of wild apple, plum, cherry, etc. The county is well watered, the Guadalupe and Cibolo running through the county, with their many tributaries, such as the Balcones, Frederick, Spring, Sabinas, Wasp, Block, Sister, Cypress and Curry's creeks. Pasturage excellent, particularly for sheep, there being about 15,000 of the latter in the county, doing well, and all cured of the scab.

79. **KERR.**—Created in 1856, when there was a military post at Camp Verde; named for James Kerr; Kerrsville is the county seat. The description for Kendall county will apply to this. Population in 1870, 1,042; assessed value of property in 1876, \$334,428.

It is bounded north by Kimble and Gillespie, east by Kendall, south by Bandera, and west by Edwards.

80. **KIMBLE.**—Created in 1858; named for one of the victims of the Alamo massacre. It was organized in 1876; Kimbleville the county seat. It is bounded north by Menard and Mason, east by Mason and Gillespie, south by Kerr and Edwards, and west by Crockett. This is a hilly county, but has some excellent land. On the creeks there are some extensive cedar brakes. It is a superb county for stock-raising. Population in 1870, 72; assessed value of property in 1876, \$57,606.

It is situated upon the head waters of the Llano river. The surface of

this county is very uneven, being a succession of narrow valleys and rocky highlands. It is drained by the Llano river, and its north and south forks—Elm, Paintrock, Viego, Mills, Bluff, Ionia, Bear, and James creeks—which flow over rocky beds, and through deep ravines, and narrow valleys. The water of these streams is clear and pure. The soil is rich, of black and chocolate color, and there is plenty of rock—generally limestone—for all building purposes in the county. There are also some good valley lands for agricultural purposes, still its best adaptation is for stock-raising, particularly horses, sheep and hogs. The timber consists of live-oak, post-oak, black-jack, cedar, mesquite, elm, pecan, hackberry, etc.

*Fort Terrill* is located on the south side of the North Llano, near the western line of the county.

81. **KINNEY**—Created from Bexar in 1850, and named for H. L. Kinney. Del Rio is the county seat. It is bounded north by Crockett, east by Uvalde, south by Maverick, and west by Mexico. In 1834, Messrs. Beale and Grant attempted to plant an English colony at Dolores, in this county, but the attempt failed, and the county was not occupied by an English-speaking population until quite recently. Small tracts of land are irrigated, and produce abundant crops. The county is generally hilly, but admirably adapted to stock-raising, especially sheep. Brackett (Fort Clark) is about 125 miles west of San Antonio. Population in 1870, 1,204; assessed value of property in 1876, \$85,304.

82. **LAMAR**—Created from Red River in 1840; named for M. B. Lamar. Paris is the county seat. It is bounded north by the Indian Territory, east by Red River county, south by Delta, and west by Fannin. The lands in this county are unsurpassed for fertility. Cotton, all the cereals, and a great variety of fruits are produced in great abundance. It was settled as early as 1818, by Emory Rains, Travis G. Wright, George W. Wright, and others. Mr. Clab Chisholm settled the town of Paris in 1836. Population of county in 1870, 15,790; assessed value of property in 1876, \$4,059,275. Paris is on the northern branch of the Texas Pacific Railroad, 91 miles west of Texarkana, and 65 miles east of Sherman.

83. **LAMPASAS**—Created in 1856; named from the river. Lampasas is the county seat. It is bounded north by Brown and Hamilton, east by Coryell, south by Burnet, and west by San Saba. It is a rich, rolling prairie county, famous for its health, and its sulphur springs near the town, which are resorted to by invalids from all parts of the State. The town is sixty-eight miles northwest of Austin. Population in 1870, 835; assessed value of property in 1876, \$678,304. This county is hilly and mountainous, with the richest valleys in the world. The water being pure and healthful; the range is good; game is scarce, though there are some deer, bear, wild turkeys, ducks, &c.; fish are in great abundance, such as buffalo, cat-fish, suckers, &c.; wild honey abounds. Almost three-fifths of the county is prairie. There are large bodies of limestone, suitable for building, and immense quarries of marble of various colors, and some admitting a fine

polish. There is one salt spring, from which salt has been profitably made at the rate of thirty-five bushels per day. We have more than a dozen sulphur, and several chalybeate springs. More than two thousand persons annually visit what are known as the Lampasas sulphur springs, some from the remotest parts of the State. Some coal mines have been found in the county. Many are now building stone fences, though cedar fences are more common.

84. **LAVACA**—Created from Gonzales and other counties in 1846; named for the river of the same name. First Petersburg, and afterward Hallettsville (from a pioneer family of that name) became the county seat. It is bounded north by Gonzales and Fayette, east by Colorado, south by Wharton and Jackson, and west by DeWitt. The county has no railroad, but Shulenburg is but sixteen miles distant, on the Sunset Route, and Cuero, on the road to Indianola, but a little farther off. This is an old-settled, populous and desirable county. Population in 1870, 9,168; assessed value of property in 1876, \$1,937,467. Lavaca is one of the finest counties in the State. There is scarcely an acre that has not the advantage of wood and good water convenient. More than half the county is timbered uplands, covered with post-oak, black-jack, pecan; and the finest white oak and wild cherry are found on the rivers. The soil of the uplands is not what is generally termed rich. It is a light and sandy loam, and produces remarkably well, and crops rarely fail. On the bottom-lands the soil is black alluvial, deep and very productive. The prairies are mostly hog-wallow and stiff and clayey, but very productive when once under proper cultivation. The Lavaca and Navidad rivers, Clark's creek, Big Brushy, Little Brushy, Rocky, Mustang, and Nixon's creeks are all in this county; and these, together with numerous fine springs, give this county an abundant supply of water. There is no better pasturage than on the prairies, and the abundance of timber affords the vast stocks of cattle, horses and sheep an excellent shelter from the winter northers. The small grains—wheat, rye, oats, &c.—do better in this than in most of the lower counties. Tobacco yields well, and considerable is raised for market. The sorghum cane is raised successfully on every farm, and some make the syrup for market.

85. **LEE**—Created from Washington, Burleson, and others, in 1873; named for Robert E. Lee. Giddings is the county seat; named for J. D. Giddings. The county is about equally divided between timber and prairie; is on the dividing ridge between the waters of the Colorado and Brazos rivers, and is watered by the head branches of the Yegua, Cummings and Rabb's creeks. It is a good stock raising and agricultural county. It is bounded north by Williamson and Milam, east by Burleson, south by Washington and Fayette, and west by Bastrop. Giddings is on the western branch of the Texas Central Railroad, 106 miles from Houston and 59 from Austin. Assessed value of property in 1876, \$1,428,298.

86. **LEON**—Created from Robertson in 1846; named, probably, for Aionzo DeLeon, the Spanish commander, who penetrated Texas in 1687. Center-

ville is the county seat. It is bounded north by Limestone and Freestone, east by Anderson and Houston, south by Madison, and west by Robertson. It is watered by the Trinity river and its tributaries on the east and the Navasota on the west. Is well timbered and a good agricultural county. The old San Antonio and Nacogdoches road passes through this county, and it was one of the earliest settled by Americans west of the Trinity river. William Robbins kept a ferry on the river, when visited by Long in 1819. The International Railroad passes along the northern boundary of the county. Population in 1870, 6,586; assessed value of property in 1876, \$1,365,808.

87. **LIBERTY**—One of the original municipalities of Texas. This was at an early period called Arkokisa, one of the names of the Trinity river, probably a corruption of *Orquisaco*, the name of an Indian tribe on its banks. At a later period it was called Atascosita, because the Atascosita road there crossed the river. In 1806, the Cantonment of Atascosita was created by Governor Cordero. In 1817, some French refugees from the army of Napoleon settled on the Trinity river, and commenced planting vineyards, but the settlement was broken up by the Spaniards. In 1830, the municipality of Liberty was created by the Land Commissioner Madero, but was soon afterward transferred to Anahuac by Bradburn. In 1831, it was restored to Liberty by a popular vote. Liberty, the county seat, is on the bank of the Trinity, 110 miles from Galveston, by water, and 41 miles from Houston, on the Houston and New Orleans Railroad. The municipality originally included all the territory between the Sabine and San Jacinto rivers, below the jurisdiction of Nacogdoches. The present boundaries are north by San Jacinto, east by Hardin, south by Chambers, and west by Harris and Montgomery. Population in 1870, 4,414; assessed value of property in 1876, \$555,584. There is about an equal quantity of prairie and timbered land in the county, the upper, or northern, part being heavily timbered with pine, oak, hickory, ash, magnolia, wild peach, sassafras, walnut, elm, linn, and the usual variety of forest growth. There are extensive cypress-brakes bordering on the Trinity, and fine pineries within a few miles of the town of Liberty. The lower Trinity is skirted, for a distance of six miles on either side, by dense forests, suited for lumber and fuel; and the "wood business" for Galveston market is carried on extensively, and is increasing in importance daily, as the increasing demand of that rapidly-growing city must be supplied from this section.

88. **LIMESTONE**—Created from Robertson and Navarro in 1846. Groesbeck is the county seat. Bounded north by Hill and Navarro, east by Freestone, south by Robertson, and west by Falls and McLennan. This is a beautiful, undulating, agricultural and stock-raising county. It is probable that the block house, erected by Philip Nolan in 1801, was near the Tehuacana hills, in this county. Parker's fort was established in 1835, and broken up by the Indians May 9th, 1836. Two years later, on Battle creek, a party of surveyors were attacked, and seventeen killed by the Indians. Groesbeck is on the Houston and Texas Central Railroad, 170 miles north

of Houston. Population of the county in 1870, 8,591; assessed value of property in 1876, \$2,660,873.

89. **LIVE OAK**.—Created from San Patricio and Nueces in 1856. Oakville is the county seat. Bounded north by Atascosa, east by Karnes and Bee, south by San Patricio and Nueces, and west by McMullen. It is a stock-raising county, watered by the Atascosa and Nueces rivers. Oakville is seventy-five miles south of San Antonio and the same distance north of Corpus Christi. Population in 1870, 852; assessed value of property in 1876, \$735,735. The surface is level, in parts undulating; about one-fifth part supplied with post-oak and mesquite. The soil is a deep, sandy loam, very productive. Water is scarce, but good. Health is very good.

90. **LLANO**.—Named for a river of the same name; Llano is the county seat. Bounded north by San Saba, east by Burnet, south by Blanco and Gillespie and west by Mason. It is a stock-raising county, the surface rolling and somewhat mountainous; watered by the Llano and its numerous branches. Among the more conspicuous mountain peaks are the Enchanted Rock and Pack-saddle mountain. This is a mineral region, possessing an inexhaustible supply of iron ores and granite; silver mines are being operated with a fair prospect of success. The county was originally included in Fisher and Miller's colony; was created in 1856. Population in 1870, 1,379; assessed value of property in 1876, \$427,324.

91. **MADISON**.—Created in 1853 from Grimes, Walker and Leon; named for James Madison; Madisonville is the county seat. Bounded north by Leon, east by Houston, south by Walker and Grimes, and west by Brazos; watered by the Trinity on the east and the Navasota on the west; surface undulating, and well supplied with timber. Population in 1870, 4,061; assessed value of property in 1876, \$613,579.

92. **MARION**.—Created from Cass in 1860; named for Francis Marion; Jefferson, the county seat, was laid out in 1845. Bounded north by Cass, east by Louisiana, south by Harrison and west by Upshur. It is a fine cotton-producing county, with a great abundance of the best of timber. Jefferson is at the head of navigation on the Big Cypress bayou, 500 miles by water from New Orleans; and on the trans-continental branch of the Texas and Pacific railroad, sixteen miles north of Marshall, and fifty-nine miles south-west of Texarkana. Population of county in 1870, 8,562; assessed value of property in 1876, \$1,889,118. The soil of this county is not as rich generally as many others. The bayou, creek bottoms, and lands upon the lakes, are equal to any other lands in the State, producing, on an average, from 1,000 to 1,500 lbs. cotton to the acre, and the uplands from 600 to 800 lbs. to the acre. Tobacco grows well in this county. The planters generally raise an abundance of corn, the average crop being from twenty to twenty-five bushels to the acre. The lands are not well adapted to wheat, and the average is not more than ten to twelve bushels per acre. Other small grains, such as rye, oats and barley, yield plentiful crops to the farmer.

The farmers generally raise their own hogs, and have no difficulty in making as good bacon as was ever put up in Ohio or Kentucky. As to cheapness and comfort of living, we have butter, milk, eggs and poultry in abundance. This county has a great variety of timber, such as pine, oak, ash, walnut, hickory, mulberry, cedar, cypress and other forest-trees. Our best building material is pine and cypress. Grape and mulberry abound here; they are indigenous to the soil, and grow luxuriantly, indicating that wine and silk, as well as cotton and tobacco, will one day become staples of the county. Iron ore is found in this county in great abundance; the ore will yield upward of 75 per cent. One foundry, known as Nash's Iron Works, has been worked with great success. Leeds, and other iron men of New Orleans, have worked and tested this iron, and pronounce it equal to any in the world for toughness and malleability. The quantity is equal to all the demands of Texas for hundreds of years to come. The hills in which this ore abounds are covered with dense forests of pine and other timber, useful as fuel in the furnaces. Lead, copperas and copper are also found in considerable quantities. Many other sources of wealth and enjoyment are found here, and will, all in good time, be realized by her citizens. Fruits of all kinds grow well here, and of the rarest and richest kinds; the peach is unrivaled, and nowhere is it of larger growth or richer flavor; the nectarine, quince and grape are equally luxuriant; the fig, a delicious fruit, is very common, and may be raised in the greatest abundance. A great variety of berries, such as the mulberry, dewberry, whortleberry, strawberry and gooseberry, grow wild in the greatest profusion. The chincapin, walnut and hickory nuts are very abundant. The deer are still very plentiful, hence venison is very common and very cheap. Besides deer, wild turkeys are very numerous, and generally fat. Large and almost innumerable flocks of wild geese, brants, mallard and common ducks, and other water-fowl, frequent the bayous and lakes, and are so plentiful that a hunter can always furnish himself with as many of them as he desires. Partridges, pigeons, snipes and rice-birds are very plentiful. Fish of almost every character are in great abundance in the lakes and bayous. There are many mineral springs, some of which are places of much resort, and are highly appreciated for their medicinal virtues.

93. **MASON.**—Created in 1858; named for Captain Mason, of the United States Army; Mason is the county seat. Bounded on the north by M'Culloch and San Saba, east by Llano, south by Gillespie and Kimble, and west by Kimble and Menard. A military post was established at Fort Mason in 1845. When the late Civil War broke out, Robert E. Lee was in command of the fort with the 2d Dragoons. It is a stock-raising county; partially timbered, with an undulating surface; watered by the Llano and San Saba rivers and their tributaries. Population in 1870, 678; assessed value of property in 1876, \$367,514.

94. **MATAGORDA.**—An Indian name; one of the original municipalities of Texas. Bounded north by Wharton, east by Brazoria, south by the Gulf of Mexico and west by Calhoun and Jackson; Matagorda is the county seat.

It is a coast county, admirably adapted to stock-raising, and possessing some of the finest cotton and sugar lands in the State. The coast was explored by La Salle in 1686; occupied by the French under Belisle, in 1721; and by the Spaniards in 1722. The schooner "Only Son," with a number of Austin's colonists, landed on the banks of the Colorado river in 1821, and again in 1822; the last time bringing the Kincheloe family, H. Chriesman, Messrs. Rawls and Prewett. A few days later, another vessel landed, bringing Mrs. Peyton, S. M. Williams, Nicholas Clopper and others. The supplies of these colonists were left in charge of four young men, while the families ascended the river to Wharton. The young men left in charge of the provisions were killed by the Indians, and the provisions, etc., stolen and destroyed. In 1828, the Only Son brought another company of colonists, including Abram Clare, James Morgan and others. Matagorda was then under the jurisdiction of the Ayuntamiento of San Felipe, and Robert H. Williams was Alcalde. The town of Matagorda was settled in 1829, by Phillip Dimitt, S. Rhoades Fisher, H. Wooldridge, R. R. Royall, the Wards, etc. The precinct of Matagorda was formed by the Ayuntamiento of Brazoria in 1833. Decree No. 265, March 6th, 1834, created the municipality; Thomas M. Duke and Seth Ingram were Alcaldes. In 1836, Silas Dinsmore was Chief Justice. Population of the county in 1870, 3,379; assessed value of property in 1876, \$1,156,497.

95. MAVERICK.—Created in 1856; organized in 1871; named for S. A. Maverick; Eagle Pass is the county seat. Bounded north by Kinney, east by Zavalla and Dimitt, south by Webb and west by Mexico. The old San Antonio road to Presidio passes through this county; it is a stock-raising county. The International railroad has located large bodies of land in this county. Population in 1870, 1,951; assessed value of property in 1876, \$205,323.

96. M'ULLOCH.—Created in 1856; organized in 1876; named for Ben. M'Culloch; Brady City is the county seat. Bounded north by Coleman, east by San Saba, south by Mason and west by Concho. It is an agricultural and stock-raising county. It has an elevation of about 1,800 feet; Brady City is 140 miles from Austin and 150 miles from San Antonio. Population in 1870, 173; assessed value of property in 1876, \$19,840. Brady's creek, a bold mountain stream, runs centrally through it from west to east; the San Saba through its southern limits, with numerous small creeks and bold springs in all sections. A large portion of the county is divided into highlands (so-called mountains), and beautiful valleys. The whole is covered with mesquite grass, and it has an abundance of short timber. No better county for stock, and its valleys are fine for farming.

97. M'LENNAN.—Created from Milam, Limestone and Navarro, in 1850; named for Neil M'Lennan, an old settler. Bounded north by Bosque and Hill, east by Hill and Limestone, south by Falls and west by Bell and Coryell; Waco is the county seat. A village of the Waco Indians formerly occupied the site of the present city. In 1830, that village was captured and

burnt by the Texans, under Abner Kuykendall. In 1834, A. M. Stroud was authorized by President Houston to open a trading house at the village. About the time of annexation, the Messrs. Torry established a trading house there. The town was laid out by George B. Erath, in 1849. Lots then sold for \$5 each; but raised the next year to \$10. Captain Ross established a ferry across the Brazos, and settlers began to flock to the place. The county was created in 1850. By railroad, Waco is 187 miles from Houston. This is a splendid county of land, producing corn, cotton and wheat in the greatest abundance. It is healthy, well watered, and has a fair supply of timber. Population in 1870, 13,500; assessed value of property in 1876, \$4,829,991.

98. M'MULLEN.—Created 1858; named for John M'Mullen, Empresario; Tilden (formerly Colfax and Dogtown), is the county seat. Bounded north by Atascosa, east by Live Oak, south by Duval, and west by La Salle. It is watered by the San Miguel, the Frio, and Nueces rivers. It is a stock-raising county, but sparsely settled, and recently organized.

99. MEDINA.—Created from Bexar, in 1848; named for the river of the same name; Castroville, for Henry Castro, is the county seat. Bounded north by Bandera, east by Bexar and Atascosa, south by Frio and west by Uvalde. It is a farming and stock-raising county. In February, 1842, Henry Castro entered into a contract to introduce 2,000 colonists into the Republic. On the first of March, 1844, several hundred of them arrived at Castroville. Three days later the corner-stone of a Catholic church was laid by Bishop Odin. Population of the county in 1870, 2,078; assessed value of property in 1876, \$855,679. Castroville is thirty miles west of San Antonio.

100. MENARD.—Created in 1858; named for M. B. Menard, one of the founders of Galveston; Menardville is the county seat. Bounded north by Concho, east by M'Culloch and Mason, south by Kimble, and west by Crockett. This, at present, is a sparsely-settled county of small farmers and stock-raisers. It was on the San Saba river in this county, that the old San Saba Mission and silver mine existed. The mission was founded in 1734, by missionaries from Santa Fe, and broken up by the Indians in 1758. The bottom lands in the county are very rich, and capable of irrigation. Population in 1870, 667; assessed value of property in 1876, \$85,500.

It is located upon the San Saba river, which stream flows throughout the county from west to east, whilst other streams, as Otter creek, Bowie, Camp, Crawford's, Elm, Howard's, and numerous smaller creeks, tributaries of the San Saba, and in the northern portion branches of Brady's creek, afford plenty of pure water. The surface of the country is hilly, and in places quite rocky; there are fine valleys along the banks of the San Saba river, but they are not very extensive, and altogether this county is more favorable to the stock-raiser than the farmer. It presents an excellent range for horses, sheep and cattle generally. The county is well supplied with timber of the same kind as found in Kimble county.





**VIEW OF SAN ANTONIO IN 1878.**



The ruins of the old Spanish fort, "San Saba," are near the center of this county; on the north bank of the river bearing the same name, the traditional old silver-mine was located in this neighborhood.

Fort McKavitt is situated in the western portion of this county, on the south bank of the San Saba.

101. **MILAM.**—One of the original municipalities; named for B. R. Milam; Cameron, for John Cameron, is the county seat. Bounded north by Bell and Falls, east by Robertson, south by Burleson and Lee, and west by Williamson. This was in the Leftwich, afterward the Robertson grant. During the Colonial period, the town of Viesca, with a four-league grant, was laid out at a point on the Brazos river where the old Comanche trail crosses that stream. The place was afterward called Nashville, and occupied by the family of Mr. William Thomson. It is near where the International Railroad crosses the river. December 27th, 1835, the Executive Council at San Felipe created the Municipality of Milam. In 1836, Massilon Farley was Chief Justice. The town of Cameron was laid out in 1840. The county is rich in soil, well watered, has an abundance of timber. Rockdale, on the railroad, is thirty miles southwest of Hearne, and fifty-eight northeast of Austin. Population in 1870, 8,984; assessed value of property in 1876, \$1,936,661.

It is watered by a number of creeks, of large size, which unite and form Little river. The surface is rolling, and in many places black, hilly and broken; timber consists of a variety of oak, cedar, ash, and other species, being principally confined to the bottom lands; there is, however, an abundance for ordinary purposes. A large portion of the soil is dark, rich and productive; corn and cotton are the chief productions; wheat and other small grains are raised successfully. Water, more or less impregnated with minerals, and frequently hard to obtain by digging; health generally good.

102. **MONTAGUE.**—Created in 1857; named for Daniel Montague, a pioneer surveyor; Montague is the county seat. Bounded north by Indian Territory, east by Cooke, south by Wise, and west by Clay. It is in the mineral region, but has some good arable land on Red river. A silver mine is said to have been found a few miles northwest of the town. Victoria Peak is a prominent feature in the landscape. Population in 1870, 890; assessed value of property in 1876, \$541,562.

103. **MONTGOMERY.**—Created from Washington and Nacogdoches, in 1837; named for General Montgomery. Montgomery is the county seat. Bounded north by Walker, east by San Jacinto and Liberty, south by Harris, and west by Grimes. This is well watered by the San Jacinto river and its tributaries; has an inexhaustible supply of timber; and is an excellent agricultural county. The Houston and Great Northern Railroad passes through the county. Willis is forty-eight miles north of Houston. Population of county in 1870, 6,483; assessed value of property in 1876, \$1,477,744.

104. **MORRIS.**—Created from Titus in 1875; named for W. W. Morriss;

Dangerfield, named for Henry Dangerfield, Secretary of War under Houston's second administration, is the county seat. Bounded north by Red river and Bowie, east by Cass, south by Marion and Upshur, and west by Camp and Titus. Dangerfield is on the East Line Railroad, thirty miles northwest of Jefferson. Assessed value of property in 1876, \$411,776. Its characteristics similar to those of Cass and Upshur.

105. NACOGDOCHES.—From Naugdoches, an extinct tribe of Indians. Bounded north by Rusk, east by Shelby and San Augustine, south by Angelina, and west by Cherokee. A Franciscan mission, for the Naugdoches Indians, was projected by Ramon in 1715, but perhaps it was a year later before it was actually commenced. The old stone house was built for a fortress in 1778. In 1800 the first Americans settled in the neighborhood. They were Captain Dill and his son-in-law, Joseph Darst, Samuel Davenport, Robert Barr, etc. In July, 1812, the place was occupied by the Republicans under Magee; and again in June, 1819, Long took possession of the town and organized an Executive Council, consisting of Horatio Bigelow, Hamlin Cook, John Sibley, S. Davenport, Stephen Barker, John C. Burnett, J. Child, Pedro Procillo and Bernardo Gutierrez; and for a short time a news paper was published. The region around Nacogdoches was granted to Hayden Edwards to colonize, but this was broken up by the Fredonian outbreak, and the contract given to David G. Burnet. In 1833, Decree No. 240 gave the town four sitios of land. In 1831, the District of Nacogdoches was formed, including all the territory between the San Jacinto and Sabine rivers. Henry Ruig was Political Chief. This was the headquarters of East Texas, and in 1835 a Committee of Safety was formed, consisting of Frost Thorn, Sam Houston and T. J. Rusk. Redford Berry was the last Alcalde. In 1836, Charles S. Taylor was Chief Justice. During the Republic, a law firm in Nacogdoches was formed by Pinckney Henderson, T. J. Rusk and K. L. Anderson. Population of the county in 1870, 9,614; assessed value of property in 1876, \$1, 060,099.

The agricultural products are corn, cotton, every variety of grain, potatoes, peas, pumpkins, etc.; the climate, mild and temperate; the soil in the bottoms various, from the black stiff to sandy alluvial. Of the uplands, one-fourth is a deep red soil, and the remainder a sandy soil. The seasons, very regular. There is timber of all kinds—oaks, hickory, black-jack, pine, walnut, lime, gum, sassafras, dog-wood. The rivers are the Angelina and Atoyac, which are the western and eastern boundaries of the county. Cotton is very productive, and from 1,000 pounds to a bale of seed cotton can be raised to the acre; corn, from 20 to 40 bushels per acre, and wheat from 10 to 20 bushels per acre. Rice and tobacco grow luxuriantly. Wood, for fuel and fencing, is abundant. The building material is pine. Butter, milk, cheese, eggs and poultry are very cheap. Hogs are very easily raised, without any expense, and bacon is saved without difficulty.

106. NAVARRO.—Created from Robertson in 1846; named for Jose Antonio Navarro. Corsicana is the county-seat. Bounded north by Ellis, east by Henderson, south by Freestone and Limestone, and west by Hill. This is a fine agricultural and stock-raising county; well watered, and with a

moderate supply of timber. Corsicana is two hundred and ten miles north of Houston, on the Houston and Texas Central Railway. Population in 1870, 8,879; assessed value of property in 1876, \$3,770,761. Climate mild; soil fertile; seasons often too dry, and sometimes too wet. Those farmers who practice deep plowing, or sub-soiling, always secure good crops. There is a great deal of fine timber, and fine cedar-brakes of the red variety. The Trinity washes the north-eastern border of the county. Richland, one of its largest tributaries, with branches, waters nearly every part. Pasturage good, and all kinds of stock do well. Wheat, rye, oats, barley, and tobacco are all cultivated here; the two latter articles especially yield well. In many localities, wood for fuel and fencing is abundant; a good many farms altogether in the timber land. In some localities there is no timber, and the settlers in the prairies haul a considerable distance. As to building material, the people differ. They have good clay for bricks, and some good brick buildings; in some localities, plenty of limestone rock; thousands of long, tall oaks, of half a dozen kinds; the elm, pecan, hickory, hackberry, walnut, sycamore, and various other forest trees common to this latitude and to calcareous soil; no pine nearer than the sandy lands, fifty miles east or seventy-five miles south-east. Butter, milk, cheese, eggs, and poultry abundant. Hogs are easily raised by those living on the borders of the timber, and near the rivers and creeks. Away from the timber land, the corn-cribs and the barley-stacks have to make liberal contributions, or the bacon hams will be small. Here bacon hams are as good as need be, and are saved sweet and kept for two and three years.

107. **NEWTON.**—Created in 1846, from Jasper; named for Sergeant Newton of the American Revolution. Bounded north by Sabine, east by Louisiana, south by Orange, and west by Jasper. This is one of the finely timbered counties bordering on the Sabine river. Population in 1870, 2,187; assessed value of property in 1876, \$254,259.

108. **NUECES.**—Created in 1846; named from the river of the same name. Corpus Christi is the county-seat. Bounded north by Live Oak and San Patricio, east by the Gulf of Mexico, south by Cameron, and west by Duval. This is a large coast county, principally devoted to stock-raising. Corpus Christi is one hundred miles from Galveston by water, and is regularly visited by steamships. It has a railroad twenty-five miles to Banqueta. P. Dimitt was one of the first Americans to settle in this county. This was in 1841, fifteen miles below the present town. In 1842, Kinney & Aubry commenced business at Corpus Christi; and this was General Taylor's headquarters in 1846, before he removed to the Rio Grande. Lipantitlan, on the Nueces river, was occupied by Mexican troops in 1835, and captured by Lieutenant Westover. Population of the county in 1870, 3,975; assessed value of property in 1876, \$3,535,493. A number of streams flow through it into the Nueces river. The surface is undulating and sometimes level; one-tenth part supplied with scrubby mesquite. The soil is of rich sandy loam, very productive when there is a sufficiency of rain, and with early planting and deep cultivation very little rain is required; and the same

remark applies to nearly all the western coast counties. The bay bordering this county is a most beautiful sheet of water, and furnishes a great abundance of fish, oysters, etc., of the finest kind. Both health and water are good.

109. **ORANGE.**—Created in 1852; Orange is the county-seat. Bounded north by Jasper and Newton, East by Louisiana, south by Sabine Lake and Jefferson, and west by Jefferson. This is a heavily timbered county of South-eastern Texas; watered by the Sabine and Neches rivers and their tributaries. Sabine Pass is its shipping point. Orange is one hundred and five miles east of Houston, on the line of the Houston and New Orleans Railroad. Population of the county in 1870, 1,255; assessed value of property in 1876, \$395,376. This county has the rather rare advantages of navigation, as the Sabine and Neches are both navigable all the year to the full extent of this county, and every inhabitant is within fifteen miles of one or the other of these streams. The county is about equally divided between wood-land and prairie. Cotton and corn are the chief products, and are grown chiefly on farms in the timbered part of the county. Tobacco and rice are also considerable products, the latter being grown on the low hammock lands. All kinds of vegetables, and peaches and grapes, are abundant. The prairies are covered with cattle, and some sheep and horses are raised. Oranges are also among the fruits raised in gardens.

110. **PALO PINTO.**—Created in 1856; Palo Pinto is the county-seat; named for the river of the same name. Bounded north by Jack, east by Parker, south by Erath, and west by Stephens. This is a mountainous, stock-raising county, watered by the Palo Pinto and Brazos rivers, and their tributaries. Fox and Wolf peaks are about two thousand feet above the sea level. Palo Pinto is about sixty miles west of Fort Worth. Assessed value of property in 1876, \$371,736. The surface is undulating, often mountainous. The supply of timber consists in post-oak, live oak, and cedar, found in the bottoms. The soil is red loam, rich and productive everywhere, except upon the mountain ranges. Health and water remarkably good.

111. **PANOLA.**—Created in 1846; the name is Indian. Carthage is the county-seat, which was laid out in 1847 or 1848. Bounded north by Harrison, east by Louisiana, south by Shelby, and west by Rusk. Population in 1870, 10,119; assessed value of property in 1876, \$1,122,369. The surface is gently rolling and well watered by numerous springs and creeks, which flow into the Sabine in its course through the county. Inexhaustible quantities of pine are found in all sections; black walnut, oak of nearly all kinds, ash, hickory, and other varieties are also abundant. The soil is generally a sandy loam, its depth being from six to fifteen inches, with a foundation of red clay, or marl, which appears to be of nearly the same character as the red lands of Nacogdoches and San Augustine, and upon trial it has proved to be quite productive. The chief products are cotton and corn, though wheat and other grains flourish well. The average yield per acre is eight hundreds pounds of seed cotton, and twenty bushels of

corn. Peaches are abundant, and flourish finely during favorable seasons; figs and plums are also cultivated and do well, and apples and pears could doubtless be raised.

112. PARKER.—Created in 1865; named for the Parker family, of Parker's Fort; Weatherford is the county-seat. Bounded north by Jack and Wise, east by Tarrant, south by Hood, and west by Palo Pinto. This is a well watered county, somewhat mountainous, and interspersed with rich and productive valley lands; remarkably healthy, and well adapted either to agriculture or stock-raising. Weatherford is about thirty miles west of Fort Worth. Population in 1870, 4,186; assessed value of property in 1876, \$1,551,333. Corn, wheat, rye, barley and oats are the principal products of the county. Experiments have been made in regard to raising tobacco, which have resulted very favorably, the article produced being heavy, and resembling the weed raised in Virginia. Climate is mild. The soil is of two kinds—the sandy loam and black land. The first kind, well cultivated, produces the best crops of corn, while the latter produces more wheat. The wheat land produces generally twenty-five bushels per acre; the corn land about fifteen to eighteen bushels. Nearly one-half of the land is timbered, the timber being suitable for fencing and rough houses. Building material consists of brick and rock. This county ranks second to none in the State for water. The Brazos river runs through the county, and quite a number of the tributaries of the Trinity river head in this county, fine springs abound almost everywhere, and good wells can be had at about twenty-two feet deep, at which depth there is generally found a white sandstone rock.

113. PECOS—Created in 1850; organized in 1875; named from the Pecos river. Fort Stockton is the county seat. Bounded north by Tom Green, east by Crockett, south by Mexico, southwest and west by Presidio and El Paso. This county has an area of 2,600 square miles; watered by the Pecos river on the northwest and the Rio Grande on the south, both of which have numerous branches. The valleys of these rivers and of numerous creeks are capable of irrigation, and by irrigation they produce most luxuriant crops. In 1877, there were about 8,000 acres so cultivated, and the quantity can be indefinitely increased. Fort Stockton is a military post in latitude 30 deg. 50 min. north; longitude 102 deg. 35 min. west from Greenwich. It is on Comanche creek, 374 miles northwest of San Antonio, with which it is connected by semi-weekly mail stages, and 147 miles north-east of Presidio Del Norte, on the Rio Grande, in Mexico. It is 4,952 feet above the sea level. A thousand or twelve hundred people live in the neighborhood, and, by means of irrigating ditches, abundant crops are produced for their support and to supply the soldiers of the post. It has been but recently settled. Value of property in 1876, \$20,120.

114. POLK—Created from Liberty in 1846; named for J. K. Polk. Livingston is the county-seat. Bounded north by Trinity, east by Tyler, south by Hardin, and west by San Jacinto. The surface is undulating; watered

by the Trinity and tributaries of the Neches; possesses an abundance of the best of pine timber, and is a good agricultural county. Swartwout, on the Trinity, is the principal shipping point, and is about 125 miles, by water, from Galveston. Population in 1870, 8,707; assessed value of property in 1875, \$533,706. This is one of the finest and most wealthy counties of the State. Its lands are of superior quality, and nearly all well adapted to farming. Cotton and corn are the leading products here, as in all the lower counties. Some wheat and other cereals are raised. Sugar is being profitably grown by many of late years; also tobacco and all other usual products. The wild grape grows abundantly in the wooded portion of the county.

115. **PRESIDIO**—Created in 1850. Fort Davis is the county seat. Bounded on the northwest by Pecos, south and southwest by Mexico, and the northwest by El Paso. Fort Davis is a military post, 5,000 feet above the sea level, 76 miles west of Fort Stockton and 450 from San Antonio. It is a cañon of the Limpia creek. The valley, though narrow, is cultivated by irrigation, and produces well. Spencer's Rancho, on the Rio Grande, opposite Presidio Del Norte, is 100 miles southwest of Fort Davis. It is reached through a mountainous region, with but two settlements on the route. Large bodies of rich land in the Rio Grande valley are capable of irrigation, if protection could be afforded to life and property. Back from the river the mountains are precipitous, and incapable of cultivation, though the hills afford fine range for stock, especially sheep and goats. There are evidences that silver and lead ore exist in great abundance in the Chenati range of mountains. They were formerly worked by the Spaniards. Population of the county in 1870, 1,636; assessed value of property in 1876, \$181,420. This county, even since Pecos was taken from it, is as large as three or four of the smaller States of the Union.

116. **RAINS**—Created in 1870; Emory the county seat; named for Emory Rains. Bounded north by Hopkins, east by Wood, south by Van Zandt and Smith, and west by Hunt. It is watered by the head branches of the Sabine river, and is a fine agricultural county. Silver Lake is a station on the Texas and Pacific Railroad, near the southern line of the county, 118 miles west of Shreveport. Assessed value of property in 1876, \$315,574.

117. **RED RIVER**—One of the original counties. It was formerly called Pecan Point. Bounded north by the Indian Territory, east by Bowie, south by Morriss, Titus and Franklin, and west by Lamar. There were settlements at Pecan Point, on Red river, as early as 1816-17. Among those settlers were the Wright family and a brother-in-law, Judge Martin, (killed by the Indians, and his son taken prisoner). A great many of Austin's colonists stopped on Red river and made a crop before entering the interior of the province. In 1831, B. R. Milam had a rancho on the river, near the residence of Richard Ellis. Clarksville, the county seat, was laid out in 1835, and named for James Clark, an old settler. 1836, Richard Ellis represented that district in the Convention that declared the independence of Texas, and was President of the body. A. H. Latimer was also a mem-



ber of the Convention. At the same period Judge Ellis' son represented Miller county in the Legislature of Arkansas. Both lived in one house. So also, James Latimer represented the same constituency in the Arkansas Legislature. This produced no confusion; but when the Sheriff of Miller county, Arkansas, entered the county to collect taxes, in 1837, he was driven off by a mob. The citizens preferred to belong to Texas, as at that time no taxes were collected in the Republic. Red River is a fine agricultural county, about three-fourths timber and one-fourth prairie. Clarksville is 61 miles west of Texarkana, on the northern branch of the Texas and Pacific Railroad. Population of the county in 1870, 10,653; assessed value of property in 1875, \$1,686,865.

118. REFUGIO—An original county. Refugio is the county seat. Bounded north by Goliad and Victoria, east by Calhoun, south by Aransas and San Patricio, west by San Patricio and Bee. The Mission of Our Lady of Refuge was founded in 1790, and four leagues of land given to the town. A portion of the adjacent country was afterward included in Powers' grant. In 1809, according to a report of a priest in charge of the Mission, the Caranchua Indians had in the neighborhood 5,000 head of cattle and considerable land in cultivation. The mission church was a fine building, with plate-glass, and a chime of bells dated 1751. It is a stock-raising county. Population in 1870, 2,320; assessed value of property in 1876, \$872,872. The climate is both mild and healthy, this county being situated on the Gulf shore, and embracing within herself Hyne's bay, San Antonio bay, Mesquite, St. Charles, Aransas, Copano, and Mission bays, and is daily visited during the summer months by the fresh sea-breeze. The soil is rich and fertile, consisting of Sea Island cotton land, black, stiff, hog-wallow, black sandy and black loamy land, and rich bottom land, upon which grow post-oak, live-oak, black-jack, mesquite, and on the bottom land pecan, ash, elm, anaqua, hackberry, box-elder and white oak. The rivers are the San Antonio, Aransas and Mission. The Blanco, Medio, Chocolate, Willow and Salt creeks furnish abundance of water to the large herds of cattle and horses that, graze on the extensive prairies, clothed with mesquite and other grasses.

119. ROBERTSON.—Created from Milam in 1837; named for Sterling C. Robertson, Empresario. Bounded north by Falls and Limestone, east by Leon, south by Brazos and west by Milam; Calvert is the county seat. This county was on one of the old routes of travel; and during the Colonial period, there was a Mexican garrison and a few stores at Tenoxticlan, just below the present line of the county. The Strouds lived near Calvert, and in the neighborhood, the Wheelock family, the Armstrongs, Cavitts, S. W. Hill, and others. John R. Henry had a store at Franklin. Ephraim Milton lived near Dresden. The bottom lands on the Brazos, Little Brazos and Navasota are very rich; uplands undulating, and pretty well supplied with timber. Calvert is 128 miles north of Houston, on the Houston and Texas Central Railroad. Population of the county in 1870, 9,990; assessed value of property in 1876, \$3,276,169. The International Railroad passes diagonally through this county, crossing the Texas Central at Hearne.

120. **ROCKWALL.**—A small, agricultural county, created in 1873: named for an underground wall found in sinking a well. Rockwall is the county seat. Bounded north by Collin, east by Hunt, south by Kaufman and west by Dallas. Assessed value of property in 1876, \$454,814.

121. **RUSK.**—Created in 1848 from Nacogdoches; named for Thomas J. Rusk. Bounded north by Gregg and Harrison, east by Panola, south by Nacogdoches and west by Cherokee and Smith. Henderson is the county seat, and occupies the site of an old Shawnee village. Overton, on the International Railroad, is twenty two miles south-east of Longview. The county has the greatest abundance of timber, and is watered by the tributaries of the Sabine and Angelina rivers. It is a fine agricultural county. Population in 1870, 16,916; assessed value of property in 1876, \$2,005,640. The county has an inexhaustible supply of iron ore. A branch railroad, sixteen miles long, connects Henderson with Overton. There is an abundance of iron ore all over the county, and some specimens of coal or lignite, but no other minerals. There are some mineral springs, one near Mount Enterprise, which is considered very valuable, and is much resorted to by invalids for its healing qualities; there is another south-east of Mount Enterprise, some four or five miles distant, which is considered good in cases of dropsy and other diseases. The agricultural products are cotton, corn, wheat, rye, oats, barley, potatoes and tobacco. These are raised in large quantities, and for market. The Chinese and African sugar-cane grow well, and most of the farmers make their own syrup. Rice is grown only by a few of the farmers. Buckwheat grows finely, and yields well, but very few persons raise it. The winters are variable; there is sometimes snow and sleet, which generally melts in a day or two. The average of summer heat is about 80 degrees of Fahrenheit. The rains are generally seasonable, and crops never suffer much either from drought or excess of rain. The soil is generally sandy, but there are some gravelly red lands with clayey soil. The creeks and rivers are bounded by narrow bottom-lands of alluvial soil. The county is covered over with all varieties of timber, such as different oaks, hickory, walnut, cypress, cane, pine and twenty other kinds.

122. **SABINE.**—The municipality of Sabine was created by the Executive Council December 15th, 1835; Milam is the county seat. Bounded north by Shelby, east by Louisiana, south by Newton, and west by San Augustine. This is a heavily-timbered, agricultural county. Population in 1870, 3,256; assessed value of property in 1876, \$326,061.

123. **SAN AUGUSTINE.**—San Augustine is the county seat. Bounded north by Shelby, east by Sabine, south by Jasper and Angelina, and west by Nacogdoches. As early as 1826, there was an Alcalde's District on Ayish bayou. San Augustine was laid out by T. S. M'Farland in 1833. Decree No. 265, March 6th, 1834, created the municipality. The Aes, or Ayish Mission Dolores, was founded in 1717. The surface of the county is undulating; well watered and timbered; and the land is productive. Population



**COURT HOUSE AT AUSTIN, TEXAS.**



in 1870, 4,196; assessed value of property in 1876, \$978,384. The county of San Augustine is situated between the bayou Apolygotch on the east and the Altoyac river on the west. In the central part of this county is a ridge of red lands, extending the entire length of the county; the nature of this soil is very excellent for farming, as it constitutes what geologists term a table-land of the richest upland in the State. A great portion of this red land has been cultivated for thirty years, and still yields an abundant harvest of produce to the industrious laborer. The remaining lands are gray and very fertile. The county is intersected by never-failing streams, every three or four miles, running from the north to the south. The lands immediately on these streams are bottom, and are similar to the delta lands of Louisiana, being of the most fertile character, and containing the same growth, namely, cypress, magnolia, oak, hickory, walnut, wild cherry, sumac and cane-brakes, which were originally almost impenetrable, but are now much thinned by the cattle. The bottoms vary in width from 100 yards to 1,000 yards; adjacent to the bottoms are generally to be found hummocks, with timber of a smaller character to the bottoms, with the exception of the ever-greens, cypress, canes and white oaks. These hummocks constitute the finest upland farms in the State, when the locality is free from liability to wash. Between the bottom hummocks and the next bottom and hummock are found the finest pineries in the world, both the long and short leaf; occasionally may be found flats in these pineries, where may be seen fine post-oaks. The geological period is part of the limestone and the sandstone; in the latter are to be found large deposits of shells, denoting the previous existence of a vast amount of animalcula. The products are corn, cotton, wheat, rye, oats, potatoes, pumpkins and peanuts.

124. SAN JACINTO.—Created in 1870; Cold Springs the county seat. Bounded north by Trinity, east by Polk, south by Liberty, and west by Montgomery and Walker. This is a fine agricultural county, lying on the Trinity river. The Houston and Great Northern Railroad passes along near the western line of the county. Assessed value of property in 1875, \$479,921.

125. SAN PATRICIO.—San Patricio the county seat. This was settled by Irish colonists introduced by M'Mullen & M'Gloin. Four leagues of land were given to the town. Decree No. 283, April, 1834, created the municipality. The settlement was broken up during the Revolutionary period of 1835-36, but was re-established during the Republic. County bounded north by Live Oak and Bee, east by Refugio and Aransas, south-east by the Gulf of Mexico, and south-west by Nueces. Population in 1870, 625; assessed value of property in 1876, \$745,774. This is a coast and stock-raising county, between the Nueces river on the west and the Aransas on the east. It has considerable very good land, but like Nueces county, the droughts of summer are too frequent to make agriculture a reliable or a profitable pursuit. There is but little cotton raised, and yet it has good lands for upland and sea-island cotton. The few inhabitants are all engaged in stock-raising, and in this pursuit they make large profits, and soon

become independent with very little labor. They easily raise all they require of the necessaries of life; such as corn, potatoes, vegetables, etc., while the proceeds of the annual increase of their stock is nearly all clear profit. Nearly half the county is covered with timber, such as live-oak and various other growths, but mesquite is the principal. The only building lumber is imported through Corpus Christi, which is the place of trade. There is a peculiar feature in this county, called the "Brasada," being an area of upland of about thirty-one square miles. It is covered with a thick growth of mesquite, interspersed with chaparral and the prickly pear. The land is a rich, dark loam, and would undoubtedly produce well; but scarcely any of it is cultivated, owing to the labor of clearing and preparing the ground. The Nueces is a small but navigable stream up to San Patricio town, the only obstruction being the reef between Nueces and Corpus Christi bays. No county can surpass this in health.

126. SAN SABA.—Created from Bexar in 1856; San Saba, on the river of the same name, is the county seat. Bounded north by Brown, east by Lampasas, south by Llano and Mason, and west by M'Culloch.\* This is a hilly county, with some extensive cedar brakes. It is well adapted to wheat, etc. Population in 1870, 1,425; assessed value of property in 1876, \$710,065. This county is situated about 100 miles north-west from the capital of the State, and bounded on the east by the Colorado river. The surface has the usual inequalities of the north-western counties; consisting of hills and valleys, the soil of the valleys being very productive. The county is well supplied with water by the Colorado and San Saba rivers, and their small tributaries, and by numerous fine springs. Some of the springs are of white sulphur water, and one of them is considered fully equal in its healing properties to any in the United States. Considerable of the valley land may be easily irrigated, and this circumstance gives such lands great value. No more beautiful and productive farms can be found in the world than can be made in the San Saba valley, and from other irrigable lands in the county. The county is well supplied with all kinds of oak timber, elm, hickory, pecan, black cedar, etc.

127. SHACKLEFORD.—Created in 1858; organized in 1875; Fort Griffin is the county seat; named for Dr. Shackelford, Captain in Fannin's command. Bounded north by Haskell and Throckmorton, east by Stephens, south by Callahan, and west by Jones. For ten years there has been a military post at Fort Griffin; but it is only recently that this county has begun to fill up with permanent settlers. The lands are very rich. Population in 1870, 456; assessed value of property in 1876, \$108,472. It is situated upon the Clear Fork of Brazos and Hubbard's creek, and includes a large portion of the very fertile valley of this stream. The *Clear Fork* enters the county from the west; and taking up the Elm Fork, flows out into the north. The abandoned Fort "*Phantomhill*," lies between these two streams, near

\* The old Mission and Fort of San Saba is in Menard county.

their junction, and near the west line of Shackelford county. Willow, Cornellus, Baker's, Bonito, Jews, Parody, Lind, Cruizbaur, Crosby's, Hanover and Panther creeks drain the western portion of this county, and are tributaries of the Clear Fork. The east is watered by Asylum, or West Fork of Hubbard's creek, by James, Mills, Panther, McKinney, Foyles, Trout and many other creeks, all furnishing clear and cool water. The "divide" between the waters of Clear Fork and those of Hubbard's creek is an elevated range of hills, densely timbered, and affording plenty of limestone and sandstone rock for all building purposes.

128. SHELBY.—One of the original counties; name changed from Teueha to Shelby by Executive Council in January, 1835; named for General Shelby of Kentucky; Center is the county seat. When the name was changed, Emory Rains and James English were appointed Judges, and George O. Lusk, Chief Justice of the county. Bounded north by Panola, east by Louisiana, south by Sabine and San Augustine, and west by Nacogdoches. This is in what was formerly called the Red Lands, and the soil is very productive; undulating surface, well timbered. In 1842-45, this county was very much disturbed by the conflicts between the "Regulators," who took the punishment of criminals into their own hands, and the "Moderators," who attempted to counteract the opposite party. A good many lives were sacrificed before the supremacy of civil law was restored. Trade is carried on by water down the Sabine river, by steamboats. Population in 1870, 5,732; assessed value of property in 1876, \$823,546. There is some iron ore in this county, but it has not yet been tested as to its quality. There is also lignite coal. The agricultural products are corn, cotton, rye, oats, barley, Irish and sweet potatoes, tobacco, peas and all kinds of vegetables in abundance. Rice is also raised on the low, marshy lands; also the ribbon and Chinese sugar-cane, from which an abundance of fine syrup is made; but no sugar as yet, though this might easily be done. The products raised for market are chiefly cotton and tobacco. The climate is nearly the same as the other coast counties of Eastern Texas, mild and healthful, with snow and ice very rarely in winter. The seasons are generally favorable for crops; droughts sometimes, but not often, cut short the crops.

129. SMITH.—Created from Nacogdoches in 1846; named for General James Smith; Tyler, for John Tyler, is the county seat. Bounded north by Wood and Upshur, east by Gregg and Rusk, south by Cherokee, and west by Henderson and Van Zandt. This is a wealthy and populous agricultural county, with an abundance of timber, good water and a rich soil. The sessions of the Supreme Court of the State for East Texas meet at Tyler, and also the United States District Court. Zavalla, on the International Railroad, is 35 miles southwest of Longview, and a branch road runs through the county *via* Tyler, from Zavalla to Mineola, on the Texas and Pacific Railroad, near the northwest line of the county. Population in 1870, 16,532; assessed value of property in 1876, \$2,452,283.

130. SOMERVELL.—A small agricultural and stock-raising county, created

in 1875; named for Alexander Somervell. Bounded north by Hood, east by Johnson, south by Bosque, and west by Erath. Glenrose is the county seat. It is on the Paluxy creek, two miles from the Brazos river. The county has an abundance of timber, and the best of soil and water. Assessed value of property in 1876, \$182,313.

131. **STARR.**—Created from Nueces in 1848; named for James H. Starr, a pioneer settler; Rio Grande City is the county seat. Bounded north by Duval and Nueces, east by Hidalgo, southwest by Mexico, and west by Zapata. This is a stock-raising county of the southwest, though farming is carried on to a limited extent. It is a large county, having an area of over 2,000 square miles. There is a military post at Ringgold Barracks, on the river, 130 miles from Corpus Christi. Rio Grande City is 100 miles from Brownsville. The river is navigable during most of the year to Roma in this county. Population, mostly Mexican, in 1870, 4,154; assessed value of property in 1876, \$981,666.

132. **STEPHENS.**—Created in 1858; named for A. H. Stephens, (formerly called Buchanan); Breckenridge is the county seat. Bounded north by Throckmorton and Young, east by Palo Pinto, south by Eastland, and west by Shackelford. It is a well-watered stock-raising county. Population in 1870, 330; assessed value of property in 1876, \$3,390.

This county contains some of the finest lands in Northwestern Texas. The valleys on Hubbard's creek are never forgotten by one who sees them. Level almost as a billiard-table, and covered with the finest of mesquite grass, which remains green nearly all winter, it would be difficult to find anything more beautiful and picturesque. East Hubbard's creek and its tributaries water the western and middle portions of the county. The east portion of the county is diversified with hills and valleys, with some fine running branches. The greater portion of the land was located and surveyed by the Texan Emigration and Land Company, or for the State University and Asylum lands.

133. **TARRANT.**—Created in 1849; named for E. H. Tarrant; Fort Worth is the county seat. Bounded north by Wise and Denton, east by Dallas, south by Johnson, and west by Parker. It was taken from Navarro. Bird's Fort was settled about the time of annexation. It is a well-watered county, the Trinity river meandering through it; and well adapted to stock-raising or agriculture. Fort Worth, 32 miles west of Dallas, is the present western terminus of the Texas Pacific Railroad. Population of county, in 1870, 5,788; assessed value of property in 1876, \$3,454,603.

134. **TRUS.**—Created from Red River, in 1846; named for an old settler; Mount Pleasant is the county seat. Bounded north by Red River, east by Morris, south by Camp, and west by Franklin. It is a well-timbered, well-watered agricultural county. Population in 1870, 11,339; assessed value of property in 1876, \$672,158.



135. **TOM GREEN.**—Created in 1874; Ben Ficklin is the county seat. This is an immense county in size, laid out in the mineral region of Western Texas. Ben Ficklin, (Fort Concho) is 215 miles northwest of San Antonio. It is a military post connected with San Antonio by regular mail stages. Colonel Shafter represents that there are in this county numerous springs of water, and that besides its undeveloped mineral wealth, it will become a good stock county. Assessed value of property in 1876, \$95,700.

Mrs. Tankersley's commodious stone residence is situated on the bank of the main Concho river, surrounded by extensive fields, which have been cultivated, though not very successfully, irrigation being required in this elevated latitude to make farming a success. A windmill which works a pump serves to irrigate sufficient land to supply the family with vegetables of a superior quality. The military post Fort Concho is now occupied as General Grierson's headquarters. The post is situated in the forks of North Concho and Middle Concho, which, after uniting, form the main Concho. There are about 500 negro soldiers at the post at this time, officered with whites. The post is beautifully situated on an elevated plain. The officers' quarters, hospital, and other buildings are of stone. A number of the officers have their families with them, and well-dressed ladies and beautiful and well-trained children are often seen in groups listening to the music of the band during dress parade.

136. **TRAVIS.**—Created from Bastrop, in 1840; named for William B. Travis; Austin, for Stephen F. Austin, is the county seat. Bounded north by Williamson, southeast by Bastrop, southwest by Hays, and northwest by Blanco and Burnet. In 1836, William Barton settled at Barton Springs, on the west side of the Colorado river, where he died in 1840. In the same year that Barton settled on the west side of the river, the Hornsby's settled on the prairie which bears their name. Two years later a village called Waterloo was laid out on the river. In 1839, Austin was selected as the capital by a commission appointed by the Texan Congress. On the very night in which the Commissioners visited Austin to locate the new capital, Mrs. Coleman and her son were killed by the Indians, near Hornsby's prairie. In 1840, the government was transferred to Austin from Houston; but in 1842, President Houston returned with his Cabinet to Houston, where Congress soon afterward assembled. The citizens opposed the removal of the government archives from their city, and in 1844, the Land Office was reopened in that city. On the first of July, 1845, the officers of the government returned to Austin, where they have remained ever since. Travis county is a rolling prairie county, well adapted to agriculture or stock-raising. The buildings belonging to the different departments of the government occupy a commanding position on Capitol Hill. In the neighborhood of the city are located the asylums for lunatics, the blind and the deaf and dumb. Population of the county in 1870, 13,153; assessed value of property in 1876, \$11,677,943. Austin is 165 miles from Houston, on the Western Branch of the Texas Central Railroad, and is the present southwestern terminus of the International Railroad, 260 miles from Longview.

Travis county contains a great variety of soil, surface and timber. Some sections are rocky and mountainous, with here and there clusters of the various species of oak and cedar; while others are slightly rolling, and heavily timbered with live, post-oak and cedar. The bottoms are generally timbered with hickory, hackberry, elm, cypress, etc., but there is a large surface of prairie, dotted with farms in a high state of cultivation, and with extensive and expensive improvements. This county is well watered; the streams Bee, Boggy, Bear, Barton, Bull, Shoal, Cow, Cross, Dry, Gilleland, Onion, Big and Little Walnut, Williamson, Wilbarger and Waller, all run through parts of it, all emptying into the Colorado.

187. TRINITY.—Created from Houston, in 1850. Pennington is the county seat. Bounded north by Houston, east by Angelina, south by Tyler and Polk, and west by San Jacinto and Walker. The surface is undulating and covered with a dense growth of pine and other timber; well-watered by the Trinity and Neches rivers and their tributaries. Trinity station on the International & Great Northern Railroad, is 87 miles from Houston. Population in 1870, 4,141; assessed value of property in 1876, \$654,044.

188. TYLER.—Created from Liberty in 1846; named for John Tyler. Woodville is the county-seat. It is one of the heavily-timbered, and well-watered counties of East Texas. Bounded north by Angelina, east by Jasper, south by Hardin, and west by Polk. Population in 1870, 5,010; assessed value of property in 1876, \$507,258. There is an excellent sulphur spring in the northern part of the county, near Mount Hope. It would be an excellent watering-place if conveniently fitted up and attended to properly. The agricultural products of this county are corn, cotton, rye, oats, potatoes, peas, etc., all of which grow well and yield abundantly. The climate is mild and pleasant, and the soil of almost every variety and quality; black bottom, gray, sandy bottom, black prairie, hummock, etc.—The seasons are generally regular, and a failure of crops on account of floods or drought is exceedingly rare. Timber is plentiful, and of the best quality, and of every variety. The Neches river bounds the county on the north and east, and is navigable generally from four to six months in the year for small boats. There are numerous fine creeks traversing the county, and any number of springs and branches, making this county one among the best-watered counties in the State. The pasturage is inferior, and cattle and horses do not do well upon it; hogs and sheep do well. But very little wheat has been raised here, though as far as the experiment has been made it has done well. Rye, oats, and tobacco are raised successfully, and in considerable abundance. Pine is the best building material. A family can live here comfortably and cheap—as much so as in almost any other portion of the world. Butter, milk, cheese, eggs, poultry, etc., can be had in abundance, as there is no market for them. It costs but little to raise hogs, as the mast is usually good; bacon is saved without loss or trouble.

189. UPSHUR.—Created from Harrison and Nacogdoches in 1846. Gilmer is the county-seat. Named for Abel P. Upshur of Tyler's cabinet. It is

bounded north by Camp, east by Marion, south by Gregg and Smith, and west by Wood. During the colonial period this section of country was occupied by the Cherokee and Caddo Indians. In 1835 Mr. John Cotton settled on Big Cow bayou, and the next year Isaac Moody settled on the Cherokee tract. O. T. Boulware established a trading-post near Mr. Cotton's, in 1838. After the Cherokees were expelled in 1839, the country rapidly settled up. The land is well adapted to agriculture, is well watered, and has an abundant supply of timber. The Texas and Pacific railroad passes through the southern part of the county, having a station at Big Sandy. Population in 1870, 12,039; assessed value of property in 1876, \$959,449. The soil, for the most part, is a sandy gray loam, varying in depth from one to ten feet, and is very productive. Corn, cotton, wheat, rye, oats, barley, rice, tobacco, and potatoes, when properly cultivated and planted, yield an abundance. As an average, on uplands, the yield of corn is about fifteen bushels per acre; cotton, seven hundred pounds; wheat, from seven to ten bushels. The county generally is covered with a dense growth of forest trees, among which predominate oaks of every variety, hickory and pine. The latter is used for building-purposes entirely, though occasionally a brick edifice appears. With few exceptions, the county supplies its own provisions, on account of the ease with which bacon is saved. But few have large stocks of cattle, for want of winter range. With the essentials of life, such as the produce of the barn-yard, dairy, etc., every household is bountifully supplied. The county is watered by the Sabine, the two Cypresses, and Sandy creek, the latter a tributary of the Sabine, abounding in fish at all seasons. Good freestone water is to be had everywhere by digging from ten to forty feet, and fine springs are occasionally to be found; but, as a general rule, their waters are not used, as well-water is cooler.

140. UVALDE.—Created from Bexar in 1850, and named for a Mexican Colonel, who gained a victory over the Indians in the Uvalde canon. Uvalde is the county-seat. Bounded north by Edwards and Bandera, east by Medina, south by Zavalla, and west by Kinney. The county was settled in 1850, by Messrs. Ware, Hill, Robinson, Angler, Thompson, Reading, Black, and others. About two-thirds of the county is prairie; the soil is good, and in the creek valleys, susceptible of irrigation. It is a fine stock county. Uvalde is sixty-five miles west of San Antonio. Population in 1870, 851; assessed value of property in 1876, \$650,586. This county is very well watered by the Sabinal, Comanche, and Leona streams, with a few others, and has great advantages for stock-raising, on account of its fine grass and stock-water. Fort Inge is in the southern part, on the Leona. It is not adapted to agriculture, though there are some fine lands, but the seasons are too dry.

141. VAN ZANDT.—Created in 1848, and named for Isaac Van Zandt. Wills is the county-seat. It is bounded north by Hunt and Rains, east by Smith, south by Henderson, and west by Kaufman. The surface is rolling; is well watered, and pretty well supplied with timber, and the soil is pro-

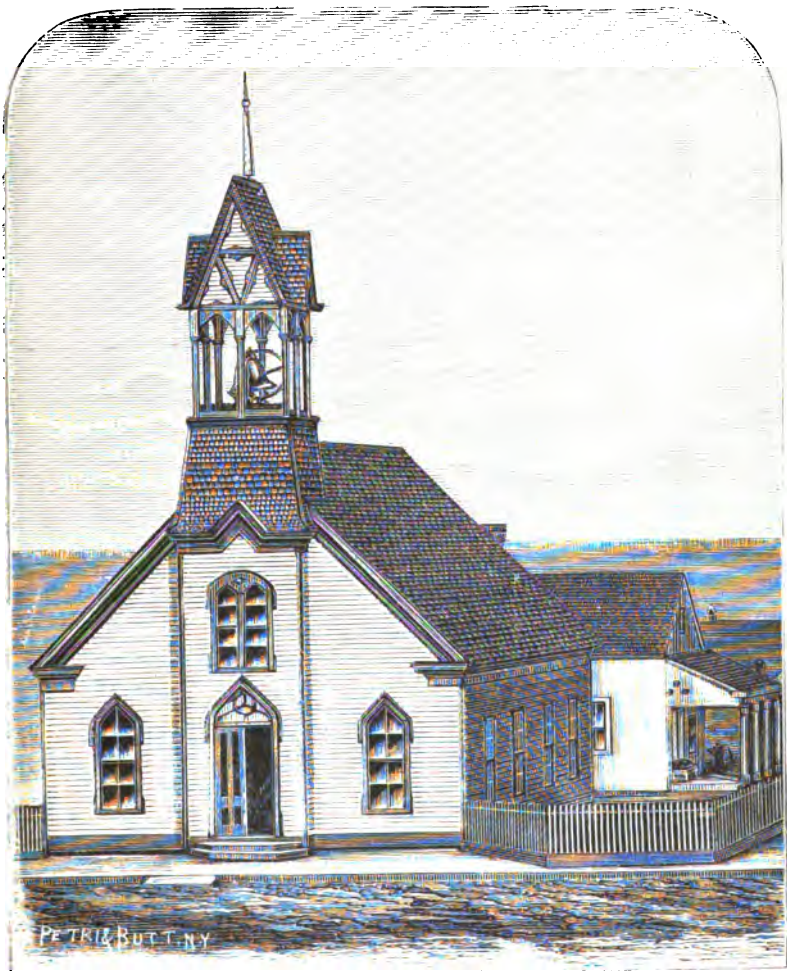
ductive. Wills, the new county-seat, is one hundred and forty miles west of Shrevesport, on the Texas and Pacific railroad. The population of the county in 1870, was 6,444; assessed value of property in 1876, \$1,454,497.

142. VICTORIA.—Bounded north by De Witt, east by Jackson, south by Calhoun, and west by Goliad. Victoria is the county-seat. It is conjectured that the Mission San Francisco was commenced on the Garcitas creek, in this county, in 1690, by Alonzo de Leon, as some old works still remain there. In 1714, Don Domingo Ramon founded the Mission of "Our Lady of Guadalupe," at Mission Valley, partly for the benefit of the Tonkawa Indians of the neighborhood, who then cultivated some land and possessed horses and cattle, and partly to irrigate the valley for cultivation. The county was included in the empresario grant of Martin de Leon, and the settlement received the name of De Leon's Rancho. In 1825 four leagues of land were set apart for the town of Victoria. In 1835, the judges appointed by the Convention were Placido Benevedes and Francisco Cardinas; commissioners, Sylvester de Leon, and J. M. Caravahal. In 1836, John M'Henry was Chief Justice. John Linn was Alcalde. Both these gentlemen are still (1878) living in the county. Before the Revolution the De Leon family were said to have been worth a half million of dollars. The county is level and mostly prairie; and well adapted to agriculture and stock-raising. Victoria is forty miles from Indianola, on the M. G. & E. G. R. R. Population of county in 1870, 4,860; assessed value of property in 1876, \$2,088,548.

143. WALKER—Created from Montgomery in 1846; named for Robert J. Walker, of Tyler's cabinet. Huntsville is the county seat. Bounded north by Madison and Trinity, east by San Jacinto, south by Montgomery, and west by Grimes. The principal State penitentiary is at Huntsville, which is connected by a branch railroad with Phelps, on the H. & G. N. Railroad, seventy-five miles from Houston. Surface of county undulating; well watered and timbered. Population in 1870, 9,776; assessed value of property in 1876, \$1,518,523.

144. WALLER—Created principally from Austin in 1873; named for Edwin Waller. Hempstead is the county seat. It is fifty miles from Houston, on the Houston and Texas Central Railroad, and from this place the Western Branch road leaves the Central for the city of Austin, 115 miles distant. Bounded north by Grimes, east by Harris, south by Forth Bend, and west by Austin. This county has an immense body of rich land on the Brazos river and its tributaries; surface flat, but affording, in the prairies, fine range for stock. Assessed value of property in 1876, \$1,622,192.

145. WASHINGTON.—Brenham, named for Dr. R. F. Brenham, is the county seat. Bounded north by Lee and Burleson, east by Grimes, south by Austin, and west by Fayette. In 1821, a ferry was established at Washington by Andrew Robinson and John W. Hall, and the families of Gates, Kaykendall, Whitesides, Byrd and others settled in the neighborhood. The



**METHODIST CHURCH AND PARSONAGE, CORPUS CHRISTI, TEXAS.**



first land cultivated was at Clay Place, near Independence, in 1822, by Martin Vernor and Moses Shipman. There were in the neighborhood the Clampit, Hensley, Cooper, Ross, York, Walker, Stephenson, Hope, Lawrence and other families. The first tract of land run off in Austin's colony was by H. Chriesman, October 1st, 1823—the tract settled and still occupied (1878) by Amos Gates. In 1828, J. P. Cole became Alcalde, and he was Chief Justice in 1836. The county originally extended to the Trinity on the east, and from Harris on the south to the old San Antonio road on the north. It is one of the wealthiest and most populous counties in the State. Population in 1870, 23,104; assessed value of property in 1876, \$4,736,884.

146. WEBB—Created from Nueces in 1848; named for James Webb. Laredo is the county seat. Bounded north by Maverick and Dimitt, east by La Salle and Encinal, south by Zapata, and west by Mexico. Laredo is 140 miles west of Corpus Christi and 165 miles southwest of San Antonio. It was settled by Mexicans in 1740. In 1767, Governor Pelacios, of New Santander, visited the place and distributed land to the settlers. To each family he gave a lot in the town and a tract on the Rio Grande, 1,000 yards in front and 30,000 in depth. Tomas Sanches was appointed Alcalde. Friendly relations were established with the Indians. The laws of the Republic were never extended over the territory west of the Nueces river. In 1842, Laredo was, for a short time, occupied by General Somervell, in command of the Texas troops. In 1846, it was again captured by Captain Gillespie, of the Rangers, when on the way to join General Taylor at the mouth of the river. In 1847, it was occupied by the soldiers of the United States, under General Lamar. Since that time it has been under the jurisdiction of the State. It is adapted to stock-raising. Population in 1870, 2,615; assessed value of property in 1876, \$432,661.

147. WHARTON—Created in 1846 from Colorado, Jackson, and Matagorda counties; named for William H. and J. A. Wharton. Wharton is the county seat. Bounded north by Colorado and Fort Bend, east by Fort Bend, south by Matagorda, and west by Jackson. Wharton, the county seat, was settled by the Kincheloe family in 1822. The lands on Old Caney and Peach creeks and the Colorado river are considered equal to any in the State. About one-half of the county is timbered and the other prairie. East Bernard Station, on the Sunset Railroad, is sixty miles west of Houston. Population in 1870, 3,426; assessed value of property in 1876, about \$500,000. The principal products are corn, cotton and sugar.

148. WILLIAMSON—Created from Milam in 1846; named for R. M. Williamson. Georgetown, named for George W. Glasscock, is the county seat. Bounded north by Bell, east by Milam, south by Lee and Travis, and west by Burnet. The surface is undulating; one-third timber, rich soil, and well watered. Round Rock, on the International and Great Northern Railroad, is seventeen miles northeast of Austin. Population of the county in 1870, 6,368; assessed value of property in 1876, \$2,809,464.

149. **WILSON.**—Created in 1860; named for James C. Wilson. Floresville is the county seat. Bounded north by Bexar and Guadalupe, east by Gonzales, south by Karnes, and west by Atascosa. The surface is gently undulating; pretty well supplied with timber, and well adapted to agriculture or stock-raising. Population in 1870, 2,556; assessed value of property in 1876, \$830,915. The people derive their income about equally from farming and stock-raising. The soil is generally good and well watered, and the timber sufficient for fencing, but the best building material is a fine quality of stone. There are some five or six sulphur springs of superior quality, and much resorted to by invalids. Corn and cotton are the leading staples here, as elsewhere in the State. Sugar-cane is grown, and tobacco succeeds well. Grapes and peaches abound; other fruits are also raised. The San Antonio river passes through this county; which, with the Cibolo and some smaller streams and springs, supply the county with water.

150. **WISE.**—Created in 1846 from Denton and Cooke; named for Henry A. Wise. Decatur is the county seat. Bounded north by Montague, east by Denton, south by Tarrant and Parker, and west by Jack. This county is in the "upper cross-timbers;" watered by the west fork of the Trinity river; and contains large bodies of excellent prairie and timber land. Fort Worth, fifty miles from Decatur, is the nearest railroad station. Population in 1870, 1,450; assessed value of property in 1876, \$897,096. Decatur is situated some five miles northeast from the center of the county, on a tall hill overlooking the broad prairie known as the "Grand Prairie," extending from the "lower" to the "upper cross-timbers," and spreading itself over a rich and fertile country, covering the principal portion of the eastern half of the county, as well as the "upper cross-timbers," spreading themselves entirely over the West Fork valley, the eastern border of which reaches to within one mile of town, covering the entire western portion of the county. The West Fork of the Trinity river is a considerable stream; Sandy enters the county five miles east of the northwest corner; Denton creek enters the county fourteen west of the southeast corner; Cattell's creek rises about three miles north from Decatur; Sweet-water rises about two miles southeast from town and intersects Cattell's about eight miles east; Oliver rises about five miles southeast from town, and crosses the east line of the county nine miles north from the southeast corner. The latter three are perpetual running streams, of pure, cool, and clear water, fed by numerous springs issuing from the banks, generally not more than a half or three-quarters of a mile apart. Good well-water may be obtained almost anywhere by digging from fifteen to twenty-five feet deep. The face of the county is high and broken. The streams have immense fall, and the banks are high, rendering even the creek-bottoms entirely free from overflow, and hence entirely free from those impurities which originate in localities where stagnated water is common. The climate is delightful. The winters are mild, except occasional "northers," which are rather severe, but seldom last longer than twenty-four or thirty-six hours. In summer, we nearly always have a cool and exhilarating south breeze astir. The soil is varied from the rich loam of the valleys and fertile black lands of the high prairies to the



chocolate-sandy in the post-oak woods. The principal timber is post-oak, burr-oak, pecan, walnut, white or cedar-elm, red-elm, cotton-wood, Spanish oak, and some short live-oak. Each running stream through the prairie is skirted along its banks with timber sufficient to furnish the prairie portion with fuel and considerable fencing-timber. The county is more than half timbered.

151. **WOOD.**—Created from Van Zandt in 1850; named for George T. Wood. Quitman is the county seat. Bounded north by Hopkins and Franklin, east by Upshur, south by Smith, and west by Rains. Mineola, on the Texas and Pacific Railroad, is 111 miles west of Shreveport. Population in 1870, 6,894; assessed value of property in 1876, \$1,150,765. Corn, cotton, wheat, oats, rye, barley, and potatoes are all produced in abundance; corn and cotton take the lead. The climate of Wood county is the same of all the district lying between Trinity and Red rivers. The soil is of three varieties, namely, a dark ferruginous soil, a gray sandy soil, and a dark lime soil. The first embraces the best farming portion of the county, and includes the northern and northeastern portions of the county. The gray soil lies mostly on the eastern boundary of the county, and is famous for its first quality of pine timber. The black lime land lies west of the lake fork of Sabine river, and includes a portion of prairie land finely adapted to farming and grazing. The varieties of timber are oak, pine, hickory, ash, walnut, elm, bitter pecan, sweet gum, and maple. The Sabine constitutes the southern boundary of the county; its tributaries are Big Sandy, Little Sandy, and Lake Fork; and the tributaries of Lake Fork inside of the county are Dry creek, Caney, Running creek, and Brushy.

152. **YOUNG.**—Created from Denton and Cooke, in 1856; named for William Coker Young; Graham, for Augustus Graham, the proprietor, is the county seat. Bounded north by Archer, east by Jack, south by Palo Pinto and Stephens, and west by Throckmorton. This is one of the most desirable of the new counties in the northwestern portion of Texas; having a large proportion of excellent arable land. Before the late war, a military post was kept up at Fort Belknap; and the Indian reserves were on the fine lands on the Brazos river, in this county. Graham was settled in 1875. It is a station for the United States Signal Service, and is destined to become an important city. Its altitude is about 1,000 feet above the sea level. Assessed value of property in 1876, \$892,202.

Corn, wheat, oats, rye and barley are the principal products of the county. Cotton is cultivated to a limited extent only, because the cereals pay better in consequence of a nearer market. From the Belknap mountain on the west is the rolling or undulating prairie, extending one hundred miles north to Red river. The top of Twin mountain, in the edge of town, commands a view around of some 25 or 30 miles, circling the lofty peaks of the Brazos, rich sublime and enchanting to the eye of the fortunate one. Think of 120 miles of river front in this county alone, necessarily affording thousands of acres of the richest bottom lands, beside abundant water. There are also a number of springs scattered over the county. The sheep bus-

ness is keeping pace with the progress of the age. Forty thousand head have been located within forty miles of Graham during the last six months—doing well, all of them.

153. ZAPATA.—Created in 1868; named for a patriot Mexican who distinguished himself in the war for the establishment of the Republic of the Rio Grande. Bartolo is the county seat. Bounded north by Webb and Encinal, southeast by Starr, and southwest by Mexico. It is a stock-raising county on the Rio Grande. Population in 1870, 1,488; assessed value of property in 1875, \$458,958.

## UNORGANIZED COUNTIES.

---

Besides the vast territory included in what is called "the Pan Handle," there are seventeen unorganized counties, situated in different parts of the State. Some of these are rapidly settling up, and will soon be organized.

1. **ARCHER.**—Created in 1858; named for Dr. Branch T. Archer. A late letter says: "On Holliday creek, in Archer county, we found large bodies of rich valley land, not an acre as yet in cultivation. We found the best large body of land in our line of travel on this creek and its tributaries. From Ikard's we traveled up Beaver creek, passing over a rough country, covered with mesquite brush and mesquite grass. This section is well watered and affords good shelter in winter for stock, and is a fine stock country. There are some fine valley lands on Beaver creek, and enough timber for fire wood, but no fencing or building timber." Bounded east by Clay, south by Young, west by Baylor, and north by Wichita.

2. **BAYLOR.**—Named for Henry W. Baylor; bounded north by Wilbarger, east by Archer; south by Throckmorton, and west by Knox. Created in 1858. Value of property in 1876, 816,610. It is drained nearly entirely by the Brazos river and its tributaries, Antelope, Miller's, Paint, and other creeks. The Big Wichita river passes through its northern limits from west to east. The soil is red loam, in many places with veins of gypsum. The county is generally well watered, although the elevated portion of the "divides" are sometimes dry, and the water of the Brazos, Big Wichita and some of their tributaries is, on account of its salt and brackish taste, unfit for the use of man. An elevated narrow ridge divides the Brazos and Big Wichita, which streams run parallel for some distance, and are at the nearest point only seven miles apart. The timber is as described in Archer county. The general character of the county is an undulating prairie, and it is well adapted for pastoral and agricultural purposes. It will soon be organized.

3. **CONCHO.**—Named from its principal river, Concho (shell); created in 1858; value of property in 1876, \$10,138.

This county is situated upon the waters of Colorado and Concho rivers, west of McCulloch county. The northern half of this county comprises a beautiful prairie valley; its prevailing timber and grass are mesquite; whilst the southern portion is hilly and broken. In this part of the county there is plenty of good timber, such as live-oak, post-oak, black-jack, etc., and good limestone rock for building purposes.

The soil in the south of the county is black; in the northern parts, choc-

olate and red loam. The principal streams are, the Colorado in the north-eastern corner, the Concho river, with its tributaries Kickapoo, Cottonwood, Eola, Snake, Erika, Blanch and other creeks; Brady's creek in the south, and another creek in the east of the county. Concho river is a beautiful stream of clear and pure water, here from fifty to seventy-five feet wide; it has in many places considerable fall, and could turn a great amount of machinery. Along this river there is a considerable quantity of walnut, pecan, elm, post-oak and other timber; timber of the same kind is also found along the Colorado and the smaller streams of this county, but in less quantity. There are a great many fine and bold running springs of pure water in the county; in fact, the Concho and all its principal branches are fed by innumerable springs. Concho will be a good grain producing county; but in stock-raising, particularly sheep, it will not be surpassed. It will soon be organized.

4. CROCKETT.—Named for David Crockett; created in 1875. Bounded on the north by Tom Green, east by Menard, Kimble and Edwards, south by Kinney, and west by Presidio. This is a very large county in what is called the mineral region. The Llano, Nueces and Devil's rivers have their sources in the mountainous region of this county.

5. DIMITT.—Named for Philip Dimitt; created in 1858; value of property in 1876, \$4,000. Bounded north by Zavalla, east by La Salle, south by Webb, and west by Maverick. This county is traversed by the Nueces river and is well adapted to grazing purposes.

6. EDWARDS.—Named for Hayden Edwards; created in 1858. Bounded north by Kimble, east by Kerr, south by Bandera and Uvalde, and west by Crockett. It is rapidly settling up and will soon be organized.

It is situated upon the head-waters of the Rio Frio, the Medina, Guadalupe, the east fork of the Nueces and Paint Rock creek, a tributary of the Llano river, and lies west of Kerr and Bandera counties, being situated on the border of the plains, and is the fountain-head of the above-named streams. The surface of this county is very broken and cut up in rocky hills and ravines.

Some valleys along the above streams and their tributaries, afford all the land suitable for cultivation, but the whole presents a very good stock-range.

7. ENCINAL—Means in Spanish, oak grove; created in 1858. Bounded north by La Salle, east by Duvall, south by Zapata, and west by Webb. This is in the stock-raising region of Southwestern Texas.

8. HARDEMAN.—Named for Bailey Hardeman; created in 1858. Bounded north by Greer, east by Wilbarger, south by Knox, and west by Cottle and Childress.

The soil of Hardeman county is a red loam, in places more or less sandy. It sustains a luxuriant growth of gamma and mesquite grass, even during

the dry seasons of 1856 and 1857. The timber is scanty, and consists, along the water courses, of elm, hackberry, cottonwood, wild China, and on the hills, of mountain cedar.

If less favorable as a farming county, the county will do very well for stock-rising, as cattle and horses are fond of the salty river-water.

A land locator writes: "A few miles west of Wanderer's creek are four high mounds or peaks, from which we could see the surrounding country for miles. The tops of these mounds are covered with juniper cedar, and none of them more than fifty yards in circumference, the tops being a bed of gypsum, perfectly white, and in many places made smooth by the Indians, who call these hills their medicine mounds, and the sick ones sleep on top of them and use water from a gypsum or mineral spring near one of them. These hills are called by the whites in this vicinity Prairie Dog Mountains. We found Groesbeck creek, the first above Wanderer's creek, filled with fine fish. It is a bold, running stream, there had been no rain here for two months. The water in this creek was pretty, sparkling and clear, but so strongly impregnated with gypsum that we found its effects on us to be similar to croton oil. We found two caves near the head of this creek, and explored them for some distance. The walls were of gypsum, very hard and white, the caves large. We found a natural bridge, one hundred feet in thickness, across a small creek running into Pease river on the north side. The top of the bridge was about one hundred feet wide, the bottom three hundred feet, making a natural bridge for the buffalo to pass over.

9. HASKELL.—Created in 1860; named for Charles Haskell of Fannin's massacre. Bounded north by Knox, east by Throckmorton, south by Shackelford, and west by Stonewall. The following description is by M. Wickeland, surveyor:

"It lies upon the Brazos river; the Main Fork and Double Mountain Fork of this river enter the county from the west, and their confluence is near its north line. The Clear Fork of the Brazos touches the southeast corner of Haskell county, whilst the other portions are well watered by Ateys, Paint, California, Perry's, Miller's, Antelope, Lake, and other creeks and their tributaries; the water in the Main and Double Mountain Fork is unpalatable; there are also several ponds in the northern part of the county.

"It is comparatively level, mostly undulating, mesquite prairie, though the northwestern portion of the county, along the Main Fork of the Brazos, is hilly. The hills on the north side of that stream attain a considerable elevation.

"The soil is a red loam, in many places with substrata of gypsum, of which there is a considerable quantity in the northwestern part of the county. I also found very rich specimens of copper ore in this region, of which I brought home, several times, as much as I could conveniently carry.

"The timber in the county consists principally in mesquite, of which there are extensive forests, and of good quality; there is also found along the stream hackberry, cottonwood, mulberry, chittam, willow, etc.; and in the southeastern part of the county, live-oak, post-oak, elm, and pecan;

and along the Main Fork there is a considerable amount of short cedar.

10. JONES.—Named for Anson Jones; created in 1858. It is bounded north by Stonewall and Haskell, east by Shackelford, south by Taylor, and west by Fisher.

It lies south of the above county, and exclusively upon the waters of the Clear Fork of Brazos. Some portions of this county are well-watered by the Clear Fork, Elm Fork, Evans creek (all clear and bold running streams), Hanover, Panther, and numerous other nameless creeks; other portions are elevated and dry. The southwestern corner of the county includes some high ranges of hills, which break off in precipitous cliffs. A range of dry sand-hills, several miles wide, runs north of and parallel with the Elm Fork.

The soil is a red loam, more or less sandy, turning darker in the south-eastern corner of the county; good building rock (sand and limestone), is found everywhere. The timber is mostly mesquite; along the water-courses pecan, elm, hackberry, some post-oak, wild China, cotton-wood etc.; and on the hills in the south, live oak and cedar are to be found.

Fort Phantom Hill (now unoccupied) lies on the eastern line.

11. KNOX.—Is said to have been named for a county in Ohio; is bounded north by Hardeman, east by Baylor, south by Haskell, and west by King. Was created in 1858. We copy from Mr. Wickeland's description:

"Knox county is supplied with plenty of water, but nearly all of it is most disagreeable to the taste, and some of it entirely unfit for the use of man. With the exception of some of the upper branches of Antelope and Lake creeks, and numerous springs along the banks of the Brazos river, all the water in the county has a brackish, bitter taste. This is owing to the abundance of gypsum through all parts of the country. The water of the Big Wichita and Brazos rivers is also salty from the rich deposits of this article near their sources.

"*Croton Creek* is remarkable for its clear water and great abundance of fish—chiefly catfish—from which it was named by the Indians, "Fish Creek." In the spring of 1856, I camped for several days with a surveying party on Croton creek, awaiting the arrival of the main camp; we were without provisions, and subsisted entirely on the fish and disagreeable water of "Croton," and from the taste and other peculiarities of the water, the creek received its name.

"The country south of the Brazos is an extensive (slightly undulating) mesquite prairie. Northwest of that stream the country is hilly and in places very rugged and broken; a range of hills, running parallel with the Big Wichita, separates the water of this stream from that of the Brazos. The basin of the Big Wichita river is narrow and cut up in ravines and deep gullies; and the river, after winding its way through the mountains, meanders through a series of rich valleys averaging one and two miles in width. West of the Brazos, on both sides of Croton creek, is a remarkable group of hills, of which "*Kioway Peak*," though not the largest, is one.



**GOVERNOR'S MANSION, AUSTIN.**





of the most prominent. It is formed like a bell, not more than ten feet across the top, and is composed principally of sandstone and gypsum. There are half a dozen disconnected peaks of similar form, whose elevation above the general level is from one hundred and fifty to two hundred feet. The gypsum is here predominant, and it is found in various formations, from the transparent selenite to the hardest *alabaster*. I have entered caves and ravines in this region, with walls of crystal, but was sometimes received by panthers and bears.

“The soil of this county is a red loam, in some places more or less sandy; the rivers have quicksand beds, and are fordable only in a few places.

“The timber is chiefly mesquite, and on the hillsides some mountain cedar is to be found. The remaining stumps and roots indicate that there must have been extensive forests of this timber, and trees of the largest size that were destroyed by fire. There is but little timber along the banks of the streams, only occasionally a grove of cedar, post-oak, hackberry, wild China, cottonwood, etc. About half of the county will make a very good grain country, but the whole is a most excellent range for horses, sheep, and cattle.”

12. LA SALLE.—Named for Mons. De La Salle; created in 1858. It is bounded north by Frio, east by M'Mullen, south by Encinal, and west by Webb and Dimitt. One of the grazing counties of the Southwest; watered by the Nueces and Frio rivers. Old Fort Ewell is near the Southern boundary of the county.

13. RUNNELS.—Named for Hiram G. Runnels, ex-Governor of Mississippi. Bounded north by Taylor, east by Coleman, south by Concho, and west by Tom Green. Was created in 1858. In 1876, the assessed value of property was \$1,280. It is well watered by the Colorado river and its tributaries—Oak, Fish, Valley, Mulatto, Spring, Red, Black, and Flora creeks—and in the South by some smaller branches of the Concho river. The Colorado is here at common stage of water—a clear, bold running stream; the water is slightly brackish, still not entirely unfit for use; all the smaller streams furnish plenty of pure water.

The Southern half of the county is a comparatively level prairie, whilst toward the north and northwest the surface becomes elevated and hilly. The soil varies from a red loam to dark chocolate. There is a large amount of good land, and altogether this is an excellent county for pastoral and agricultural purposes.

Timber is plentiful, especially in the northern part, and consists chiefly of mesquite, live-oak, post-oak, blackjack, walnut, pecan, hackberry, cottonwood, etc.

*Fort Chadbourne* is located upon the east bank of Oak creek, outside, but within a short distance of the western boundary of this county.

14. TAYLOR.—Named for the Taylor family; created in 1858. Bounded north by Jones, east by Callahan, south by Runnels, and west by Nolan. A German colony has recently purchased land, and settled in this county.

It will soon be organized. The county comprises the country upon the head waters of the Clear Fork of Brazos, the sources of Pecan bayou, Jim Ned, and several other creeks, tributaries of the Colorado. The above streams furnish plenty of good water.

Only about half of the lands of Taylor county may be recommended as good for farming purposes; these include the valleys along the numerous streams, but the whole of it presents a superior stock-range. The section of the country north of the Clear Fork is elevated, hilly, and rocky; and there is another group of hills in the Southwestern corner, of which *Church Mountain* is, perhaps, the most conspicuous. Portions of the county are thickly timbered with trees of the best kind and largest size—such as live-oak, post-oak, mesquite, and cedar; the timber along the water-courses is in this and the adjoining counties all alike—pecan, hackberry, cottonwood, etc.

The soil in Taylor county varies from dark red to chocolate and black sandy. The limestone formation is predominant, but there is also sandstone in the hills around Church Mountain, and several other places.

15. **THROCKMORTON.**—Named for Doctor William E. Throckmorton; created in 1858. Bounded north by Baylor, east by Young, south by Stevens and Shackelford, and west by Haskell.

The Clear Fork of Brazos is the principal stream; it enters the county near its southwest corner, and meanders through the southern portion of it. Besides this, the county is watered by California, Paint, Moss, Cramps, Rust's, Crane, Hester's creeks, and other small branches; tributaries of the Clear Fork and Elm, Boggy, Race, Antelope, etc., creeks, tributaries of the main Brazos. The country along the Clear Fork and in the eastern portion of the county, is hilly, but the whole of it is well timbered. The timber consists of the same kinds described in Taylor county. The soil varies from red loam in the north of the county to black with a substratum of clay in the southern portion along the Clear Fork. The county is well adapted to the production of wheat and small grain generally, and is a superior country for stock-raising. In fact, the region of country watered by the Clear Fork of Brazos and its tributaries is pre-eminently adapted to this business; the cattle grow larger and fatter, and it appears come to maturity about one year sooner than in other parts of the State.

16. **WICHITA.**—Indian name; created in 1858. Bounded north by Indian Territory, east by Clay, south by Archer, and west by Wilbarger.

17. **WILBARGER.**—Named for the Wilbarger family; created 1858. Bounded north by Indian Territory, east by Wichita, south by Baylor, and west by Hardeman, (Wickeland).

These counties are located on the south bank of Red river and Prairie-dog-town river, the former separating them from the Indian Territory. The character of land, water and timber is the same in both counties, and they are therefore described as one body. The surface of the two counties forms a nearly uninterrupted rolling prairie, covered with a heavy growth

of luxuriant and nutritious grasses. Within the limits of Wilbarger county, four miles above the northwest corner of Wichita county, is the junction of Pease and Red rivers, and eight miles northwest of the said corner is the confluence of the latter and the Kechee-aque-hono or Prairie-dog-town river. The bed of Red river at this point is about 500, that of the other about 800 yards wide; but Red river furnishes the most water, and is always running, when Prairie-dog river is frequently dry during the summer. The bed of Red river at the mouth of Pease river is a mile wide, and with the clouds of dust and quicksand, stirred up by every breeze, resembles a *Sahara en miniature*.

Wilbarger and Wichita counties are well watered by bold running streams and innumerable limpid and pure springs. Pease river enters Wilbarger county from the west and runs in a nearly direct course to its junction with Red river. Wanderer's creek is a tributary of Prairie-dog-town river, and a very crooked stream, winding its way through a beautiful valley of rich lands. The Big Wichita river crosses the south line of Wilbarger county, and flows in a northeast course through this and the center of Wichita county; it is a bold running stream, but very crooked; the water has a yellowish color, and of a strong brackish taste. I have obtained tolerable good water by digging holes in the quicksand of the river bed; the Indians sometimes follow the same process. Beaver creek is a large tributary of the Big Wichita, and a magnificent stream. From its sources in Hardeman county to its junction with that river, it waters one of the richest and most fertile valleys in the State. The main creek and its numerous branches and tributaries are skirted with a fine growth of timber; other water courses in Wilbarger county are Jenny's, Minna's, Lilly's, Burke's, McGee's, and numerous others, branches of Beaver creek; Reed's and other smaller creeks, tributaries of Big Wichita, and a number of creeks flowing into Red river. In Wichita county are Gilbert's creek, a tributary of Red river, Plum, Baxter's, Buffalo or Tanahah, Holliday and other creeks, branches of Big Wichita and Beaver creek. The Little Wichita flows through the southeast corner of the county.

Some of the finest springs of pure water may be found along the banks of Red river, Pease and Prairie-dog river. The St. Andrew Springs, near the mouth of Pease river, have gained a reputation and have become a camping place of military and surveying expeditions.

The soil of both counties is a rich red loam, in the elevated portions rocky and gravelly. The country in the forks of Pease and Red river is elevated, and hilly at the mouth of Prairie-dog-town river. In these hills there are many brooks of pure water and cool and limpid springs; one of the finest is Pearl Spring. To the admirer of the sublime and beautiful, I can recommend a visit to this region of country; a most magnificent view presents itself at sunrise to a person standing on the precipitous hills west of the mouth of the Kechee-aque-hono. The Wichita mountains rise in large dark-blue masses from the apparently unlimited carpet of bright buffalo and mesquite grasses. By the dark foliage of the timber, you can follow the course of tortuous streams and copy a map of the country from the original plot. The mountains appear not very distant, and you propose a short ride

—still, from your high stand, at the mouth of the Kechee-aque-hono, you will find it fully twenty miles to the nearest mountains. But do not imagine this extensive prairie a region of dull monotony!—the picture is animated by droves of mustangs and herds of buffaloes, deer, and antelopes, and occasionally chasing Indians will set the whole in motion with the sound of distant thunder.

The timber in Wichita and Wilbarger counties consists chiefly of mesquite, of which there are extensive forests—it covers half of Wichita county. Along the water courses, especially along Beaver creek and the Little Wichita, walnut, pecan, post-oak, chittam, wild China, hackberry, cottonwood, etc., are found. There is also good building rock in different parts of the county; in Wichita county copper ore of a rich quality was found. In 1852, Dr. Shumard, one of the State Geologists, found specimens of the same ore on the opposite bank of Red river. There can be no doubt but that this county will equal any portion of Texas or the United States as a grain country, and for stock-raising it will equal the range upon the Clear Fork of Brazos

In conclusion we will remark, that the eastern border of the *red lands* of Western Texas (*Red Loam*) is on a nearly direct line drawn from the mouth of the Little Wichita to the junction of the Concho and Colorado, and thence in the same course to the Rio Grande. The rich red land bottoms of the lower Red river were carried away in small particles from the High-lands of the West.

Rain is sometimes scarce in the new counties of the northwest when the lower country has plenty of it; at other seasons, the northwestern country is flooded when other portions of the State suffer from the drought. For instance, in the summer of 1857, when the whole country suffered from the extreme drought, the rains were excessive during the months of July and August in the country between the Upper Red river and the Brazos; these streams were level with the banks, and sometimes impassable. It is thought that such rains are pretty regular and account for the "*June rises*" in Red river and Brazos; these are certainly not caused by "the melting of snow in the mountains," as was formerly supposed.

GREER.\*—Named for John A. Greer; created in 1860; lies north of

\* Greer county, containing 3,480 square miles, or 2,227,200 acres, is claimed by the United States as having been ceded to the Government by the Choctaws and Chickasaws, by a treaty, April 28th, 1866. (See report of the Secretary of the Interior, for 1877, page 76.) This might be a valid title, provided the land belonged to the Indians. But in 1860, when the Commissioners on the part of Texas, were engaged in marking that line, William H. Russell, the Texas Commissioner, absolutely refused to admit the boundaries claimed by the Indians; and at first the United States Commissioner agreed that the north fork should be regarded as the main fork of Red river. This gave Greer county to Texas. In the old maps, Upper Red river is laid down as the Keche-ah-que-hono; and is designated by a crooked line, with no tributaries laid down. This is the case in Nelish's map, used by John Quincy Adams, in 1819; and Disturnell's map, used at Guadalupe Hidalgo, in 1848. Texas claims the north fork because that stream corresponds more nearly with the general course of Red river, than the middle or south forks; and the course of the north fork was more directly in the direction of the designated initial corner, at the point where the 100th meridian of longitude crossed the thirty-six-thirty parallel of latitude.

Hardeman and Wilbarger counties. This county is still in dispute; being claimed both by the United States and Texas.

**THE PAN-HANDLE, OR LLANO ESTACADO.**—The Legislature, in 1876, laid off fifty-four counties in this immense region of the State. Some of these counties are already filling up with settlements. The town of Clarendon has been laid off in Donley county, of which a newspaper account says: Fine fields of wild grass abound along the streams and on the uplands of Donley county. These fields will for the first time this year be harvested by a mowing machine. The present field crops now growing in Donley county are corn, oats, millet and beans. These are growing finely in the freshly-broken sod ground. They have a growth at present equal to that of equal age in the older States. Water can be reached in Donley county at a depth varying from ten to forty feet on the valleys and lower uplands, and about fifty to seventy-five feet on the highest lands. On the farming lands generally a well need not be deeper than forty feet. Clarendon has a splendid mill site in the limits of the town.

The following are the names given to these counties: Andrews, for Richard Andrews, killed at the battle of Concepcion; Armstrong, for a pioneer family; Bailey, for an Alamo victim; Borden, for Gail Borden, Jr.; Briscoe, for Andrew Briscoe; Castro, for Henry Castro, Empresario; Carson, for P. Carson, of Burnet's Cabinet; Childress, for George C. Childress, who wrote the Declaration of Independence in 1836; Cookran, for a victim of the Alamo; Collinsworth, for James Collinsworth; Cottle, for C. W. Cottle, of the Alamo; Crosby, for Stephen Crosby; Dawson, for Nicholas Dawson (Deaf Smith); Donley, for Stockton P. Donley; Fisher, for S. Rhoads Fisher; Floyd, for a victim of the Alamo; Gains, for James Gains, of Gains Ferry; Garza, for an old Spanish family; Gray, for Peter W. Gray; Hale, for J. C. Hale, of San Jacinto; Hall, for Warren D. C. Hall; Hansford, for James M. Hansford, Speaker of the House of Representatives; Hartley, for O. C. and R. K. Hartley; Hemphill, for John Hemphill; Howard, for V. E. Howard; Hutchinson, for Andrew Hutchinson; Kent, for an Alamo victim; King, for a victim of the Alamo; Lamb, for Lieutenant Lamb, killed at San Jacinto; Lynn, for a victim of the Alamo; Lubbock, for T. S. Lubbock; Martin, for Wiley Martin; Mitchell, for Asa and Eli Mitchell; Moore, for Commodore E. W. Moore; Motley, for Dr. Wm. Motley; Nolan, for Philip Nolan; Ochiltree, for W. B. Ochiltree; Oldham, for W. S. Oldham; Parmer, for Martin Parmer; Potter, for Robert Potter, of the navy; Randall, for a soldier; Roberts, for John S. Roberts; Scurry, for W. R. Scurry; Sherman, for Sidney Sherman; Stonewall, for T. J. Jackson; Swisher, for James G. Swisher; Terry, for Frank Terry; Wheeler, for Royal T. Wheeler; and Yoakum, for Henderson Yoakum, historian.

In the general divisions of Texas, in Part 1, we gave a description of this most interesting, though little known, part of our State, by Colonel Shafter, who entered it from Fort Concho, on the south. We add some further notices of the country by persons who entered *via* Red river, on the north. Mr. Wickeland and Colonel Emory were connected with the boundary survey in 1859-60:

Mr. Wickeland estimates the area as 27,250 square miles. He divides the Panhandle as follows: 1st, the southeast part, embracing the upper basin, or valley of Red river; 2d, the southwest part, including a portion of "Llano Estacado," and 3d, the northern part, watered by the Canadian and its tributaries. The first part is mostly fertile, embracing the rich alluvial valley of Red river, making an area of about six thousand square miles, or near four millions of acres, from eight hundred to one thousand feet lower than the plain on the west.

The great width of the plain of the "Estacado," west of the sources of Red river, is one hundred and twenty-five miles. It is more or less a rolling prairie, with an elevation of 4,000 to 4,500 feet above the ocean, and is highest near New Mexico on the west. Want of rains greatly impair its value for agriculture, but, with the exception of some sandy and gravelly belts, it is covered with a thick growth of gamma and other grasses, affording fine pasturage to almost unlimited herds throughout the year. Mr. Wickeland says a great portion of this region may be profitably cultivated by using the water that forms into ponds in the depressions after the rains. The soil is a red loam or clay, more or less sandy. But little is known of that part of the Panhandle north of the South Fork of Red river. Mr. Wickeland explored the country along the boundary line between the Indian Territory and the Panhandle, but thinks, as near as he could judge, that the true boundary, or the 100th meridian of longitude, is about one degree west of where it was located by Captain Marcy, of the United States Engineers. Following Marcy's line, the Canadian is one hundred and five miles north from Red river.

The northern portion of the Panhandle is a succession of high rolling prairies, intersected by the numerous narrow valleys of small streams. The principal streams are the South and North Forks of the Canadian, Dry river, the Mesquit creek, and other tributaries of the South Canadian. The North Fork has its source in Texas, near the northern boundary, and runs nearly due east. The South Fork comes from the cañons of the Rocky Mountains, in New Mexico, enters Texas from the west, and also proceeds nearly east.

The Panhandle is only moderately supplied with timber. The wide prairies are relieved of their monotony by an occasional view of timber growing on the banks of the streams and marking their course. Sometimes, also, fine groves of trees are found on the elevated lands and in ravines, and on the banks of the Canadian, and here are found excellent cedar, post and bur-oak. A few miles north of "Marcy's boundary line," on the north bank of the South Canadian, Mr. Wickeland saw a large forest of oak timber, speaking of which Lieutenant Abert says: "On the 27th of September, in Long. 99° 11', on the north side of the Canadian, I passed through a country completely covered with a dense growth of oak, commonly called black-jack. This forest stretches back from the river as far as the eye can reach."

Mr. W. says that the Antelope Hills lie on the south bank of the Canadian, near marking the 100th meridian, and are sometimes called the "boundary hills." The hills are about 100 to 130 feet high, with a table of sand-stone about fifteen feet thick. They are not situated on the same me-

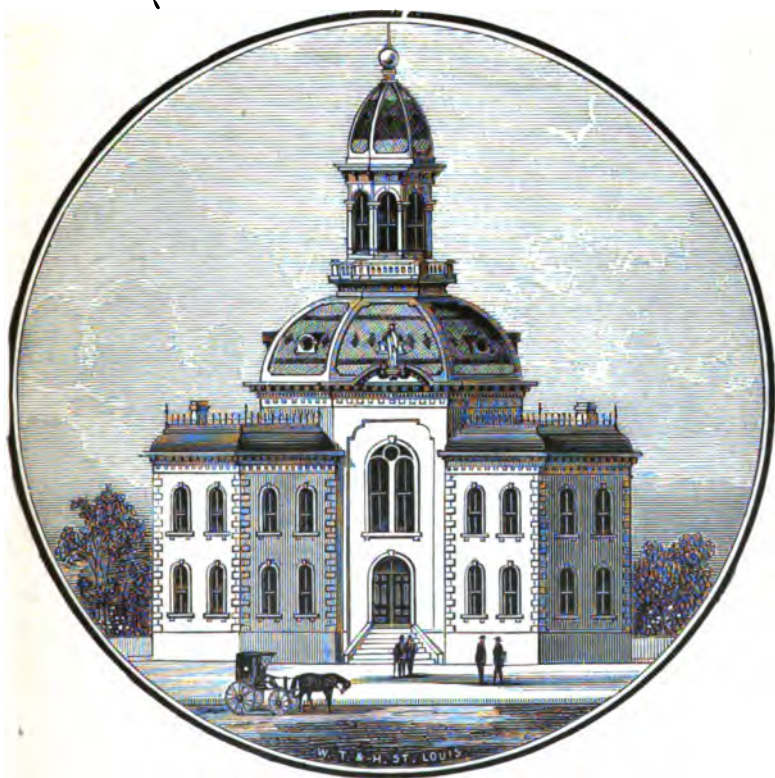
ridian with the Wichita Mountains, as represented on the maps, and persons looking for them will be disappointed.

A considerable portion of the Panhandle is included in what is called the Gypsum Formation. The eastern limits of the Gypsum Formation extend from the sources of the Colorado, in a northeast direction, over the heads of Red river, and crossing the Canadian about two hundred miles west of Fort Smith. This formation is seen in every river-bed and cañon as far west as Colorado Chiquite, in New Mexico. Wheat and other small grain may be successfully cultivated along the waters of Red river and the Canadian. This whole country is admirably adapted to fruits and the grape, and to stock-raising. Mr. Wickeland says he found wild grapes, plums, currants, etc., in abundance in all parts of the Panhandle.

Major Emory says: "In no part of the world does this luscious fruit (the grape) flourish with greater luxuriance than in the upper valley of the Rio Grande as far down as the Presidio del Norte," and the same general character of the soil and climate extends to the Panhandle. Mr. Wickeland visited the Canadian in June and July, 1856, when the whole country west of the Mississippi was suffering from a severe drouth, and he says: "Notwithstanding this drouth, portions of the country were literally covered with plums and grape-vines loaded with most delicious fruit. Of grapes, I found two different kinds, both small and sweet, and of a dark blue color. The plums were frequently an inch in diameter, sweet and of a light yellow and red color, slightly differing from the Chickasaw plum. In fact, I went on this tour with nine whites and six Indians, without any provisions, and short of ammunition, and we lived for four weeks entirely on buffalo and fruits. Persons visiting the Panhandle country—in fact, the whole of Northwestern Texas—will be delighted with the balmy and salubrious air. The mean temperature in summer I found to be 80° to 82°. In the warmest seasons the thermometer hardly ever rises to 95°, and even then the heat is mitigated by the refreshing southern breezes, making the nights cool and delightful."







**COURT HOUSE. FORT WORTH.**



PART X.

---

The Agriculture, Manufactures, Commerce

AND

Public Institutions of Texas.



## AGRICULTURAL PRODUCTS.

---

**COTTON.**—As cotton furnishes our leading article of export, we place it first among our agricultural products. Colonel Jared E. Groce, one of the earliest of Austins colonists, brought cotton seed with him to the Brazos river in 1821. In 1825 Colonel Groce erected a cotton gin, the first in Texas. The next year the Austins built one on the west side of the Brazos river, about ten miles above Columbia. This was subsequently burned, and the place has been known as the Burnt Gin Place. About the same time, Robert H. Williams built one on Old Caney, in Matagorda county. The staple was then packed in bales of fifty and one hundred pounds, and transported to the Rio Grande on mules; 250 pounds constituting a mule load. In 1831 Edwin Waller sent a schooner load of cotton from the mouth of the Brazos to Matamoras. The cotton sold for sixty-two and a half cents per pound. Such was the rapid increase in the production of this crop that in 1834 it was estimated that the cotton for that year sold for \$600,000. Cotton then brought an exorbitant price.

We have no statistics showing the number of bales annually produced during the Republic, from 1836 to 1847. In 1848 the cotton crop amounted to 39,774 500 pound bales; in 1849, 38,824 bales; 1850, commercial estimate 31,405 bales—reported in the U. S. census tables, 58,072. In 1851, 45,900 bales; 1852, 62,433 bales; 1853, 85,790 bales; 1854, 110,325; 1855, 80,739; 1856, 116,078; 1857, estimated, 200,000; 1859, 400,000 bales. In 1860 the census tables place the crop at 421,463 bales—a large estimate. We have no reliable statistics of the crop during the war. The commercial estimate for 1865 was 188,810 bales; 1866, 191,720; 1867, 117,810; 1868, 148,083; 1869, 246,846; 1870, commercial estimate, 319,274—census report, 350,628 bales; 1871, 293,450; 1872, 343,450; 1873, 487,771. We have no statistics of the crop of the State of a later date than 1873. It is generally conceded that two-thirds of the cotton crop passes through Galveston. The amount of cotton received at that point since 1873 is as follows: 1874, 354,927 bales; 1875, 465,529; 1876, 491,981. In 1877 the crop was cut short by the worms, and the receipts at Galveston were only 451,137 bales. The crop for 1878 is unusually promising, and it is likely that Galveston will receive fully 600,000 bales. If this is but two-thirds of the crop we may count upon producing this year 800,000 bales, constituting Texas the first cotton producing State on the continent.

**CORN.**—As corn, all things considered, is the most valuable and indispensable crop, we give the report of our corn crop for different decades, as found in the U. S. census reports. In 1850 the crop amounted to 6,828,826 bushels; in 1860 to 16,600,702 bushels; and in 1870 to 20,554,538 bushels.

**OATS.**—The census reports give our crop of oats in 1850 at 199,017 bushels; in 1860 at 955,865; and in 1870 at 762,693 bushels. Since that period there has been a rapid increase in the Texas oat crop. In 1876 large shipments were made from Galveston to New Orleans.

**POTATOES.**—The reports of the potato crop, both Irish and sweet, are so meager that we hardly deem it necessary to reproduce the figures. But the average production of over 100 bushels to the acre, shows that this is both a reliable and profitable crop. As increased attention is paid to gardening, and our crops become more diversified, potatoes, both Irish and sweet, will form no inconsiderable item in our agricultural products.

**SUGAR AND MOLASSES.**—Immense tracts of our alluvial bottom lands, near the coast, are admirably adapted to the production of the ribbon cane; but a variety of influences have prevented our farmers from going extensively into its culture. It has, however, been tried sufficiently to demonstrate the reliability of this crop, and its adaptation to our soil and climate. Its culture was introduced almost simultaneously with the Anglo-American colonists. In 1830, Mr. Williams, of Liberty, manufactured forty hogsheads of sugar. Soon after this, cane was planted on the Brazos river in Brazoria county, and in Matagorda county on the Colorado. In 1850 the sugar crop amounted to 2,783 hhd. and 2,427 barrels molasses. In 1855 the crop had increased to 4,721 hhd. sugar, and 4,728 barrels molasses. In 1856 an early frost killed the cane, and the next year the sugar crop fell off to 124 hogsheads, with a corresponding falling off in the production of molasses. Since that period the production has been somewhat variable. In 1868, 1,800 hogsheads were produced; in 1870, 2,200; in 1871, 1,600; in 1872, 700; in 1873, 800; in 1874, 1,144; and there has been a steady increase since that period. The introduction of evaporators and cheaper machinery for handling and grinding the cane, is stimulating the production, and large numbers of small farmers are beginning to plant cane.

**TOBACCO.**—This has been raised in all parts of the State, from the earliest settlement of the country. During the colonial period, a bill was introduced in the Legislature of the State at Saltillo, prohibiting the raising of tobacco, as the government derived a considerable revenue from the monopoly of trade in the article. In this bill, an exception was made in favor of Austin's colonists, who, at the request of the Texas delegate, were each permitted to plant *one peck* of seed to raise tobacco for his own use. The agricultural report estimates that Texas produces an aggregate of 500 pounds of tobacco to the acre. Experiments have demonstrated that the

finest quality of tobacco used in the manufacture of Havana cigars can be produced here. The State may, and probably in time will, produce millions of pounds of tobacco per annum.

**WHEAT.**—This great cereal grows luxuriantly over more than one-half of the State. The census report places the wheat crop of 1850 at 41,720 bushels: 1860 at 1,478,345: and in 1870 at 1,414,103 bushels. The report from the Agricultural Bureau estimates the crop of 1870 at 1,225,600 bushels; 1872 at 1,377,000 bushels. A carefully prepared estimate of the crop in 1877 announces that in eighteen grain-producing counties of Northern Texas the yield was of wheat 3,277,600 bushels; of oats 5,757,500 bushels; and of barley 1,125,000 bushels; and this is but little over half the amount of these crops in the State. The common wheat is subject to rust, in wet seasons; hence, some years the yield is very light. The Agricultural Department estimates the average yield per acre in 1868 at only eight bushels: in 1872 eighteen and a half bushels: and in 1875 at twenty-five bushels per acre.

“We copy the following estimate of the Texas wheat crop from the annual review of the market, in the *Galveston News* of September 15, 1878:

“As a wheat-growing State, Texas is destined, at no very distant day, to become one of the foremost, if not the foremost in the Union. Yet while we may appropriately speculate upon her vast capabilities, it will perhaps subserve no good end to exaggerate what she has done and is doing in this respect.

“The wheat crops of our State since 1875, inclusive—and previously to that year it is hardly worth while to take note for our present purpose—has been greatly over-estimated. The crop of 1875 was a good one as to yield and excellent as to quality, and that year may be regarded as the initial period of Texas's successful wheat-growing and milling; for the reputation made by her that year was so encouraging as to stimulate and cause a rapid increase of the acreage of wheat and her milling capacity.

“The crop, however, in the following year, 1876, notwithstanding an increased acreage—though less than promised, on account of the threatening attitude of the grasshoppers about sowing time—yielded a considerably smaller return than that of 1875, the season being less favorable, nor was the grain so good.

“The crop of 1877 was still smaller than that of 1876, the rust having cut it short by almost totally destroying the late wheat. Nor was the grain any better than that of 1876.

“The crop of the present year, 1878, is perhaps larger than that of 1875, and therefore the largest ever raised in Texas. The grain is also, so far as natural development is concerned, of excellent quality; but, much to be regretted, suffered very great damage by protracted wet weather following closely after the harvest. Very much of this damage is due to the slothfulness and trust-to-luck policy of many farmers. Instead of removing the wheat from the shock and housing or stacking as quickly as possible, many, to save a very trifling amount of labor, left it in the shock awaiting the thresher—thus laying it liable to be caught, as was the case this year, in a

protracted wet spell, when it becomes impossible to rescue it from damage or destruction. Much good wheat remains, however, and it is hoped enough to keep our mills running the better part or all of the season.

"After considerable investigation, we feel warranted in estimating the crops of the State as follows: 1875, 3,000,000 bushels; 1876, 2,000,000; 1877, 1,500,000; and that of 1878, say 3,500,000 at the outside.

"The quality of Texas wheat is probably unsurpassed; it weighs heavily, it being a common thing to weigh 63 pounds to the bushel, and millers say that for its looks, its turns out better, stronger flour than any other. It is susceptible of great improvement by careful selection of seed and more careful cleaning and grading for market. Thus treated, much of it would grade No. 1 in St. Louis."

The Agricultural Department at Washington publishes annually a report of the most important crops. These reports are rather meagre and imperfect; but we copy a table showing the estimated production of the following articles for a number of years:

Products. 1867.	Quantity produced in 1867	Average yield per acre.	Number of acres in each crop	Value per bushel, pound, or ton.	Total valuation.
Corn ..... bushels	20,716,000	28.2	634,604	75	15,537,000
Wheat ..... do....	794,000	9.5	84,578	1 80	1,500,660
Rye ..... do....	100,000	16.3	6,134	1 28	128,000
Oats ..... do....	813,000	23.5	34,595	79	642,670
Barley ..... do....	41,000	24.8	1,653	1 10	45,100
Potatoes ..... do....	303,000	130.3	2,325	69	209,007
Tobacco ..... pounds..	110,000	500	220,000	25	27,500
Hay ..... tons	17,000	1.7	10,000	16 00	282,200
<b>Total</b> .....			873,141	.....	318,371,800
<b>1868.</b>					
Indian corn ..... bushels..	21,337,000	25	853,480	\$0 62	13,223,940
Wheat ..... do....	339,000	6	64,333	2 25	875,250
Rye ..... do....	93,000	11.8	7,881	1 59	147,870
Oats ..... do....	861,000	26.6	32,368	90	774,900
Barley ..... do....	33,000	11	3,000	3 16	71,280
Potatoes ..... do....	340,000	61	5,573	1 50	510,000
Tobacco ..... pounds..	111,000	466	238	32	35,520
Hay ..... tons	17,300	1.25	15,340	10 00	173,000
<b>Total</b> .....			981,218	.....	15,816,760



Products. 1869.	Quantity produced	Average yield per acre.	Number of acres in each crop	Value per bushel, pound, or ton.	Total valuation.
Indian Corn.....bushels	23,000,000	29	798,108	\$0 78	16,790,000
Wheat.....do.....do	1,250,000	11.1	112,612	1 70	2,125,000
Rye.....do.....do	103,000	17.8	5,958	1 10	113,800
Oats.....do.....do	1,250,000	23.4	44,014	70	875,000
Barley.....do.....do	60,000	26.6	2,255	1 04	62,400
Potatoes.....do.....do	400,000	112	3,571	1 60	640,000
Tobacco.....pounds					
Hay.....tons	28,000	1.69	16,568	14 18	397,040
<b>Total</b> .....			<b>978,076</b>		<b>21,002,740</b>
1870.					
Indian Corn.....bushels	23,630,000	26.5	898,963	1 06	25,111,400
Wheat.....do.....do	1,225,000	11.7	104,700	1 75	2,119,250
Rye.....do.....do	85,000	19.1	4,978	1 11	105,450
Oats.....do.....do	1,500,000	21.6	69,444	1 00	1,500,000
Barley.....do.....do	54,000	30	1,800	1 33	71,820
Potatoes.....do.....do	400,000	128	3,125	1 38	583,000
Tobacco.....pounds					
Hay.....tons	25,000	1.60	15,625	15 36	384,000
<b>Total</b> .....			<b>1,083,629</b>		<b>29,823,920</b>
1871					
Indian Corn.....bushels	20,847,000	19	1,097,210	1 11	23,140,170
Wheat.....do.....do	551,000	11.5	47,918	1 97	1,085,470
Rye.....do.....do	42,000	12.1	3,471	1 65	69,300
Oats.....do.....do	675,000	25.1	26,892	1 04	702,000
Barley.....do.....do	42,000	20	2,100	1 35	56,700
Potatoes.....do.....do	220,000	105	2,095	1 85	407,000
Tobacco.....pounds					
Hay.....tons	22,500	1.07	21,028	24 33	547,425
<b>Total</b> .....			<b>1,200,709</b>		<b>28,008,065</b>
1872.					
Indian Corn.....bushels	27,934,000	25.3	1,104,110	43	12,011,620
Wheat.....do.....do	1,377,000	18.5	74,433	1 65	2,272,050
Rye.....do.....do	54,000	17.2	3,139	1 38	74,520
Oats.....do.....do	783,000	25.4	30,826	81	634,230
Barley.....do.....do	51,000	25	2,040	1 00	51,000
Potatoes.....do.....do	270,000	110	2,454	1 89	510,300
Tobacco.....pounds					
Hay.....tons	34,400	1.13	30,442	13.52	463,088
<b>Total</b> .....			<b>1,247,443</b>		<b>16,018,808</b>
1874.					
Indian Corn.....bushels	28,016,000	19	1,474,526	75	21,012,000
Wheat.....do.....do	1,474,000	12.5	117,920	1 35	1,989,900
Rye.....do.....do	40,000	13	3,077	1 11	44,400
Oats.....do.....do	1,118,000	27.2	41,103	84	939,120
Barley.....do.....do	68,000	30.5	2,065	86	54,180
Potatoes.....do.....do	233,000	70	3,338	1 49	347,170
Tobacco.....pounds	141,000	750	188	22.5	31,725
Hay.....tons	62,000	1.40	44,236	10 92	677,040
<b>Total</b> .....			<b>1,686,493</b>		<b>25,095,535</b>

## ASYLUMS.

---

In August, 1856, the Legislature set apart one hundred thousand acres of land each, for asylums for lunatics, for the blind, the deaf and dumb, and for orphans. The same Act appropriated \$50,000 for the lunatic asylum, and \$10,000 each, for the blind, and the deaf and dumb.

**ASYLUM, BLIND.**—In 1857, a site for this institution was selected in the north-western suburbs of Austin City; Dr. S. W. Baker appointed Superintendent, and five pupils received. In 1858, \$12,500 were appropriated by the Legislature for the erection of buildings—Dr. J. H. Lightfoot, Superintendent; ten pupils in attendance. 1861, S. G. Haynie, Superintendent. 1862, Rev. Wm. A. Smith, Superintendent. During the war, the institution was without the means of successful operation. 1866, Henry Thomas, Superintendent. 1867, Dr. S. W. Baker, Superintendent; \$9,600 expended for repairs on buildings. 1871, Dr. Alexander, Superintendent; buildings enlarged. 1872, E. M. Wheelock and R. M. Mills, Superintendents. 1874, Dr. Frank Rainey, Superintendent; forty-two pupils in the institution.

The objects of this institution are thus set forth in the report of Superintendent Wheelock, in 1872:

“The Institution for the Blind is not an asylum proper, nor an infirmary for the restoration of vision, still less a hospital or almshouse, but an educational and industrial home, whose central principle is to render the blind self-dependent and self-supporting. It claims to be a school, like other schools, having its course of study and its system of discipline, but unlike other schools in general, it embraces a mechanical department for the training of its pupils in industrial work. Experience has decisively shown that, under proper training, the education of the blind has borne good fruit in the formation of teachers, mechanics, manufacturers, music teachers, choristers, organists, piano-tuners, etc. No individuals have turned their early advantages to better account, and in all parts of our State can be found those who once were received as helpless, visionless and friendless children into this institution, and are at this moment well-trained in their respective trades, with minds enlarged and manners softened by scholastic discipline, receiving constant employment, and supporting themselves in comfort from the proceeds of their labor. The age of twenty-four is fixed as the limit for admission, for the reason that the training of the blind requires much time and the docile impressibility of youth, in order to lay the solid foundation of an industrial and intellectual education. No charge is made for instruction, board or medical services, and the parents and friends of the pupils are called upon for no outlay beyond their traveling expenses and the providing of a suitable amount of good and comfortable clothing. Every indulgence is allowed consistent with habits of order; kindness is made the rule of government, and so seldom are punishments.



**MASONIC TEMPLE AT PALESTINE, I. & G. N. R. R.**



invoked, that it may be said that they do not exist. More than any other afflicted class, the blind need the stimulus of fitting occupation, whether amusement, study or work; those are happiest who, with companions of their own class, and with constant occupation, find at every step assistance, friendly hands and sympathy. Their true happiness is best consulted and best witnessed within the walls of an establishment, where they forget to be gloomy and morose, and where the social atmosphere proves the blindness is not always melancholy."

ASYLUM, DEAF AND DUMB.—This Institution is beautifully located on the west side of the Colorado river, in full view of the city of Austin; went into operation in 1857, under the superintendence of Dr. J. W. Nostrand, who continued in the Superintendency until 1876. It was opened for the reception of pupils on the first of January, 1857, the trustees having rented the premises which are still occupied for one year. In 1858, these premises, consisting of fifty-seven and a half acres of land and several small wooden buildings thereon, were purchased as the permanent site of the institution, the Legislature having made an appropriation of \$7,500 for that purpose. The price paid for the land and improvements was \$5,500, and the remaining \$2,000 were expended in making the necessary alterations and additions for the accommodation of a larger number of pupils. The institution continued to prosper and increase until the breaking out of the war, when it suffered a temporary check, but at no time have the pupils been dispersed or the regular sessions interrupted. In 1858 there were eighteen pupils. The report for 1862, shows the total number received to that date, thirty-eight; of whom twenty-two were still in the institution. In 1867, \$7,500 were expended in repairs. In 1874, there were forty-two inmates of the institution. In Governor Coke's message to the Fourteenth Legislature, in January, 1875, he says of this State Institution:

"Under the excellent management of Superintendent Van Nostrand, whose qualifications and fitness for the place are very superior, the unfortunates, who in this institution are receiving the care and aid of the State, are pleasantly situated, and present in their smiling and cheerful faces, abundant evidence of the parental kindness with which they are treated and controlled, and of their grateful appreciation of their surroundings. Their ready intelligence and the proficiency they exhibit in the various branches of study, indicates capacity and industry in their teachers, as well as a thorough knowledge of the peculiar and difficult system through which they are taught. It is suggested, for the consideration of your honorable bodies, that while as a school for the education of these afflicted children, this institution, though limited in its capacity, so far as numbers are concerned, is an admirable one, that by extending the education of the pupils to some useful or mechanical trade, by which they would be enabled after leaving school to earn a livelihood, the practical utility of an education there, would be very much enhanced, and the benefit conferred would be more real and substantial. The pupils in this school, with the usual training, would make good mechanics or artisans, and good printers. They are quick, intelligent and apt; their physical development is generally good,

and when their understanding is reached, their action is as prompt and intelligent as that of those not afflicted as they are. It is recommended that an appropriation be made for the purchase of a printing press, and so much material as may be necessary to be used in teaching the printer's art, as one of the branches of instruction of this institution. The benefits conferred will, to them, be great, while the cost to the State will be insignificant."

In March, 1876, General Henry E. M'Culloch was appointed Superintendent. There were then forty-seven inmates—thirty boys and seventeen girls.

**ASYLUM, ORPHAN.**—No State Orphan Asylum has ever been opened. In 1867-68, an orphan asylum—primarily for the children of deceased Confederate soldiers—was opened at Bayland, in Harris county, by Rev. Mr. Preston. He was succeeded in the Superintendency by Major H. F. Gillette. It is under the management of a board of trustees, who perform all their duties gratuitously. In 1873, the Legislature gave to this institution a portion of the land set apart in 1856, for an orphan asylum. We have no statistical report.

**ASYLUM, LUNATIC.**—In 1857, a site was selected three miles north of Austin, and Dr. Perry appointed Superintendent. 1858, Dr. C. G. Keenan, Superintendent. 1862, Dr. J. M. Steiner, Superintendent. Dr. Steiner reports that since the institution was opened, sixty-seven patients had been received: 49 males and 18 females; and of this number 21 had been restored to their proper mind and returned to their friends. In 1865, Dr. B. Graham was Superintendent. 1866, Dr. Beall, Superintendent; 54 patients. 1867, the admission of freedmen necessitated an enlargement of the premises, and \$35,000 was expended in the purchase and improvements of the Cross property. 1870, \$20,000 appropriated for new buildings; James A. Corley, Superintendent; 83 inmates. 1871, 95 inmates; 48 males and 47 females (12 colored). 1872, J. F. Weisselberg, Superintendent; average number of inmates, of whom 20 per cent. were restored. 1874, Dr. B. R. Wallace, Superintendent; 127 inmates. 1876, September 1st, 201 patients—119 male and 82 female.

## PUBLIC BUILDINGS.

---

**STATE HOUSE.**—The most conspicuous public building in Austin is the State House, beautifully situated on a commanding eminence at the head of the avenue, in the northeastern portion of the city. The foundation-stone was laid with appropriate ceremonies, July 4th, 1852. It is three stories, 140x90 feet; floor of the lower story oolite marble, inlaid in cement. Two passages, 20 feet wide, cutting each other at right-angles, run through the length and breadth of this story. There are twelve rooms, occupied by the Executive Department for offices, etc. A broad stairway ascends from the front to the second story, and another from the inside reaches this story in the rear of the building. The second story contains the Senate Chamber and the Hall of the House of Representatives, with some committee rooms, etc. The third story has the geological cabinet, State library, and other rooms used by committees, etc. It is built of the limestone of the neighborhood; foundation ten feet in the ground. From the bottom of the wall to the top of the dome it is 101 feet. The original cost was estimated at \$150,000, and \$25,000 for furniture.

**ROOMS OF THE SUPREME COURT.**—This building is in the inclosed area of the Capitol grounds, a little northwest of the main building. It was built originally for a land office; then fitted up for the State Department, and, in 1870, refitted and appropriated to the uses of the Supreme Court.

**THE GENERAL LAND OFFICE.**—This building stands outside of the Capitol inclosure upon an eminence on the east side of Congress avenue, and nearly fronting the Governor's House. It is built of stone, of a harder kind than the Capitol. It is two full stories in height, with semi-circular windows and high commanding roof. It contains fifteen rooms, connected with each other by corridors and spiral stairways. On account of its location and construction, it is much the most pleasing of the public buildings in appearance. Cost, \$39,000. Built, 1851-2.

**THE TREASURY DEPARTMENT.**—This edifice is situated within the Capitol ground, to the rear of the Capitol, on the east. It is of the same material as the Capitol, being two stories in height, and entered by a flight of winding stairs through a portico into the second story. The basement is strongly vaulted. The Comptroller and Auditor have their offices in this building, which contains some twelve rooms. It is square-roofed, well supplied, as are all the public buildings, with ample cisterns. Cost, \$35,000.

**THE GOVERNOR'S HOUSE.**—This is a brick edifice located upon an eminence on the west side of Congress avenue, near the Capitol. It is two stories, having a portico extending along its whole front, with six Ionic columns and square roof. It is enclosed by a neat paling, with graded grounds, and is a neat structure. Whole cost, \$17,000. Built in 1855.

## CHURCHES.

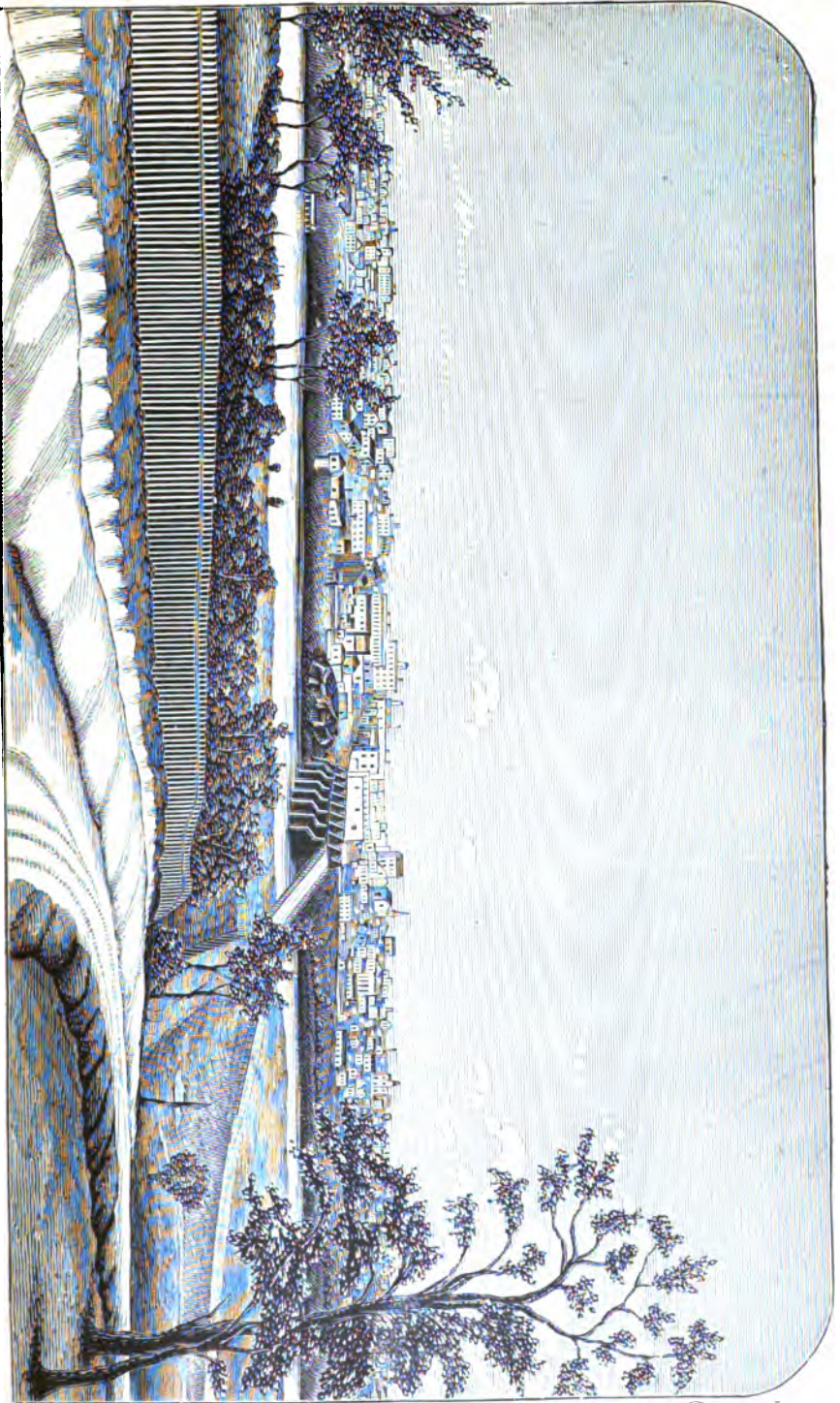
---

During the eighteenth and earlier years of the nineteenth century the Roman Catholic religion was established by law, and no other form of Christianity existed, as will be seen in the history of the "Old Missions." Those established for the conversion of the Indians were under the jurisdiction of Fathers of the Order of St. Francis. In 1790, Texas belonged to the bishopric of Guadelaxara, and in 1793 to that of Monterey. The Missions were secularized. In 1805, Bishop Primus Feliciano Maria visited Texas to regulate the affairs of the Church. There were priests at various points: at Spanish Bluff, Jose Angel Cabaso; at San Antonio, Father McGuire; at the Alamo, Clement Delgado, and at Paso del Norte, Jose Prado. In 1830, there were regular priests at San Antonio, Goliad and Nacogdoches. Father Henry Doyle was the minister for the Irish colonists at San Patricio. In 1831, Austin's colony was visited by Father Michael Muldoon. At Brazoria, Mr. Muldoon was entertained by John Austin, and at San Felipe by Samuel M. Williams. He passed through the principal settlements, baptizing and marrying such as desired these rites. In the absence of a priest, parties were married by a bond before an Alcalde. At Abner Kuykendall's, on Mill creek, Father Muldoon married four couples and baptized over one hundred. His charge was \$25 for marrying and \$2 for administering baptism. After the revolution, Galveston was erected into a See under Bishop Odin. The cathedral was built in 1847-8.

When Bishop Odin was transferred to the Arch-Episcopal See of New Orleans, he was succeeded in the See of Galveston by Bishop Dubois. In 1874, two new dioceses were formed: that of San Antonio, Bishop Pellicer, and Brownsville, Bishop Mauncy. The new Bishops were consecrated by Bishop Perche, at Mobile, December 8th, the Feast of the Immaculate Conception. In 1875, there were in the three dioceses eighty-three priests, eighty-five churches, one hundred and sixty-five chapels, and an estimated population of 200,000. (See statistical table below.)

**BAPTIST.**—Among the early colonists in Texas were a few belonging to the Baptist church. In 1825, Elder Joseph Bays visited Texas and preached at the house of Moses Shipman, on the Brazos. In 1829, Thomas Hanks preached at the same place, and the same year Thomas J. Pilgrim organized a Sunday school in San Felipe. A church was organized in Austin's colony in 1833. In 1837, Elder Z. N. Morrell organized a church in Washington. In 1838, Union Church, near Nacogdoches, was constituted by Elder Isaac Reed. In 1839, churches were organized at Independence, Washington county; at Travis, Austin county, and at Plum Grove, Fayette county. The Union Association was formed at Travis, October 8th, 1840. Elder Huckins organized the church in Galveston in 1840, and that in Houston the next year. During 1841 the church in Gonzales was organized by Elder Morrell. In 1843, the Sabine Association was formed, five churches being represented.





A PARTIAL VIEW OF AUSTIN, AS SEEN FROM THE DEAF AND DUMB ASYLUM



In the same year Border Church was organized in Harrison county by Elder Lemuel Herrin, and that in Huntsville by Elder Morrell. In 1846, Baylor University was chartered; Lake Soda Association was formed in 1847, and those of Trinity river and Red river in 1848. The State Convention was organized at Anderson in 1848. From a table before us, we learn that in 1853 there were eleven associations of the regular Baptists, and three of the Anti-Mission, one hundred and fifty churches, and about ten thousand members. In 1868, a General Association was formed in North Texas. In 1875, there were forty-three associations, nine hundred and ninety-five churches, six hundred and four ordained ministers, and 54,000 members.

*Necrology.*—In 1847, Rev. William M. Tryon died of yellow fever in Houston; in 1854, Thomas Chilton in Huntsville; 1859, J. B. Stiteler; 1865, Michael Ross; 1867, Noah Hill and S. G. O'Bryan; 1868, D. B. Morrell; 1873, R. E. B. Baylor. (See note, page 744.)

**CHRISTIANS, OR DISCIPLES OF CHRIST**—Have had preachers and regular congregations in Texas since the days of the Republic. We have no reliable statistics of the denomination. In Governor Hubbard's speech at the Centennial, he places the number of their members in the State at 7,000.

**EPISCOPAL, PROTESTANT.**—In 1838, Rev. Caleb S. Ives collected a congregation and built a church in Matagorda. The same year Rev. R. M. Chapman organized a parish in Houston. In 1840, Bishop Polk visited Texas, and in 1841 Rev. Benjamin Eaton was sent as a missionary to Galveston and Houston. Having built a church in Galveston in 1842, Mr. Eaton became its permanent rector. In 1843, Rev. Charles Gillette supplied the parish in Houston. In 1844, Rev. G. W. Freeman was consecrated missionary bishop of Arkansas and Texas. The diocese of Texas was organized at a convention held at Matagorda, January 1st, 1849. In the convention six clergymen represented six parishes. In 1854, there were reported sixteen parishes and fourteen clergymen. In 1859, Texas was constituted a separate diocese, and Rev. Alexander Gregg constituted bishop. In 1874, two new dioceses were formed: that of Western Texas, Right Rev. W. B. Elliott, bishop, and Northern Texas, Right Rev. Alexander C. Garrett, bishop. In Governor Hubbard's Centennial speech he places the number of communicants at 3,000.

Rev. Mr. Ives died in Matagorda in 1849, and Rev. B. Eaton in Galveston in 1871.

**METHODIST EPISCOPAL CHURCH, SOUTH.**—Rev. Henry Stephenson, of the M. E. Church, preached in Austin's colony in 1824. A camp-meeting was held and a church organized near San Augustine in 1833, and a similar meeting held and a second church organized near the residence of Rev. John W. Kenney, in Austin county, in 1834. In 1837, the M. E. Church sent three missionaries to the Republic: Rev. Martin Ruter, D.D., Rev. R. Alexander, and Rev. Littleton Fowler. The Texas Annual Conference was organized at Ruterville by Bishop Waugh, December 25th, 1840. In 1844, the Church separated into two distinct organizations, the Texas Conference

adhering to the M. E. Church South, and the same year the East Texas Conference was organized by Bishop Janes. The West Texas Conference was set off by Bishop Pierce in 1858; the Northwest Conference by Bishop Marvin, in 1866; the North Texas Conference was organized by Bishop M'Tyeire, at Waxahachie, in 1867, and the German Conference was organized by Bishop Keener, in Houston, in 1874. The following figures, taken from the published minutes, show the number of ministers, traveling and local, and members, white and colored, for the years given:

Years.	Itinerant.	Local.	White.	Colored.
1840.....	19	25	1,743	237
1850.....	86	182	10,489	1,847
1860.....	244	461	30,661	7,355
1870.....	280	526	34,772	2,007
1878.....	403	755	72,506	.....

NOTE.—For further information, see Thrall's History of Methodism in Texas.

**METHODIST EPISCOPAL (*North*).**—The Texas Conference of the Methodist Episcopal Church was organized by Bishop Simpson, in Galveston, in 1867. Two other Conferences were organized by Bishop Harris, in 1874; and a fourth by Bishop Peck, in 1876. Our latest statistics are for 1874. There were then 189 traveling and 248 local preachers; 16,930 full members, and 3,706 probationers; 105 church buildings, and 12 parsonages. Value of church property, \$123,005.

**METHODIST EPISCOPAL, (*African*).**—Has two Conferences in Texas. This church is served by Bishops of their own color, and composed entirely of colored people. In 1873, they reported 5,783 full members, and 1,291 probationers; 91 local preachers, and 54 churches, valued at \$43,609.

**METHODIST EPISCOPAL, (*Colored*).**—Has also an efficient organization of Conferences, districts, circuits, etc., but we have no statistics.

**METHODIST PROTESTANT.**—This body dispenses with Bishops. It has, we believe, two annual Conferences in Texas. We have no statistical report. In Governor Hubbard's Centennial speech, he places the number of members at 2,000.

**PRESBYTERIAN.**—As early as 1834, Rev. P. H. Fullenwider, of the Presbyterian Church, preached in Texas. During the summer of that year, he assisted in holding a camp-meeting in Austin county. In 1838, Rev. Hugh Wilson organized a church at San Augustine, and another at Independence. During the same year, Rev. John M'Cullough organized a church in Galveston, and Rev. Wm. Y. Allen in Houston. The Brazos Presbytery was organized at Gay Hill, Washington county, April 3d, 1840. Two new Presbyteries were organized in 1850, and in 1851, a Synod was organized at Austin. The following are the statistics for 1877-78: Ministers 61,

licentiates 1, candidates 5, churches 141, elders 337, deacons 173, members added on examination 462, on certificate 507; total membership 5,351. Adults baptized 139, infants 261, number of baptized non-communicants 1,073, number of children in Sabbath-schools and Bible classes 4,127. Amount contributed for sustentation \$395.00, Evangelistic fund \$539.00, invalid fund \$383.00, foreign missions \$796.00, education \$898.00, publication \$312.00, presbyterial \$597.00, pastors' salaries actually paid \$34,690.00, congregational \$20,012.00, miscellaneous \$2,161.00, making a total of money raised \$61,283.00, which is \$11.45 to each communicant.

*Necrology*.—Rev. John Limber died in 1848; L. S. Gibson in 1853; Jerome Twitchell, lost at sea in 1856; Dr. Daniel Baker died in 1857; Thomas Castleton in 1865, lost at sea; Rufus W. Baylie in 1866; Hugh Wilson in 1868; John McCullough in 1870; Wm. C. Blair in 1873.

**PRESBYTERIAN (North)**.—The Presbytery of Austin is a body connected with the Presbyterian Church in the United States of America, (familiarly known as the Northern Presbyterian Church) was organized July 16th, 1863; three ministers and an equal number of churches being represented. The following statistics of this body were furnished by Rev. E. B. Wright, of Austin, in 1875: 12 churches, 9 ministers and one licentiate, 420 church members, 700 members of Sabbath-school. and raised for all purposes, \$8,787.

**PRESBYTERIAN (Cumberland)**.—Rev. Sumner Bacon, of the Cumberland Presbyterian Church, visited Texas in 1828; and in 1832 he was employed as a colporteur of the Natchez Tract Society, and assigned to work in Texas. In 1834, Rev. Milton Estell organized a church in Red River county; and in 1836, Mr. Bacon organized one near San Augustine. The first Presbytery was organized with the church near San Augustine, in 1837. The Red River and the Colorado Presbyteries were organized in 1841. The Synod was organized at Nacogdoches in 1842, Sumner Bacon, Moderator. The Brazos was organized in 1849, and the Colorado Synod in 1853. The General Assembly of this church met in Jefferson, Texas, in 1875. There were present, Revs. Sumner Bacon and M. Estell, who organized the first churches of the denomination in the State; and Rev. Mr. Awalt, the first minister of this church ordained in Texas. Our latest statistics are from the report to the General Assembly in 1874: 177 ministers, 205 congregations, 8,450 members, and property valued at \$147,571.

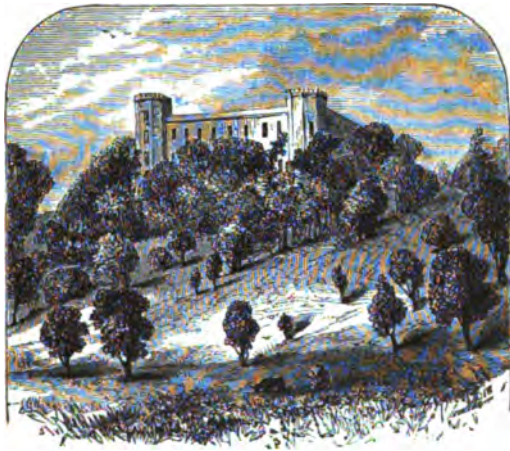
We annex the following, condensed from the United States census reports, giving all the figures furnished in reference to the various church organizations, for the three censuses since the annexation of Texas to the Union:

	Edifices.	Accommodations.	Value of Property.
1856.			
All Denominations.....	341	63,571	\$ 204,332
Baptists .....	82	10,680	21,090
Christian .....	5	100	150
Episcopal, Protestant.....	5	1,025	15,100
Lutheran .....	2	1,300	1,000
Methodist.....	176	33,045	58,195
Presbyterian, Regular.....	45	8,320	20,070
Presbyterian, other.....	3	196	
Roman Catholic.....	13	6,760	74,700
1860.			
All Denominations.....	1,034	271,196	1,085,354
Baptists .....	280	77,435	223,030
Christian .....	53	15,405	27,305
Episcopal, Protestant.....	19	3,523	111,350
Lutheran .....	19	3,510	20,500
Methodist.....	410	103,789	314,434
Presbyterian, Regular.....	72	19,067	120,550
Presbyterian, other.....	52	19,250	47,430
Roman Catholic .....	33	12,772	189,900
1870.			
All Denominations.....	647	199,100	1,055,430
Baptists .....	211	61,700	198,540
Christian .....	17	4,450	11,630
Episcopal, Protestant.....	31	11,400	109,400
Lutheran .....	21	7,650	47,900
Methodist.....	244	119,100	251,140
Presbyterian, Regular.....	70	22,750	123,500
Presbyterian, other.....	14	4,850	14,100
Roman Catholic .....	36	16,000	264,200

**NOTE.**—Since the above was in type, later statistics have been received. For the Baptist Church for 1879, reported by Rev. Wm. Carey Crane, D. D., LL. D., President Baylor University, Independence:—The white Baptists in Texas have 52 Associations; 942 ordained ministers; 75,143 members; 1,183 churches; and the colored Baptists have 23 Associations; 509 churches, and 50,000 members. Total membership, 125,143. Total value of church property, \$1,015,200.

Rev. Mr. Wofford, editor of the *Texas Observer*, reports for the Cumberland Presbyterian Church, for 1878:—4 Synods; 16 Presbyteries; 185 ordained ministers; 37 licenciates, and 37 candidates for the ministry; about 400 congregations. and 18,000 members.

Rev. P. St. John, of Corpus Christi, reports for the Catholic Church in Texas:—Two Dioceses, and one Vicarate apostolic; churches and chapels, 112; priests, 101; ecclesiastical students, 9; academies and convents, 25; colleges, 6; parochial schools, 20; charitable institutions, 4; catholic population, 104,000.



**TEXAS MILITARY INSTITUTE, AUSTIN.**





## COMMERCE.

---

Comparatively little attention has been paid to the preservation of the history of our commerce and navigation. As early as 1835, the late Commodore Morgan sent one of his steamships, the *Columbia*, to Galveston. We believe Mr. Morgan owned a controlling interest in the steamships, *New York*, Capt. Wright, and the *Neptune*, Captain Rollins, which ran between New Orleans and Galveston in 1841-45. In 1847, by the purchase of the steamships *Palmetto*, Capt. Smith, and the *Galveston*, Captain Crane, Messrs. Harris and Morgan obtained control of the carrying trade between New Orleans and the Texas coast. In 1848, those steamers were sent to Matagorda Bay, and a little later, to other points in the west; down as low as Brazos St. Jago. In 1849, Captain Jerry Smith took from Matagorda Bay the first cargo of cattle shipped from Texas. In 1857, Commodore Vanderbilt opened a new route *via* Berwick Bay; but this soon passed into the hands of Mr. Morgan, who gained control of the railroad from New Orleans to Berwick. In 1867, Mr. Morgan deepened the channel at Red Fish and other bars, so that his steamers now ascend Buffalo bayou to Clinton, a few miles below Houston. He also purchased a controlling interest in the Houston and Texas Central Railway. Commodore Morgan died in May, 1878.

A newspaper contributed the following sketch of one of the first sail vessels in the Texas trade: "This ship, the *Star Republic*, was originally a barge. She was built by Sylvester Gildersleeve, at Portland, Conn., for the Galveston trade in 1842. She was owned by S. Gildersleeve, Wm. Hendley and J. J. Hendley, and sailed from New York on her first voyage the 12th day of October of that year, and arrived in Galveston on the 25th of the same month, making the passage in thirteen days. J. J. Hendley commanded her. She was consigned to Messrs. Meugurs & Garcia, merchants of Galveston. In July, 1842, she was taken to Portland, Maine, and changed into a ship. She sailed from New York on the 3d of October, the same year, and arrived in Galveston on the 18th of same month, making the passage in fifteen days. During her stay at Galveston, sixteen vessels of foreign tonnage were lying in the harbor, and the *Star Republic* was the only one that flew the American flag. This was before annexation. She was a fast and favorite ship, and often made passages in from twelve to fifteen days. She was in the 6th of October hurricane off the northeast point of Abasco in 1844. Her foreyard broke in the slings, her maintopmast was carried away, and her sails blew from the yards after they were furled. The light-house on Sand Key was blown down, and Key West inundated in the same hurricane. In September, 1855, Captain D. N. Moss took command of the ship, and J. J. Hendley retired from the sea and became a partner in the mercantile firm of Wm. Hendley & Co. This ship was the pioneer of the Texas and New York line of packets, and was the first vessel that flew the national flag of the Republic of Texas for her pri-

vate signal. She was sold in 1847 to make room for the following vessels of larger capacity: S. F. Austin, J. W. Fannin, W. B. Travis, W. H. Wharton, Montauk, National Guard, J. C. Kuhn, S. Gildersleeve and B. R. Milam. In 1849 she burned at sea, 150 miles north and east from Cape Hatteras."

A model of this ship figures conspicuously among the curiosities that are preserved by Captain Hendley in his studio.

Before the late civil war the commerce with the northern cities and European ports was carried on, mostly in sail vessels, though occasionally a steamer would engage for a short period in the trade. Since the close of the war, steamship lines have been established between Galveston and New York; and also with European ports. We have no accurate statistics of the shipping business of any Texas port except Galveston; and it is, perhaps safe to assume that Galveston controls two-thirds of the trade of the State. From the "annual review" of the *News* we take some figures, illustrative of the business of that city.

#### COASTING TRADE OF GALVESTON FROM 1870 TO 1877.—NO. OF VESSELS.

ENTERED.			CLEARED.		
Totals for Fiscal Years.	Number Vessels.	Tonns	Totals for Fiscal Years.	Number Vessels.	Tonns
1876-7.....	888	407,882	1876-7.....	801	263,792
1875-6.....	428	435,535	1875-6.....	211	290,956
1874-5.....	460	428,334	1874-5.....	531	285,970
1873-4.....	490	450,839	1873-4.....	315	274,919
1872-3.....	636	569,206	1872-3.....	422	434,848
1871-2.....	481	346,473	1871-2.....	495	322,565
1870-1.....	522	362,895	1870-1.....	596	349,990

#### FOREIGN TRADE.

Total for Fiscal Year ending June 30th.	ENTERED.		CLEARED.	
	No.	Tons.	No.	Tons.
1877.....	167	99,386	165	102,744
1876.....	177	85,598	191	107,192
1875.....	167	99,175	208	127,577
1874.....	208	124,316	241	145,237
1873.....	156	79,170	175	92,993
1872.....	115	50,933	116	54,569
1871.....	137	70,508	163	83,050

	Vessels.	Tons.
Total number of Documented Vessels owned in the District of Galveston.....	197	9,310
Built during the year.....	9	239
Lost at sea, wrecked or abandoned.....	16	387

The apparent decrease in the number of vessels entered coastwise may be accounted for by the fact that the Morgan steamers do not generally enter at this port. They only touch here to land part of cargo, passengers and mails, after which they receive a permit to proceed to Clinton with original manifest, where the entry is made.

IMPORTATIONS

	1877-78.	1876-77.
Importations of free commodities.....	\$952,713	\$1,155,806
Importations of dutiable commodities.....	194,615	201,630
<b>Total.....</b>	<b>\$1,147,328</b>	<b>\$1,357,436</b>

COUNTRIES WHENCE IMPORTED.

Imported From.	Value. 1877-78.	Value. 1876-77.
Brazil.....	\$916,505	\$1,117,739
Cuba.....	965	96
England.....	186,242	168,347
Mexico.....	38,614	52,634
Germany.....	8,023	9,687
France.....	375	7,945
Central America.....	.....	.....
British West Indies.....	.....	43
Spain.....	.....	486
Portugal.....	.....	561
Scotland.....	1,604	.....
<b>Total.....</b>	<b>\$1,147,328</b>	<b>\$1,357,436</b>

EXPORTATIONS.

Countries to which Exported	Value. 1877-78.	Value. 1876-77.
England.....	9,198,112	11,343,821
France.....	1,426,819	1,426,556
Germany.....	437,379	1,306,858
Ireland.....	685,088	945,951
Norway and Sweden.....	.....	79,242
Netherlands.....	53,350	72,500
Italy.....	42,444	43,000
Central America.....	.....	10,000
Mexico.....	8,045	8,319
Cuba.....	53,400	5,900
Russia.....	58,500	.....
<b>Total.....</b>	<b>11,963,132</b>	<b>15,242,747</b>

---

 DUTIES COLLECTED IN PORT OF GALVESTON, FROM 1870 TO 1878.
 

---

Total 1877-78.....	\$62,252 73
Total 1876-77.....	85,930 49
Total 1875-76.....	97,947 77
Total 1874-75.....	144,186 85
Total 1873-74.....	210,015 00
Total 1872-73.....	492,428 86
Total 1871-72.....	672,562 81
Total 1870-71.....	633,218 19
Total 1869-70.....	277,750 29

---

DEBT, STATE.—From the reports of the Comptroller, it appears that the State debt was, in 1872, \$1,810,576; in 1873, \$1,797,894; in 1874, \$3,425,328; in 1875, \$5,551,837; in 1876, \$6,067,836; in 1877, \$6,116,924; in 1878, \$5,121,911.



**OLEANDER GROVE, GALVESTON, TEXAS.**



## EDUCATION.

Under Spanish and Mexican domination, the law contemplated the establishment of public free schools, where elementary instructions should be given, but none such were established. Almonte, in his report of the state of society in Texas, in 1834, mentioned three schools in the province taught by private teachers. One of these schools was in San Antonio, the teacher receiving \$25 per month from his patrons; another was in Brazoria, and the third at Jonesburg, on Red river.

1836. In their Declaration of Independence the Texans complain that Mexico had failed to provide the means of instruction which had been promised to the children of the colonists. Section 10 of the general provisions of the constitution of 1836, declares: "It shall be the duty of Congress, as soon as circumstances will admit, to provide by law a general system of education."

1839. Congress gave fifty leagues of land for a State University, and three leagues to each county for school purposes.

1840. Congress gave all counties an additional league of school land, and extended the privilege to all counties that should be organized in the future.

1845. The Constitution, article 10, says: "The Legislature shall, as early as practicable, establish free schools throughout the State, and shall furnish means for their support by taxation on property." One-tenth of all the revenue was set apart for school purposes.

1849. Governor Wood, in his message to the Legislature, calls attention to the subject of education thus: "The Constitution of our State enjoins upon the Legislature the duty of making suitable provisions as early as practicable, for the support and maintenance of free public schools."

1854. The school fund of the State amounted to \$128,668. To this was added this year \$2,000,000 of the amount received from the United States for the sale of the Santa Fe territory. Laws were made for the distribution, *pro rata*, of the interest of the school fund to the various counties, the money to be applied to the payment of the tuition of indigent children. Under the law of 1854, money was distributed as follows:

	No.	Money	Per
	Pupils.	Distributed.	Capita.
1855 .....	65,468	\$ 40,587	\$.63
1856 .....	72,828	101,588	1.38
1857 .....	87,000	106,000	1.21
1858 .....	102,772	105,815	1.03
1859 .....	101,081	113,154	1.12½
1860 .....	104,477	104,447	1.00
1861 .....	105,200	65,224	.62

The first free school established in the State was in the city of San Antonio, in 1854. The Comptroller of the treasury was then *ex-officio* Superintendent of Instruction.

After the war the Constitution of 1866 reaffirmed the article in the Constitution of 1845, and also set apart every alternate section of land, surveyed by railroads, to school purposes. A State School Board was created, and Pryor Lea appointed Superintendent of Public Instruction. He was succeeded in the summer of 1867, by E. M. Wheelock.

1868. The Reconstruction Convention set apart all the proceeds of the sales of public lands for school purposes, and to this sum added one-fourth of the State revenue, and a poll-tax of one dollar on each male citizen between twenty-one and sixty years of age. The permanent school fund amounted at this time to, say, \$2,000,000.

By this Constitution, all between the ages of six and eighteen years, were included in the scholastic population. It also required the Legislature to establish public free schools throughout the State, for at least four months in each year; and set apart to the school-fund all the proceeds of the sales of public lands; a poll-tax of one dollar from every male citizen between the ages of twenty-one and sixty years, and also set apart one-fourth of the revenue for school purposes.

In the United States census tables for 1870, it is stated that 65,205 children attended school—of whom 61,016 were white, and 4,189 colored. Cost of education during the year, including colleges, academies, etc., 414,870; of which \$760 was from endowment, \$15,220 from school fund, and \$398,890 from tuition.

**ILLITERACY; 1850-1870.**—In 1850, there were 10,525 whites over twenty-one years of age, unable to read and write. Of this number 2,488 were foreign-born. In 1860, the number of white illiterates was 18,414; of whom 6,644 were foreign-born. In 1870 there were illiterates, over twenty-one years of age, white, 37,150; and colored 94,818. Including all illiterates, ten years old and upwards, there were 221,705; of whom 70,845 were white, (including 18,369 foreign-born), and 150,617 colored.

In 1871, a school board was organized, consisting of the Governor, Attorney-General and Superintendent of Public Instruction. John C. Degrees filled the latter office. A system of free schools was inaugurated throughout the State. The first annual report represented that 1,324 schools had been opened, taught by 1,578 teachers; and into which 73,804 pupils had been enrolled. In 1872, the scholastic population amounted to 228,355; entered schools, 127,672; taught by 2,625 teachers; average attendance, 81,653; total cost, \$1,222,221; of which the State paid \$482,753; the remainder paid by the counties, cost per month, \$1.43. In 1873, the scholastic population was 280,000; entered public schools, 129,000; average attendance, 83,000; number of teachers, 2,207; average salary of teachers, \$57 per month.

In 1874, O. N. Hollinsworth, Superintendent of Public Instruction; scholastic population, 313,061; entered public schools, 161,670; cost per capita per month, \$1.56, or for four months, the time required by the Constitution, \$6.24; equal to \$1,008,820.

The State school fund derived from school bonds, poll tax, and one-fourth of the revenue derived from taxation, amounted to \$546,985. The Legislature appropriated \$500,000, to be distributed pro rata to the several counties. In 1875, the scholastic population amounted to 339,000. Appropriated to each child, \$1.47.

It is estimated that for the year 1878-9, \$900,000 may be appropriated for the public schools. The scholastic population, as far as reported to the Comptroller's office, is as follows:



SCHOLASTIC POPULATION.  
[Between eight and fourteen years of age.]

COUNTIES.	1878.	1877	COUNTIES.	1878.	1877.
Anderson	2,069	1,746	Henderson	1,411	1,411
Angelina	917	884	Hidalgo	839	414
Aranas	145	145	Hill	1,938	1,653
Atascosa	1,001	913	Hood	732	634
Austin	2,228	1,633	Hopkins	2,429	2,019
Bandera	811	260	Houston	2,214	1,026
Bastrop	1,758	1,668	Hunt	1,849	1,819
Bea	376	321	Jack	629	493
Bell	2,119	1,583	Jackson	416	317
Bexar	1,033	587	Jasper	930	777
Blanco	505	456	Jefferson	460	330
Bosque	1,422	1,141	Johnson	2,236	1,976
Bowie	1,035	680	Karnes	407	407
Brazoria	1,622	904	Kaufman	1,881	1,216
Brazos	1,799	1,371	Kendall	390	333
Brown	1,133	772	Kerr	278	209
Burleson	1,233	940	Kimble	127	94
Burnet	831	760	Kinney	280	208
Caldwell	1,457	885	Lamar	3,309	2,643
Calhoun	201	193	Lampasas	775	541
Callahan	191	104	Lavaca	1,737	629
Cameron	1,660	1,708	Lee	966	892
Camp	653	551	Leon	1,535	1,699
Cass	1,980	1,819	Liberty	782	494
Chambers	295	288	Limestone	1,963	1,417
Cherokee	2,207	1,814	Live Oak	220	182
Clay	281	247	Llano	624	510
Coleman	429	371	Madison	713	582
Collin	3,275	2,584	Marion	1,817	1,390
Colorado	2,397	1,782	Mason	280	226
Comal	1,237	784	Matagorda	579	406
Comanche	1,086	962	Maverick	295	186
Cook	2,359	1,650	McCulloch	194	207
Coryell	1,849	1,899	McLennan	3,424	2,755
Dallas	2,913	3,409	McMullen	72	50
Delta	768	660	Mdina	751	609
Denton	2,446	1,820	Menard	102	84
Dewitt	1,732	1,364	Milam	2,007	1,526
Duval	629		Montague	1,238	1,097
Eastland	561	348	Montgomery	794	794
Edwards	49		Morris	692	516
Ellis	2,887	1,534	Nacogdoches	1,855	1,579
El Paso	628	628	Navarro	2,781	2,158
Erath	1,771	1,429	Newton	681	604
Falls	2,250	1,653	Nueces	926	665
Fannin	3,753	2,342	Orange	429	322
Fayette	3,556	2,185	Palo Pinto	680	519
Fort Bend	1,374	963	Panola	1,545	1,583
Franklin	618	522	Parker	2,121	1,453
Freestone	1,900	1,323	Pecos	122	146
Frio	321	102	Polk	1,127	861
Galveston	2,578	2,669	Presidio	248	161
Gillespie	841	729	Rains	455	347
Goliad	740	517	Red River	2,178	1,773
Gonzales	1,891	1,547	Refugio	199	192
Grayson	5,010	3,464	Robertson	2,800	2,100
Gregg	1,048	869	Rockwell	366	279
Grimes	2,610	3,062	Runnels	50	
Guadalupe	1,883	1,370	Rusk	3,176	2,144
Hamilton	854	726	Sabine	745	685
Hardin	268	215	San Augustine	673	804
Harris	3,952	3,082	San Jacinto	966	845
Harrison	3,490	4,008	San Patricio	110	110
Hays	1,132	919	San Saba	673	553

SCHOLASTIC POPULATION.—*Continued.*

COUNTIES.	1878.	1877.	COUNTIES.	1878.	1877.
Shackelford.....	185	112	Williamson.....	1,476	1,476
Shelby.....	1,500	1,196	Wilson.....	921	606
Smith.....	2,866	2,119	Wise.....	1,807	1,571
Summervell.....	878	243	Wood.....	1,308	1,000
Starr.....	1,067	897	Young.....	462	298
Stephens.....	897	148	Zapata.....	178	178
Tarrant.....	2,274	8,066	CITIES.		
Taylor.....	89	58	Tyler.....	.....	218
Titus.....	833	728	Brenham.....	663	288
Tom Green.....	179	102	Greenville.....	.....	88
Travis.....	4,700	2,386	Dallas.....	1,852	1,210
Trinity.....	612	483	Gainesville.....	211	.....
Tyler.....	850	796	Castroville.....	153	.....
Upshur.....	1,393	926	Navasota.....	184	.....
Uvalde.....	201	258	Honey Grove.....	135	.....
Van Zandt.....	1,413	1,467	San Antonio.....	1,511	1,526
Victoria.....	1,387	962	Paris.....	705	440
Walker.....	1,606	1,220	Fort Worth.....	677	417
Waller.....	1,439	861	Corpus Christi.....	442	.....
Washington.....	3,572	2,578	Lawrence.....	54	.....
Webb.....	450	350	Rockdale.....	158	.....
Wharton.....	543	626			
<b>Total, 1877.....</b>			<b>166,017</b>		
<b>Total, 1878.....</b>			<b>207,168</b>		

NOTE.—Reports received at the last moment show scholastic census of the following counties: Fort Bend, 1,374; Harrison, 3,490; Webb, 451; Menard, 102; Clay, 351; Shackelford, 185; Lampasas, 775. Dallas city supplemental report adds 566 to the first report.

**HIGHER SCHOOLS.**—The report of the Commissioner of Education at Washington has never been full as to Texas institutions of learning. Without entering into minute details, we may state that since annexation, the leading Christian denominations have had schools under their supervision where the higher classes and mathematics and sciences have been taught. The Baptists have two Universities; one at Independence, Washington county, and the other at Waco, M'Lennan county. The Cumberland Presbyterians have the Trinity University, at Tehuacana, Limestone county. The Methodists, the Southwestern University, at Georgetown, Williamson county; Soule University, at Chappell Hill, and a number of other institutions in different parts of the State. The Old School Presbyterians have Austin College, first at Huntsville, but recently transferred to Sherman. There are also, probably scores of academies and high schools for both sexes, in successful operation in different parts of the State.

**STATE AGRICULTURAL AND MECHANICAL COLLEGE** at Bryan, or rather College Station, Brazos county. By an act of Congress, the United States gave to the State of Texas 180,000 acres of land scrip to found an Agricultural College. The scrip was sold in 1871 for \$156,600; and the same year the college was located on the Central Railroad, about four miles south of Bryan, and a contract let out for a building, to be of brick, on a foundation



**THE LAND OFFICE OF TEXAS, AUSTIN.**



of stone, 78x150 feet, covered with slate. In 1875, a Board of Directors was appointed, of whom the Governor, Lieutenant-Governor and Speaker of the House were *ex-officio* members; in addition to which there was appointed one from each Congressional district, as follows: E. B. Pickett, Charles De Morse, Isaac F. Graves, H. H. Davis, C. S. West—Mr. West resigned in 1876, and A. J. Peeler was put in his place—and S. F. Stockdale. The Board met and selected gentlemen for the different professorships, and the school opened on the 4th of October, 1876. The Legislature, at different times, appropriated the following sums for the college buildings: In 1871, \$75,000; 1874, \$40,000; and in 1875, \$32,000.\*

\*The following were appointed professors at the organization: Thos. S. Garthright (Mississippi), President; Alexander Hogg (Alabama), professor pure mathematics; R. P. W. Morris (Austin), professor applied mathematics and tactics; John T. Hand (Tyler), professor belles lettres, English literature, Latin and Greek; C. P. B. Martin (Montgomery county), professor agricultural chemistry; Wm. A. Banks (Austin), professor modern languages; Gen. Hamilton P. Bee, steward and general superintendent. At the meeting of the Board of Directors, in 1878, Gen. L. M. Lewis, of Missouri, was appointed to a professorship, and the office of steward and general superintendent dispensed with.

## LIVE STOCK.

---

**CATTLE.**—The fathers who founded the old missions, introduced some domestic animals into Texas. In 1821-22, Abner Kuykendall brought to the Brazos seventy head of cattle; and the next year, Randall Jones, in Louisiana, traded a negro man for sixty head, which he introduced into Fort Bend county. In 1831, Messrs. M'Neil and Bingham had each 600 head, and Taylor White, on the Trinity, had 3,000. Almonte estimated that in 1834 the department of the Brazos had 25,000 head of cattle, and that of Nacogdoches, 50,000 head.

There were in Texas in 1846, 382,783 head of cattle; in 1855, 1,363,688; in 1860, 3,786,443; in 1865, 2,741,358; in 1870, 3,651,310; in 1875, 3,182,904; in 1876, 2,810,309—valued at \$15,023,701. In 1877, 3,413,356, valued at \$18,931,356. The reports of the Agricultural Department at Washington vary considerably from those of our own Comptroller. For instance, in 1870, the Comptroller's report places the number of cattle at 3,651,316, valued at \$13,581,272; and the agricultural report for the same year makes the number of stock cattle 3,500,000, valued at \$21,350,000; and to this adds, milch cows number 615,000, valued at \$6,562,000—total number, 4,115,000; total value, \$27,912,000; an enormous increase over the assessed number and value.

The cattle of Texas are now driven north to market. In 1873, and again in 1874, about 200,000 were taken across Red river and exported by water. In 1875, 116,000 crossed Red river; in 1876, 151,000; and it was estimated that over 300,000 were taken out over that route in 1877.

**GOATS AND HOGS.**—See statistics of wealth; articles taxed.

**HORSES AND MULES.**—In the Comptroller's reports these come in one class. Number in 1846, 35,648, valued at \$1,510,950. Number in 1850, 89,223; 1855, 177,444, valued at \$7,803,588; 1860, 330,807, valued at \$15,899,430; 1865, 451,400, valued at \$14,015,877; 1870, 625,585, valued at \$16,437,075—(the agricultural report for the same year places the whole number at 702,500, valued at \$27,507,874); in 1874 there were 871,278, valued at \$21,187,030; 1875, 838,232, valued at \$20,792,220; 1876, 848,084, valued at \$19,371,347; 1877, 985,581, valued at \$20,507,477. Notwithstanding the general impression that Texas is a great country for cattle, the above figures show that horses and mules exceed in value by millions, the value of horned cattle. Again, notwithstanding the great value of our live stock, one good cotton crop of 800,000 bales, on a good market, would bring in enough money to buy all the cattle, horses and mules in the State!

**SHEEP.**—In 1865, there were in the State, 941,413; in 1870, 1,047,986; in 1874, 1,632,971; in 1876, 2,601,071; in 1877, 2,532,610; valued at \$3,092,680. The sheep and wool business in the State is yet in its infancy.

## PENITENTIARIES.

---

In the year 1846 the Legislature made provision for establishing a State penitentiary, and the next year it was located at Huntsville. James Gillespie was Superintendent and Abner H. Cook, Contractor. During the years 1848-49, 11,000 square yards were inclosed with a brick wall and buildings erected containing 240 cells. This was done mostly by convicts. The first convict was received October 1st, 1849. In 1850, ten were admitted and nine remained at the close of the year. Twenty-seven were admitted in 1851; forty-three in 1852; thirty-one in 1853; thirty-six in 1854; thirty-nine in 1855; forty-three in 1856, and fifty in 1857. At the close of 1857, out of 280 admitted, there were 102 still in the institution.

In 1856, machinery was procured for the manufacture of cotton and woolen goods, and a building erected for the machinery, 270x50 feet. Forty cotton looms and 286 spindles were put in operation, and 200 spindles for wool.

1861-1864.—During the war Thomas Caruthers was Superintendent. In a report to the Legislature, August 31st, 1863, Mr. Caruthers reported that in twenty-one months there had been manufactured 2,233,587 yards of Osnaburgs, 406,025 yards cotton jeans, and 322,890 yards Kerseys, etc. The income of the institution amounted to \$1,521,687, largely in excess of expenditures.

In 1865 there were 118 convicts; in 1866, James Gillespie was Superintendent—298 convicts—classed: 98 Americans, 35 Mexicans, 155 negro men and 10 women. In 1867 Thaddeus C. Bell was Superintendent; 483 convicts, 179 of whom were employed on railroads, under the supervision of the Public Labor Board. In 1870, A. J. Bennet, Superintendent; 484 convicts. 1871, 994 convicts. On the 5th of July, the Penitentiary was leased to Ward, Dewey & Co., for fifteen years—the lessees to have the use of the buildings and labor of the convicts; and to pay the State, for the first five years, \$5,000 per annum; for the next five years \$10,000 per annum; and for the last five years \$20,000 per annum.

In 1872, A. D. Malloy, Inspector. In September, 1873, there were 883 convicts. 1874, J. K. P. Campbell, Inspector; 1454 convicts of whom 676 were kept in the grounds at Huntsville and the others hired out on railroads, plantations, etc.

In 1875 provision was made for locating two additional penitentiaries, one east of Trinity, and one west of the Colorado. The Commissioners located them respectively at Rusk, and at San Marcos. Five thousand acres of land were purchased near Rusk, upon which a suitable building has been erected. It was completed early in January, 1879. The foundation is laid with iron ore rock, and the remainder with yellow ochre rock. The cell house is divided into two wings, each 273 feet long, 42 feet wide, by 40 odd feet high. Each of these wings contains a double tier of cells, four cells high; each tier contains 264 cells. Total number of cells, 528. These cells are eight by six. The domestic building contains on the ground floor one

dining-room, 40x100; one kitchen, 25x40; bakery, 20x40; one store-room, 10x26; one laundry, 40x45; one drying-room, 10x26. The second floor contains chapel, 40x100; one hospital, 40x40, with medicine room over staircase. Library, 25x34, and one epidemic hospital, 20x40.

Complaints having been made to the Governor, of the treatment of convicts, a Commission was appointed, who, after investigating the subject, reported that there were grounds for the complaints.

In 1876 there were 1,723 convicts, of whom 1280 were hired to outside parties. H. K. White, Inspector.

1877, April 2d, the Contractors, Ward, Dewey & Co., returned the Penitentiary to the control of the State Executive, who leased it to Burnett & Kilpatrick. There were 1,582 convicts. On the 16th of December it was leased to E. H. Cunningham, of Bexar county.





**MARKET HOUSE, HOUSTON.**



## POPULATION.

It is supposed that in the year 1744 there were 1,500 Europeans in Texas and an equal number of civilized Indians. Twenty years later there were only about half as many. In 1806 there were 7,000; in 1830, 20,000; in 1836, Mr. Morfit estimated the population at 52,470. In 1847 the first census was taken. There were then 100,508 whites, ten free negroes, and 35,267 slaves. Total, 135,775.

The following is from the census reports:

Census Reports.	1870.	1860.	1850.
Total Population.....	818,579	604,215	212,592
Whites.....	567,700	430,891	154,034
Colored.....	253,475	182,921	58,558
Native Born.....	756,168	560,793	194,433
Foreign Born.....	66,411	43,422	17,681

**POPULATION, NATIVITY OF.**—As reported in 1870, 254,091 white, and 134,306 colored, were natives of Texas; 41,663 white, and 20,550 colored, were natives of Alabama; 38,849 white, and 11,772 colored, were born in Tennessee; 28,639 white, and 13,805 colored, in Mississippi; 26,326 white, and 14,801 colored, in Georgia; 17,608 white, and 5,608 colored, were natives of Arkansas; 11,233 white, and 7,421 colored, natives of North Carolina; 15,235 white, and 12,045 colored, natives of Louisiana; 10,569 white, and 7,155 colored, were from South Carolina; 8,480 white, and 13,633 colored, from Virginia.

**FOREIGN BORN.**—Besides the 62,411 reported in 1870 as foreign born, 107,327 had one or both parents foreign born. Of the foreign born, 23,976 were Germans, 22,510 Mexicans, and 6,753 were from Great Britain. Cameron county has the largest foreign born population—6,266 Mexicans. Bexar reports 2,309 Mexicans and 1,829 Germans. Other counties having a large German population were: Fayette, 2,128; Austin, 2,110; Galveston, 1,923; Comal, 1,878; Harris, 1,834; Washington, 1,701; Gillespie, 1,245; Dewitt, 844; Colorado, 776; Guadalupe, 736; Bastrop, 937; Travis, 641; Starr county, 2,846 Mexicans; Hidalgo, 1,602; Nueces, 1,266; Maverick, 1,120; El Paso, 1,024; Webb, 954, and Presidio, 772.

**PRESENT POPULATION.**—Approximately, our present population is 2,000,000. A little less than 500,000 are assessed for the poll tax; and estimating four persons for each one taxed, the population would fall a little short of two millions; it is probably above that number.

## RAILROADS.

---

It would be tedious and unprofitable to enumerate the numerous charters for railroads during the Republic. No roads were built or even commenced. In 1852, preliminary surveys were made upon two lines of road, and some work done: the Buffalo Bayou, Brazos and Colorado road, and the Memphis and El Paso road. Buffalo Bayou, Brazos and Colorado road, gauge four feet eight and a half inches, was commenced under the supervision of General Sidney Sherman, at Harrisburg, in 1852. The second locomotive west of the Mississippi was on this road. It reached Stafford's Point in 1853, Walker's in 1854, and Richmond, thirty-two miles from its initial point, in 1855. The Brazos was crossed by a temporary bridge, nearly on a level with the water. It reached the Colorado at Eagle Lake, sixty-five miles, in 1859; Alleyton in 1860, and Columbus, where the Colorado was bridged, in 1866. By an act of the Legislature, in 1870, the charter was changed, and San Antonio became its objective point. Since that period it has been known as the "Sunset Route," or the C., H. & S. A. Railway. Thomas W. Pierce, of Boston, became the President and principal owner of the road. It reached Shulenburg in 1873; Luling in 1874, and Kingsbury in 1875. In January, 1876, the citizens of Bexar county voted the company \$300,000 in county bonds, to secure the speedy construction of the road to San Antonio. It reached the Guadalupe river at Marion, 184 miles from Harrisburg, in September, 1876. In January, 1877, the terminus for passengers was changed from Harrisburg to Houston. On the 15th of January it reached San Antonio. From this point it may be extended to the Rio Grande by any route the company may select. As the road is now built, it has a length of 215 miles, of which thirty-six miles are steel rail, and the remainder of the best iron T rails, and all fish plated. There are 14 3-10 miles of pile and trestle bridges, 1,401 lineal feet of iron truss bridges, and 3,112 feet of combination truss bridging on the line, all of which are pronounced by competent judges as first-class in every respect and the entire road as A No. 1 in every particular of its component parts, including track.

*Officers.*—Thomas W. Pierce, President; H. B. Andrews, Vice-President; Charles Babbidge, Treasurer and Assistant Secretary; Jacob E. Fisher, Secretary, Assistant Treasurer and Auditor; James Converse, Chief Engineer and General Superintendent. General offices: Houston, Texas.

### STATIONS AND DISTANCES, "SUNSET ROUTE."

Miles.	Stations.	Miles.
—	Galveston	—
—	Houston	213
0	Harrisburg	214
8	Pierce Junction	206
19	Stafford	193

26.....	Walker.....	188
32.....	Richmond.....	182
42.....	Randon.....	172
51.....	East Bernard.....	163
60.....	West Bernard.....	154
68.....	Eagle Lake.....	146
81.....	Alleyton.....	133
81.....	Columbus.....	130
94.....	Borden.....	120
100.....	Weimar.....	114
109.....	Schulenburg.....	105
122.....	Flatonia.....	92
134.....	Waelder.....	80
147.....	Harwood.....	67
156.....	Luling.....	58
168.....	Kingsbury.....	46
178.....	Seguin.....	36
189.....	Marion.....	25
200.....	Converse.....	13
213.....	San Antonio.....	0

**GALVESTON, HOUSTON AND HENDERSON RAILROAD.**—In 1856-7 twenty-five miles of this road was built from Virginia Point, opposite Galveston, toward Houston, and reached the southern suburb of that city in 1858. Galveston voted \$100,000 in bonds to build a bridge from the Island to the main land, which was completed in 1860. In 1863, by order of General Magruder, the road was extended through the city of Houston, to connect with the Texas Central road. In 1876, the gauge was changed from the broad to the standard gauge. Line of road, Galveston to Houston, 50 miles; sidings and other tracks, 12.50 miles; gauge, 4 feet 8½ inches; rail, 56 pounds. During the year 1876 the whole road was thoroughly repaired and fish-bar rails substituted in the place of the chair rails on all but nine miles of the main track, and new bridges constructed over several small creeks and bayous, while the bay bridge, 1½ miles, was repiled and strengthened throughout. The track has been raised and ballasted with shell and sand, a locomotive and train of cars having been constantly and exclusively employed on this work for more than a year. This company has also fitted up large, commodious and dry cotton yards, where that staple can be handled with greater dispatch and be free from destruction by fire.

The stations on this road are: Galveston, Pooleville, Eagle Grove, Virginia Point, Highland, Dickinson, Clear Creek, Websterville, Summit, Allen's, Harrisburg and Houston, of which all except Galveston, Houston and Harrisburg are nominally meeting points.

Rolling stock consists of fifteen locomotives, nine passenger cars, six baggage, mail and express cars, 242 freight cars.

*Officers.*—John Sealy, President; H. M. Hoxie, Vice-President and Manager; F. P. Killeen, Secretary; J. H. Hutchings, Treasurer; O. G. Murray, General Freight and Passenger Agent; J. H. Crowley, Master of Transportation; John G. Conlon, Master Mechanic.

**HOUSTON AND TEXAS CENTRAL RAILROAD.**—This was originally chartered as the Galveston and Red River Road. Its gauge was five and a half feet. It was first chartered in 1848. In 1852 the charter was amended and work was commenced in 1853. Paul Bremond took out the first shovel-full of dirt in the city of Houston. Compared with roads built more recently, its progress was slow. It reached Cypress, twenty-five miles, in 1856; Hockley, ten miles further, in 1857, and Hempstead, fifty miles from Houston, in 1858; Navasota in 1859, and Millican, eighty miles from Houston, in 1860. After the war closed, work was resumed, and the road reached Bryan, 100 miles, in 1867; Calvert, 130 miles, in 1868; Bremond, 145 miles, in 1869; Groesbeck, 170 miles, in 1870; Corsicana, 210 miles in 1871. From Corsicana onward, the gauge was changed to the standard gauge, and subsequently, the entire road was made to conform to that gauge. The road reached M'Kinney in 1872, and in March, 1873, reached Denison, where it formed a junction with the Missouri, Kansas and Texas Road, opening connection with St. Louis. In 1876, the road passed into the control of Commodore Charles Morgan.

Miles.	Stations.	Miles.
0.....	Houston.....	341
5.....	Eureka.....	336
12.....	Gum Island.....	329
18.....	Thompson's.....	322
25.....	Cypress.....	315
35.....	Hockley.....	305
40.....	Waller.....	300
50.....	Hempstead.....	290
62.....	Courtney.....	278
70.....	Navasota.....	270
80.....	Millican.....	260
83.....	Wellborn.....	253
99.....	Bryan.....	241
107.....	Benchley.....	233
113.....	Sutton.....	227
120.....	Hearne.....	220
128.....	Calvert.....	212
137.....	Hammond.....	203
142.....	Bremond.....	198
155.....	Kosse.....	185
161.....	Thornton.....	179
170.....	Groesbeck.....	170
181.....	Mexia.....	159
189.....	Wortham.....	151
199.....	Richland.....	141
211.....	Corsicana.....	129
221.....	Rice.....	120
231.....	Ennis.....	110
239.....	Palmer.....	102
246.....	Ferris.....	95
264.....	Hutchins.....	87



**VIEW OF SAN PEDRO SPRINGS, SAN ANTONIO.**





Miles.	Stations.	Miles.
265.....	Dallas.....	76
277.....	Richardson.....	64
282.....	Plano.....	59
296.....	McKinnéy.....	45
302.....	Melissa.....	39
312.....	Van Alstyne.....	29
319.....	Howe.....	22
329.....	Sherman.....	12
341.....	Denison.....	0

*Officers.*

C. A. Whitney, New Orleans, president; G. Jordan, Houston, vice-president; A. S. Richardson, Houston, secretary; E. W. Cave, Houston, treasurer; A. H. Swanson, Houston, general superintendent; J. Waldo, general freight and ticket agent.

*Line of Road.*

	Miles.
Main line—Houston to Denison.....	343
Branches—Hempstead to Austin.....	115
Bremond to Waco.....	47—162
<b>Total length of lines owned and operated by the company.....</b>	<b>505</b>
Siding and other tracks, 65 miles; gauge, 4 feet 8½ inches; rail, 56 lbs.	

**HOUSTON AND TEXAS CENTRAL (*Western Branch*).**—Twenty-five miles of this road from Hempstead to Brenham was completed in 1865; in 1869, it was extended to Burton, thirteen miles west of Brenham; in 1870, to Ledbetter; and in 1871, to Austin, 165 miles from Houston. Stations and towns on the line:

	Miles.
Houston to Hempstead.....	50
“ Chappell Hill.....	61
“ Brenham.....	71
“ Burton.....	84
“ Ledbetter.....	96
“ Giddings.....	106
“ Paige.....	117
“ MacDade.....	123
“ Elgin.....	138
“ Manor.....	150
“ Austin.....	165

**(*Waco Branch*).**—Was built from Bremond to Marlin, eighteen miles, in 1870; and reached Waco, forty-five miles, in 1871. In 1877, this road was extended in a northwestern direction eleven miles to White Rock; making it fifty-six miles from Bremond. Stations and distances:

	Miles.
0 Houston.....	.....
142 Bremond.....	142
9 Reagan.....	151
9 Marian.....	160
8 Perry.....	163
10 Harrison.....	178
9 Waco.....	187
11 White Rock.....	198

The following statement of the condition of the roads now in progress at Galveston, is from the "Annual Review" for September, 1878:

**GALVESTON WHARF COMPANY'S RAILROAD.**—*Directory.*—J. L. Darragh, I. Dyer, J. G. Duffield, John Sealy, C. G. Wells and H. Rosenberg on the part of the company, with his honor Mayor D. C. Stone and aldermen J. H. Hurt and J. Runge on the part of the city. J. L. Darragh, president, Thos. C. Shearer, acting secretary.

Line of road, 2½ miles; gauge, 4 feet, 8½ inches; rail, 56 lbs. This road was constructed by the Wharf Company to connect the Galveston, Houston and Henderson, the Gulf, Colorado and Santa Fe and others that may hereafter be constructed with the different wharves, so that freight cars can be loaded and unloaded directly alongside of ships lying at the various wharves. It commences on Thirty-seventh street, Galveston, where it intersects the Galveston, Houston and Henderson, runs thence in a northeasterly direction to Thirty-fifth street, where it meets the Gulf, Colorado and Santa Fe road, thence runs east on Avenue A to the eastern portion of the city, with branches extending directly on the New wharf, Lufkin's wharf, the New York Steamship wharf, the Brick wharf and Morgan's Line wharf.

**GALVESTON, BRAZOS AND COLORADO, (*In Progress*).**—Line of road, 15½ miles; gauge of road, 3 feet; rails, 30 lbs. Rolling stock: 3 locomotives, 4 passenger cars, 89 freight cars. Entire cost, \$165,000.

This road is now in the hands of David E. Small and Edward Samuels, of Pennsylvania, represented in Galveston by Messrs. Sloan & Gonzales. The road having been in the hands of lessees during the greater part of the season, and no report having been made, it is impossible to give report of operations. The road and rolling stock have been put in good order and the road is being worked to its utmost capacity. Negotiations are in progress looking to an early extension of the line.

**GULF, COLORADO AND SANTA FE RAILWAY.** *Officers.*—M. Kopperl, president; Jas. Sorley, vice president; C. C. Allen, secretary; R. J. John, treasurer; George B. Nichols, superintendent; B. M. Temple, chief engineer.

Line of road (completed): Galveston to the Brazos river, 48 miles; gauge, 4 feet 8½ inches; rails, 56 lbs.

A contract has recently been made with Messrs. Denistown, Croes & Co., a responsible firm of London, England, for placing \$2,700,000 of the company's first mortgage bonds, which sum, with the local aid subscribed on the line of the road, it is estimated will be sufficient to complete and equip the

road to Belton, Bell county, a distance of 220 miles from Galveston. This contract has been approved by the board of directors, and will be ratified by the stockholders at a general meeting.

At the present terminus of the road on the Brazos river, a substantial all-iron bridge, 485 feet, is being erected, and in a short time will be crossing that stream. The grade will be completed to the eighty-first mile by the 15th of October, 1878, and the rails and fastenings have been purchased and are on the way to finish the road, under the construction contract to that point, at Bovine Bend, by the 28th of November. By the 31st of October, 1878, the road will be completed to Richmond, 63 miles from Galveston, there forming a connection with the Galveston, Harrisburg and San Antonio Railroad, thus putting Galveston in direct communication with points heretofore tributary to other markets. Rolling stock has been ordered to equip and operate the line so completed.

**HOUSTON AND TEXAS WESTERN.**—Gauge, 3 feet; rail, 30 lbs. In operation from Houston to Pattison, forty-one miles. Officers: T. W. House, president; Peter Floeck, vice-president; J. G. Tracy, secretary; J. W. Goodwin, superintendent. General offices—Houston.

Miles.	Stations.	Miles.
0.....	Houston.....	41
6.....	Westheimer.....	35
12.....	Piney Point.....	29
22.....	Habermacher.....	19
30.....	Wimberly.....	11
41.....	Pattison.....	0

**THE HOUSTON EAST AND WEST TEXAS RAILWAY.** *Officers.*—Paul Bremond, president; Samuel S. Timpson, secretary.

This enterprise, familiarly known as the Bremond road, is being pushed to the Trinity river, and will be completed to that point by December next. Forty miles have been finished, and for that distance there are daily trains. Five additional miles are ready for the iron, which will be laid immediately. Mr. Bremond has purchased iron sufficient to carry the road to the Trinity, and the right of way for nearly the whole distance has been cleared. There are nine mills in active operation upon this road as far as it has been built, which are turning out each week a vast amount of excellent lumber, and the revenue from this source alone is paying a large per cent. on the capital invested. The town of Cleveland, named for Judge Chas. Cleveland, of Galveston, will be reached before another month shall have passed, and a considerable business will spring up at that point as soon as trains can be run from it to Houston. The construction of the road is in every particular first-class, the work having been done by Messrs. Snelling & Harper up to the forty-mile point. Mr. Snelling now has control of the construction, Mr. Harper having died within the past few months. Recently Mr. Bremond has bonded the road for \$7,000 per mile, at 7 per cent. interest, and the bond is considered a number one security. There can be no doubt that

this enterprise is one of the most promising in the Southern States. Once across the Trinity river, a magnificent farming country will be reached, and along the whole line of that river to the town of Nacogdoches, the pine, walnut, white oak, hickory and other valuable timber trees cannot be surpassed in this country. The Houston East and West Texas Railway is going to be the means of developing a country now without railroad facilities, and the State of Texas would be better off if she had more Paul Bremonds within her limits.

The principal office of the company is at Houston.

**TEXAS TRANSPORTATION COMPANY.**—This short road was built in 1876 to connect with the town of Clinton, where Mr. Morgan's steamers land, with Houston. It is seven and one-half miles long. The road is built of steel rails, tied with water-seasoned cypress and equipped in the best, most substantial style; receives other companies' cars at Houston, pulling them with their powerful engines to the wharf, immediately alongside Mr. Morgan's steamships, which receive and transport produce to all ports.

**TEXAS AND NEW ORLEANS RAILROAD.**—Ten miles of this road from Houston eastward was built in 1859. In 1860 it was completed eighty miles to Beaumont, and in 1861 to Orange, 106 miles from Houston, and at the close of the war the road was suspended. In 1876 a re-organization of the company took place, and soon afterward re-commenced business.

*Officers of the Road.*—John T. Terry, President; J. F. Crosby, Vice-President and General Manager; T. W. House, Treasurer; B. F. Merritt, Secretary; P. B. Watson, Auditor; C. A. Burton, Superintendent; W. H. Masters, General Freight and Passenger Agent; C. C. Barr, Chief Engineer; N. R. Olcott, General Land Agent.

Length of line in operation, Houston to Orange, 106 miles; gauge 4 feet 8½ inches; weight of rail per yard, 56 pounds.

Miles.	Stations.	Miles.
0	Houston	106
12	Shelden	94
20	Crosby	86
35	Dayton	71
40	Liberty	66
53	Devers	53
67	Sour Lake	39
83	Beaumont	23
93	Terry	13
106	Orange	0

**INTERNATIONAL AND GREAT NORTHERN RAILROAD COMPANY, MAY 1st, 1878.**  
LINE OF ROAD.

	Miles.
Houston to Longview, Texas	235
Branches { Phelps (66 miles north of Houston) to Huntsville	8
{ Palestine (152 miles north of Houston) to Austin	181
{ Troupe (198 miles north of Houston) to Mineola	45
{ Houston to Columbia	51-285

Total length of all lines owned and operated..... 520



**FORMER MILITARY HEADQUARTERS, SAN ANTONIO.**



Sidings and other tracks, 20 miles; gauge of road, 4 feet 8½ inches; rail, 56 pounds.

The Houston and Great Northern road was commenced in the city of Houston in 1870; reached the Trinity, 88 miles, in 1871, with a branch to Huntsville, 8 miles, in 1872. It reached Palestine, 152 miles, and in 1873 was combined with the International Railroad.

## HOUSTON DIVISION.

Miles.	Stations.	Miles.
0	Houston	232
5	Cross Timbers	226
12	Prairie	220
19	Westfield	213
23	Spring	209
27	Hartley's	205
28	Haltom's	204
30	Egypt	201
33	Parker	199
34	Medley's	198
36	Grand Lake	196
38	Berings	184
47	Willis	177
55	Waverly	171
66	Phelps	165
71	Dodge	161
79	Riverside	153
86	Trinity	146
95	Red Branch	137
100	Lovelady	132
113	Crockett	119
120	Stark	112
126	Grapeland	106
138	Elkhart	93
151	Palestine	81

## BRAZOS DIVISION.

Miles.	Stations.	Miles.
0	Austin	262
11	Duval	250
19	Round Rock	243
22	Palm Valley	238
27	Hutto	234
36	Taylor	226
48	Everett	213
52	Watson	210
61	Rockdale	200
69	Milano	192
81	Gause	181
91	Hearne	170
105	Englewood	156

## BRAZOS DIVISION.—CONTINUED

Miles.	Stations.	Miles.
115.....	Lake.....	147
125.....	Marques.....	136
137.....	Jewett.....	125
146.....	Buffalo.....	116
154.....	Keechi.....	108
164.....	Oakwoods.....	98
171.....	Douglass.....	90
180.....	Palestine.....	81

## RED RIVER DIVISION.

Miles.	Stations.	Miles.
151.....	Palestine.....	81
162.....	Nehes.....	69
167.....	Price's.....	65
168.....	Earl's.....	63
178.....	Jacksonville.....	54
184.....	Reynolds.....	48
196.....	Troupe.....	36
204.....	Jarvis.....	28
210.....	Overton.....	22
220.....	Kilgore.....	12
227.....	Foots'.....	5
232.....	Longview.....	0

## COLUMBIA DIVISION.

Miles.	Stations.	Miles.
50.....	Houston.....	0
44.....	Pierce Junction.....	6
29.....	Arcola.....	20
22.....	Sandy Point.....	28
18.....	China Grove.....	32
13.....	Chenango.....	36
8.....	Oyster Creek.....	41
0.....	Columbia.....	50

## NORTHERN DIVISION.

Miles.	Stations.	Miles.
0.....	Troupe.....	44
11.....	Whitehouse.....	33
19.....	Tyler.....	25
33.....	Lindale.....	11
44.....	Mineola.....	0

## HUNTSVILLE BRANCH.

Miles.	Stations.	Miles.
0.....	Phelps.....	8
8.....	Huntsville.....	0



*The Directory.*—Samuel Sloan, Moses Taylor, T. W. Pearsall and John S. Barnes, New York City, New York; James A. Baker, Houston, Texas; R. S. Hayes, H. M. Hoxie, D. S. H. Smith and Ira H. Evans, Palestine, Texas.

*Officers.*—Samuel Sloan, President; R. S. Hayes, Vice-President and Receiver; D. S. H. Smith, Treasurer; Ira H. Evans, Land Commissioner; George J. Pollock, Accountant; H. M. Hoxie, General Superintendent; Allen McCoy, General Freight Agent; J. H. Page, General Passenger and Freight Agent; O. H. Dorance, Master of Transportation; T. K. McFarland, General Baggage Agent; Jacob S. Wetmore, Assistant Treasurer and Transfer Agent, New York.

Principal offices and address, Palestine, Texas; fiscal agency and transfer office, New York.

The International Railroad was chartered in 1870, to run diagonally across the State from northeast to the southwest. To this road the State promised a bonus of \$10,000 per mile. It was commenced at Hearne, on the Central, and forty-one miles built to Jewett, in 1871; in 1872 it was built to Overton, 109 miles; in 1873 it reached Longview, and formed a junction with the Texas Pacific. The track was also extended southwest across the Brazos, fifteen miles. In 1874, it reached Rockdale, and Round Rock in July, 1876, and Austin, December, 1876.

The State having failed to issue the bonds to the company on the portion of the road already built, and the Constitution having been changed so as to permit the giving of land to corporations, in 1875, the Legislature passed a bill, substituting twenty sections of land, per mile, instead of the \$10,000 in bonds; the entire property of the company to be exempt from taxation for twenty-five years. This compromise was accepted by the company.

The Columbia division of this road was known, before the war, as the Sugar road. It was built from Houston to Pierce Junction in 1856; and extended to Columbia, in 1860. Having failed to pay the interest on the money loaned by the State from the school fund, it was sold out, and became the property of the H. & G. N. road.

**TEXAS PACIFIC ROAD.**—This was formerly known as the Southern Pacific, and was sometimes called the Memphis & El Paso road. Commenced at Shreveport, Louisiana, in 1858; reached Marshall, Texas, forty-two miles, in 1859, and Longview, in 1870; Dallas, in August, 1873; and Fort Worth, in July, 1876. In 1873, a section of the northern branch of this road was opened from Sherman to Brookston; in March, 1875, it reached Paris, and Clarksville, in July, and Texarkana in August.

*Board of Directors*—(Report for 1878.)—Thomas A. Scott, Pennsylvania; Frank S. Bond, Pennsylvania; John C. Brown, Tennessee; W. W. Keefer, Pennsylvania; H. H. Houston, Pennsylvania; R. D. Barclay, Pennsylvania; Marshall O. Roberts, New York; Henry G. Stebbins, New York; William Thaw, Pennsylvania; W. T. Walters, Maryland; Alfred Gaither, Ohio; W. C. Hall, Kentucky; W. S. McManus, Pennsylvania; T. L. Nesmith, California; W. M. Harrison, Texas. General Office, 275 South Fourth street, Philadelphia.

President, Thomas A. Scott; vice presidents, Frank S. Bond, John C. Brown; assistant to the president, James P. Scott; treasurer, George D. Krumbhaar; secretary, Charles E. Satterlee. Transfer agency, 50 Exchange place, New York. E. B. Hart, transfer agent.

The number of miles of road (main track) operated was the same at the commencement as at the close of the year, and is described as follows:

	Miles.
From Shreveport to Fort Worth.....	219 69-100
From Texarkana to Sherman.....	155 12-100
From Marshal to Texarkana Junction.....	69 5-100
<hr/>	
Total length of main track.....	443 86-100
The average number of miles operated the previous year.....	414 75-100

Which shows an increase over last year of..... 29 11-100

A fraction over 7 per cent.

At the commencement of the year the company had 36 94-100 miles of side tracks, and at the close of the year it had 39 44 100 miles, showing that 2½ miles of siding was added during the year. The total length of main tracks and sidings, May 31, 1878, was 483 80-100 miles.

J. S. Noble, Superintendent Trans-Continental and Jefferson divisions, Texarkana, Texas.

George E. Wright, General Baggage Agent, Marshall, Texas.

General Offices, Marshall, Texas.

Executive Office, 275 South Fourth street, Philadelphia, Pa.

#### JEFFERSON AND SOUTHERN DIVISION.

Miles.	Stations.	Miles.
0.....	Texarkana.....	254
6.....	Texarkana Junction.....	248
16.....	Sulphur.....	238
20.....	Alamo.....	234
26.....	Lanark.....	228
31.....	Atlanta.....	223
39.....	Hoxie's.....	215
44.....	Kildare.....	210
49.....	Lodi.....	205
59.....	Jefferson.....	195
65.....	Woodlawn.....	189
74.....	Marshall.....	180
79.....	Abney's.....	175
83.....	Millwood.....	171
88.....	Hallville.....	166
94.....	Mason Springs.....	160
97.....	Longview Junction.....	157
98.....	Longview.....	156
101.....	Willow Springs.....	153
110.....	Gladewater.....	144



**COMAL RIVER, NEAR NEW BRAUNFELS.**



## RAILROADS.

783

Miles.	Stations.	Miles.
116.....	Neal's.....	138
121.....	Big Sandy.....	133
123.....	Chilton.....	131
126.....	Hawkins.....	128
134.....	Lake Fork.....	120
143.....	Mineola.....	111
150.....	Silver Lake.....	104
157.....	Grand Saline.....	97
168.....	Edgewood.....	86
174.....	Will's Point.....	80
183.....	Elmo.....	71
190.....	Terrell.....	64
194.....	Lawrence.....	60
202.....	Forney.....	52
209.....	Mesquite.....	45
215.....	Scyene Siding.....	39
221.....	H. & T. C. Crossing.....	33
223.....	Dallas.....	32
228.....	Eagle Ford.....	26
234.....	Grand Prairie.....	20
241.....	Arlington.....	13
248.....	Village Creek.....	6
254.....	Fort Worth.....	0

## TRANS-CONTINENTAL DIVISION.

Miles.	Stations.	Miles.
0.....	Texarkana.....	154
6.....	Texarkana Junction.....	148
17.....	Whaley's.....	137
22.....	New Boston.....	132
34.....	DeKalb.....	120
44.....	Douglas.....	110
52.....	Annona.....	102
60.....	Clarksville.....	94
67.....	Bagwell's.....	86
73.....	Bennett's.....	81
80.....	Blossom Prairie.....	74
90.....	Paris.....	64
98.....	Brookston.....	56
111.....	Honey Grove.....	42
121.....	Dodd's.....	33
127.....	Bonham.....	27
138.....	Savoy.....	16
146.....	Choctaw.....	8
154.....	Sherman.....	0

## MARSHALL AND SHREVEPORT—SOUTHERN DIVISION.

Miles.	Stations.	Miles.
0.....	Shreveport.....	40
4.....	Race Track.....	37

Miles.	Stations.	Miles.
5.....	Jewella .....	36
8.....	Beckville.....	32
11.....	Flournoy's.....	29
15.....	Greenwood.....	25
21.....	Waskom.....	19
24.....	Jonesville.....	16
32.....	Scottsville.....	8
40.....	Marshall.....	0

**HENDERSON AND OVERTON.**—Webster Flanagan, president; W. S. Moss, vice president; A. B. Collins, treasurer; B. S. Wathen, secretary and superintendent.

Line of road, Overton to Henderson, 15 miles. Sidings half a mile. Gauge 4 feet 8½ inches. Rail 56 pounds.

**TYLER TAP (Narrow-Gauge).**—James P. Douglas, president; W. J. Goodman, vice president; E. C. Williams, treasurer; Charles T. Bonner, secretary.

Line of road: Tyler to Ferguson, 21 miles; sidings and other tracks, one mile. Gauge, 3 feet. Weight of rail in use, 30 pounds.

**DALLAS AND WICHITA.**—W. H. Gaston, president; J. W. Calder, vice president; George Shields, secretary.

Line of road: Dallas to Louisville, 22½ miles; gauge of road, 4 feet 8½ inches. Rail, 56 pounds. Ten miles constructed within past year. Expenditures and earnings about \$1,500 per month. Receiver appointed in June, and now in charge of the road.

**EAST LINE RAILWAY.**—Wm. M. Harrison, president; E. W. Taylor, vice president; W. H. Cook, secretary; W. B. Ward, superintendent; T. J. Rogers, auditor; J. P. Russell, general freight agent; S. D. Rainey, Jr., general ticket agent; B. H. Epperson, E. W. Taylor, W. B. Ward, L. A. Ellis, W. M. Harrison, J. P. Russell, J. H. Bemiss, S. D. Rainey, Jr., T. J. Rogers, directors.

This enterprise, begun and carried out by Jefferson men and capital, is a growing interest in east Texas. The road was commenced in June, 1876, first 20 miles completed December 1st, 1876. By September 1st, 1877, 13½ additional miles were completed, making 33½ miles of road in operation on that date. By December 1st, 1877, 16½ additional miles were completed, to Pittsburg, Camp county, making 50 miles of road in operation on that date. At this writing the road is completed and in running order 10 miles further, making a grand total of 60 miles now in operation.

**CORPUS CHRISTI, SAN DIEGO AND RIO GRANDE**—(In progress).—President, U. Lott; vice president, W. L. Rogers; secretary, J. B. Mitchell; treasurer, George F. Evans; assistant secretary and treasurer, Wm. A. Lott.

This road is now open for business to Collins, Nueces county, 40 miles from Corpus Christi. Gauge of road, 3 feet. Rail, 30 pounds.

**RIO GRANDE.**—Line of road, Brownsville to Point Isabel, 22 miles. Gauge, 4 feet 8½ inches. Rail, 56 pounds.

This road runs from Brownsville, on the Rio Grande river, to Point Isabel, where Mr. Morgan's ships connect with it. It is now in the hands of Mr. M. J. Gomila, receiver, by whom it is operated. No report of its operations has arrived.

**GULF, WESTERN TEXAS AND PACIFIC.**—Henry Sheppard, president and superintendent; M. D. Monserrat, secretary, treasurer and general agent. Principal office, Indianola, Texas.

Line of road, Indianola to Cuero, 68.8 miles; sidings and other tracks, 4 miles; gauge, four feet 8½ inches. Rail, 56 pounds.

The G. W. T. & P. was originally the San Antonio & Mexican Gulf road and was built from Port Lavaca to Victoria, in 1857-1860. Totally destroyed during the war; rebuilt after the war; but not proving profitable, it was purchased by Mr. Charles Morgan; the terminus taken from Lavaca to Indianola, and the road extended to Cuero, in 1874.

Miles.	Stations.	Miles.
70.....	Indianola .....	0
58.....	Lavacca.....	12
45.....	Placedo.....	25
30.....	Victoria.....	40
15.....	Thomaston.....	55
10.....	Burns.....	60
0.....	Cuero.....	70

For the fiscal year ending August 31, 1877, there were issued land certificates to the different railroads in Texas, as follows: 1218 certificates to International and Great Northern Railroad Company for 779,520 acres, none to State; 2991 certificates to Texas and Pacific Railroad Company for 1,914,240 acres; 881 certificates to Galveston, Harrisburg and San Antonio Railroad Company for 563,840 acres; 536 certificates to East Line and Red River Railroad Company for 343,040 acres; 248 certificates to Galveston, B. and C. Narrow Gauge Railroad Company for 158,720 acres; 298 certificates to Tyler Tap Railroad Company for 190,720 acres; 352 certificates to Texas and Western Narrow Gauge Railroad Company for 225,280 acres; 192 certificates to Gulf, Colorado and Santa Fe Railroad Company for 122,880; 160 certificates to Corpus Christi, San Diego and Rio Grande Railroad Company for 102,400 acres; 240 certificates to Henderson and Overton Branch Railroad Company for 153,600 acres; 184 certificates to Dallas and Wichita Railroad Company for 117,760 acres. The same number of certificates were issued to the school fund in each case. Making in the aggregate 7300 certificates with 4,672,000 acres to the railroads, and 3,892,480 for the State.

## TELEGRAPHS AND TAXES.

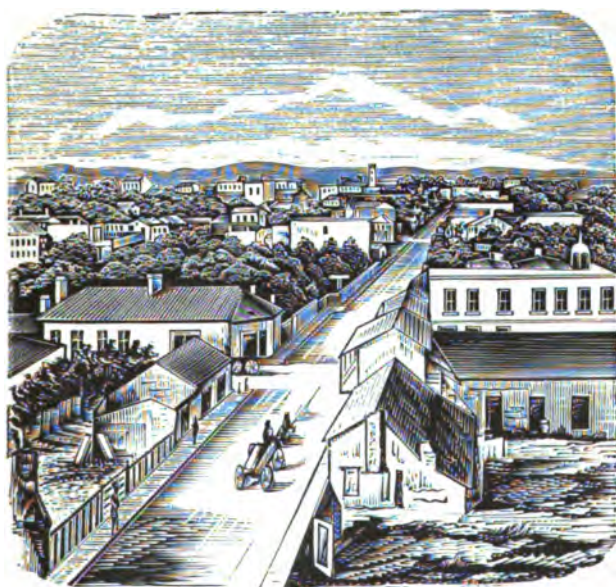
**TELEGRAPH LINES.**—On the 24th of January, 1860, telegraphic communication was established between Galveston and Houston, and the lines were gradually extended to the principal cities of the State. There are two lines in Texas: the Western Union and the Military Line. In 1875, Congress made an appropriation to connect the military posts on the frontier by telegraph, and the lines were built during the year 1876. The Western Union has in operation about 2,000 miles and the Military Line probably 1,500 miles.

### TOTAL AGGREGATE TAXABLE PROPERTY—1846-77.

YEARS.	Aggregate Taxable Property.
1846	\$34,391,175
1847	87,562,506
1848	43,812,537
1849	46,241,589
1850	51,814,615
1851	69,739,581
1852	80,754,094
1853	99,155,114
1854	126,981,617
1855	149,521,451
1856	161,304,025
1857	183,591,205
1858	193,636,818
1859	224,353,266
1860	291,315,659
1861	256,784,482
1864	358,101,886
1865	.....
1866	122,749,122
1867	170,005,545
1868	144,260,244
1869	149,655,336
1870	170,473,778
1871	222,504,073
1872	207,920,526
1873	223,410,930
1874	241,841,860
1875	270,853,790
1876	248,415,850
1877	318,963,765

The following table exhibits the amount of property in each county, and the summary following describes the different kinds of property taxed:





**VIEW OF COMMERCE STREET. SAN ANTONIO.**



TAXABLE PROPERTY.

789

ASSESSMENT FOR 1877-78.

COUNTY.	Total Valuation.	Ad Valorem Tax.	Poll Tax.	Total Tax.
Anderson.....	\$2,466,535	\$12,232 94	\$5,982	\$18,314 94
Angelina.....	618,034	3,091 30	1,434	4,525 30
Aransas.....	637,481	3,186 75	490	3,676 75
Atascosa.....	711,332	3,546 67	1,296	4,852 67
Austin.....	2,508,091	12,540 46	5,032	17,602 46
Bandera.....	331,169	1,655 84	778	2,433 84
Bastrop.....	2,634,015	13,172 31	5,300	18,472 31
Bee.....	1,005,580	5,027 68	884	5,911 68
Bell.....	3,387,970	16,889 84	5,734	22,623 84
Bexar.....	8,509,634	42,548 05	3,386	45,934 05
Blanco.....	706,729	3,534 43	1,232	4,766 43
Bosque.....	1,582,179	7,910 18	3,312	11,222 18
Bowie.....	1,445,318	7,255 95	2,376	9,631 95
Brazoria.....	2,382,984	11,915 27	3,660	15,575 27
Brazos.....	2,302,634	11,512 25	5,044	16,556 25
Brown.....	1,206,560	6,082 78	2,738	8,770 78
Burleson.....	1,588,097	7,940 49	3,264	11,204 49
Burnet.....	1,153,165	5,776 24	1,984	7,760 24
Caldwell.....	1,707,646	8,538 23	2,786	11,324 23
Calhoun.....	696,924	3,465 72	780	4,245 72
Callahan.....	125,400	627 40	394	1,021 40
Cameron.....	1,656,238	8,281 25	4,480	12,761 25
Camp.....	676,776	3,386 81	1,568	4,954 81
Cass.....	1,621,344	8,092 10	4,834	12,926 10
Chambers.....	410,045	2,050 20	768	2,818 20
Cherokee.....	1,878,562	9,392 80	5,186	14,558 80
Clay.....	822,766	4,114 33	1,052	5,166 33
Coleman.....	736,828	3,688 56	1,002	4,690 56
Collin.....	5,576,170	27,880 85	8,250	36,130 85
Colorado.....	2,735,621	13,678 71	5,436	19,114 71
Comal.....	1,272,660	6,362 80	1,772	8,134 80
Comanche.....	1,090,435	5,455 21	2,960	8,415 21
Concho.....	84,569	409 15	14	423 15
Cook.....	2,446,077	12,230 38	5,258	17,488 38
Coryell.....	1,809,246	9,055 40	4,176	13,231 40
Dallas.....	9,268,770	46,343 85	8,372	54,715 85
Delta.....	694,444	3,472 22	2,004	5,476 22
Denton.....	3,149,672	15,748 36	5,240	20,988 36
DeWitt.....	2,058,974	10,294 99	3,348	13,642 99
Duval.....	968,002	4,839 18	760	5,599 18
Eastland.....	461,714	2,308 57	1,104	3,412 57
Ellis.....	4,248,764	21,243 75	4,836	26,079 75
El Paso.....	421,436	2,107 23	1,322	3,429 23
Erath.....	1,614,323	8,072 88	3,926	11,998 88
Falls.....	2,815,086	14,075 40	5,614	19,689 40
Fannin.....	3,790,930	18,952 79	6,238	25,190 79
Fayette.....	4,797,853	23,985 81	7,828	31,813 81
Fort Bend.....	2,136,111	10,681 02	3,148	13,829 02
Franklin.....	536,695	2,663 48	1,542	4,205 48
Freestone.....	1,928,722	9,648 88	4,666	14,314 88
Frio.....	554,682	2,773 38	422	3,195 38
Galveston.....	22,913,359	114,566 83	8,116	117,682 83
Gillespie.....	961,630	4,808 15	1,664	6,474 15
Goliad.....	1,360,339	6,796 52	1,764	8,560 52
Gonzales.....	2,968,864	44,840 94	4,616	49,456 94
Grayson.....	6,668,235	33,342 53	11,616	44,958 53
Gregg.....	1,125,219	5,627 09	2,600	8,127 09

## ASSESSMENT FOR 1877-78—CONTINUED.

COUNTY.	Total Valuation.	Ad Valorem Tax.	Poll Tax.	Total Tax.
Grimes.....	\$2,718,355	\$13,599 15	\$6,786	\$20,385 15
Guadalupe.....	2,488,716	12,443 15	2,874	15,317 15
Hamilton.....	847,498	4,253 44	2,130	6,383 44
Hardin.....	321,431	1,607 06	500	2,107 06
Harris.....	11,438,650	57,198 25	6,694	63,897 25
Harrison.....	3,062,287	15,316 09	6,688	22,004 09
Hays.....	1,353,040	6,765 20	2,128	8,893 20
Henderson.....	1,212,439	6,062 21	2,930	8,992 21
Hidalgo.....	375,531	1,877 84	608	2,485 84
Hill.....	2,583,419	12,942 09	5,402	18,344 09
Hood.....	850,910	4,254 55	1,960	6,214 55
Hopkins.....	1,989,704	9,948 37	4,366	14,314 37
Houston.....	1,974,147	9,876 66	4,146	14,022 66
Hunt.....	2,171,571	10,857 85	5,692	16,549 85
Jack.....	774,470	3,867 95	1,488	5,355 95
Jackson.....	876,030	4,353 71	880	5,263 71
Jasper.....	522,062	2,610 31	1,548	4,158 31
Jefferson.....	954,393	4,772 84	924	5,698 84
Johnson.....	2,659,390	13,293 76	5,960	19,253 76
Karnes.....	1,009,000	5,045 46	1,014	6,059 46
Kaufman.....	2,854,269	14,274 46	4,248	18,522 46
Kendall.....	497,826	2,490 07	906	3,396 07
Kerr.....	404,370	2,021 85	682	2,703 85
Kimball.....	211,291	1,056 45	348	1,404 45
Kinney.....	425,066	1,131 75	590	2,721 75
Lamar.....	4,730,723	23,653 50	9,440	33,098 50
Lampasas.....	1,035,504	5,177 68	1,746	6,923 68
Lavaca.....	2,474,785	12,368 03	4,008	16,466 03
Lee.....	1,661,892	8,309 56	3,130	11,439 56
Leon.....	1,625,733	8,126 35	4,560	12,686 35
Liberty.....	820,202	4,101 01	1,472	5,573 01
Limestone.....	2,297,762	13,980 62	4,760	18,740 62
Live Oak.....	845,247	4,229 34	506	4,735 34
Llano.....	546,351	2,731 75	1,274	4,005 75
McCulloch.....	523,902	2,613 41	496	3,109 41
McLennan.....	5,529,817	27,651 79	8,572	36,223 79
McMullen.....	159,039	789 19	258	1,056 19
Madison.....	716,062	3,578 55	1,920	5,498 55
Marion.....	1,853,297	9,269 51	3,326	12,595 51
Mason.....	539,411	2,697 05	778	3,475 05
Matagorda.....	1,270,025	6,350 88	1,486	7,836 88
Maverick.....	469,635	2,846 93	696	3,042 93
Medina.....	1,056,401	5,282 00	1,412	6,694 00
Menard.....	103,019	986 48	150	1,142 48
Milam.....	2,438,906	12,194 48	5,712	17,906 48
Montague.....	1,082,460	5,405 61	3,292	8,697 61
Matagorda.....	1,270,025	6,350 88	1,486	7,836 88
Maverick.....	469,635	2,846 93	696	3,042 93
Medina.....	1,056,401	5,282 00	1,412	6,694 00
Menard.....	103,019	986 48	150	1,142 48
Milam.....	2,438,906	12,194 48	5,712	17,906 48
Montague.....	1,082,460	5,405 61	3,292	8,697 61
Montgomery.....	1,302,303	6,511 96	2,634	9,145 96
Morris.....	441,497	2,208 86	1,394	3,602 86
Nacogdoches.....	1,237,368	6,187 76	3,960	10,137 76
Navarro.....	4,375,515	21,877 72	6,902	28,779 72
Newton.....	334,869	1,674 34	1,206	2,880 34
Nueces.....	2,452,841	12,264 19	1,239	13,512 19
Orange.....	526,845	2,634 22	298	3,452 22
Palo Pinto.....	740,833	3,554 16	1,670	5,224 16
Panola.....	1,269,890	6,349 45	4,146	10,495 45
Parker.....	1,782,564	8,954 83	3,698	12,652 88

TAXABLE PROPERTY.

791

ASSESSMENT FOR 1877-78—CONTINUED.

COUNTY.	Total Valuation.	Ad Valorem Tax.	Poll Tax.	Total Tax.
Polk.....	\$717,354	\$3,588 27	\$2,086	\$5,674 27
Presidio.....	747,881	3,739 40	564	4,303 40
Pecas.....	375,900	1,879 48	720	2,599 48
Rains.....	399,572	1,997 69	1,056	3,053 69
Red River.....	2,303,320	11,516 59	5,326	16,842 59
Refugio.....	1,141,994	5,727 74	548	6,275 74
Robertson.....	3,644,630	18,223 15	8,328	26,551 15
Rockwall.....	709,476	3,547 38	868	4,415 38
Rusk.....	2,313,523	11,567 62	6,266	17,833 62
Sabine.....	328,079	1,640 53	1,392	3,032 53
Somervell.....	230,125	1,154 70	780	1,934 70
San Augustine.....	481,260	2,406 34	1,518	3,924 34
San Patricio.....	864,812	4,324 06	384	4,708 06
San Saba.....	1,029,512	5,150 63	1,814	6,964 63
Shackelford.....	493,776	2,468 58	702	3,070 58
Shelby.....	782,475	3,912 38	2,892	6,804 38
San Jacinto.....	666,859	3,336 04	2,144	5,480 04
Smith.....	3,552,188	17,759 10	6,492	24,251 10
Starr.....	1,026,511	512 56	1,210	6,342 56
Stephens.....	586,348	2,931 75	722	3,653 75
Tarrant.....	4,515,815	22,577 08	7,348	29,925 08
Titus.....	709,616	3,849 54	1,934	5,783 54
Taylor.....	43,209	216 04	126	342 04
Tom Green.....	754,787	3,773 88	492	4,265 88
Travis.....	10,739,100	53,698 08	10,260	68,958 08
Trinity.....	715,592	3,575 65	1,482	5,057 65
Tyler.....	666,437	3,334 02	1,848	5,182 02
Upshur.....	1,185,093	5,930 46	2,934	8,864 46
Uvalde.....	828,725	4,142 26	802	4,944 26
Van Zandt.....	1,676,053	8,382 93	2,932	11,314 93
Victoria.....	2,306,262	11,531 31	2,242	13,773 31
Walker.....	1,464,699	7,323 39	3,462	10,785 39
Wharton.....	876,384	4,387 40	1,452	5,839 40
Waller.....	1,733,948	8,684 25	3,324	12,008 25
Washington.....	4,667,355	23,351 76	8,556	31,907 76
Webb.....	1,091,658	5,458 29	1,564	7,022 29
Williamson.....	3,755,956	18,786 35	4,400	23,186 35
Wilson.....	1,049,827	4,249 01	1,778	7,027 01
Wise.....	1,525,075	7,629 92	3,940	11,569 92
Wood.....	1,615,818	8,079 10	3,222	11,301 19
Young.....	714,607	3,573 81	1,240	4,813 81
Zapata.....	386,391	2,907 25	460	2,367 25

## SUMMARY OF ASSESSMENTS.

## RENDERED PROPERTY.

Description of Property.	Valued at
Number of acres, 81,445,039.....	\$125,621,392
Town lots.....	49,419.067
Number miles of railroad, 1,763 667-1000.....	14,959,643
Number miles of telegraph, 2,231 51-1000.....	145,860
Number acres, land certificates, 890,255.....	211,572
Number of steamboats and sailing vessels, etc., 356.....	184,072
Number of carriages, buggies, etc., 131,075.....	4,919,446
Manufacturers' tools, implements, etc.....	3,955,874
Materials and manufactured articles.....	307,802
Number of horses and mules, 966,977.....	20,242,896
Number of cattle, 3,263,373.....	18,048,668
Number of jacks and jennets, 5,299.....	173,816
Number of sheep, 2,227,839.....	2,829,404
Number of goats, 223,417.....	161,134
Number of hogs, 1,286,933.....	2,257,002
Goods, wares and merchandise.....	16,427,407
Money on hand.....	8,507,337
Miscellaneous property.....	24,441,356
<b>Total value.....</b>	<b>\$292,818,743</b>
State ad valorem tax, $\frac{1}{2}$ per cent.....	\$1,464,244 68
State poll, 230,069, at \$2 each.....	460,138 00
<b>Total State tax.....</b>	<b>\$1,924,382 68</b>
<b>Average value of land per acre.....</b>	<b>\$2 04<math>\frac{1}{2}</math></b>

## UNRENDERED PROPERTY.

Description of Property.	Valued at
Number of acres, 15,035,411.....	\$19,462,180
Town lots.....	2,789,878
Number miles of railroad, 18.....	81,000
Number miles of telegraph, 12.....	5,000
Number acres, land certificates, 19,392.....	2,840
Number of steamboats, sailing vessels, etc., 217.....	239,000
Number of carriages, buggies, etc., 845.....	42,597
Manufacturers' tools, implements, etc.....	59,290
Materials and manufactured articles.....	525
Number of horses and mules, 18,584.....	284,581
Number of cattle, 149,983.....	883,342
Number of jacks and jennets, 72.....	3,985
Number of sheep, 65,533.....	78,601
Number of goats, 5,201.....	3,550
Number of hogs, 5,976.....	11,558
Goods, wares and merchandise.....	1,333,910
Money on hand.....	317,176
Miscellaneous property.....	518,009
<b>Total value.....</b>	<b>\$26,117,022</b>
State ad valorem tax, $\frac{1}{2}$ of 1 per cent.....	\$130,583 78
Number polls, 2,335, \$2 each.....	4,670 00
<b>Total.....</b>	<b>\$135,253 78</b>
<b>Average value of land per acre.....</b>	<b>\$1 29</b>
<b>Total amount of property rendered and unrendered.....</b>	<b>\$318,985,765</b>
State ad valorem tax, $\frac{1}{2}$ of 1 per cent.....	\$1,594,828 46
Poll tax.....	464,808 00
<b>Total.....</b>	<b>\$2,059,636 46</b>



**MASONIC HEADQUARTERS OF STATE, HOUSTON.**





# CONSTITUTION OF THE STATE.

---

## PREAMBLE.

Humbly invoking the blessing of Almighty God, the people of the State of Texas do ordain and establish this Constitution.

## ARTICLE I.

### BILL OF RIGHTS.

That the general, great, and essential principals of liberty and free government may be recognized and established, we declare:

SECTION 1. Texas is a free and independent State, subject only to the Constitution of the United States; and the maintenance of our free institutions and the perpetuity of the Union depend upon the preservation of the right of local self-government unimpaired to all the States:

SEC. 2. All political power is inherent in the people, and all free governments are founded on their authority, and instituted for their benefit. The faith of the people of Texas stands pledged to the preservation of a republican form of government, and, subject to this limitation only, they have at all times the inalienable right to alter, reform or abolish their government in such manner as they may think expedient.

SEC. 3. All free men, when they form a social compact, have equal rights and no man, or set of men, is entitled to exclusive separate public emoluments, or privileges, but in consideration of public services.

SEC. 4. No religious test shall ever be required as a qualification to any office, or public trust, in this State; nor shall any one be excluded from holding office on account of his religious sentiments, provided he acknowledges the existence of a Supreme Being.

SEC. 5. No person shall be disqualified to give evidence in any of the courts of this State on account of his religious opinions, or for the want of any religious belief, but all oaths or affirmations shall be administered in the mode most binding upon the conscience, and shall be taken subject to the pains and penalties of perjury.

SEC. 6. All men have a natural and indefeasible right to worship Almighty God according to the dictates of their own consciences. No man shall be compelled to attend, erect, or support any place of worship, or to maintain any ministry, against his consent. No human authority ought, in any case whatever, to control or interfere with the rights of conscience in matters of religion, and no preference shall ever be given by law to any religious society or mode of worship. But it shall be the duty of the legislature to pass such laws as may be necessary to protect equally every religious denomination in the peaceable enjoyment of its own mode of public worship.

**SEC. 7.** No money shall be appropriated or drawn from the treasury for the benefit of any sect, or religious society, theological or religious seminary; nor shall property belonging to the State be appropriated for any such purposes.

**SEC. 8.** Every person shall be at liberty to speak, write, or publish his opinions on any subject, being responsible for the abuse of that privilege; and no law shall ever be passed curtailing the liberty of speech or of the press. In prosecutions for the publication of papers investigating the conduct of officers or men in public capacity, or when the matter published is proper for public information, the truth thereof may be given in evidence. And in all indictments for libels the jury shall have the right to determine the law and the facts, under the direction of the court, as in other cases.

**SEC. 9.** The people shall be secure, in their persons, houses, papers, and possessions, from all unreasonable seizures or searches, and no warrant to search any place, or to seize any person or thing, shall issue without describing them as near as may be, nor without probable cause, supported by oath or affirmation.

**SEC. 10.** In all criminal prosecutions, the accused shall have a speedy public trial by an impartial jury. He shall have the right to demand the nature and cause of the accusation against him, and to have a copy thereof. He shall not be compelled to give evidence against himself. He shall have the right of being heard by himself or counsel, or both; shall be confronted with the witnesses against him, and shall have compulsory process for obtaining witnesses in his favor. And no person shall be held to answer for a criminal offence, unless on indictment of a Grand Jury, except in cases in which the punishment is by fine or imprisonment otherwise than in the penitentiary, in cases of impeachment, and in cases arising in the army or navy, or in the militia, when in actual service in time of war or public danger.

**SEC. 11.** All prisoners shall be bailable by sufficient sureties, unless for capital offences, when the proof is evident; but this provision shall not be so construed as to prevent bail after indictment found, upon examination of the evidence in such manner as may be prescribed by law.

**SEC. 12.** The writ of *habeas corpus* is a writ of right, and shall never be suspended. The Legislature shall enact laws to render the remedy speedy and effectual.

**SEC. 13.** Excessive bail shall not be required, nor excessive fines imposed, nor cruel or unusual punishment inflicted. All courts shall be open, and every person, for an injury done him in his lands, goods, person, or reputation shall have remedy by due course of law.

**SEC. 14.** No person, for the same offence, shall be twice put in jeopardy of life or liberty; nor shall a person be again put upon trial for the same offence after a verdict of not guilty in a court of competent jurisdiction.

**SEC. 15.** The right of trial by jury shall remain inviolate. The Legislature shall pass such laws as may be needed to regulate the same, and to maintain its purity and efficiency.

SEC. 16. No bill of attainder, *ex post facto* law, retroactive law, or any law impairing the obligation of contracts, shall be made.

SEC. 17. No person's property shall be taken, damaged or destroyed for or applied to public use without adequate compensation being made, unless by the consent of such person; and when taken, except for the use of the State, such compensation shall be first made, or secured by a deposit of money; and no irrevocable or uncontrollable grant of special privileges or immunities shall be made; but all privileges and franchises granted by the Legislature, or created under its authority, shall be subject to the control thereof.

SEC. 18. No person shall ever be imprisoned for debt.

SEC. 19. No citizen of this State shall be deprived of life, liberty, property, privileges, or immunities, or in any manner disfranchised, except by the due course of the law of the land.

SEC. 20. No person shall be outlawed; nor shall any person be transported out of the State for any offence committed within the same.

SEC. 21. No conviction shall work corruption of blood, or forfeiture of estate; and the estates of those who destroy their own lives shall descend or vest as in case of natural death.

SEC. 22. Treason against the State shall consist only in levying war against it, or adhering to its enemies, giving them aid and comfort; and no person shall be convicted of treason except on the testimony of two witnesses to the same overt act, or on confession in open court.

SEC. 23. Every citizen shall have the right to keep and bear arms in the lawful defence of himself or the State; but the Legislature shall have power by law to regulate the wearing of arms, with a view to prevent crime.

SEC. 24. The military shall at all times be subordinate to the civil authority.

SEC. 25. No soldier shall in time of peace be quartered in the house of any citizen without the consent of the owner, nor in time of war but in a manner prescribed by law.

SEC. 26. Perpetuities and monopolies are contrary to the genius of a free government, and shall never be allowed; nor shall the law of primogeniture or entailments ever be in force in this State.

SEC. 27. The citizens shall have the right, in a peaceable manner, to assemble together for their common good, and apply to those invested with the power of government for redress of grievance or other purposes, by petition, address, or remonstrance.

SEC. 28. No power of suspending laws in this State shall be exercised except by the Legislature.

SEC. 29. To guard against transgressions of the higher powers herein delegated, we declare that everything to this "Bill of Rights" is excepted out

of the general powers of government, and shall forever remain inviolate, and all laws contrary thereto, or to the following provisions, shall be void.

## ARTICLE II.

### THE POWERS OF GOVERNMENT.

SECTION 1. The powers of the government of the State of Texas shall be divided into three distinct departments, each of which shall be confided to a separate body of magistracy, to wit: those which are legislative to one, those which are executive to another, and those which are judicial to another; and no person, or collection of persons, being of one of these departments, shall exercise any power properly attached to either of the others, except in the instances herein expressly permitted.

## ARTICLE III.

### LEGISLATIVE DEPARTMENT.

SECTION 1. The legislative power of this State shall be vested in a Senate and House of Representatives, which together shall be styled "The Legislature of the State of Texas."

SEC. 2. The Senate shall consist of thirty-one members, and shall never be increased above this number. The House of Representatives shall consist of ninety-three members until the first apportionment after the adoption of this Constitution, when, or at any apportionment thereafter, the number of Representatives may be increased by the Legislature, upon the ratio of not more than one Representative for every fifteen thousand inhabitants; *provided*, the number of Representatives shall never exceed one hundred and fifty.

SEC. 3. The Senators shall be chosen by the qualified electors for the term of four years; but a new Senate shall be chosen after every apportionment, and the Senators elected after each apportionment shall be divided by lot into two classes. The seats of the Senators of the first class shall be vacated at the expiration of the first two years, and those of the second class at the expiration of four years, so that one-half of the Senators shall be chosen biennially thereafter.

SEC. 4. The members of the House of Representatives shall be chosen by the qualified electors, and their term of office shall be two years from the day of their election.

SEC. 5. The Legislature shall meet every two years, at such time as may be provided by law, and at other times, when convened by the Governor.

SEC. 6. No person shall be a Senator, unless he be a citizen of the United States, and at the time of his election a qualified elector of this State, and shall have been a resident of this State five years next preceding his election, and the last year thereof a resident of the district for which he shall be chosen, and shall have attained the age of twenty-six years.

SEC. 7. No person shall be a Representative, unless he be a citizen of the United States, and at the time of his election a qualified elector of this State,



**POST OFFICE, GALVESTON.**



and shall have been a resident of this State two years next preceding his election, the last year thereof a resident of the district for which he shall be chosen, and shall have attained the age of twenty-one years.

SEC. 8. Each House shall be the judge of the qualifications and election of its own members; but contested elections shall be determined in such manner as shall be provided by law.

SEC. 9. The Senate shall, at the beginning and close of each session, and at such other times as may be necessary, elect one of its members President *pro tempore*, who shall perform the duties of the Lieutenant-Governor in any case of absence or disability of that officer, and whenever the said office of Lieutenant-Governor shall be vacant. The House of Representatives shall, when it first assembles, organize temporarily, and thereupon proceed to the election of a Speaker from its own members; and each House shall choose its other officers.

SEC. 10. Two-thirds of each House shall constitute a quorum to do business, but a smaller number may adjourn from day to day, and compel the attendance of absent members, in such manner and under such penalties as each House may provide.

SEC. 11. Each House may determine the rules of its own proceedings, punish members for disorderly conduct, and, with the consent of two-thirds, expel a member, but not a second time for the same offence.

SEC. 12. Each House shall keep a journal of its proceedings, and publish the same; and the yeas and nays of the members of either House on any question shall, at the desire of any three members present, be entered on the journals.

SEC. 13. When vacancies occur in either House, the Governor, or the person exercising the power of the Governor, shall issue writs of election to fill such vacancies; and should the Governor fail to issue a writ of election to fill any such vacancy within twenty days after it occurs, the returning officer of the district in which such vacancy may have happened, shall be authorized to order an election for that purpose.

SEC. 14. Senators and Representatives shall, except in cases of treason, felony, or breach of the peace, be privileged from arrest during the session of the Legislature, and in going to and returning from the same, allowing one day for every twenty miles such member may reside from the place at which the Legislature is convened.

SEC. 15. Each House may punish, by imprisonment, during its sessions, any person not a member, for disrespectful or disorderly conduct in its presence, or for obstructing any of its proceedings; *provided*, such imprisonment shall not at any one time, exceed forty-eight hours.

SEC. 16. The sessions of each House shall be open, except the Senate when in executive session.

SEC. 17. Neither House shall, without the consent of the other, adjourn for more than three days, nor to any other place than that where the Legislature may be sitting.

SEC. 18. No Senator or Representative shall, during the term for which he may be elected, be eligible to any civil office of profit under this State which shall have been created or the emoluments of which may have been increased during such term; no member of either House shall, during the term for which he is elected, be eligible to any office or place, the appointment to which may be made, in whole or in part, by either branch of the Legislature; and no member of either House shall vote for any other member for any office whatever, which may be filled by a vote of the Legislature, except in such cases as are in this Constitution provided. Nor shall any member of the Legislature be interested, either directly or indirectly, in any contract with the State, or any county thereof, authorized by any law passed during the term for which he shall have been elected.

SEC. 19. No judge of any court, Secretary of State, Attorney-General, clerk of any court of record, or any person holding a lucrative office under the United States, or this State, or any foreign government, shall, during the term for which he is elected or appointed, be eligible to the Legislature.

SEC. 20. No person who at any time may have been a collector of taxes, or who may have been otherwise entrusted, with public money, shall be eligible to the Legislature, or to any office of profit or trust under the State government, until he shall have obtained a discharge for the amount of such collections, or for all public moneys with which he may have been entrusted.

SEC. 21. No member shall be questioned in any other place for words spoken in debate in either House.

SEC. 22. A member who has a personal or private interest in any measure or bill, proposed, or pending before the Legislature, shall disclose the fact to the House of which he is a member, and shall not vote thereon.

SEC. 23. If any Senator or Representative remove his residence from the district or county for which he was elected, his office shall thereby become vacant, and the vacancy shall be filled as provided in section 13 of this article.

SEC. 24. The members of the Legislature shall receive from the public Treasury such compensation for their services as may, from time to time, be provided by law, not exceeding five dollars per day for the first sixty days of each session; and after that not exceeding two dollars per day for the remainder of the session; except the first session held under this Constitution, when they may receive not exceeding four dollars per day for the first ninety days, and after that not exceeding two dollars per day for the remainder of the session. In addition to the per diem the members of each House shall be entitled to mileage in going to and returning from the seat of government, which mileage shall not exceed five dollars for every twenty-five miles, the distance to be computed by the nearest and most direct route of travel by land, regardless of railways and water routes; and the Comptroller of the State shall prepare and preserve a table of distances to each county seat now or hereafter to be established, and by such table the mileage of each member shall be paid; but no member shall be entitled to mileage



for any extra session that may be called within one day after the adjournment of a regular or called session.

SEC. 25. The State shall be divided into senatorial districts of contiguous territory, according to the number of qualified electors, as nearly as may be, and each district shall be entitled to elect one Senator, and no single county shall be entitled to more than one Senator.

SEC. 26. The members of the House of Representatives shall be apportioned among the several counties, according to the number of population of the State, as ascertained by the most recent United States census, by the number of members of which the House is composed; *Provided*, that whenever a single county has sufficient population to be entitled to a Representative, such county shall be formed into a separate representative district, and when two or more counties are required to make up the ratio of representation, such counties shall be contiguous to each other; and when any one county has more than sufficient population to be entitled to one or more Representatives, such Representative or Representatives shall be apportioned to such county, and for any surplus of population it may be joined in a representative district with any other contiguous county or counties.

SEC. 27. Elections for Senators and Representatives shall be general throughout the State, and shall be regulated by law.

SEC. 28. The Legislature shall, at its first session after the publication of each United States decennial census, apportion the State into senatorial and representative districts, agreeably to the provisions of section 25 and 26 of this article; and until the next decennial census, when the first apportionment shall be made by the Legislature, the State shall be, and it is hereby, divided into senatorial and representative districts, as provided by an ordinance of the Convention on that subject.

#### PROCEEDINGS.

SEC. 29. The enacting clause of all laws shall be, "Be it enacted by the Legislature of the State of Texas."

SEC. 30. No law shall be passed except by bill, and no bill shall be so amended in its passage through either House as to change its original purpose.

SEC. 31. Bills may originate in either House, and when passed by such House, may be amended, altered, or rejected by the other.

SEC. 32. No bill shall have the force of law until it has been read on three several days in each House, and free discussion allowed thereon; but in cases of imperative public necessity (which necessity shall be stated in a preamble, or in the body of the bill), four-fifths of the House in which the bill may be pending may suspend this rule, the yeas and nays being taken on the question of suspension, and entered upon the journals.

SEC. 33. All bills for raising revenue shall originate in the House of Representatives, but the Senate may amend or reject them as other bills.

SEC. 34. After a bill has been considered and defeated by either House of

the Legislature, no bill containing the same substance shall be passed into a law during the same session. After a resolution has been acted on and defeated, no resolution containing the same substance shall be considered at the same session.

SEC. 35. No bill (except general appropriation bills, which may embrace the various subjects and accounts for and on account of which moneys are appropriated) shall contain more than one subject, which shall be expressed in its title. But if any subject shall be embraced in an act which shall not be expressed in the title, such act shall be void only as to so much thereof as shall not be expressed.

SEC. 36. No law shall be revived or amended by reference to its title; but in such case the act revived or the section or sections amended shall be re-enacted and published at length.

SEC. 37. No bill shall be considered, unless it has been first referred to a committee and reported thereon; and no bill shall be passed which has not been presented and referred to and reported from a committee at least three days before the final adjournment of the Legislature.

SEC. 38. The presiding officer of each House shall, in the presence of the House over which he presides, sign all bills and joint resolutions passed by the Legislature, after their titles have been publicly read before signing; and the fact of signing shall be entered on the journals.

SEC. 39. No law passed by the Legislature, except the general appropriation act, shall take effect or go into force until ninety days after the adjournment of the session at which it was enacted, unless in case of an emergency, which emergency must be expressed in a preamble or in the body of the act, the Legislature shall, by a vote of two-thirds of all the members elected to each House, otherwise direct; said vote to be taken by yeas and nays, and entered upon the journals.

SEC. 40. When the Legislature shall be convened in special session, there shall be no legislation upon subjects other than those designated in the proclamation of the Governor calling such session, or presented to them by the Governor; and no such session shall be of longer duration than thirty days.

SEC. 41. In all elections by the Senate and House of Representatives, jointly or separately, the vote shall be given *virâ voce*, except in the election of their officers.

#### REQUIREMENTS AND LIMITATIONS.

SEC. 42. The Legislature shall pass such laws as may be necessary to carry into effect provisions of this Constitution.

SEC. 43. The first session of the Legislature under this Constitution shall provide for revising, digesting, and publishing the laws, civil and criminal; and a like revision, digest, and publication may be made every ten years thereafter; *provided*, that in the adoption of and giving effect to any such digest or revision, the Legislature shall not be limited by Sections 35 and 36 of this article.



**VIEW OF CORN FIELD IN BRAZOS BOTTOM, ROBERTSON COUNTY.**  
**Taken May 18th, 1878. on I. & G. N. R. R.**



**SEC. 44.** The Legislature shall provide by law for the compensation of all officers, servants, agents, and public contractors, not provided for in this Constitution, but shall not grant extra compensation to any officer, agent, servant, or public contractor, after such public service shall have been performed or contract entered into for the performance of the same; nor grant by appropriation or otherwise, any amount of money out of the treasury of the State, to any individual, on a claim, real or pretended, when the same shall not have been provided for by pre-existing law; nor employ any one in the name of the State unless authorized by pre-existing law.

**SEC. 45.** The power to change the venue in civil and criminal cases shall be vested in the courts, to be exercised in such manner as shall be provided by law; and the Legislature shall pass laws for that purpose.

**SEC. 46.** The Legislature shall, at its first session after the adoption of this Constitution, enact effective vagrant laws.

**SEC. 47.** The Legislature shall pass laws prohibiting the establishment of lotteries and gift enterprises, in this State, as well as the sale of tickets in lotteries, gift enterprises, or other evasions involving the lottery principle, established or existing in other States.

**SEC. 48.** The Legislature shall not have the right to levy taxes or impose burdens upon the people, except to raise revenue sufficient for the economical administration of the government, in which may be included the following purposes:

The payment of all interest upon the bonded debt of the State;

The erection and repairs of public buildings;

The benefit of the sinking fund, which shall not be more than two per centum of the public debt; and for the payment of the present floating debt of the State, including matured bonds for the payment of which the sinking fund is inadequate;

The support of public schools, in which shall be included colleges and universities established by the State; and the maintenance and support of the Agricultural and Mechanical College of Texas;

The payment of the cost of assessing and collecting the revenue; and the payment of all officers, agents, and employees of the State government, and all incidental expenses connected therewith;

The support of the Blind Asylum, the Deaf and Dumb Asylum, and the Insane Asylum, the State Cemetery, and the public grounds of the State;

The enforcement of quarantine regulations on the coast of Texas;

The protection of the frontier.

**SEC. 49.** No debt shall be created by or on behalf of the State, except to supply casual deficiencies of the revenue, repel invasion, suppress insurrection, defend the State in war, or pay existing debt; and the debt created to supply deficiencies in the revenue shall never exceed in the aggregate at any one time two hundred thousand dollars.

**SEC. 50.** The Legislature shall have no power to give or to lend, or to authorize the giving or lending, of the credit of the State in aid of, or to any person, association, or corporation, whether municipal or other; or to

pledge the credit of the State in any manner whatsoever, for the payment of the liabilities, present or prospective, of any individual, association of individuals, municipal or other corporation whatsoever.

SEC. 51. The Legislature shall have no power to make any grant, or authorize the making of any grant, of public money to any individual, association of individuals, municipal or other corporation whatsoever; *provided*, that this shall not be so construed as to prevent the grant of aid in case of public calamity.

SEC. 52. The Legislature shall have no power to authorize any county, city, town, or other political corporation, or subdivision of the State, to lend its credit or to grant public money or thing of value, in aid of or to any individual, association, or corporation whatsoever; or to become a stockholder in such corporation, association, or company.

SEC. 53. The Legislature shall have no power to grant, or to authorize any county or municipal authority to grant, any extra compensation, fee, or allowance to a public officer, agent, servant, or contractor, after service has been rendered, or a contract has been entered into, and performed in whole or in part; nor pay, nor authorize the payment of, any claim created against any county or municipality of the State, under any agreement or contract, made without authority of law.

SEC. 54. The Legislature shall have no power to release or alienate any lien held by the State upon any railroad, or in anywise change the tenor or meaning, or pass any act explanatory thereof; but the same shall be enforced in accordance with the original terms upon which it was acquired.

SEC. 55. The Legislature shall have no power to release or extinguish, or to authorize the releasing or extinguishing, in whole or in part, the indebtedness, liability, or obligation of any incorporation or individual to this State, or to any county, or other municipal corporation therein.

SEC. 56. The Legislature shall not, except as otherwise provided in this Constitution, pass any local or special law, authorizing:

- The creation, extension, or impairing of liens;
- Regulating the affairs of counties, cities, towns, wards, or school districts;
- Changing the name of persons or places; changing the venue in civil or criminal cases;
- Authorizing the laying out, opening, altering, or maintaining of roads, highways, streets, or alleys;
- Relating to ferries and bridges, or incorporating ferry or bridge companies, except for the erection of bridges crossing streams which form boundaries between this and any other State;
- Vacating roads, town plats, streets, or alleys;
- Relating to cemeteries, graveyards, or public grounds not of the State;
- Authorizing the adoption or legitimation of children;
- Locating or changing county seats;
- Incorporating cities, towns, or villages, or changing their charters;
- For the opening and conducting of elections, or fixing or changing the places of voting;

Granting divorces;

Creating offices, or prescribing the powers and duties of officers, in counties, cities, towns, election or school districts;

Changing the law of descent or succession;

Regulating the practice or jurisdiction of, or changing the rules of evidence in any judicial proceeding or enquiry before courts, justices of the peace, sheriffs, commissioners, arbitrators, or other tribunals, or providing or changing methods for the collection of debts, or the enforcing of judgments, or prescribing the effect of judicial sales of real estate;

Regulating the fees, or extending the powers and duties of aldermen, justices of the peace, magistrates, or constables;

Regulating the management of public schools, the building or repairing of school-houses, and the raising of money for such purposes;

Fixing the rate of interest;

Affecting the estates of minors, or persons under disability;

Remitting fines, penalties, and forfeitures, and refunding moneys legally paid into the treasury;

Exempting property from taxation;

Regulating labor, trade, mining, and manufacturing;

Declaring any named person of age;

Extending the time for the assessment or collection of taxes, or otherwise relieving any assessor or collector of taxes from the due performance of his official duties, or his securities from liability;

Giving effect to informal or invalid wills or deeds;

Summoning or impanelling grand or petit juries;

For limitation of civil or criminal actions;

For incorporating railroads or other work of internal improvements;

And in all other cases where a general law can be made applicable, no local or special law shall be enacted; *provided*, that nothing herein contained shall be construed to prohibit the Legislature from passing special laws for the preservation of the game and fish of this State in certain localities.

SEC. 57. No local or special law shall be passed, unless notice of the intention to apply therefor shall have been published in the locality where the matter or thing to be affected may be situated, which notice shall state the substance of the contemplated law, and shall be published at least thirty days prior to the introduction into the Legislature of such bill, and in the manner to be provided by law. The evidence of such notice having been published shall be exhibited in the Legislature before such act shall be passed.

SEC. 58. The Legislature shall hold its sessions at the city of Austin, which is hereby declared to be the Seat of Government.

## ARTICLE IV.

### EXECUTIVE DEPARTMENT.

SECTION 1. The Executive Department of the State shall consist of a Governor, who shall be the chief Executive Officer of the State, a Lieutenant-

Governor, Secretary of State, Comptroller of Public Accounts, Treasurer, Commissioner of the General Land Office, and Attorney-General.

SEC. 2. All the above officers of the Executive Department (except Secretary of State) shall be elected by the qualified voters of the State at the time and places of election for members of the Legislature.

SEC. 3. The returns of every election for said Executive Officers, until otherwise provided by law, shall be made out, sealed up, and transmitted by the returning officers prescribed by law, to the seat of government, directed to the Secretary of State, who shall deliver the same to the Speaker of the House of Representatives, as soon as the Speaker shall be chosen; and the said Speaker shall, during the first week of the session of the Legislature, open and publish them in the presence of both Houses of the Legislature. The person, voted for at said election, having the highest number of votes for each of said offices respectively, and being constitutionally eligible, shall be declared by the Speaker, under sanction of the Legislature, to be elected to said office. But if two or more persons shall have the highest and an equal number of votes for either of said offices, one of them shall be immediately chosen to such office by joint vote of both Houses of the Legislature. Contested elections for either of said offices shall be determined by both Houses of the Legislature in joint session.

SEC. 4. The Governor shall be installed on the first Tuesday after the organization of the Legislature, or as soon thereafter as practicable, and shall hold his office for the term of two years, or until his successor shall be duly installed. He shall be at least thirty years of age, a citizen of the United States, and shall have resided in this State at least five years immediately preceding his election.

SEC. 5. He shall, at stated times, receive as compensation for his services an annual salary of four thousand dollars, and no more, and shall have the use and occupation of the Governor's mansion, fixtures, and furniture.

SEC. 6. During the time he holds the office of Governor he shall not hold any other office, civil, military, or corporate; nor shall he practice any profession, and receive compensation, reward, fee, or the promise thereof, for the same; nor receive any salary, reward, or compensation, or the promise thereof, from any person or corporation, for any service rendered or performed during the time he is Governor, or to be thereafter rendered or performed.

SEC. 7. He shall be commander-in-chief of the military forces of the State, except when they are called into actual service of the United States. He shall have power to call forth the militia to execute the laws of the State, to suppress insurrections, repel invasions, and protect the frontier from hostile incursions by Indians or other predatory bands.

SEC. 8. The Governor may, on extraordinary occasions, convene the Legislature at the seat of government, or at a different place in case that should be in possession of the public enemy, or in case of the prevalence of disease thereat. His proclamation therefor shall state specifically the purpose for which the Legislature is convened.





**TREMONT STREET, GALVESTON.**



SEC. 9. The Governor shall, at the commencement of each session of the Legislature, and at the close of his term of office, give to the Legislature information, by message, of the condition of the State; and he shall recommend to the Legislature such measures as he may deem expedient. He shall account to the Legislature for all public moneys received and paid out by him from any fund subject to his order, with vouchers; and shall accompany his message with a statement of the same. And at the commencement of each regular session he shall present estimates of the amount of money required to be raised by taxation for all purposes.

SEC. 10. He shall cause the laws to be faithfully executed; and shall conduct, in person, or in such manner as shall be prescribed by law, all intercourse and business of the State with other States and with the United States.

SEC. 11. In all criminal cases, except treason and impeachment, he shall have power, after conviction, to grant reprieves, commutations of punishment, and pardons; and, under such rules as the Legislature may prescribe, he shall have power to remit fines and forfeitures. With the advice and consent of the Senate, he may grant pardons in case of treason, and to this end he may respite a sentence therefor, until the close of the succeeding session of the Legislature: *provided*, that in all cases of remissions of fines and forfeitures, or grants of reprieve, commutation of punishment, or pardon, he shall file in the office of the Secretary of State his reasons therefor.

SEC. 12. All vacancies in State or district offices, except members of the Legislature, shall be filled, unless otherwise provided by law, by appointment of the Governor, which appointment, if made during its session, shall be with the advice and consent of two-thirds of the Senate present. If made during the recess of the Senate, the said appointee, or some other person to fill such vacancy, shall be nominated to the Senate during the first ten days of its session. If rejected, said office shall immediately become vacant, and the Governor shall, without delay, make further nominations, until a further confirmation takes place. But should there be no confirmation during the session of the Senate, the Governor shall not thereafter appoint any person to fill such vacancy who has been rejected by the Senate; but may appoint some other person to fill the vacancy until the next session of the Senate, or until the regular election to said office, should it sooner occur. Appointments to vacancies in offices elective by the people shall only continue until the first general election thereafter.

SEC. 13. During the session of the Legislature the Governor shall reside where its sessions are held, and at all other times at the seat of government, except when, by act of the Legislature, he may be required or authorized to reside elsewhere.

SEC. 14. Every bill which shall have passed both Houses of the Legislature shall be presented to the Governor for his approval. If he approve, he shall sign it; but if he disapprove it, he shall return it, with his objections, to the House in which it originated, which House shall enter the objections at large upon its journal, and proceed to reconsider it. If, after such recon-

sideration, two-thirds of the members present agree to pass the bill, it shall be sent, with the objections, to the other House, by which likewise it shall be reconsidered; and, if approved by two thirds of the members of that House, it shall become a law; but in such cases the votes of both Houses shall be determined by yeas and nays, and the names of the members voting for and against the bill shall be entered on the journal of each House respectively. If any bill shall not be returned by the Governor with his objections within ten days (Sundays excepted) after it shall have been presented to him, the same shall be a law, in like manner as if he had signed it, unless the Legislature, by its adjournment, prevent its return; in which case it shall be a law, unless he shall file the same, with his objections, in the office of the Secretary of State, and give notice thereof by public proclamation within twenty days after such adjournment. If any bill presented to the Governor contains several items of appropriation, he may object to one or more of such items, and approve the other portion of the bill. In such case he shall append to the bill, at the time of signing it, a statement of the items to which he objects, and no item so objected to shall take effect. If the Legislature be in session he shall transmit to the House in which the bill originated a copy of such statement, and the item objected to shall be separately considered. If, on reconsideration, one or more of such items be approved by two-thirds of the members present of each House, the same shall be part of the law, notwithstanding the objections of the Governor. If any such bill, containing several items of appropriation, not having been presented to the Governor ten days (Sundays excepted) prior to adjournment, be in the hands of the Governor at the time of adjournment, he shall have twenty days from such adjournment within which to file objections to any items thereof and make proclamation of the same, and such item or items shall not take effect.

**SEC. 15.** Every order, resolution, or vote to which the concurrence of both Houses of the Legislature may be necessary, except on questions of adjournment, shall be presented to the Governor, and, before it shall take effect, shall be approved by him; or, being disapproved, shall be repassed by both Houses; and all the rules, provisions, and limitations shall apply thereto as prescribed in the last preceding section in the case of a bill.

**SEC. 16.** There shall also be a Lieutenant-Governor, who shall be chosen at every election for Governor by the same electors, in the same manner, continue in office the same time, and possess the same qualifications. The electors shall distinguish for whom they vote as Governor and for whom as Lieutenant-Governor. The Lieutenant-Governor shall by virtue of his office be President of the Senate, and shall have, when in Committee of the Whole, a right to debate and vote on all questions; and when the Senate is equally divided, to give the casting vote. In case of the death, resignation, removal from office, inability, or refusal of the Governor to serve, or of his impeachment or absence from the State, the Lieutenant-Governor shall exercise the powers and authority appertaining to the office of Governor until another be chosen at the periodical election, and be duly qualified; or until the Governor impeached, absent, or disabled, shall be acquitted, return, or his disability be removed.

SEC. 17. If, during the vacancy in the office of Governor, the Lieutenant-Governor should die, resign, refuse to serve, or be removed from office, or be unable to serve, or if he shall be impeached or absent from the State, the president of the Senate, for the time being, shall, in the like manner, administer the government until he shall be superseded by a Governor or Lieutenant-Governor. The Lieutenant-Governor shall, while he acts as president of the Senate, receive for his services the same compensation and mileage which shall be allowed to the members of the Senate, and no more; and during the time he administers the Government, as Governor, he shall receive in like manner the same compensation which the Governor would have received had he been employed in the duties of his office, and no more. The president, for the time being, of the Senate, shall, during the time he administers the government, receive in like manner the same compensation which the Governor would have received had he been employed in the duties of his office.

SEC. 18. The Lieutenant-Governor or president of the Senate succeeding to the office of Governor shall, during the entire term to which he may succeed, be under all the restrictions and inhibitions imposed in this Constitution on the Governor.

SEC. 19. There shall be a Seal of the State, which shall be kept by the Secretary of State, and used by him officially under the direction of the Governor. The Seal of the State shall be a star of five points, encircled by olive and live-oak branches, and the words, "The State of Texas."

SEC. 20. All commissions shall be in the name and by the authority of the State of Texas, sealed with the State seal, signed by the Governor, and attested by the Secretary of State.

SEC. 21. There shall be a Secretary of State, who shall be appointed by the Governor, by and with the advice and consent of the Senate, and who shall continue in office during the term of service of the Governor. He shall authenticate the publication of the laws, and keep a fair register of all official acts and proceedings of the Governor, and shall, when required, lay the same, and all papers, minutes, and vouchers relative thereto, before the Legislature, or either House thereof, and shall perform such other duties as may be required of him by law. He shall receive for his services an annual salary of two thousand dollars, and no more.

SEC. 22. The Attorney-General shall hold his office for two years and until his successor is duly qualified. He shall represent the State in all suits and pleas in the Supreme Court of the State in which the State may be a party, and shall especially enquire into the charter rights of all private corporations, and from time to time, in the name of the State, take such action in the courts as may be proper and necessary to prevent any private corporation from exercising any power or demanding or collecting any species of taxes, tolls, freight, or wharfage, not authorized by law. He shall, whenever sufficient cause exists, seek a judicial forfeiture of such charters, unless otherwise expressly directed by law, and give legal advice in writing to the Governor and other executive officers, when requested by them, and perform such other duties as may be required by law. He shall reside at

the seat of government during his continuance in office. He shall receive for his services an annual salary of two thousand dollars, and no more, besides such fees as may be prescribed by law; *provided*, that the fees which he may receive shall not amount to more than two thousand dollars annually.

SEC. 23. The Comptroller of Public Accounts, the Treasurer, and the Commissioner of the General Land Office shall each hold office for the term of two years, and until his successor is qualified; receive an annual salary of two thousand and five hundred dollars, and no more; reside at the capital of the State during his continuance in office; and perform such duties as are or may be required of him by law. They and the Secretary of State shall not receive to their own use any fees, costs, or perquisites of office. All fees that may be payable by law for any service performed by any officer specified in this section, or in his office, shall be paid, when received, into the State Treasury.

SEC. 24. An account shall be kept by the officers of the executive department, and by all officers and managers of State institutions, of all moneys and choses in action received and disbursed or otherwise disposed of by them, severally, from all sources, and for every service performed; and a semi-annual report thereof shall be made to the Governor under oath. The Governor may, at any time, require information in writing from any and all of said officers or managers, upon any subject relating to the duties, condition, management, and expenses of their respective offices and institutions, which information shall be required by the Governor under oath, and the Governor may also inspect their books, accounts, vouchers, and public funds; and any officer or manager who, at any time, shall wilfully make a false report or give false information, shall be guilty of perjury, and so adjudged and punished accordingly, and removed from office.

SEC. 25. The Legislature shall pass efficient laws facilitating the investigation of breaches of trust and duty by all custodians of public funds, and providing for their suspension from office on reasonable cause shown, and for the appointment of temporary incumbents of their offices during such suspension.

SEC. 26. The Governor, by and with the advice and consent of two-thirds of the Senate, shall appoint a convenient number of notaries public for each county, who shall perform such duties as now are or may be prescribed by law.

## ARTICLE V.

### JUDICIAL DEPARTMENT.

SECTION 1. The judicial power of this State shall be vested in one Supreme Court, in a Court of Appeals, in District Courts, in County Courts, in Commissioner's Courts, in Courts of Justices of the Peace, and in such other courts as may be established by law. The Legislature may establish Criminal District Courts, with such jurisdiction as it may prescribe, but no such court shall be established unless the district includes a city containing at least thirty thousand inhabitants, as ascertained by the census of the United



**THE STATE INSANE ASYLUM, AUSTIN.**





States or other official census; *provided*, such town or city shall support said Criminal District Courts when established. The Criminal District Court of Galveston and Harris counties shall continue with the district, jurisdiction, and organization now existing by law, until otherwise provided by law.

SEC. 2. The Supreme Court shall consist of a Chief Justice and two Associate Justices, any two of whom shall constitute a quorum, and the concurrence of two judges shall be necessary to the decision of a case. No person shall be eligible to the office of Chief Justice or Associate Justice of the Supreme Court unless he be at the time of his election a citizen of the United States and of this State, and unless he shall have attained the age of thirty years, and shall have been a practising lawyer or a judge of a court in this State, or such lawyer and judge together, at least seven years. Said Chief Justice and Associate Justices shall be elected by the qualified voters of the State at a general election, shall hold their offices for six years, and shall each receive an annual salary of not more than three thousand five hundred and fifty dollars. In case of a vacancy in the office of Chief Justice or Associate Justice of the Supreme Court, the Governor shall fill the vacancy until the next general election for State officers, and at such general election the vacancy for the unexpired term shall be filled by election by the qualified voters of the State.

SEC. 3. The Supreme Court shall have appellate jurisdiction only, which shall be co-extensive with the limits of the State; but shall only extend to civil cases of which the District Courts have original or appellate jurisdiction. Appeals may be allowed for interlocutory judgments of the District Courts, in such cases and under such regulations as may be provided by law. The Supreme Court and the Judges thereof shall have power to issue, under such regulations as may be prescribed by law, the writ of *mandamus*, and all other writs necessary to enforce the jurisdiction of said court. The Supreme Court shall have power, upon affidavit or otherwise, as by court may be thought proper, to ascertain such matters of fact as may be necessary to the proper exercise of its jurisdiction. The Supreme Court shall sit for the transaction of business from the first Monday in October until the last Saturday of June of every year, at the seat of government, and at not more than two other places in the State.

SEC. 4. The Supreme Court shall appoint a clerk for each place at which it may sit, and each of said clerks shall give bond in such manner as is now or may hereafter be required by law; shall hold his office for four years, and shall be subject to removal by said court for good cause entered of record on the minutes of said court.

SEC. 5. The Court of Appeals shall consist of three judges, any two of whom may constitute a quorum, and a concurrence of two judges shall be necessary to a decision of said court. They shall be elected by the qualified voters of the State at a general election. They shall be citizens of the United States and of this State; shall have arrived at the age of thirty years at the time of election; each shall have been a practising lawyer, or a judge of a court in this State, or such lawyer and judge together, for at least

seven years. Said judges shall hold their offices for a term of six years, and each of them shall receive an annual salary of three thousand five hundred and fifty dollars, which shall not be increased or diminished during their term of office.

SEC. 6. The Court of Appeals shall have appellate jurisdiction co-extensive with the limits of the State in all criminal cases, of whatever grade, and in all civil cases, unless hereafter otherwise provided by law, of which the County Courts have original or appellate jurisdiction. In civil cases its opinions shall not be published unless the publication of such opinions be required by law. The Court of Appeals and the judges thereof shall have power to issue the writ of *habeas corpus*; and under such regulations as may be prescribed by law, issue such writs as may be necessary to enforce its own jurisdiction. The Court of Appeals shall have power, upon affidavits, or otherwise, as by the court may be thought proper, to ascertain such matters of fact as may be necessary to the exercise of its jurisdiction. The Court of Appeals shall sit for the transaction of business from the first Monday of October until the last Saturday of June of every year, at the capital, and at not more than two other places in the State, at which the Supreme Court shall hold its sessions. The court shall appoint a clerk for each place at which it may sit, and each of said clerks shall give bond in such manner as is now or may hereafter be required by law; shall hold his office for four years, and shall be subject to removal by the said court for good cause, entered of record on the minutes of said court.

SEC. 7. The State shall be divided into twenty-six judicial districts, which may be increased or diminished by the Legislature. For each district there shall be elected, by the qualified voters thereof, at general election for members of the Legislature, a judge, who shall be at least twenty-five years of age, shall be a citizen of the United States, shall have been a practicing attorney or a judge of a court in this State for the period of four years, and shall have resided in the district in which he is elected for two years next before his election; shall reside in his district during his term of office; shall hold his office for the term of four years; shall receive an annual salary of twenty-five hundred dollars, which shall not be increased or diminished during his term of service; and shall hold the regular terms of court at one place in each county in the district twice in each year, in such manner as may be prescribed by law. The Legislature shall have power by general act to authorize the holding of special terms, when necessary, and to provide for holding more than two terms of the court in any county, for the dispatch of business; and shall provide for the holding of District Courts when the judge thereof is absent, or is from any cause disabled or disqualified from presiding.

SEC. 8. The District Court shall have original jurisdiction in criminal cases of the grade of felony; of all suits in behalf of the State to recover penalties, forfeitures, and escheats; of all cases of divorce; in cases of misdemeanors involving official misconduct; of all suits to recover damages for slander or defamation of character; of all suits for the trial of title to land, and for the enforcement of liens thereon; of all suits for trial of right

to property levied on by virtue of any writ of execution, sequestration, or attachment when the property levied on shall be equal to or exceed in value five hundred dollars; and of all suits, complaints, or pleas whatever, without regard to any distinction between law and equity, when the matter in controversy shall be valued at, or amount to five hundred dollars, exclusive of interest; and the said courts and the judges thereof shall have power to issue writs of *habeas corpus* in felony cases, *mandamus*, injunction, *certiorari*, and all writs necessary to enforce their jurisdiction. The District Courts shall have appellate jurisdiction and general control in probate matters over the County Court established in each county for appointing guardians, granting letters testamentary and of administration, for settling the accounts of executors, administrators, and guardians, and for the transaction of business appertaining to estates; and original jurisdiction and general control over executors, administrators, guardians, and minors, under such regulations as may be prescribed by the Legislature. All cases now pending in the Supreme Court, of which the Court of Appeals has appellate jurisdiction under the provisions of this Article, shall, as soon as practicable after the establishment of said Court of Appeals, be certified, and the records transmitted to the Court of Appeals, and shall be decided by such Court of Appeals as if the same had been originally appealed to such court.

SEC. 9. There shall be a clerk for the District Court of each county, who shall be elected by the qualified voters for the State and county officers, and who shall hold his office for two years, subject to removal by information, or by indictment of a grand jury, and conviction by a petit jury. In case of vacancy the judge of the District Court shall have the power to appoint a clerk, who shall hold until the office can be filled by election.

SEC. 10. In the trial of all causes in the District Courts, the plaintiff or defendant shall, upon application made in open court, have the right of trial by jury; but no jury shall be impanelled in any civil case unless demanded by a party to the case, and a jury fee be paid by the party demanding a jury, for such sum, and with such exceptions as may be prescribed by the Legislature.

SEC. 11. No judge shall sit in any case wherein he may be interested, or where either of the parties may be connected with him by affinity or consanguinity, within such degree as may be prescribed by law, or where he shall have been counsel in the case. When the Supreme Court, or the Appellate Court, or any two of the members of either, shall be thus disqualified to hear and determine any case or cases in said court, the same shall be certified to the Governor of the State, who shall immediately commission the requisite number of persons learned in the law, for the trial and determination of said cause or causes. When a judge of the District Court is disqualified by any of the causes above stated, the parties may, by consent, appoint a proper person to try said case; or upon their failing to do so, a competent person may be appointed to try the same in the county where it is pending, in such manner as may be prescribed by law. And the District Judges may exchange districts, or hold courts for each other, when they

may deem it expedient, and shall do so when directed by law. The disqualification of judges of inferior tribunals shall be remedied, and vacancies in their offices shall be filled, as prescribed by law.

SEC. 12. All judges of the Supreme Court, Court of Appeals, and District Courts shall by virtue of their offices, be conservators of the peace throughout the State. The style of all writs and process shall be "The State of Texas." All prosecutions shall be carried on in the name and by the authority of "The State of Texas," and conclude "against the peace and dignity of the State."

SEC. 13. Grand and petit juries in the District Courts shall be composed of twelve men; but nine members of a grand jury shall be a quorum to transact business and present bills. In trials of civil cases, and in trials of criminal cases below the grade of felony, in the District Courts, nine members of the jury, concurring, may render a verdict, but when the verdict shall be rendered by less than the whole number, it shall be signed by every member of the jury concurring in it. When, pending the trial of any case, one or more jurors not exceeding three, may die, or be disabled from sitting, the remainder of the jury shall have the power to render the verdict: *provided*, that the Legislature may change or modify the rule authorizing less than the whole number of the jury to render a verdict.

SEC. 14. The Judicial Districts in this State and the time of holding the courts therein are fixed by ordinance forming part of this Constitution, until otherwise provided by law.

SEC. 15. There shall be established in each county in this State a County Court, which shall be a court of record; and there shall be elected in each county, by the qualified voters, a County Judge, who shall be well informed in the law of the State; shall be a conservator of the peace, and shall hold his office for two years, and until his successor shall be elected and qualified. He shall receive as a compensation for his services such fees and perquisites as may be prescribed by law.

SEC. 16. The County Court shall have original jurisdiction in all misdemeanors, of which exclusive original jurisdiction is not given to the Justice's Court, as the same are now or may be hereafter prescribed by law, and when the fine to be imposed shall exceed two hundred dollars; and they shall have exclusive original jurisdiction in all civil cases when the matter in controversy shall exceed in value two hundred dollars, and not exceed five hundred dollars, exclusive of interest; and concurrent jurisdiction with the Districts Courts, when the matter in controversy shall exceed five hundred and not exceed one thousand dollars, exclusive of interest; but shall not have jurisdiction of suits for the recovery of land. They shall have appellate jurisdiction in cases, civil and criminal, of which Justice's Courts have original jurisdiction, but of such civil cases only when the judgment of the court appealed from shall exceed twenty dollars, exclusive of costs, under such regulations as may be prescribed by law. In all appeals from Justice's Courts, there shall be a trial *de novo* in the County Court, and when the judgment rendered or fine imposed by the County Court shall not



**EPISCOPAL CHURCH, PALESTINE.**



exceed one hundred dollars such trial shall be final; but if the judgment rendered or fine imposed shall exceed one hundred dollars, as well as in all cases, civil and criminal, of which the County Court has exclusive or concurrent original jurisdiction, an appeal shall lie to the Court of Appeals, under such regulations as may be prescribed by law. The County Courts shall have the general jurisdiction of a Probate Court. They shall probate wills, appoint guardians of minors, idiots, lunatics, person *non compos mentis*, and common drunkards, grant letters testamentary and of administration, settle accounts of executors, administrators, and guardians, transact all business appertaining to the estates of deceased persons, minors, idiots, lunatics, persons *non compos mentis*, and common drunkards, including the settlement, partition, and distribution of estates of deceased persons, and to apprentice minors, as provided by law. And the County Courts, or judges thereof, shall have power to issue writs of *mandamus*, injunction, and all other writs necessary to the enforcement of the jurisdiction of said courts; and to issue writs of *habeas corpus* in cases where the offence charged is within the jurisdiction of the County Court, or any other court or tribunal inferior to said court. The County Court shall not have criminal jurisdiction in any county where there is a Criminal District Court, unless expressly conferred by law; and in such counties appeals from Justice's Courts and other inferior courts and tribunals, in criminal cases, shall be to the Criminal District Courts, under such regulations as may be prescribed by law, and in all such cases an appeal shall lie from such District Courts to the Court of Appeals. Any case pending in the County Court, which the County Judge may be disqualified to try, shall be transferred to the District Court of the same county for trial; and where there exists any cause of disqualifying the County Judge for the trial of a cause of which the County Court has jurisdiction, the District Court of such county shall have original jurisdiction of such cause.

SEC. 17. The County Court shall hold a term for civil business at least once in every two months, and shall dispose of probate business, either in term-time or vacation, as may be provided by law; and said court shall hold a term for criminal business once every month, as may be provided by law. Prosecutions may be commenced in said court by information filed by the County Attorney, or by affidavit, as may be provided by law. Grand juries impanelled in the District Courts shall inquire into misdemeanors, and all indictments therefor returned to the District Courts shall forthwith be certified to the County Courts, or other inferior courts having jurisdiction to try them, for trial; and if such indictment be quashed in the county or other inferior court, the person charged shall not be discharged if there is probable cause of guilt, but may be held by such court or magistrate to answer an information or affidavit. A jury in the County Court shall consist of six men; but no jury shall be impanelled to try a civil case, unless demanded by one of the parties, who shall pay such jury fee therefor, in advance, as may be prescribed by law, unless he makes affidavit that he is unable to pay the same.

SEC. 18. Each organized county in the State, now or hereafter existing,

shall be divided from time to time, for the convenience of the people, into precincts, not less than four and not more than eight. The present County Courts shall make the first division. Subsequent divisions shall be made by the Commissioners' Court, provided for by this Constitution. In each such precinct there shall be elected, at each biennial election, one Justice of the Peace and one Constable, each of whom shall hold his office for two years, and until his successor shall be elected and qualified: *provided*, that in any precinct in which there may be a city of eight thousand or more inhabitants, there shall be elected two Justices of the Peace. Each county shall in like manner be divided into four commissioners' precincts, in each of which there shall be elected, by the qualified voters thereof, one County Commissioner, who shall hold his office for two years, and until his successor shall be elected and qualified. The County Commissioners so chosen, with the County Judge, as presiding officer, shall compose the County Commissioners' Court, which shall exercise such powers and jurisdiction over all county business as is conferred by this Constitution and the laws of this State, or as may be hereafter prescribed.

SEC. 19. Justices of the Peace shall have jurisdiction in criminal matters of all cases where the penalty or fine to be imposed by law may not be more than for two hundred dollars, and in civil matters of all cases where the amount in controversy is two hundred dollars or less, exclusive of interest, of which exclusive original jurisdiction is not given to the District or County Courts; and such other jurisdiction, criminal and civil, as may be provided by law, under such regulations as may be prescribed by law; and appeals to the County Courts shall be allowed in all cases decided in Justice's Courts where the judgment is for more than twenty dollars exclusive of costs, and in all criminal cases, under such regulations as may be prescribed by law. And the Justices of the Peace shall be *ex-officio* notaries public; and they shall hold their courts at such times and places as may be provided by law.

SEC. 20. There shall be elected for each county, by the qualified voters, a County Clerk, who shall hold his office for two years, who shall be Clerk of the County and Commissioners' Courts and Recorder of the county, whose duties, perquisites, and fees of office shall be prescribed by the Legislature, and a vacancy in whose office shall be filled by the Commissioners' Court, until the next general election for county and State officers; *provided*, that in counties having a population of less than eight thousand persons there may be an election of a single clerk, who shall perform the duties of District and County Clerk.

SEC. 21. A County Attorney, for counties in which there is not a resident Criminal District Attorney, shall be elected by the qualified voters of each county, who shall be commissioned by the Governor, and hold his office for the term of two years. In case of vacancy, the Commissioners' Court of the county shall have power to appoint a County Attorney until the next general election. The County Attorneys shall represent the State in all cases in the District and inferior courts in their respective counties; but if any county shall be included in a district in which there shall be a District



Attorney, the respective duties of District Attorneys and County Attorneys shall in such counties be regulated by the Legislature. The Legislature may provide for the election of District Attorneys in such districts as may be deemed necessary, and make provision for the compensation of District Attorneys and County Attorneys; *provided*, District Attorneys shall receive an annual salary of five hundred dollars, to be paid by the State, and such fees, commissions, and perquisites as may be provided by law. County Attorneys shall receive as compensation only such fees, commissions, and perquisites as may be prescribed by law.

SEC. 22. The Legislature shall have power, by local or general law, to increase, diminish, or change the civil and criminal jurisdiction of County Courts; and in cases of any such change of jurisdiction the Legislature shall also conform the jurisdiction of the other courts to such change.

SEC. 23. There shall be elected by the qualified voters of each county a Sheriff, who shall hold his office for the term of two years, whose duties, and perquisites, and fees of office, shall be prescribed by the Legislature, and vacancies in whose office shall be filled by the Commissioners' Court until the next general election for county or State officers.

SEC. 24. County Judges, County Attorneys, Clerks of the District and County Courts, Justices of the Peace, Constables, and other county officers, may be removed by the Judges of the District Courts for incompetency, official misconduct, habitual drunkenness, or other causes defined by law, upon the cause therefor being set forth in writing, and the finding of its truth by a jury.

SEC. 25. The Supreme Court shall have power to make rules and regulations for the government of said court, and the other courts of the State, to regulate proceedings and expedite the dispatch of business therein.

SEC. 26. The State shall have no right of appeal in criminal cases.

SEC. 27. The Legislature shall, at its first session, provide for the transfer of all business, civil and criminal, pending in District Courts, over which jurisdiction is given by this Constitution to the County Courts, or other inferior courts, to such County or inferior courts, and for the trial or disposition of all such causes by such County or other inferior courts.

SEC. 28. Vacancies in the office of judges in the Supreme Court, of the Court of Appeals, and District Court, shall be filled by the Governor until the next succeeding general election; and vacancies in the office of County Judge, and Justices of the Peace, shall be filled by the Commissioners' Court, until the next general election for such offices.

## ARTICLE VI.

### SUFFRAGE.

SECTION 1. The following classes of persons shall not be allowed to vote in this State, to wit:

*First.*—Persons under twenty-one years of age.

*Second.*—Idiots and lunatics.

*Third.*—All paupers supported by any county.

*Fourth.*—All persons convicted of any felony, subject to such exceptions as the Legislature may make.

*Fifth.*—All soldiers, marines, and seamen employed in the service of the army or navy of the United States.

SEC. 2. Every male person subject to none of the foregoing disqualifications, who shall have attained the age of twenty-one years, and who shall be a citizen of the United States, and who shall have resided in this State one year next preceding an election, and the last six months within the district or county in which he offers to vote, shall be deemed a qualified elector; and every male person of foreign birth, subject to none of the foregoing disqualifications, who, at any time before an election, shall have declared his intention to become a citizen of the United States in accordance with the Federal Naturalization Laws, and shall have resided in this State one year next preceding such election, and the last six months in the county in which he offers to vote, shall also be deemed a qualified elector; and all electors shall vote in the election precinct of their residence; *provided*, that electors living in any unorganized county may vote at any election precinct in the county to which such county is attached for judicial purposes.

SEC. 3. All qualified electors of the State, as herein described, who shall have resided for six months immediately preceding an election within the limits of any city or corporate town, shall have the right to vote for Mayor and all other elective officers; but in all elections to determine expenditure of money or assumption of debt only those shall be qualified to vote who pay taxes on property in said city or incorporated town; *provided*, that no poll tax for the payment of debts thus incurred shall be levied upon the persons debarred from voting in relation thereto.

SEC. 4. In all elections by the people the vote shall be by ballot, and the Legislature shall provide for the numbering of tickets, and make such other regulations as may be necessary to detect and punish fraud, and preserve the purity of the ballot box; but no law shall ever be enacted requiring a registration of the voters of this State.

SEC. 5. Voters shall, in all cases, except treason, felony, or breach of the peace, be privileged from arrest during their attendance at elections, and in going to and returning therefrom.

## ARTICLE VII.

### EDUCATION.—THE PUBLIC FREE SCHOOLS.

SECTION 1. A general diffusion of knowledge being essential to the preservation of the liberties and rights of the people, it shall be the duty of the Legislature of the State to establish and make suitable provision for the support and maintenance of an efficient system of public free schools.

SEC. 2. All funds, lands, and other property heretofore set apart and appropriated for the support of public schools; all the alternate sections of



SPANISH FANDANGO.



land reserved by the State out of grants heretofore made, or that may hereafter be made to railroads, or other corporations, of any nature whatsoever: one-half of the public domain of the State; and all sums of money that may come to the State from the sale of any portion of the same, shall constitute a perpetual school fund.

SEC. 3. There shall be set apart annually not more than one-fourth of the general revenue of the State, and a poll tax of one dollar on all male inhabitants in this State between the ages of twenty-one and sixty years, for the benefit of the public free schools.

SEC. 4. The land herein set apart to the public free school fund shall be sold under such regulations, at such times, and on such terms as may be prescribed by law; and the Legislature shall not have power to grant any relief to the purchasers thereof. The Comptroller shall invest the proceeds of such sales, and of those heretofore made, as may be directed by the Board of Education herein provided for, in the bonds of this State, if the same can be obtained, otherwise in United States bonds; and the United States bonds now belonging to said fund shall likewise be invested in State bonds, if the same can be obtained on terms advantageous to the school fund.

SEC. 5. The principal of all bonds and other funds, and the principal arising from the sale of the lands hereinbefore set apart for said school fund, shall be the permanent school fund; and all the interest derivable therefrom, and the taxes herein authorized and levied, shall be the available school fund, which shall be applied annually to the support of the public free schools. And no law shall ever be enacted appropriating any part of the permanent or available school fund to any other purpose whatever; nor shall the same or any part thereof ever be appropriated to, or used for the support of any sectarian school; and the available school fund herein provided shall be distributed to the several counties according to their scholastic population, and applied in manner as may be provided by law.

SEC. 6. All lands heretofore or hereafter granted to the several counties of this State for education or schools, are of right the property of said counties respectively to which they were granted, and title thereto is vested in said counties, and no adverse possession or limitation shall ever be available against the title of any county. Each county may sell or dispose of its lands in whole or in part, in manner to be provided by the Commissioners' Court of the county. Actual settlers residing on said lands shall be protected in the prior right of purchasing the same to the extent of their settlement, not to exceed one hundred and sixty acres, at the price fixed by said court, which price shall not include the value of existing improvements made thereon by such settlers. Said lands and the proceeds thereof, when sold, shall be held by said counties alone as a trust for the benefit of public schools therein; said proceeds to be invested in bonds of the State of Texas, or of the United States, and only the interest thereon to be used and expended annually.

SEC. 7. Separate schools shall be provided for the white and colored children, and impartial provision shall be made for both.

SEC. 8. The Governor, Comptroller, and Secretary of State shall constitute a Board of Education, who shall distribute said funds to the several counties, and perform such other duties concerning public schools as may be prescribed by law.

#### ASYLUMS.

SEC. 9. All lands heretofore granted for the benefit of the Lunatic, Blind, Deaf and Dumb, and Orphan Asylums, together with such donations as may have been made or may hereafter be made to either of them, respectively, as indicated in the several grants, are hereby set apart to provide a permanent fund for the support, maintenance, and improvement of said asylums. And the Legislature may provide for the sale of the lands and investment of the proceeds in manner as provided for the sale and investment of school lands in Section 4 of this Article.

#### UNIVERSITY.

SEC. 10. The Legislature shall, as soon as practicable, establish, organize, and provide for the maintenance, support, and direction of a university of the first class, to be located by a vote of the people of the State, and styled "The University of Texas," for the promotion of literature, and the arts and sciences, including an agricultural and mechanical department.

SEC. 11. In order to enable the Legislature to perform the duties set forth in the foregoing section, it is hereby declared that all lands and other property heretofore set apart and appropriated for the establishment and maintenance of "The University of Texas," together with all the proceeds of sales of the same, heretofore made or hereafter to be made, and all grants, donations, and appropriations that may hereafter be made by the State of Texas, or from any other source, shall constitute and become a permanent university fund. And the same as realized and received into the Treasury of the State (together with such sums, belonging to the fund, as may now be in the Treasury), shall be invested in bonds of the State of Texas, if the same can be obtained; if not, then in United States bonds; and the interest accruing thereon shall be subject to appropriation by the Legislature to accomplish the purpose declared in the foregoing section; *provided*, that one-tenth of the alternate sections of the lands granted to railroads, reserved by the State, which were set apart and appropriated to the establishment of "The University of Texas," by an act of the Legislature of February 11, 1858, entitled "An act to establish 'The University of Texas,'" shall not be included in or constitute a part of the permanent university fund.

SEC. 12. The land herein set apart to the university fund shall be sold under such regulations, at such times, and on such terms, as may be provided by law; and the Legislature shall provide for the prompt collection, at maturity, of all debts due on account of university lands, heretofore sold, or that may hereafter be sold, and shall in neither event have the power to grant relief to the purchasers.

SEC. 13. The Agricultural and Mechanical College of Texas, established by an act of the Legislature, passed April 17, 1871, located in the county of

Brazos, is hereby made and constituted a branch of the University of Texas, for instruction in agriculture, the mechanic arts, and the natural sciences connected therewith. And the Legislature shall, at its next session, make an appropriation, not to exceed forty thousand dollars, for the construction and completion of the buildings and improvements, and for providing the furniture necessary to put said college in immediate and successful operation.

SEC. 14. The Legislature shall also, when deemed practicable, establish and provide for the maintenance of a college or branch university for the instruction of the colored youths of the State, to be located by a vote of the people; *provided*, that no tax shall be levied, and no money appropriated out of the general revenue, either for this purpose or the establishment and erection of the buildings of the University of Texas.

SEC. 15. In addition to the lands heretofore granted to the University of Texas, there is hereby set apart and appropriated, for the endowment, maintenance, and support of said University and its branches, one million acres of the unappropriated public domain of the State, to be designated and surveyed as may be provided by law; and said lands shall be sold under the same regulations, and the proceeds invested in the same manner as is provided for the sale and investment of the permanent University fund; and the Legislature shall not have power to grant any relief to the purchasers of said lands.

## ARTICLE VIII.

### TAXATION AND REVENUE.

SECTION 1. Taxation shall be equal and uniform. All property in this State, whether owned by natural persons or corporations, other than municipal, shall be taxed in proportion to its value, which shall be ascertained as may be provided by law. The Legislature may impose a poll tax. It may also impose occupation taxes, both upon natural persons and upon corporations, other than municipal, doing any business in this State. It may tax incomes of both natural persons and corporations, other than municipal, except that persons engaged in mechanical and agricultural pursuits shall never be required to pay an occupation tax: *provided*, that two hundred and fifty dollars worth of household and kitchen furniture, belonging to each family in this State, shall be exempt from taxation; and *provided* further, that the occupation tax levied by any county, city, or town, for any year, on persons or corporations pursuing any professions or business, shall not exceed one-half of the tax levied by the State for the same period on such professions of business.

SEC. 2. All occupation taxes shall be equal and uniform upon the same class of subjects within the limits of the authority levying the tax; but the Legislature may, by general laws, exempt from taxation public property used for public purposes; actual places of religious worship; places of burial not held for private or corporate profit; all buildings used exclusively and owned by persons or associations of persons for school purposes (and the necessary furniture of all schools), and institutions of purely public

charity; and all laws exempting property from taxation other than the property above mentioned, shall be void.

SEC. 8. Taxes shall be levied and collected by general laws and for public purposes only.

SEC. 4. The power to tax corporations and corporate property shall not be surrendered or suspended by act of the Legislature, by any contract or grant to which the State shall be a party.

SEC. 5. All property of railroad companies, of whatever description, lying or being within the limits of any city or corporated town within this State, shall bear its proportionate share of municipal taxation; and if any such property shall not have been heretofore rendered, the authorities of the city or town within which it lies shall have power to require its rendition, and collect the usual municipal tax thereon, as on other property lying within said municipality.

SEC. 6. No money shall be drawn from the Treasury but in pursuance of specific appropriation made by law; nor shall any appropriation of money be made for a longer term than two years, except by the first Legislature to assemble under this Constitution, which may make the necessary appropriations to carry on the government until the assemblage of the Sixteenth Legislature.

SEC. 7. The Legislature shall not have power to borrow, or in any manner divert from its purpose any special fund that may, or ought to, come into the Treasury; and shall make it penal for any person or persons to borrow, withhold, or in any manner to divert from its purpose any special fund, or any part thereof.

SEC. 8. All property of railroad companies shall be assessed, and the taxes collected in the several counties in which said property is situated, including so much of the road-bed and fixtures as shall be in each county. The rolling stock may be assessed in gross in the county where the principal office of the company is located, and the county tax paid upon it shall be apportioned by the Comptroller, in proportion to the distance such road may run through any such county, among the several counties through which the road passes, as a part of their tax assets.

SEC. 9. The State tax on property, exclusive of the tax necessary to pay the public debt, shall never exceed fifty cents on the one hundred dollars valuation, and no county, city, or town shall levy more than one-half of said State tax, except for the payment of debts already incurred, and for the erection of public buildings, not to exceed fifty cents on the one hundred dollars in any one year, and except as in this Constitution is otherwise provided.

SEC. 10. The Legislature shall have no power to release the inhabitants of, or property in, any county, city, or town, from the payment of taxes levied for State or county purposes, unless in case of great public calamity in any such county, city, or town, when such release may be made by a vote of two-thirds of each House of the Legislature.





**RAILROAD BRIDGE, BRAZOS RIVER, NEAR HEARNE, I. & G. N. R. R. -**



SEC. 11. All property, whether owned by persons or corporations, shall be assessed for taxation, and the taxes paid in the county where situated, but the Legislature may, by a two-thirds vote, authorize the payment of taxes of non-residents of counties to be made at the office of the Comptroller of Public Accounts. And all lands and other property not rendered for taxation by the owner thereof shall be assessed at its fair value by the proper officer.

SEC. 12. All property subject to taxation in, and owned by residents of, unorganized counties, shall be assessed and the taxes thereon paid in the counties to which such unorganized counties shall be attached for judicial purposes; and lands lying in and owned by non-residents of unorganized counties, and lands lying in the territory, not laid off into counties, shall be assessed and the taxes thereon collected at the office of the Comptroller of the State.

SEC. 13. Provision shall be made by the first Legislature for the speedy sale of a sufficient portion of all lands and other property for the taxes due thereon, and every year thereafter for the sale of all lands and other property upon which the taxes have not been paid, and the deed of conveyance to the purchaser for all lands and other property thus sold shall be held to vest a good and perfect title in the purchaser thereof, subject to be impeached only for actual fraud; *provided*, that the former owner shall, within two years from date of purchaser's deed, have the right to redeem the land upon the payment of double the amount of money paid for the land.

SEC. 14. There shall be elected by the qualified electors of each county, at the same time and under the same law regulating the election of State and county officers, an assessor of taxes, who shall hold his office for two years, and until his successor is elected and qualified.

SEC. 15. The annual assessment made upon landed property shall be a special lien thereon, and all property, both real and personal, belonging to any delinquent taxpayer, shall be liable to seizure and sale for the payment of all the taxes and penalties due by such delinquent; and such property may be sold for the payment of the taxes and penalties due by such delinquent, under such regulations as the Legislature may provide.

SEC. 16. The sheriff of each county, in addition to his other duties, shall be the collector of taxes therefor. But in counties having ten thousand inhabitants, to be determined by the last preceding census of the United States, a collector of taxes shall be elected to hold office for two years, and until his successor shall be elected and qualified.

SEC. 17. The specification of the objects and subjects of taxation shall not deprive the Legislature of the power to require other subjects or objects to be taxed in such manner as may be consistent with the principles of taxation fixed in this Constitution.

SEC. 18. The Legislature shall provide for equalizing, as near as may be, the valuation of all property subject to or rendered for taxation (the County Commissioner's Court to constitute a board of equalization); and may also provide for the classification of all lands, with reference to their value in the several counties.

## ARTICLE IX.

## COUNTIES.

**SECTION 1.** The Legislature shall have power to create counties for the convenience of the people, subject to the following provisions:

*First.*—In the territory of the State exterior to all counties now existing, no new counties shall be created with a less area than nine hundred square miles, in a square form, unless prevented by pre-existing boundary lines. Should the State lines render this impracticable in border counties, the area may be less. The territory referred to may, at any time, in whole or in part, be divided into counties in advance of population, and attached, for judicial and land-surveying purposes, to the most convenient organized county or counties.

*Second.*—Within the territory of any county or counties now existing, no new county shall be created with a less area than seven hundred square miles, nor shall any such county now existing be reduced to a less area than seven hundred square miles. No new counties shall be created so as to approach nearer than twelve miles of the county seat of any county from which it may, in whole or in part, be taken. Counties of a less area than nine hundred, but of seven hundred or more square miles, within counties now existing, may be created by a two-thirds vote of each House of the Legislature, taken by yeas and nays, and entered on the journals. Any county now existing may be reduced to an area of not less than seven hundred square miles, by a like two-thirds vote. When any part of a county is stricken off and attached to or created into another county, the part stricken off shall be holden for and obliged to pay its proportion of all the liabilities then existing of the county from which it was taken, in such manner as may be prescribed by law.

*Third.*—No part of any existing county shall be detached from it and attached to another existing county until the proposition for such change shall have been submitted, in such manner as may be provided by law, to a vote of the electors of both counties, and shall have received a majority of those voting on the question in each.

## COUNTY SEATS.

**SEC. 2.** The Legislature shall pass laws regulating the manner of removing county seats, but no county seat situated within five miles of the geographical centre of the county shall be removed, except by a vote of two-thirds of all the electors voting on the subject. A majority of such electors, however, voting at such election, may remove a county seat from a point more than five miles from the geographical centre of the county to a point within five miles of such centre, in either case the centre to be determined by a certificate from the Commissioner of the General Land Office.

## ARTICLE X.

## RAILROADS.

**SECTION 1.** Any railroad corporation or association, organized under the law for the purpose, shall have the right to construct and operate a railroad between any points within this State, and to connect at the State line with

railroads of other States. Every railroad company shall have the right, with its road, to intersect, connect with, or cross any other railroad; and shall receive and transport each the other's passengers, tonnage, and cars, loaded or empty, without delay or discrimination, under such regulations as shall be prescribed by law.

SEC. 2. Railroads heretofore constructed, or that may hereafter be constructed in this State, are hereby declared public highways, and railroad companies common carriers. The Legislature shall pass laws to correct abuses and prevent unjust discrimination and extortion in the rates of freight and passenger tariffs on the different railroads in this State; and shall from time to time pass laws establishing reasonable maximum rates of charges for the transportation of passengers and freight on said railroads, and enforce all such laws by adequate penalties.

SEC. 3. Every railroad or other corporation, organized or doing business in this State under the laws or authority thereof, shall have and maintain a public office or place in this State for the transaction of its business, where transfers of stock shall be made, and where shall be kept, for inspection by the stockholders of such corporations, books, in which shall be recorded the amount of capital stock subscribed, the names of the owners of the stock, the amounts owned by them respectively, the amount of stock paid, and by whom, the transfer of said stock, with the date of the transfer, the amount of its assets and liabilities, and the names and places of residence of its officers. The directors of every railroad company shall hold one meeting annually in this State, public notice of which shall be given thirty days previously, and the president or superintendent shall report annually, under oath, to the Comptroller or Governor, their acts and doings, which report shall include such matters relating to railroads as may be prescribed by law. The Legislature shall pass laws enforcing by suitable penalties the provisions of this section.

SEC. 4. The rolling stock and all other movable property belonging to any railroad company or corporation in this State shall be considered personal property, and its real and personal property, or any part thereof, shall be liable to execution and sale in the same manner as the property of individuals; and the Legislature shall pass no laws exempting any such property from execution and sale.

SEC. 5. No railroad or other corporation, or the lessees, purchasers, or managers of any railroad corporation, shall consolidate the stock, property, or franchises of such corporation with, or lease or purchase the works or franchises of, or in any way control any railroad corporation owning or having under its control a parallel or competing line; nor shall any officer of such railroad corporation act as an officer of any other railroad corporation owning or having the control of a parallel or competing line.

SEC. 6. No railroad company organized under the laws of this State shall consolidate by private or judicial sale or otherwise with any railroad company organized under the laws of any other State or of the United States.

SEC. 7. No law shall be passed by the Legislature granting the right to construct and operate a street railroad within any city, town, or village, or

upon any public highway, without first acquiring the consent of the local authorities having control of the street or highway proposed to be occupied by such street railroad.

SEC. 8. No railroad corporation in existence at the time of the adoption of this Constitution shall have the benefit of any future legislation, except on condition of complete acceptance of all the provisions of this Constitution applicable to railroads.

SEC. 9. No railroad hereafter constructed in this State shall pass within a distance of three miles of any county seat without passing through the same, and establishing and maintaining a depot therein, unless prevented by natural obstacles, such as streams, hills, or mountains; *provided*, such town or its citizens shall grant the right of way through its limits, and sufficient ground for ordinary depot purposes.

## ARTICLE XI.

### MUNICIPAL CORPORATIONS.

SECTION 1. The several counties of this State are hereby recognized as legal subdivisions of the State.

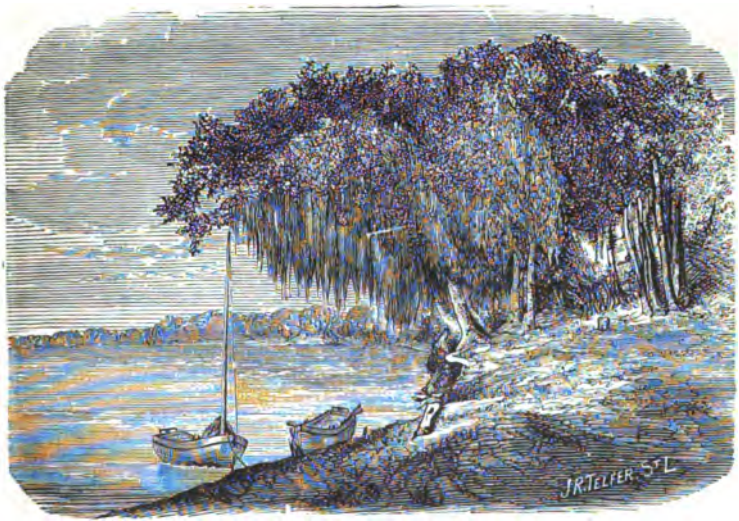
SEC. 2. The construction of jails, court-houses, and bridges, and the establishment of county poor-houses and farms, and the laying out, construction, and repairing of county roads shall be provided for by general laws.

SEC. 3. No county, city, or other municipal corporation shall hereafter become a subscriber to the capital of any private corporation or association, or make any appropriation or donation to the same, or in anywise loan its credit; but this shall not be construed to in any way affect any obligation heretofore undertaken pursuant to law.

SEC. 4. Cities and towns having a population of ten thousand inhabitants or less, may be chartered alone by general law. They may levy, assess, and collect an annual tax to defray the current expenses of their local government, but such tax shall never exceed, for any one year, one-fourth of one per cent., and shall be collectable only in current money. And a license and occupation tax levied, and all fines, forfeitures, penalties, and other dues accruing to cities and towns shall be collectable only in current money.

SEC. 5. Cities having more than ten thousand inhabitants may have their charters granted or amended by special act of the Legislature, and may levy, assess, and collect such taxes as may be authorized by law, but no tax for any purpose shall ever be lawful, for any one year, which shall exceed two and one-half per cent. of the taxable property of such city; and no debt shall ever be created by any city, unless at the same time provision be made to assess and collect annually a sufficient sum to pay the interest thereon and create a sinking fund of at least two per cent. thereon.

SEC. 6. Counties, cities, and towns are authorized, in such mode as may now or may hereafter be provided by law, to levy, assess, and collect the taxes necessary to pay the interest and provide a sinking fund to satisfy any



**ARKANSAS BAY.**

SEC. 3. The right to authorize and regulate freights, tolls, wharfage, or fares levied and collected or proposed to be levied and collected by individuals, companies, or corporations, for the use of highways, landings, wharves, bridges, and ferries, devoted to public use, has never been and shall never be relinquished or abandoned by the State, but shall always be under legislative control and depend upon legislative authority.

SEC. 4. The first Legislature assembled after the adoption of this Constitution shall provide a mode of procedure by the Attorney-General and District or County Attorneys, in the name and behalf of the State, to prevent and punish the demanding and receiving or collection of any and all charges of freight, wharfage, fares, or tolls, for the use of property devoted to the public, unless the same shall have been specially authorized by law.

SEC. 5. All laws granting the right to demand and collect freights, fares, tolls, or wharfage shall at all times be subject to amendment, modification, or repeal by the Legislature.

SEC. 6. No corporation shall issue stock or bonds except for money paid, labor done, or property actually received, and all fictitious increase of stock or indebtedness shall be void.

SEC. 7. Nothing in this Article shall be construed to divest or affect rights guaranteed by any existing grant or statute of this State, or of the Republic of Texas.

### ARTICLE XIII.

#### SPANISH AND MEXICAN LAND TITLES.

SECTION 1. All fines, penalties, forfeitures, and escheats, which have heretofore accrued to the Republic and State of Texas, under their constitutions and laws, shall accrue to the State under this Constitution, and the Legislature shall provide a method for determining what lands have been forfeited, and for giving effects to escheats; and such rights of forfeiture and escheats to the State shall, *ipso facto*, inure to the protection of the innocent holders of junior titles, as provided in Sections 2, 3, and 4 of this Article.

SEC. 2. Any claim of title or right to land in Texas, issued prior to the 13th day of November, 1835, not duly recorded in the county where the land was situated at the time of such record, or not duly archived in the General Land Office, or not in the actual possession of the grantee thereof, or some person claiming under him, prior to the accruing of junior title thereto from the sovereignty of the soil, under circumstances reasonably calculated to give notice to said junior grantee, has never had, and shall not have, standing or effect against such junior title, or color of title, acquired without such or actual notice of such prior claim of title or right; and no condition annexed to such grants, not archived, or recorded, or occupied as aforesaid, has been, or ever *shall* be released or waived, but actual performance of all such conditions shall be proved by the person or persons claiming under such title or claim of right in order to maintain action



thereon, and the holder of such junior title, or color of title, shall have all the rights of the Government which have heretofore existed, or now exist, arising from the non-performance of all such conditions.

SEC. 3. Non-payment of taxes on any claim of title to land, dated prior to the 13th day of November, 1835, not recorded or archived, as provided in Section 2, by the person or persons so claiming, or those under whom he or they so claim, from that date up to the date of the adoption of this Constitution, shall be held to be a presumption that the right thereto has reverted to the State, and that said claim is a stale demand, which presumption shall only be rebutted by payment of all taxes on said lands, State, county, and city or town, to be assessed on the fair value of such lands by the Comptroller, and paid to him, without commutation or deduction for any part of the above period.

SEC. 4. No claim of title or right to land, which issued prior to the 13th day of November, 1835, which has not been duly recorded in the county where the land was situated at the time of such record, or which has not been duly archived in the General Land Office, shall ever hereafter be deposited in the General Land Office, or recorded in this State, or delineated on the maps, or used as evidence in any of the courts of this State, and the same are stale claims; but this shall not affect such rights or presumptions as arise from actual possession. By the words "duly recorded," as used in Sections 2 and 4 of this Article, it is meant that such claim of title or right to land shall have been recorded in the proper office, and that mere errors in the certificate of registration or informality, not affecting the fairness and good faith of the holder thereof, with which the record was made, shall not be held to vitiate such record.

SEC. 5. All claims, locations, surveys, grants, and titles, of any kind, which are declared null and void by the Constitution of the Republic or State of Texas, are, and the same shall remain forever, null and void.

SEC. 6. The Legislature shall pass stringent laws for the detection and conviction of all forgers of land titles, and may make such appropriations of money for that purpose as may be necessary.

SEC. 7. Sections 2, 3, 4, and 5 of this Article shall not be so construed as to set aside or repeal any law or laws of the Republic or State of Texas, releasing the claimants of headrights of colonists of a league of land, or less, from compliance with the conditions on which their grants were made.

#### ARTICLE XIV.

##### PUBLIC LANDS AND LAND OFFICE.

SECTION 1. There shall be one General Land Office in the State, which shall be at the seat of government, where all land titles which have emanated or may hereafter emanate from the State shall be registered, except those titles the registration of which may be prohibited by this Constitution. It shall be the duty of the Legislature at the earliest practicable time to make the Land Office self-sustaining, and from time to time the Legislature may establish such subordinate offices as may be deemed necessary.

SEC. 2. All unsatisfied genuine land certificates barred by Section 4, Article 10, of the Constitution of 1869, by reason of the holders or owners thereof, failing to have them surveyed and returned to the Land Office by the first day of January, 1875, are hereby revived. All unsatisfied genuine land certificates now in existence shall be surveyed and returned to the General Land Office within five years after the adoption of this Constitution, or be forever barred; and all genuine land certificates hereafter issued by the State shall be surveyed and returned to the General Land Office within five years after issuance, or be forever barred; *provided*, that all genuine land certificates heretofore or hereafter issued shall be located, surveyed, or patented only upon vacant and unappropriated public domain, and not upon any land titled or equitably owned under color of title from the sovereignty of the State, evidence of the appropriation of which is on the county records or in the General Land Office; or when the appropriation is evidenced by the occupation of the owner, or of some person holding for him.

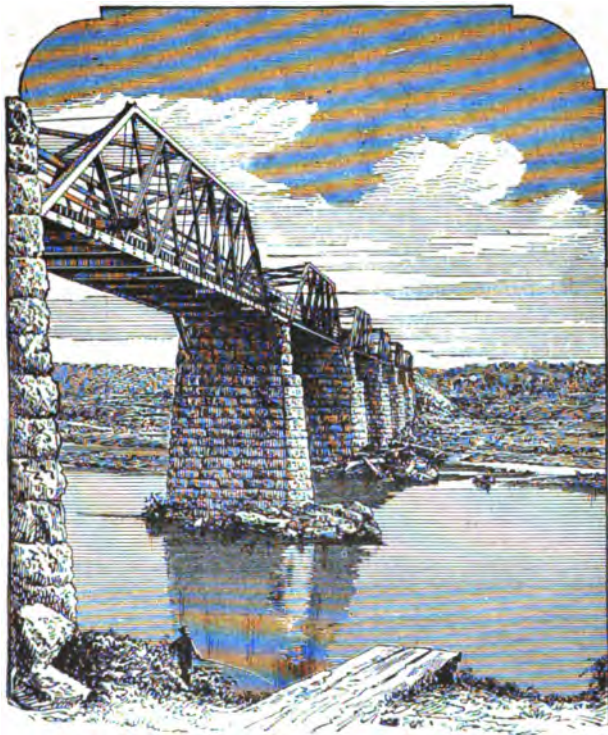
SEC. 3. The Legislature shall have no power to grant any of the lands of this State to any railway company except upon the following restrictions and conditions:

*First.*—That there shall never be granted to any such corporation more than sixteen sections to the mile, and no reservation of any part of the public domain for the purpose of satisfying such grant shall ever be made.

*Second.*—That no land certificate shall be issued to such company until they have equipped, constructed, and in running order at least ten miles of road; and on the failure of such company to comply with the terms of its charter, or to alienate its land at a period to be fixed by law, in no event to exceed twelve years from the issuance of the patent, all said land shall be forfeited to the State and become a portion of the public domain, and liable to location and survey. The Legislature shall pass general laws only, to give effect to the provisions of this section.

SEC. 4. No certificate for land shall be sold at the Land Office except to actual settlers upon the same, and in lots not to exceed one hundred and sixty acres.

SEC. 5. All lands heretofore or hereafter granted to railway companies, where the charter or law of the State required or shall hereafter require their alienation within a certain period, on pain of forfeiture, or is silent on the subject of forfeiture, and which lands have not been or shall not hereafter be alienated, in conformity with the terms of their charters, and the laws under which the grants were made, are hereby declared forfeited to the State and subject to pre-emption, location, and survey, as other vacant lands. All lands heretofore granted to said railroad companies, to which no forfeiture was attached on their failure to alienate, are not included in the foregoing clause; but in all such last-named cases it shall be the duty of the Attorney General, in every instance where alienations have been or hereafter may be made, to inquire into the same, and if such alienation has been made in fraud of the rights of the State, and is colorable only, the real and beneficial interest being still in such corporation, to institute legal proceedings in the county where the seat of government is situated, to forfeit such lands



**COLORADO RIVER BRIDGE, AUSTIN—I. & G. N. R. R.**



to the State, and if such alienation be judicially ascertained to be fraudulent and colorable as aforesaid, such lands shall be forfeited to the State and become a part of the vacant public domain, liable to pre-emption, location, and survey.

SEC. 6. To every head of a family without a homestead there shall be donated one hundred and sixty acres of public land, upon condition that he will select and locate said land, and occupy the same three years, and pay the office fees due thereon. To all single men of eighteen years of age and upwards shall be donated eighty acres of public land, upon the terms and conditions prescribed for heads of families.

SEC. 7. The State of Texas hereby releases to the owner or owners of the soil all mines and minerals that may be on the same, subject to taxation as other property.

SEC. 8. Persons residing between the Nueces river and the Rio Grande, and owning grants for lands which emanated from the government of Spain, or that of Mexico, which grants have been recognized and validated by the State, by acts of the Legislature, approved February 10, 1852, August 15, 1870, and other acts, and who have been prevented from complying with the requirements of said acts by the unsettled condition of the country, shall be allowed until the first day of January, 1880, to complete their surveys, and the plats thereof, and to return their field-notes to the General Land Office; and all claimants failing to do so shall be forever barred: *provided*, nothing in this section shall be so construed as to validate any titles not already valid, or to interfere with the rights of third persons.

## ARTICLE XV.

### IMPEACHMENT.

SECTION 1. The power of impeachment shall be vested in the House of Representatives.

SEC. 2. Impeachment of the Governor, Lieutenant-Governor, Attorney-General, Treasurer, Commissioner of the General Land Office, Comptroller, and the Judges of the Supreme Court, Court of Appeals, and District Court shall be tried by the Senate.

SEC. 3. When the Senate is sitting as a Court of Impeachment, the Senators shall be on oath, or affirmation, impartially to try the party impeached, and no person shall be convicted without the concurrence of two-thirds of the Senators present.

SEC. 4. Judgment in cases of impeachment shall extend only to removal from office, and disqualification from holding any office of honor, trust, or profit, under this State. A party convicted on impeachment shall also be subject to indictment, trial, and punishment, according to law.

SEC. 5. All officers against whom articles of impeachment may be preferred shall be suspended from the exercise of the duties of their office, during the pendency of such impeachment. The Governor may make a provisional appointment to fill the vacancy occasioned by the suspension of an officer, until the decision on the impeachment.

SEC. 6. Any Judge of the District Courts of the State who is incompetent to discharge the duties of his office, or who shall be guilty of partiality, or oppression, or other official misconduct, or whose habits and conduct are such as to render him unfit to hold such office, or who shall negligently fail to perform his duties as judge, or who shall fail to execute in a reasonable measure the business in his courts, may be removed by the Supreme Court. The Supreme Court shall have original jurisdiction to hear and determine the causes aforesaid when presented in writing upon the oaths, taken before some Judge of a Court of Record, of not less than ten lawyers, practising in the courts held by such judge, and licensed to practise in the Supreme Court; said presentment to be founded either upon the knowledge of the persons making it or upon the written oaths as to the facts of creditable witnesses. The Supreme Court may issue all needful process and prescribe all needful rules to give effect to this section. Causes of this kind shall have precedence and be tried as soon as practicable.

SEC. 7. The Legislature shall provide by law for the trial and removal from office of all officers of this State, the modes for which have not been provided in this Constitution

#### ADDRESS.

SEC. 8. The Judges of the Supreme Court, Court of Appeals, and District Courts, shall be removed by the Governor on the address of two-thirds of each House of the Legislature, for wilful neglect of duty, incompetency, habitual drunkenness, oppression in office, or other reasonable cause which shall not be sufficient ground for impeachment; *provided, however*, that the cause or causes for which such removal shall be required shall be stated at length in such address and entered on the journals of each House; *and provided further*, that the cause or causes shall be notified to the judge so intended to be removed, and he shall be admitted to a hearing in his own defence before any vote for such address shall pass; and in all such cases, the vote shall be taken by yeas and nays, and entered on the journals of each House respectively.

### ARTICLE XVI.

#### GENERAL PROVISIONS.

SECTION 1. Members of the Legislature, and all officers, before they enter upon the duties of their offices, shall take the following oath or affirmation: "I, (——), do solemnly swear (or affirm), that I will faithfully and impartially discharge and perform all the duties incumbent upon me as——, according to the best of my skill and ability, agreeably to the Constitution and laws of the United States and of this State; and I do further solemnly swear (or affirm), that since the adoption of the Constitution of this State, I, being a citizen of this State, have not fought a duel with deadly weapons, within this State nor out of it, nor have I sent or accepted a challenge to fight a duel with deadly weapons, nor have I acted as second in carrying a challenge, or aided, advised, or assisted any person thus offending. And I furthermore solemnly swear (or affirm), that I have not directly

nor indirectly paid, offered, or promised to pay, contributed nor promised to contribute any money, or valuable thing, or promised any public office or employment, as a reward for the giving or withholding a vote at the election at which I was elected (or if the office is one of appointment, to secure my appointment). So help me God."

SEC. 2. Laws shall be made to exclude from office, serving on juries, and from the right of suffrage, those who may have been or shall hereafter be convicted of bribery, perjury, forgery, or other high crimes. The privilege of free suffrage shall be protected by laws regulating elections, and prohibiting under adequate penalties all undue influence therein from power, bribery, tumult, or other improper practice.

SEC. 3. The Legislature shall make provisions whereby persons convicted of misdemeanors and committed to the county jails in default of payment of fines and costs, shall be required to discharge such fines and costs by manual labor, under such regulations as may be prescribed by law.

SEC. 4. Any citizen of this State who shall, after the adoption of this Constitution, fight a duel with deadly weapons, or send or accept a challenge to fight a duel with deadly weapons, either within this State or out of it, or who shall act as second, or knowingly assist in any manner those thus offending, shall be deprived of the right of suffrage, or of holding any office of trust or profit under this State.

SEC. 5. Every person shall be disqualified from holding any office of profit or trust in this State, who shall have been convicted of having given or offered a bribe to procure his election or appointment.

SEC. 6. No appropriation for private or individual purposes shall be made. A regular statement, under oath, and an account of the receipts and expenditures of all public money shall be published annually, in such manner as shall be prescribed by law.

SEC. 7. The Legislature shall in no case, have power to issue "Treasury Warrants," "Treasury Notes," or paper of any description intended to circulate as money.

SEC. 8. Each county in the State may provide, in such manner as may be prescribed by law, a manual-labor poorhouse and farm, for taking care of, managing, employing, and supplying the wants of its indigent and poor inhabitants.

SEC. 9. Absence on business of the State, or of the United States, shall not forfeit a residence once obtained, so as to deprive any one of the right of suffrage, or of being elected or appointed to any office, under the exceptions contained in this Constitution.

SEC. 10. The Legislature shall provide for deductions from the salaries of public officers who may neglect the performance of any duty that may be assigned them by law.

SEC. 11. The legal rate of interest shall not exceed eight per cent. per annum, in the absence of any contract as to the rate of interest; and by

contract parties may agree upon any rate not to exceed twelve per cent. per annum. All interest charged above this last-named rate shall be deemed usurious, and the Legislature shall, at its first session, provide appropriate pains and penalties to prevent and punish usury.

SEC. 12. No member of Congress, nor person holding or exercising any office of profit or trust under the United States, or either of them, or under any foreign power, shall be eligible as a member of the Legislature, or hold or exercise any office of profit or trust under this State.

SEC. 13. It shall be the duty of the Legislature to pass such laws as may be necessary and proper to decide differences by arbitration, when the parties shall elect that method of trial.

SEC. 14. All civil officers shall reside within the State; and all district or county officers within their districts or counties, and shall keep their offices at such places as may be required by law; and failure to comply with this condition shall vacate the office so held.

SEC. 15. All property, both real and personal, of the wife, owned or claimed by her before marriage, and that acquired afterward by gift, devise, or descent, shall be her separate property; and laws shall be passed more clearly defining the rights of the wife, in relation as well to her separate property as that held in common with her husband. Laws shall also be passed providing for the registration of the wife's separate property.

SEC. 16. No corporate body shall hereafter be created, renewed, or extended with banking or discounting privileges.

SEC. 17. All officers within this State shall continue to perform the duties of their offices until their successors shall be duly qualified.

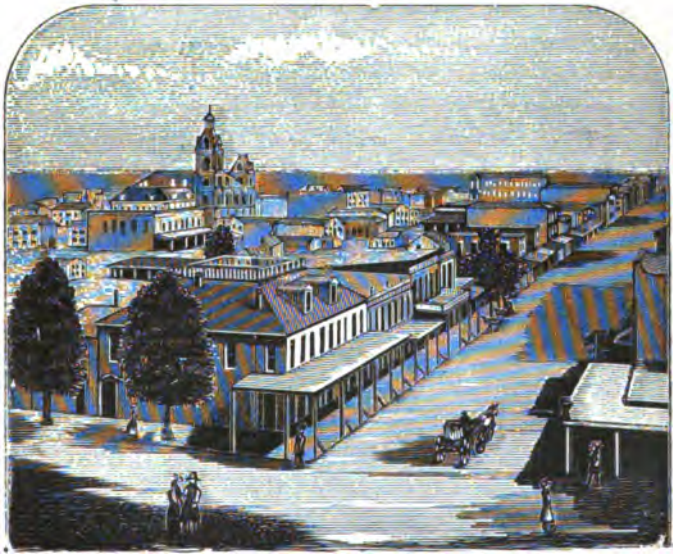
SEC. 18. The rights of property and of action which have been acquired under the Constitution and laws of the Republic and State shall not be divested; nor shall any rights or actions which have been divested, barred, or declared null and void by the Constitution of the Republic and State, be re-invested, renewed, or reinstated by this Constitution; but the same shall remain precisely in the situation in which they were before the adoption of this Constitution, unless otherwise herein provided; and provided further, that no cause of action heretofore barred shall be revived.

SEC. 19. The Legislature shall prescribe by law the qualification of grand and petit jurors.

SEC. 20. The Legislature shall, at its first session, enact a law whereby the qualified voters of any county, justice's precinct, town, or city, by a majority vote, from time to time, may determine whether the sale of intoxicating liquors shall be prohibited within the prescribed limits.

SEC. 21. All stationery and printing, except proclamations and such printing as may be done at the Deaf and Dumb Asylum, paper, and fuel used in the legislative and other departments of the government, except the judicial department, shall be furnished, and the printing and binding of the laws, journals, and department reports, and all other printing and binding and





**BIRD'S-EYE VIEW OF HOUSTON.**



the repairing and furnishing the halls and rooms used for the meetings of the Legislature, and its committees, shall be performed under contract, to be given to the lowest responsible bidder, below such maximum price, and under such regulations as shall be prescribed by law. No member or officer of any department of the government shall be in any way interested in such contracts; and all such contracts shall be subject to the approval of the Governor, Secretary of State, and Comptroller.

SEC. 22. The Legislature shall have the power to pass such fence laws, applicable to any subdivision of the State, or counties, as may be needed to meet the wants of the people.

SEC. 23. The Legislature may pass laws for the regulation of live stock and the protection of stock-raisers in the stock-raising portion of the State, and exempt from the operation of such laws other portions, sections, or counties; and shall have power to pass general and special laws for the inspection of cattle, stock, and hides, and for the regulation of brands; *provided*, that any local law thus passed shall be submitted to the freeholders of the section to be affected thereby, and approved by them, before it shall go into effect.

SEC. 24. The Legislature shall make provision for laying out and working public roads, for the building of bridges, and for utilizing fines, forfeitures, and convict labor to all these purposes.

SEC. 25. That all drawbacks and rebatement of insurance, freight, transportation, carriage, wharfage, storage, compressing, baling, repairing, or for any other kind of labor or service, of or to any cotton, grain, or any other produce or article of commerce in this State, paid, or allowed, or contracted for to any common carrier, shipper, merchant, commission merchant, factor, agent, or middle-man of any kind, not the true and absolute owner thereof, are forever prohibited, and it shall be the duty of the Legislature to pass effective laws punishing all persons in this State who pay, receive, or contract for or respecting the same.

SEC. 26. Every person, corporation, or company that may commit a homicide, through wilful act, or omission, or gross neglect, shall be responsible, in exemplary damages, to the surviving husband, widow, heirs of his or her body, or such of them as there may be, without regard to any criminal proceeding that may or may not be had in relation to the homicide.

SEC. 27. In all elections to fill vacancies of office in this State, it shall be to fill the unexpired term only.

SEC. 28. No current wages for personal service shall ever be subject to garnishment.

SEC. 29. The Legislature shall provide by law for defining and punishing barratry.

SEC. 30. The duration of all offices not fixed by this Constitution shall never exceed two years.

SEC. 31. The Legislature may pass laws prescribing the qualifications of

practitioners of medicine in this State, and to punish persons for malpractice, but no preference shall ever be given by law to any schools of medicine.

SEC. 32. The Legislature may provide by law for the establishment of a Board of Health and Vital Statistics, under such rules and regulations as it may deem proper.

SEC. 33. The accounting officers of this State shall neither draw nor pay a warrant upon the treasury in favor of any person for salary or compensation as agent, officer, or appointee, who holds at the same time any other office or position of honor, trust, or profit under this State or the United States, except as prescribed in this Constitution.

SEC. 34. The Legislature shall pass laws authorizing the Governor to lease or sell to the government of the United States a sufficient quantity of the public domain of the State, necessary for the erection of forts, barracks, arsenals, and military stations, or camps, and for other needful military purposes; and the action of the Governor therein shall be subject to the approval of the Legislature.

SEC. 35. The Legislature shall, at its first session, pass laws to protect laborers on public buildings, streets, roads, railroads, canals, and other similar public works, against the failure of contractors and sub-contractors to pay their current wages when due, and to make the corporation, company, or individual for whose benefit the work is done, responsible for their ultimate payment.

SEC. 36. The Legislature shall, at its first session, provide for the payment, or funding, as they may deem best, of the amounts found to be justly due to the teachers in the public schools, by the State, for service rendered prior to the first day of July, 1873, and for the payment by the school districts in the State of amounts justly due teachers of public schools by such district to, 1876.

SEC. 37. Mechanics, artisans, and material men, of every class, shall have a lien upon the buildings and articles made or repaired by them, for the value of their labor done thereon, or material furnished therefor; and the Legislature shall provide by law for the speedy and efficient enforcement of said liens.

SEC. 38. The Legislature may, at such time as the public interest may require, provide for the office of Commissioner of Insurance, Statistics, and History, whose term of office, duties, and salary shall be prescribed by law.

SEC. 39. The Legislature may, from time to time, make appropriations for preserving and perpetuating memorials of the history of Texas, by means of monuments, statues, paintings, and documents of historical value.

SEC. 40. No person shall hold or exercise, at the same time, more than one civil office of emolument, except that of Justice of the Peace, County Commissioner, Notary Public, and Postmaster, unless otherwise specially provided herein.

SEC. 41. Any person who shall, directly or indirectly, offer, give, or

promise any money or thing of value, testimonial, privilege, or personal advantage, to any executive or judicial officer or member of the Legislature, to influence him in the performance of any of his public or official duties, shall be guilty of bribery, and be punished in such manner as shall be provided by law. And any member of the Legislature, or executive or judicial officer who shall solicit, demand, or receive, or consent to receive, directly or indirectly, for himself or for another, from any company, corporation, or person, any money, appointment, employment, testimonial, reward, thing of value or employment, or of personal advantage or promise thereof, for his vote or official influence, or for withholding the same, or with any understanding, expressed or implied, that his vote or official action shall be in any way influenced thereby, or who shall solicit, demand, and receive any such money or other advantage, matter, or thing aforesaid for another, as the consideration of his vote or official influence, in consideration of the payment or promise of such money, advantage, matter, or thing to another, shall be held guilty of bribery, within the meaning of the Constitution, and shall incur the disabilities provided for said offences, with a forfeiture of the office they may hold, and such other additional punishment as is or shall be provided by law.

SEC. 42. The Legislature may establish an Inebriate Asylum for the cure of drunkenness and reform of inebriates.

SEC. 43. No man or set of men shall ever be exempted, relieved, or discharged from the performance of any public duty or service imposed by general law, by any special law. Exemptions from the performance of such public duty or service shall only be made by general law.

SEC. 44. The Legislature shall prescribe the duties and provide for the election by the qualified voters of each county in this State, of a County Treasurer and a County Surveyor, who shall have an office at the county seat, and hold their office for two years, and until their successors are qualified; and shall have such compensation as may be provided by law.

SEC. 45. It shall be the duty of the Legislature to provide for collecting, arranging, and safely keeping such records, rolls, correspondence, and other documents, civil and military, relating to the history of Texas, as may be now in the possession of parties willing to confide them to the care and preservation of the State.

SEC. 46. The Legislature shall provide by law for organizing and disciplining the militia of the State, in such manner as they shall deem expedient, not incompatible with the Constitution and laws of the United States.

SEC. 47. Any person who conscientiously scruples to bear arms shall not be compelled to do so, but shall pay an equivalent for personal service.

SEC. 48. All laws and parts of laws now in force in the State of Texas, which are not repugnant to the Constitution of the United States, or to this Constitution, shall continue and remain in force as the laws of this State, until they expire by their own limitation or shall be amended or repealed by the Legislature.

SEC. 49. The Legislature shall have power, and it shall be its duty, to protect by law from forced sale a certain portion of the personal property of all heads of families, and also of unmarried adults, male and female.

SEC. 50. The homestead of a family shall be, and is hereby protected from forced sale for the payment of all debts, except for the purchase-money thereof, or a part of such purchase-money, the taxes due thereon, or for work and material used in constructing improvements thereon, and in this last case only when the work and material are contracted for in writing, with the consent of the wife, given in the same manner as is required in making a sale and conveyance of the homestead; nor shall the owner, if a married man, sell the homestead without the consent of the wife, given in such manner as may be prescribed by law. No mortgage, trust deed, or other lien on the homestead shall ever be valid, except for the purchase-money thereof, or improvements made thereon, as hereinbefore provided. whether such mortgage, or trust deed, or other lien shall have been created by the husband alone, or together with his wife; and all pretended sales of the homestead involving any condition of defeasance shall be void.

SEC. 51. The homestead, not in a town or city, shall consist of not more than two hundred acres of land, which may be in one or more parcels, with the improvements thereon; the homestead in a city, town, or village shall consist of lot, or lots, not to exceed in value five thousand dollars, at the time of their designation as the homestead, without reference to the value of any improvements thereon; *provided*, that the same shall be used for the purpose of a home, or as a place to exercise the calling or business of the head of a family; *provided also*, that any temporary renting of the homestead shall not change the character of the same, when no other homestead has been acquired.

SEC. 52. On the death of the husband or wife, or both, the homestead shall descend and vest in like manner as other real property of the deceased, and shall be governed by the same laws of descent and distribution, but it shall not be partitioned among the heirs of the deceased during the lifetime of the surviving husband or wife, or so long as the survivor may elect to use or occupy the same as a homestead, or so long as the guardian of the minor children of the deceased may be permitted, under the order of the proper court having the jurisdiction, to use and occupy the same.

SEC. 53. That no inconvenience may arise from the adoption of this Constitution, it is declared that all process and writs of all kinds which have been or may be issued and not returned or executed when this Constitution is adopted, shall remain valid, and shall not be in any way affected by the adoption of this Constitution.

SEC. 54. It shall be the duty of the Legislature to provide for the custody and maintenance of indigent lunatics, at the expense of the State, under such regulations and restrictions as the Legislature may prescribe.

SEC. 55. The Legislature may provide annual pensions, not to exceed one hundred and fifty dollars per annum, to surviving soldiers or volunteers in the war between Texas and Mexico, from the commencement of the revo-



**SAN PEDRO SPRINGS.**





tion in 1835, until the 1st of January, 1837; and also to the surviving signers of the Declaration of Independence of Texas; and to the surviving widows continuing unmarried of such soldiers and signers; *provided*, that no such pension be granted except to those in indigent circumstances, proof of which shall be made before the County Court of the county where the applicant resides, in such manner as may be provided by law.

SEC. 56. The Legislature shall have no power to appropriate any of the public money for the establishment and maintenance of a bureau of immigration, or for any purpose of bringing immigrants to this State.

SEC. 57. Three millions acres of the public domain are hereby appropriated and set apart for the purpose of erecting a new State capitol and other necessary public buildings at the seat of government, said lands to be sold under the direction of the Legislature; and the Legislature shall pass suitable laws to carry this section into effect.

## ARTICLE XVII.

### MODE OF AMENDING THE CONSTITUTION OF THIS STATE.

SECTION 1. The Legislature, at any biennial session, by a vote of two-thirds of all the members elected to each House, to be entered by yeas and nays on the journals, may propose amendments to the Constitution, to be voted upon by the qualified electors for members of the Legislature, which proposed amendments shall be duly published once a week for four weeks, commencing at least three months before an election, the time of which shall be specified by the Legislature, in one weekly newspaper of each county, in which such a newspaper may be published; and it shall be the duty of the several returning officers of said election to open a poll for, and make returns to the Secretary of State, of the number of legal votes cast at said election for and against said amendments; and if more than one be proposed, then the number of votes cast for and against each of them; and if it shall appear from said return that a majority of the votes cast have been cast in favor of any amendment, the said amendment so receiving a majority of the votes cast shall become a part of this Constitution, and proclamation shall be made by the Governor thereof.

---

Done by the delegates of the people of Texas, in Convention assembled, in the city of Austin, on this the twenty-fourth day of November, in the year of our Lord one thousand eight hundred and seventy-five.

In testimony whereof we hereunto subscribe our names:

EDWARD B. PICKETT,  
President of the Convention.

LEIGH CHALMERS,  
Secretary of the Convention.



PART XI.

---

EIGHT YEARS' PROGRESS.

---

1874 TO 1883.

---

Constitutional Reforms, Finances, Education,  
Railroads, Public Buildings, and  
Population of Texas.



## CHAPTER I.

**CRISES IN TEXAS HISTORY—AN EXCITING INCIDENT OF RECONSTRUCTION—THE DAVIS ADMINISTRATION—INAUGURATION OF GOVERNOR COKE—CHANGES IN THE CONSTITUTION—A SIGNIFICANT CLAUSE—TEXAS FINANCES—GROWTH AND REDUCTION OF THE STATE DEBT—INCREASE OF TAXABLE WEALTH.**

Within the last half-century Texas has passed through many crises, especially in the Executive-Department of its Government. In January, 1836, Governor Smith was deposed by the Executive Council; a few months later an attempt was made to arrest President Burnet, and bring him before a military tribunal for trial. In February, 1846, Anson Jones, the last President of the Republic, was displaced by the annexation of Texas to the United States. In March, 1861, Governor Sam Houston was deposed by the Secession Convention and State Legislature. In May, 1865, Governor Murrah, on the fall of the Confederacy, abandoned his office and went to Mexico. In July, 1867, Governor Thockmorton was removed by General Sheridan. But of all the vicissitudes through which the Government of Texas ever passed, the most exciting was on the night of the 13th of January, 1874. In an *ex parte* case the Supreme Court had decided the late general election unconstitutional, and Governor Davis had issued a proclamation forbidding the assembling of the Legislature. Anxiously people inquired whether President Grant would go so far as to set aside an election in which, by more than forty thousand majority, the people had repudiated the administration of Davis? And should he attempt to do so, would the people of Texas tamely submit? A company of colored State police guarded the executive offices in the lower story of the capitol, while a volunteer company of militia, acting as aids to the sergeants-at-arms, occupied the second story, in possession of the two Houses of the Legislature. All felt as though they were upon the verge of a crater, when the careless or reckless discharge of a gun might produce an outburst in which much blood might be shed, and the prosperity of the State be put back another decade. Fortunately, no collision took place. Upon second thought, Governor Davis said that after the people had decided so emphatically that he was not their choice for Governor he did not wish to retain the office. At any rate his proclamation was mere *brutum fulmen*—the Legislature proceeded to count the votes and inaugurate the newly elected Governor and Lieutenant-Governor. A few days later all the offices in the executive department were quietly surrendered to the new incumbents.

**THE DAVIS ADMINISTRATION.**—The lapse of time has a wonderful tendency to mollify political asperities. From our present stand-point, looking back upon the history of the Davis administration, which came to its close when Coke was inaugurated, we are prepared to condone its faults and appreciate its difficulties and its merits. Here is a paragraph from Governor Davis' message to the Legislature in January, 1873:

"When I commenced the performance of the duties of Governor I proposed to myself these main purposes: on the one hand to restrain that tendency to extravagant squandering of public money, and running into debt, which has disgraced many of the Governments and Legislatures of the (so called) reconstructed States—a tendency, however, that was to be expected of that demoralization which the tremendous convulsion of the war caused to permeate, more or less, all classes in those States. On the other hand to restrain that lawlessness which had become shockingly intensified by the habits taught our young men in military camps."

These were certainly commendable ends to be sought, and if the Governor failed to reach them it was perhaps because of the unfavorable circumstances under which he was called to the Gubernatorial office. To suppress lawlessness, an extensive military force was organized under the name of State Police; and bad men on the police force illustrated some of the most odious features of "shockingly bad habits learned in military camps."

The extraordinary expense of this police force and the support of a battalion of State troops on the frontier increased the expenditures of the government beyond its legitimate revenue from taxation, and the deficiency was supplied by selling bonds; this augmented our small State debt.

**A HAPPY CIRCUMSTANCE.**—In reviewing the turbulent political period of reconstruction, covering a decade after the close of the war, and comparing Texas with other Southern States, there is abundant cause for gratitude. The leading officers sent from Washington to reintroduce Texas into the Union were not strangers—carpet-baggers, as they were familiarly called. Hamilton, the first provisional Governor, in 1865, had been for nearly thirty years a citizen of Texas; he had filled the office of Attorney General; had served in the Legislature, and was, at the breaking out of the war, a member of Congress. James H. Bell, his Secretary of State, was a native Texan, and when very young for the position, had been elected one of the Associate Justices of the Supreme Court. Pease, the Military Governor, appointed when Throckmorton was removed, as "an impediment to reconstruction," had spent a life-time in Texas, and had been twice elected Governor. Texas has not been cursed with adventurers from a distance, sent to fill our offices. Most of the men appointed were Texans, with a deep interest in the welfare of the State. Davis, who vacated the Gubernatorial office on that turbulent night when Coke and Hubbard were inaugurated, had spent a quarter of a century in the State; had been District Attorney, District Judge, etc., and bore a high character as a gentleman of personal worth and integrity.

**FAIR ELECTIONS.**—In another respect Texas is to be congratulated. Only in one instance has there been an important election contested. In that instance Hon. D. C. Giddings contested the seat of his Republican competitor, who had obtained a certificate of election to Congress, and a House, overwhelmingly Republican, by a unanimous vote (except the vote of his competitor, who had been admitted to his seat) gave the seat to the Democrat. Ballot-box stuffing and tissue ballots were never known in Texas. In all our elections there is, in reality, a free ballot and a fair count.

**DEMOCRATS AGAIN IN POWER.**—When Richard Coke was inaugurated all departments of the State government again passed into the hands of the Democratic party—a party that had controlled the administration and directed the policy of the State from the time the allegiance to Mexico was thrown off.

Houston, Lamar and Jones, Presidents of the Republic, were ardent Democrats, and the whole policy of the Texan Republic was modeled after the Democratic type. During the transition period, after the close of the late war, the men appointed to administer the State government had been pronounced Democrats, but were more or less hampered by military dictation. The military was now withdrawn; the government at Washington made no effort to interfere with our internal affairs, and the State was as completely under the control of its chosen officers as it had been before the civil war.

**CHANGES IN THE CONSTITUTION.**—The ten years between 1866 and 1876 have been not inaptly denominated the transition period of our history. During these ten years not less than three Constitutional Conventions were held, and some noteworthy changes were made in our fundamental law. The Constitution of 1836 entirely omitted the name of the Divine Being, and contained no bill of rights. The preamble is as follows: "We, the people of Texas, in order to form a government, establish justice, ensure domestic tranquillity, provide for the common defence and general welfare, and to secure the blessings of liberty to ourselves and our posterity, do ordain and establish this Constitution."

The preamble to the Constitution of 1845 reads: "We, the people of the Republic of Texas, acknowledging with gratitude the grace and beneficence of God, in permitting us to make choice of our form of government—do ordain and establish this Constitution." Very similar to this is the preamble to the Constitution of 1866: "We, the people of Texas, acknowledging with gratitude the grace of God in permitting us to make choice of our form of government, do ordain and establish this Constitution." In both these Constitutions the first two articles of the bill of rights are identical, and read as follows:

**BILLS OF RIGHTS.**—"That the general, great and essential principles of liberty and free government may be recognized and established, we declare that—*Sec. 1.* All political power is inherent in the people, and all free governments are founded on their authority and instituted for their benefit; and they have at all times the inalienable right to alter, reform or abolish their form of government, in such manner as they may think expedient.

"*Sec. 2.* All freemen, when they form a social compact, have equal rights; and no man or set of men is entitled to exclusive, separate public emoluments or privileges, but in consideration of public services."

This Constitution was set aside by the authority of Congress; Governor Throckmorton, who had been elected Governor, was displaced, and a mixed government, partly civil and partly military, instituted, with Pease for Governor. Another Constitutional Convention assembled in 1869, over which Judge E. J. Davis presided, and formed a new Constitution. The preamble is the same as that to the Constitution of 1866; but the first article of the bill of rights is materially different, and reads as follows:

"*Ar. 1.*—That the heresies of nullification and secession, which brought the country to grief, may be eliminated from future discussion; that public order may be restored, private property and human life protected; and the great principles of liberty and equality secured to us and our posterity, we declare that:

"*Sec. 1.* The Constitution of the United States, and the laws and treaties made and to be made in pursuance thereof, are acknowledged to be the supreme law; that this Constitution is framed in harmony with, and in subordination thereto, and that the fundamental principles embodied herein can only be changed, subject to the national authority."

The second section is verbatim the same as that in the Constitution of 1866, as above.

In September, 1875, during Governor Coke's administration, another convention assembled, under Democratic auspices. We transcribe three sections of the bill of rights:

That the general, great and essential principles of liberty and free government may be recognized and established, we declare:

*Sec. 1.* Texas is a free and independent State, subject only to the Constitution of the United States; and the maintenance of our free institutions and the perpetuity of the Union depend upon the preservation of the right of local self-government unimpaired to all the States.

*Sec. 2.* All political power is inherent in the people, and all free governments are founded on their authority, and instituted for their benefit. The faith of the people of Texas stands pledged to the preservation of a republican form of government, and, subject to this limitation only, they have at all times the inalienable right to alter, reform or abolish their Government in such manner as they may think expedient.

*Sec. 3.* All free men, when they form a social compact, have equal rights, and no man or set of men is entitled to exclusive separate public emoluments or privileges, but in consideration of public services.

**A SIGNIFICANT CLAUSE.**—Attention is invited to one very significant phrase not found in any previous declarations: "The faith of the people of Texas stands pledged to the preservation of a republican form of government, and, subject to this limitation only," etc. This indicates the fear indulged after the close of the war, that an effort might be made to subvert our free institutions. It will be observed that section third is the same as the second sections of previous Constitutions.

**THE TENURE OF JUDGES.**—The question recurs, Why is it necessary so often to change fundamental laws? For instance, judges have existed ever since the organization of civil society. Their mode of appointment, time of service, etc., ought to be well established by this time. During the Republic, and for some years after annexation, judges were appointed by the Governor and confirmed by the Senate. Then a change was introduced and they were elected by the people. This was before political parties were organized in Texas. The first prominent election after these parties became organized was in 1859, to elect a successor to Justice Hemphill, who had been elected U. S. Senator. Public sentiment pointed to Associate Justice Wheeler for the high office. A Democratic Convention wished to nominate him, but he peremptorily refused to submit his name to a political convention, as the office was not a political one. No nomination was made and Wheeler was elected. The Convention of 1869 made the office of judge appointive as in 1845; but the Convention of 1875 again made it elective. When the office is to be filled by the Governor and Senate, swarms of applicants and their friends besiege the Executive for appointments; and when it is elective the same swarms flock to political conventions to secure the same end. At the Democratic Convention in Galveston in July, 1882, a resolution was introduced to change the Constitution so that justices of the Superior Courts shall be nominated by the Governor and confirmed by the Senate.

As to the length of official terms, in 1845 judges held office six years; the convention of 1866 increased the term to ten years; that of 1869 changed it to





**REMNANT OF THE OLD FORT OF THE ALAMO.**



nine years; and that of 1875 to six years. Other minor changes were made from time to time in the article on the judiciary; one giving District Courts the probate business, and another creating Commissioners' Courts for the same business. In some counties, County Attorneys are elected, and in others the District Attorney attends to the business. So in some counties the County Court has criminal and civil jurisdiction, and in others that power is lodged with the District Court, etc.

**LEGISLATIVE SESSIONS.**—The Constitution of 1869 provided for annual sessions of the Legislature; that of 1875 for biennial sessions; many unimportant changes were introduced into one constitution to be changed in the next.

**TEXAS FINANCES.**—It is a singular fact in the history of so prosperous a State as Texas that until very recently, with the exception of two very brief administrations, the legitimate revenue from taxation has been insufficient to meet current expenses. Those exceptions were the administrations of Anson Jones, the last President of the Republic, and A. J. Hamilton, provisional Governor in 1865-66.

A small cash balance in the Treasury, when the first Legislature met after annexation, induced pretty liberal appropriations, which at the end of the fiscal year exceeded the receipts of the Treasury.

**STATE DEBT.**—Compared with the present time the expenditures of that period appear very meagre. James B. Shaw, the Comptroller, estimated that for the year ending October 31, 1850, the entire expense of running the State Government would be \$157,289. Before the State debt became embarrassing, the sale of the Santa Fe Territory to the United States put a large amount of money into the Treasury. From this fund the excess of expenditures over income was made up, so that, at the breaking out of the civil war, Texas was out of debt. We say out of debt, but during the brief administration of Governor Houston, 1860-61, a battalion of State troops was kept on the frontier for protection against hostile Indians. After the war, the Legislature recognized the validity of the debt thus contracted, and to meet it issued bonds to the amount of \$125,000, having ten years to run, and bearing six per cent. interest. The next bonds issued were to pay the frontier battalion kept in the field during the Davis administration, for the same purpose. These bonds amounted to \$750,000 and bore seven per cent. interest, having forty years to run, from August 5, 1870. This was the beginning of our State debt, which, according to the Comptroller's report, amounted in 1872 to \$1,810,578; in 1873 to \$1,707,894; in 1874 to \$3,425,328; in 1875 to \$5,551,637; in 1876 to \$6,067,836; in 1877 to \$6,116,624; in 1878 to \$5,121,911; in 1880 to \$5,014,620; in 1881, August 31, to \$4,755,420; March 1, 1882, to \$4,487,930. This does not include bonds marked of doubtful validity, amounting to \$537,008.

**SALE OF BONDS.**—Finding the receipts into the Treasury inadequate to meet current expenses, and pay the interest on bonds already issued, the Democratic Legislature, in 1873, authorized Governor Davis to sell \$500,000 additional bonds. The bonds were not disposed of, and the Governor gave as a reason that interested parties in New York had, by misrepresentations as to the wealth and resources of the State, so depreciated our credit that the bonds could only be sold at a ruinous discount. When the new administration came into office in January, 1874, Governor Coke expressed the opinion that the

State credit would rapidly rise so that the bonds could be advantageously sold. In this he was mistaken. The Wall Street operators were no respecters of political parties. The State had to have money, and bonds were sold at a very low figure. The income was still far below the amounts necessary to meet the expenses of the State Government and pay interest on the bonded debt. This state of affairs induced the Constitutional Convention which met in September, 1875, to incorporate the following provision in our fundamental law, Art. 111, Sec. 49:

“No debt shall be created by or on behalf of the State, except to supply casual deficiencies of the revenue, repel invasion, suppress insurrection, defend the State in war, or pay existing debt; and the debt created to supply deficiencies in the revenue shall never exceed in the aggregate at any one time two hundred thousand dollars.”

The financial question was the one which, above all others, attracted public attention and profound solicitude. In his first message to the Fifteenth Legislature, in April, 1876, Governor Coke, after detailing the state of the revenue and exhibiting the lamentable fact that there was a continual augmentation of the debt, refers to the additional fact that a portion of that debt is now due. A paragraph from his message gives the character of the bonds and suggests a remedy for the deficit in the treasury:

GOV. COKE ON THE FINANCES.—“Nearly one million seven hundred thousand dollars of the bonded debt of Texas, exclusive of that due in September and January next, is bearing ten per cent. interest. A very large proportion of this, say nearly twelve hundred thousand dollars, is in pension bonds, the remainder being funding bonds. All of these bonds are redeemable at the pleasure of the State, none of them later than 1879, and a considerable portion of them in 1877. Sound policy dictates that these ten per cent. bonds be called in at the earliest possible moment, and it is believed to be entirely practicable, in view of the high ground on which our State securities now stand, to substitute them with bonds running thirty years, and bearing six per cent. gold interest. Legislation for the accomplishment of this purpose is earnestly recommended.

“One of the most important subjects claiming your attention is that of the assessment and collection of taxes. A law which shall promptly subject all the property in the State to its just proportion of the burden of maintaining the government is of the first and highest importance. Our present revenue laws are wholly inefficient. Taxes now due and unpaid, and returned as delinquent, amount to several millions of dollars. But a still greater evil is the failure to assess a considerable proportion of the taxable property of the State, and the undervaluation of that which is assessed.

“Quoting from my last annual message on this subject: ‘Taxation should be equal and uniform, but under this law it is believed that two-thirds of the property of Texas pays all the expenses of the government, the other third contributing nothing. Those who pay the taxes are citizens whose property is in sight, who produce, who cultivate the soil and improve real estate in the towns and cities, and create the wealth of the country. One of these rarely escapes taxation. A large proportion of the personal property, money, bonds, bills, notes, merchandise, stocks and other valuables in the State, and of the assets of banks, banking concerns, trust, insurance and other companies and corporations, not visible to the assessor, is never assessed and pays nothing. A vast amount of real estate, chiefly unimproved, also escapes taxation. I am informed by the Comptroller that no tax is being paid on about 35,000,000 acres of patented land. This amount he *knows* of. How much more he cannot tell’.

“These things are as true now as when represented to the Fourteenth Legislature. There has been no improvement in the assessment or collection of the taxes. As a fair average illustration of the practical working of our present revenue system, I quote from the able report of the Comptroller: ‘By reference

to the table of assessments it will be seen that the entire taxable values of Galveston city and county, including merchandise, money on hand and at interest, stock and miscellaneous property of every kind, exclusive of real estate, is placed at the small sum of \$3,133,072. The return of poll taxes for the city and county is \$1,339 out of a population of say 35,000, for Galveston city alone.'"

The State Democratic Convention which met in Austin July 19, 1878, incorporated the following financial plank in its platform :

We pledge ourselves that no money shall be borrowed or bonds issued to meet the current expenses of the State government. The rate of taxation shall not be increased, and the current expenses should be confined within the current revenue.

The Fifteenth Legislature passed a bill for retiring the bonds bearing ten per cent. interest, and re-issuing others at six per cent. This process was inaugurated under Coke's administration, and continued after Lieutenant Governor Hubbard succeeded to the office. In his message to the Sixteenth Legislature Governor Hubbard reports that there had been sold \$500,000 six per cent. bonds, at a premium of two and a half per cent., realizing a profit of \$12,500, and saving \$20,000 per annum in interest. This showed a gratifying improvement in the credit of the State. Still, the Governor apprehended a deficiency in the annual revenue. "This," says he, "it is earnestly insisted, is the gravest problem which concerns the representatives of the people." And adds :

GOV. HUBBARD'S MESSAGE ON THE FINANCES.—"It is well to look this danger squarely in the face, for we have reached that point, it is respectfully submitted, in our financial history, when the cry of 'retrenchment and reform' becomes no longer, as it too often has been, the cheap watchword of the demagogue, but rather a palpable and imperious necessity to the legislation of Texas, from this day henceforth. Can the machinery of the State government be kept in motion on the *present basis of taxation* without abandoning old and cherished public policies, the protection of the frontier and the maintenance of public free schools? Can it be done without reducing the compensation of the judiciary, or otherwise impairing the vigor and efficiency of the various other departments of the State government?"

At the inauguration of Governor Roberts, January 21, 1879, he said : "Gradually, and much more in the last ten years, the State has been assuming other and extraneous burdens beyond the capacity of the productive wealth of the country to sustain, as is plainly evinced by the constantly accumulating public debt. Some of these burdens are due to our frontier position in the Union and our extensive territory, and others of them are taken on to an extent not common in young and intrinsically feeble States. Reference is here made to the protection of our frontier and our police force; to the penitentiary and its enlargement; to our common school system; to our schools for the blind and the deaf and dumb; to the establishment of an agricultural and mechanical college, so styled; to our quarantine establishment; to our pensions to Texas veterans, and to our Immigration Bureau, formerly."

GOV. ROBERTS' 'PAY AS YOU GO' POLICY.—Translated into a concise and popular phrase Governor Roberts' financial policy was "Pay as you go." And it was not hastily adopted. In his message at the opening of the Seventeenth Legislature he said :

"Long before and at the time I was called to the office of chief executive, the conclusion had been reached and firmly settled in my mind that the central pillar that upholds good government in any country is a good financial

system. Not so much because its monetary affairs are more important intrinsically than other objects of government, as because the very effort to establish it upon a basis that can be perpetuated, necessitates a scrutinizing investigation into every department and operation of the Government, by which any lurking evils or imperfect action may be discovered and corrected, and that which needs fostering may be promoted by the ability to promote it which it secures when attained and preserved permanently. It consists in the collection of a revenue annually, adequate to the support of an efficient administration of the Government, by means of an equalized taxation upon property and persons, not burdensome upon any of the material interests of the country; and in the honest and economical collection and disbursement of the revenue to those entitled to it by the rendition of useful public services without favoritism or extravagance. The test by which its attainment and preservation are to be measured, is generally that the annual expenditures shall be brought within the annual revenue collected, in such manner as that even-handed justice shall be done, and be commonly felt to be done, to all persons and interests as nearly as practicable. There may be, as there has been in the best organized Governments, temporary evils to be corrected or particular interests to be advanced which would justify a temporary departure from this test, without preventing the capacity to return to it, as the true rule to be kept in view, and to be in the main conformed to. Still it is utterly opposed to any speculative mania in which great future advantages are anticipated by the reckless extravagance of the present, by which piles of debt are heaped upon posterity. In governmental affairs, as in all natural objects, the regular and gradual progress of growth will alone, with certainty, secure solidity and stability in structure."

**OBSTACLES TO RETRENCHMENT.**—The financial question having been so earnestly commended to the attention of the Fifteenth Legislature by both the retiring and the incoming Governors, that body took it into careful consideration. A reduction of expenses was conceded on all hands to be necessary; but where to begin? That was the perplexing question. The credit of the State required that interest on its bonds should be provided for; friends of Public Schools would never consent to diminish the appropriations for their maintenance; representatives from the frontier demanded an increase rather than a reduction of the force for its protection; the business of the Courts was so far behind that new districts must be formed, with an additional number of judges, both of the District and Supreme Courts. After a full discussion, the Legislature finally passed an appropriation bill, which did not materially reduce expenses, and which was unsatisfactory to the Governor. The Governor being empowered by the Constitution to veto certain items in an Appropriation Bill, while approving others, on the 23d of April sent in his message vetoing certain items. We copy from his message:

**GOV. ROBERTS' VETO.**—"Under the head 'educational' the following item of appropriation, to-wit: 'The entire available school fund annually derived from all sources, including the poll tax, and one-fourth of the general revenue is hereby set aside annually for the support of the public free schools;' and the items under the head of the 'Treasury Department,' as follows, to-wit:

For interest on public debt.....\$400,000  
 For sinking fund on public debt, to be invested in State bonds \$100,000—100,000

"It is hardly necessary to call attention to the fact that, finding a large deficiency of public debts, now estimated at over one-half million of dollars, already incurred, and a large excess of expenses over current annual revenue, I recommended a cutting down of the expenses generally in everything, without such a diminution as to produce an embarrassing shock in any department of the Government, but sufficiently so as that the annual revenue should be equal to the current expenses, and also to provide the means, as far as practicable, for payment of the outstanding debts creating the deficiency. The present

Legislature have been most industriously and laboriously employed, not only in numerous local, sectional and amendatory measures, but also in carrying out this policy by reducing salaries and curtailing expenditures in different objects, both pensions and frontier and police being cut down, not that I recommended it, so much, perhaps, as from their own conviction of its obvious necessity under existing circumstances. Upon two leading subjects of expense there have been as yet no changes in the course of legislation, which are in the appropriations of one-fourth of the entire State revenue for the support of the common schools (amounting, as estimated, to \$400,000); and the appropriation for the payment of the interest of the bonded debt of the State, and the sinking fund annually set apart to pay the same (amounting to nearly \$500,000 more), making in the aggregate nearly \$900,000 taken first out of the \$1,600,000 net revenue of the State, as it is estimated by the Comptroller, and which leaves only \$700,000 with which to defray the current expenses necessarily incurred in the administration of the actual government of the State. That amount is not only not enough, as is shown by this appropriation act, but its deficiency is greatly increased by its postponement to the other two leading and principal appropriations that are favored by the preferred payment of them, under existing laws. This preference given to these large appropriations, though for objects constituting the mere incidents of government, and not the expenses absolutely necessary to carry it on, continually clog and derange our whole financial system, and will continue to do so as long as it is allowed to continue."

**AN EXTRA SESSION.**—The Legislature failed to pass the bill over the veto and adjourned, leaving interest coming due in July, the appropriations for the support of the schools, and the sinking fund unprovided for. This necessitated the calling of an extra session, which met in Austin on the 10th of June. The following extract from the Governor's message to this body exhibits a decided improvement in the financial condition:

Since the adjournment of the Legislature our financial prospects have brightened to the extent of having in the Treasury a surplus of receipts above expenditures that enable us to pay warrants when presented. Whether this is to be permanent, or as heretofore only temporary at this time of the year, can only be at present the subject of speculative calculation. For notwithstanding there was, on the seventh day of this month, in the Treasury the sum of \$193,292.67 of revenue subject to the payment of warrants after deducting the money for the July interest on public debt, and a year's appropriation for sinking fund, the Comptroller reports to me his estimate of the deficiency at the beginning of the next fiscal year, first of September, 1879, to be \$239,430. If this reduction of deficiency or cash on hand should be a permanent, or not a temporary, result, it will show that improvements in our collection of taxes, introduced during the administration of Governor Coke in 1876, and carried on through the administration of Governor Hubbard, though not exhibiting ostensibly its results as soon as it was anticipated, and now beginning to be felt in the general operations of our financial system. While we should hope such to be the case, we should not rely too confidently on it. Because, as explained by me fully in one of my messages, the months of March, April, May and June constitute a period of the year under the laws regulating our financial system, in which we might expect a surplus of money in the Treasury the same as there is a scarcity in the late summer and fall months, whether the revenue for the year is equal to or less than the expenses of the Government. It should be borne in mind that the last crop sold at low prices; that the newspapers are covered by the sheet with land sales for taxes; that the skies have not been propitious for a good crop this year; and that much of our hopes of improvement in the future taxes are based upon new experimental modes of taxation; that already there has been exhibited on the tax roll a shrinkage in the value of taxable property of the State of about \$15,000,000, and that after all the amount of revenue that can be raised permanently depends mainly upon the permanently active productive property and industries of the State.

And if our most sanguine anticipations should be realized as to the production of new taxes, and the effect of reduction of expenses so that we find the

Treasury of the State with a permanently running surplus of one or two hundred thousand dollars to bridge over the occasional and periodical chasms of scarcity in revenue, it would be the true condition for the Treasury of the State to occupy towards its creditors of all sorts, and its continued permanency from year to year, through a succession of years, would be the best evidence that we were in no danger of going in debt to defray the expenses of the Government, and that we had the solid capacity "to pay as we go."

The principal controversy in the Legislature during this extra session, related to the proportion of revenue to be devoted to the public free schools. The Constitution declared that not more than one-fourth of the revenue should be so appropriated, and the full amount had been so expended. A bill was finally passed giving one-sixth of the revenue to this fund; and provision was promptly made to pay the interest on the State debt falling due July 1, and that body adjourned, the Governor sending in a congratulatory message just at its close.

**A FULL TREASURY.**—This improvement in State finances proved to be permanent. The largest debt reported by the Comptroller was in 1877—\$6,116,624. The amount reported March 1, 1882, was \$4,487,930, showing a reduction of \$1,628,694. Among the topics presented by Governor Roberts for the consideration of the Legislature at its extra session in March, 1882, was the propriety of reducing the taxes, both ad valorem and occupation. At the close of his administration Governor Roberts leaves a full Treasury.

**AGGREGATE WEALTH.**—We have seen that the total assessments for taxes for 1878 showed an unaccountable falling off of about fifteen millions in the aggregate wealth of the State. This decrease in values was probably more apparent than real and may have resulted from the oversight of assessors. We append Comptrollers' reports of the property assessed for the years 1878 and 1881. Adding the unrendered property for 1878, not included in the statement, the total valuation for that year foots up \$303,202,434.



Summary Statement of Assessments of Property in the State for 1881, as shown by Assessment Rolls on file in Comptroller's Office.

CLASSES OF PROPERTY ASSESSED.		Value.
Land	Acres.....87,469,032	\$160,461,630.00
City or town lots		53,766,387.00
Railroads, including appurtenances und rolling stock	Miles.....2,836	90,808,554.00
Telegraph, including appurtenances	Miles.....3,711	178,031.00
Land certificates		67,408.00
Steamboats, sailing vessels, wharf boats, barges, or other water craft	Number.....372	304,176.00
Carriages, buggies or wagons, of whatsoever kind	Number.....164,869	55,597,906.00
Manufacturers' tools, implements and machinery, including steam engines and boilers		5,071,320.00
Materials and manufactured articles		301,533.00
Horses and mules	Number.....562,491	21,088,948.00
Cattle	Number.....4,027,837	23,690,632.00
Jacks and jennets	Number.....5,065	178,950.00
Sheep	Number.....3,262,104	5,001,619.00
Goats	Number.....329,808	274,547.00
Hogs	Number.....1,451,716	1,354,234.00
Goods, wares and merchandise		19,236,409.00
Money on hand		8,360,263.00
Miscellaneous property		19,166,702.00
<b>Total value</b>		<b>\$349,881,566.00</b>
State tax—ad valorem tax		\$1,399,411.19
State revenue poll tax		287,723.00
School poll tax		287,723.00
<b>Total taxes</b>		<b>\$1,974,857.19</b>
Average value of lands per acre		\$1.83

REMARKS.—Add to \$349,881,566—the total value of the taxable property above given—\$7,118,434, as the approximate total of assessments for 1881 on lands in unorganized counties, owned by non-residents, and the total value of property for 1881 is \$357,000,000, and total ad valorem tax \$1,428,000.

—1878.—

CLASSES OF PROPERTY ASSESSED.	RENDERED.	
	Numbers	Values.
Land assessed in acres	61,665,964	\$123,193,654.00
Town lots		45,088,357.00
Railroads assessed in miles	1,784½	14,198,836.00
Telegraph lines assessed in miles	2,069½	138,264.00
Land certificates, acres	484,701	105,563.00
Steamboats, sailing vessels, etc.	387	215,048.00
Carriages, wagons, etc.	120,212	4,898,902.00
Manufacturers' tools and implements		3,946,253.00
Materials and manufactured articles		352,927.00
Horses and mules	929,563	19,400,378.00
Cattle	3,336,447	18,842,165.00
Jacks and jennets	4,781	166,098.00
Sheep	2,494,668	3,302,784.00
Goats	265,770	197,819.00
Hogs	1,650,326	2,449,379.00
Goods, wares and merchandise		15,356,636.00
Money on hand		6,221,761.00
Miscellaneous property		21,811,356.00
<b>Total value</b>		<b>\$2,0415,775.00</b>
State ad valorem tax		\$1,402,182.52
\$45,918 polls, \$2.00 each		491,836.00
<b>Total ad valorem and poll taxes</b>		<b>\$1,894,018.52</b>
Total State tax		2,016,333.76
Average value of rendered land per acre		2.00
Average value of unrendered land per acre		1.13

## CHAPTER II.

**THE NEW STATE CAPITOL—EDUCATIONAL PROGRESS—A PRINCELY SCHOOL FUND—THE AGRICULTURAL AND MECHANICAL COLLEGE—THE STATE UNIVERSITY—PENAL INSTITUTIONS—STRIKING FACTS FROM THE CENSUS—MARVELOUS RAILROAD PROGRESS—NEW STATE OFFICERS.**

On the 20th of February, 1879, a bill passed the Legislature setting apart 3,050,000 acres of public domain for the erection of a new Capitol; and the unappropriated lands in the counties of Deaf Smith, Parmer, Castro, Lamb, Bailey, Hockley, Dallam, Hartley, Cochran and Oldham were set apart for that purpose and reserved from location. An act of April 18, of the same year, constituted the Governor, Comptroller, Attorney General, State Treasurer and Commissioner of General Land Office a Capitol Board, and empowered them to appoint a superintendent, architect and two Building Commissioners, whose duty it became to advertise for plans, specifications, etc., and after a plan had been selected, to advertise for bids for erecting the edifice.

On the 16th of November, 1880, the Board elected N. I. Norton and Joseph Lee Superintending Commissioners, and J. N. Preston, Architect. At subsequent sessions it was determined to erect the new building on Capitol Hill, to the north and rear of the one then in use. After advertising and receiving a number of plans and models, the Board finally selected one furnished by Colonel S. S. Meyers, of Chicago, making some slight modifications. The new Capitol, if built upon the plan adopted, will be of four stories, including the basement. Length of building, 539½ feet, without porticoes; 966½, including porticoes; depth of centre, 288 feet; height, including dome, 311 feet. The basement is admirably arranged for heating, sewerage, etc. There are fifty-one rooms in the basement.

In the second story is the Senate Chamber, 72x76 feet, surrounded by lobbies, cloak rooms, wash rooms, closets, Lieutenant Governor's, post office, clerk and committee rooms, to the number of eighteen. Representative Hall is on the same floor, 72x96 feet, surrounded, as the Senate, with officers' and other necessary rooms. Height of Senate and House walls, forty-eight feet. On this floor, in front centre, is a portrait gallery, and in the north centre the State Library room 122x85 feet.

The third story consists of the galleries of the Senate and House of Representatives, and rooms for the Supreme Court and Court of Appeals, 37x68 feet each, and the law library, 26x48 feet; nine judges' rooms, sixteen committee rooms, marshals', clerks' and janitors' rooms for each court, wash rooms, closets, etc.

The fourth story contains nine rooms for committee and miscellaneous purposes.

There are two elevators, one on each side of the grand south entrance, connecting the several stories, to be run either by steam or hydraulic power.



**JOHN IRELAND.**



On the 9th of November, 1881, the old Capitol building was destroyed by fire, and the Legislature, at its extra session in April, 1882, made provision for the erection of a temporary building at the foot of Capitol Hill, on the north side of Congress avenue.

**EDUCATIONAL PROGRESS.**—The educational institutions of a State present a fair index of its general progress. Our system of public Free Schools is in many respects still defective, but there is a steady improvement from year to year. Schools are being more generally established, and more numerously attended. Texas, however, is a sparsely populated State. More than two-thirds of its area is devoted to stock-raising, where settlements and families are remote from each other, and the intervening spaces inclosed in immense pastures. Then, in the more densely settled agricultural districts, many of the people are poor and require the labor of the larger children on the farms in certain seasons of the year, especially in the fall, when most of the Free Schools are in operation.

Until recently comparatively little attention was given to the qualifications of teachers. No capital is required in this business, and penniless men and women out of employment offered their services as teachers for very meager compensation, and were readily accepted by inexperienced Boards of Trustees. This, we are happy to state, does not apply to all. There have always been some teachers admirably qualified for their work and earnestly devoted to it. So, also, many of the school houses have been rudely constructed, and left unfinished and unfurnished. In all these respects there is a manifest improvement. The standard of qualifications of teachers, too, has been elevated. School houses are built with a view to the comfort and health of the pupils, and furnished with desks, charts, black-boards and other facilities for both teacher and scholar. The Normal Schools have largely elevated the profession of teaching, creating an *esprit de corps* that argues well for the future.

**SCHOOL POPULATION.**—The scholastic population in 1874, numbered 313,061. In 1875 there was reported a scholastic population of 310,000, and \$577,500 was appropriated for the support of the schools. The Constitutional Convention which met in 1875 materially modified the provisions for education. The scholastic age was reduced six years, or one-half, so that none were entitled to the benefit of the school fund except those between the ages of eight and fourteen—six and eighteen years had been the previous limits. The previous Constitution set apart *not less* than one-fourth of the revenue derived from taxation to school purposes. The new Constitution set apart *not more* than one-fourth to the same cause.

In 1877 the scholastic population was 102,981; 133,568 of these were enrolled in school communities, of whom 20,062 did not attend school. There were 3,901 schools organized. Of this number 678 were colored schools; 102,981 white and 30,587 colored children attended these schools. There were 2,441 white male and 698 white female teachers employed, and 308 colored male and 71 colored female teachers employed. Five hundred and one thousand six hundred and ninety-one dollars were expended for schools.

In 1878 the school population was 168,204,—organized in school communities, 164,946. Of this number 111,046 white, and 35,898 colored children attended school; while 16,213 white, and 7,750 colored children did not attend. There were 3,628 schools for the whites, and 905 for colored pupils. Of the teachers

employed, 5,805 were white male, and 760 white females, and 562 colored male, and 113 colored female teachers.

In 1879 the scholastic population enrolled numbered 207,787; in 1880, 266,709. In 1881 it numbered 295,344.

**SCHOOL EXPENDITURES.**—In 1877 there was expended for the support of our public Free Schools the sum of \$403,975; in 1878, \$702,288; in 1879, \$717,000; in 1880, \$882,000; in 1881, \$866,728; in 1882, \$1,117,163.

**A PRINCELY SCHOOL FUND.**—In this connection it may not be uninteresting to give a brief notice of the manner in which our immense school fund, the largest of any State, has been accumulated. In the year 1839 three leagues of land, 13,284 acres, were donated to each county for the support of free schools. The next year this amount was increased to 17,712 acres for each county. These county school lands aggregate 2,833,920 acres. The State also, thirty years ago, set apart \$2,000,000 cash in the Treasury as a permanent school fund. All through the war that fund was accumulating. To-day it amounts to \$3,500,000 cash in the Texas Treasury, and its interest is used for the support of Free Schools. The Constitutions adopted since the war not only reaffirmed all that had been given to schools, but reserved for common Free Schools the alternate sections retained by the State in grants made to railroads and other works of public improvement. Wherever one section of land is given to build a railroad, there is one beside it set apart for the support of Free Schools forever. Thus 50,000,000 acres of land were added to the Free School dowry, which now contains 6,000,000 more acres than all New England.

**AGRICULTURAL AND MECHANICAL COLLEGE.**—This is the oldest of our State institutions of learning. The corps of teachers is paid by the interest on bonds derived from the sale of 180,000 acres of land scrip donated by the United States Congress to the State for the purpose of founding such an Institution. One condition of the gift was that the State should furnish the necessary buildings, &c. The interest on the bonds amounts to \$14,280; and the State has appropriated about \$180,000 for buildings. The Institution is located at College Station. The grounds consist of 2,200 acres, and lie immediately upon the Texas Central Railroad, four and a half miles south of Bryan. One hundred and sixty acres are inclosed by a neat, substantial board fence.

Near the center of the inclosure stands the main building, a brick structure, four stories high, with Mansard roof and double gallery in front.

Through the length and crossing of each story are broad halls, into which the recitation rooms and students' dormitories open, all well lighted and ventilated. The dormitories are large enough to accommodate double the number assigned to them. The students' beds are iron frames, with wire springs, on which comfortable mattresses are placed. A three-story brick, about three hundred yards north of the main building, is fitted up with all the comforts of a hotel, and has capacity for seating four hundred students comfortably. There they are marched in a body to each meal, which is served in the presence of one member of the faculty. There are also five two-story buildings for the families of the professors.

The College was organized in 1875, but was only partially successful, especially in the Agricultural and Mechanical Departments. In 1879 an entire new faculty was organized, and since that period, in addition to the ordinary

branches of a classical and scientific education and instruction in military tactics, special attention has been given to instruction in Agricultural Chemistry and the Mechanic Arts. In 1880 there were 144 students in attendance. This college is a branch of the State University "for instruction in Agriculture, the Mechanic Arts, and the Natural Sciences connected therewith." Three students from each Senatorial District, selected after a competitive examination, are supported by the State. Others pay the usual sums for board, etc.

Colonel John G. James is president at the college, and John D. Thomas, of Bryan, president of the Board of Directors.

**THE PRAIRIE VIEW NORMAL SCHOOL.**—Situated near Hempstead, Waller county, this institution was first organized as a branch of the Agricultural and Mechanical College, for the special benefit of colored pupils. Not succeeding well as a college, in 1881 its character was changed to that of a normal institute for the education of colored teachers. Forty-six pupils are maintained by the State. Each Senator appoints one, and the principal of the institute five. The Board of Directors of the A. and M. College manage this institution. G. H. Anderson, of Hempstead, is the principal.

**THE STATE UNIVERSITY.**—During the administration of President Lamar, in 1839, 200,000 acres of land were set aside for a University. When the territory of Santa Fe was sold, a considerable sum was given for the establishment of the same, and additions have been made to this fund by the sale of lands. On the 30th of March, 1881, Governor Roberts approved a bill passed by the Legislature for the establishment of the University of Texas. The bill was drawn up by a committee of the State Teachers' Association. The first Tuesday in September, 1881, was fixed in the bill as the time when the people, by popular vote, should fix the location of the institution. It also provided that the Medical Department might be separate from the Literary and Scientific, and located at a different place.

The whole government of the institution is committed to a Board of eight Regents, to be nominated by the Governor and confirmed by the Senate, and to hold office for eight years, divided into classes, two going out of office every two years. At the election in September, 1881, the main University was located at Austin, and the Medical Department at Galveston. The Board of Regents met in Austin November 15, 1881, and organized by electing Hon. Ashbel Smith of Harris County, President. A most eligible location for the college had been long since set apart for that purpose; the Regents selected a beautiful design for the building, to cost \$150,000, and the west wing, to be erected for \$60,000, is now in process of construction. The Professorship of Mental and Moral Science has been tendered to Dr. W. T. Harris of the Concord School of Philosophy; and that of Law to Judge T. M. Cooley, of the University of Michigan. The income from the University fund is estimated at \$35,000. The University opens for matriculates September 15, 1883.

**PRIVATE SCHOOLS AND COLLEGES.**—For higher education the great mass of the youth of Texas are dependent upon private academies and denominational schools and colleges. The number of these institutions is rapidly multiplying, and they are receiving increased patronage and elevating the standard of scholarship. As an indication of the drift of public sentiment, it may be stated that at a large and influential convention of the editors of the State

in Houston in April, 1882, it was resolved that "we hold it to be the interest and duty of the press to use every legitimate effort to secure such changes and reforms in the Public School system as shall conform it as much as possible to the most approved systems in successful operation in the country, by which the condition of the teachers may be practically and severally improved, the methods of tuition advanced and extended, the funds of the school administered with corresponding returns, and the dignity, reputation and prosperity of the State be advanced."

**LOCAL SCHOOL TAXES.**—Towns and cities are permitted to take control of the schools, and by a vote of the taxpayers a special tax may be collected to continue their schools for a longer period than that required by general law. With one exception, we believe, every incorporated city where this question has been submitted to the people has voted for an additional tax.

In the State Conventions held in the summer of 1882 both political parties adopted resolutions proposing "the submission to the people, of a Constitutional Amendment, authorizing the levy and collection of a special school tax, separate from the general revenues, to the end that an efficient system of public free schools may be maintained."—*Democratic Platform*.

The outlook for popular education is favorable, and the means for its accomplishment promise to be complete.

**PENAL INSTITUTIONS.**—It is not pleasant to contemplate the increase of crime; but it is nevertheless a fact. In 1870 but one convict was in the Penitentiary for every 1,519 of our population, while in 1880 there was one for every 709; and crime is still on the increase. In the Penitentiary at Huntsville, during the period under review the prison yard has been enlarged to three times its former size, and corresponding enlargement and improvement has been made in the cells for confining the convicts and the shops for giving them employment. Accommodation being wholly inadequate for the rapidly increasing numbers of convicts, a second Penitentiary has been established at Rusk, in connection with which factory buildings have been erected and furnished with suitable machinery. It is proposed to utilize the immense beds of iron ore in the vicinity of Rusk by building foundries for smelting the ore and turning out castings.

The term for which the lessees, Messrs. Cunningham and Ellis, took the labor of the convicts expired with the year 1882. There are now upwards of two thousand convicts, of whom about one-half are employed by the lessees and the others sub-let to work on railroads, farms, etc. It is believed that under the present admirable system of inspection and supervision the prisoners are treated with as much humanity and allowed as many privileges as is possible while in confinement in penal servitude. At the main institution at Huntsville ample hospital accommodations are provided and the prisoners have the services of a surgeon and chaplain and the use of a public library.

Of the inmates received in the years 1870 to 1880, 84 were under fifteen years of age, and 1,386 between the ages of fifteen and twenty years. Mr. Gonce, the Superintendent, suggests that by all means a House of Correction be established for juveniles, and that they be separated from the more hardened criminals.

Public sentiment, as voiced by the press and in political platforms, demands that ample provision should be made to confine our convicts within prison walls



and to restrict their labor so as to compete as little as possible with the business of mechanics and artisans outside of prisons. It is, however, a self-evident proposition that these criminals must be put to some labor by which they shall be made to support themselves, or they must be fed and clothed and guarded at the expense of the tax-payers of the State.

## POPULATION OF TEXAS BY COUNTIES.

[1880 compared with 1870]

COUNTIES.	1880	1870	Gain	COUNTIES.	1880	1870	Gain
Anderson	17,592	9,229	8,363	Encinal	1,947	427	1,520
Andrews				Erath	11,385	1,801	9,584
Angelina	5,240	3,985	1,255	Falls	16,406	9,851	6,555
Aransas	987			Fannin	24,074	13,207	11,767
Archer	596			Fayette	28,020	16,863	11,159
Armstrong	31			Fisher	136		
Atascosa	4,223	2,915	308	Floyd	18		
Austin	14,519	15,087		Fort Bend	9,590	7,114	2,476
Bandera	2,162	649	1,513	Franklin	5,287		
Bailey				Freestone	15,023	8,189	6,784
Bastrop	17,299	12,290	5,000	Frio	2,138	309	1,829
Baylor	708			Gaines	10		
Bee	2,305	1,082	1,223	Galveston	24,201	15,290	8,911
Bell	20,517	9,771	10,776	Garza	36		
Bexar	30,444	17,120	13,324	Gillespie	5,258	3,566	1,692
Blanco	3,041	1,187		Goliad	5,839	3,623	2,211
Borden	86			Gonzales	14,884	8,951	5,913
Bosque	10,346	4,981	5,365	Gray	57		
Bowie	10,792	4,684	6,108	Grayson	38,407	14,287	24,020
Brazoria	9,823	7,527	2,454	Greer			
Brazos	13,040	9,205	3,835	Gregg	8,589		
Briscoe	12			Grimes	18,605	13,218	5,387
Brown	8,421	544	7,877	Guadalupe	12,155	7,282	4,873
Burleson	9,299	8,072	1,227	Hall	36		
Burnet	6,858	3,688	3,170	Hale			
Caldwell	11,398	6,572	4,826	Hamilton	6,392	733	5,659
Calhoun	1,766	3,443		Hansford	25		
Callahan	3,384			Hardeman	50		
Cameron	14,957	10,999	3,958	Hardin	1,870	1,460	410
Camp	5,846			Harris	28,100	17,375	10,725
Carson	43			Harrison	25,222	13,241	11,961
Cass	16,666	8,875	7,791	Hartley	100		
Castro				Haskell	48		
Chambers	2,187	1,053	1,134	Hays	7,606	4,988	2,618
Cherokee	17,000	11,079	5,921	Hemphill	100		
Childress	25			Henderson	9,784	6,786	2,998
Clay	5,042			Hidalgo	4,361	2,587	1,774
Cochran				Hill	16,447	7,453	8,994
Coleman	3,605	347	3,258	Heckley			
Collin	25,639	14,013	11,626	Hood	5,971	2,525	3,396
Collingsworth	6			Hopkins	15,534	12,651	2,883
Colorado	16,688	8,326	8,362	Houston	17,350	8,144	6,900
Comal	4,770	5,283		Howard	55		
Comanche	8,628	1,001	7,627	Hunt	17,103	10,291	6,812
Concho	806			Hutchison	50		
Cooke	15,367	5,315	10,052	Jack	6,538	694	5,844
Coryell	11,005	4,124	6,881	Jackson	2,724	2,278	446
Cottle	24			Jasper	5,773	4,218	1,555
Crockett	125			Jefferson	3,570	1,906	1,668
Crosby	82			Johnson	16,001	4,923	11,078
Dallam		8,875		Jones	639		
Dallas	33,469	13,514	20,150	Karnes	8,268	1,705	1,563
Dawson	24			Kaufman	13,616	6,836	6,721
Deaf Smith	40			Kendall	2,779	1,536	1,243
Delta	5,574			Kent	93		
Denton	17,851	7,251	10,600	Kerr	1,379	1,042	337
De Witt	10,073	6,443	3,630	Kimble	1,342	72	1,273
Dickens	28			King	40		
Dimmitt	666	108	557	Kinney	4,483	1,204	3,279
Donley	160			Knox	76		
Duval	5,732	1,083	4,649	Lamar	27,188	15,790	11,438
Eastland	2,336	88	2,248	Lamb			
Edwards	269			Lampasas	5,439	1,544	4,065
Ellis	21,408	7,514	13,894	LaSalle	789	69	720
El Paso	3,964	3,671	193	Lavaca	12,697	9,163	4,929

## POPULATION OF TEXAS BY COUNTIES—CONTINUED

COUNTIES.	1880	1870	Gain	COUNTIES.	1880	1870	Gain
Lee	8,962			Robertson	22,214	9,990	12,224
Leon	12,790	6,523	6,267	Rockwall	2,961		
Liberty	4,969	4,411	588	Runnels	982		
Limestone	16,329	8,591	7,738	Rusk	18,987	16,916	2,071
Lipscomb	60			Sabine	4,161	3,256	905
Live Oak	2,069	352	1,247	San Augustine	5,085	4,196	889
Llano	4,932	1,379	3,553	San Jacinto	6,303		
Lubbock	25			San Patricio	1,015	602	413
Lynn	9			San Saba	5,335	1,425	3,910
Madison	5,412	4,061	1,351	Scurry	102		
Marion	11,001	8,562	2,439	Shackelford	2,034	435	
Martin	13			Shelby	9,524	5,732	3,792
Mason	2,658	678	1,980	Sherman			
Matagorda	3,944	3,377	567	Smith	21,858	16,532	5,326
Maverick	2,980	1,951	1,029	Starr	8,318	4,154	4,150
McCulloch	1,704	173	1,531	Stephens	3,057	390	2,727
McLennan	26,000	13,500	13,100	Somervell	2,640		
McMullen	705	230	475	Stonewall	103		
Medina	4,497	2,078	2,420	Swisher	4		
Menard	1,250	657	584	Tarrant	22,068	5,788	16,280
Milam	18,701	8,984	9,717	Taylor	1,948		
Mitchell	107			Terry			
Montague	7,671	890	6,781	Throckmorton	711		
Montgomery	10,104	6,483	3,621	*Titus	6,001	11,939	
Moore	35			Tom Green	3,407		
Morris	5,140			Travis	26,800	13,153	13,647
Motley	24			Trinity	4,945	4,341	604
Nacogdoches	11,500	9,614	1,886	Tyler	5,826	5,010	816
Navarro	21,735	8,879	12,856	†Upshur	10,236	12,039	
Newton	4,360	2,187	2,173	Uvalde	2,595	851	1,744
Nolan	642			Van Zandt	11,620	6,494	5,126
Nueces	7,677	3,075	3,702	Victoria	6,337	4,800	1,517
Ochiltree	9			Walker	12,820	9,776	3,053
Oldham	287			Waller	9,028		
Orange	2,398	1,255	1,683	Washington	27,621	23,138	4,483
Palo Pinto	5,714			Webb	5,065	2,615	3,050
Panola		10,119		Wharton	4,557	3,426	1,131
Parker	14,429	4,186	10,243	Wheeler	509		
Parmer				Wilbarger	127		
Pecos	1,827			Williamson	15,006	6,368	8,638
Polk	7,201	8,707		Wilson	7,136	2,566	4,570
Potter	28			Wichita	433		
Presidio	2,111	1,636	475	Wise	14,335	1,450	2,885
Rains	3,033			Wood	11,293	6,894	4,309
Randall	3			Yoakum			
Red River	17,067	10,653	6,414	Young	4,482	135	4,347
Refugio	1,584	2,324		Zapata	3,678	1,488	2,190
Roberts	32			Zavalla	411	133	278

\*Morris and Franklin counties both taken from Titus.

†Camp county taken from Upshur.

Total population 1,592,574, an increase of nearly 100 per cent. Of this number 1,197,490 are white; 394,001 colored, and 932 Indians. There are 64,864 more males than females. 114,516 were foreign born.

**CENSUS STATISTICS.**—More than two years have elapsed since the census of 1880 was taken, but as yet the Texas public has been favored with only the most meager reports. The population by counties we have given as we find it in slips from the census bureau. Such summaries as the following occasionally find their way into the newspapers:

We give the census reports of our staple agricultural products: Cotton bales, 1870—350,000; 1879-80—803,642. Corn, bushels, 1870—20,554,538; 1880—28,846,073. Oats, bushels in 1870—762,663; in 1880—4,868,916. Wheat, 1870—1,414,112 bushels; 1880—2,586,652.

Texas has increased in population more rapidly than any other State—nearly one hundred per cent. We are now entitled to eleven members of Congress

Instead of the six we had under the previous enumeration. Unquestionably our churches and schools have increased in a ratio equal to the increase in our population; but our efforts to secure the figures have not been successful. During the last decade twenty-five new counties have been organized, covering an area about as large as the State of Louisiana.

**RAILROAD BUILDING.**—In nothing is the progress of Texas seen more conspicuously than in the extension of our railways. When Governor Coke was inaugurated in 1874 there were about 1,500 miles of railway in the State. One trunk line had just been opened *via* Houston and Texas Central and the Missouri, Kansas and Texas roads, from the Gulf of Mexico through Texas and the Indian Territory to the great Northwest. The three years following 1874 were years of financial stringency. In 1877 we had a little over 2,000 miles of road; in 1880, over 2,500, and at the close of 1882, approximately, 6,000 miles.

From tide water into the interior the Houston and Texas Central, by its main lines, reaches from Houston to Denison, 345 miles; from Hempstead to Austin, 118; from Bremond to Ross, 59 miles, whence, under another corporate name, *viz.*, Texas Central, it extends to Albany, 226 miles. There are other short lines connected with these roads. In 1881 The Texas and New Orleans road was opened from Houston to the Crescent City. In Texas this road operates 106 miles, from Houston to the Sabine river.

Early in 1877 the G. H. & S. A. road (the Sunset) reached San Antonio, and in 1881 was pushed westward, reaching the Pecos river, 216 miles. At this point it forms a junction with the Southern Pacific, 265 miles from El Paso.

The Gulf, Colorado and Santa Fe road was begun at Galveston in 1875. In 1879, 66 miles were built; in 1880, 120 miles. It had in operation in October, 1882, the following lines: Galveston to Fort Worth, 345 miles; Temple to Lampasas, 54 miles; Cleburne to Dallas, 54; Navasota road, 56 miles.

In Southeast Texas three roads point towards Moscow, one from Sabine Pass and Beaumont, one from Houston, and another from a point on the International road. During the year 1881-2, the N. Y., Texas and Mexican road was built from Rosenberg, Fort Bend county, to Victoria, 90 miles.

In East Texas the International and Great Northern road reaches from Longview to Houston, 232 miles, and thence to Columbia, 50 miles further, with branches to Mineola, Huntsville, etc. Its line from Palestine reached Austin in 1876, San Antonio in 1881, and Laredo, 415 miles, early in 1882. From Laredo a Mexican railway reaches to the old and populous city of Monterey.

From Marshall a new route of travel via Alexandria and Cheneyville was opened to New Orleans in 1882.

Beginning at the State line, the Texas and Pacific road operates 16 miles to Marshall. From Marshall to Sierra Blanca, where it forms a junction with the road from El Paso, the distance is 725 miles. From Marshall to Texarkana, where it forms a junction with the Fulton and Cairo road, is 69 miles; from Texarkana to Fort Worth 243 miles. Total mileage of the Texas Pacific, 1,053 miles.

The East line, a narrow gauge road, runs from Jefferson to McKinney, 159 miles.

The Missouri Pacific, formerly the Missouri, Kansas and Texas road, operates the following lines in Texas: Denison to Gainesville, 41 miles; Denison to Mineola, 103 miles; Whitesboro to Fort Worth, 71 miles; Fort Worth to Temple, 98 miles; Temple to Taylor, 55 miles; Miller Junction to Belton, 9 miles. Total 402 miles.

During the year 1882 a road was built 115 miles from Fort Worth to Wichita. It is called the Fort Worth and Denver City road. During the same period the Austin and Northwestern narrow gauge road was built from Austin to Barret, 60 miles.

In the East a narrow gauge trunk road, called the Texas and St. Louis, has a mileage in Texas of 305 miles from Texarkana to Gatesville, passing through a most excellent agricultural country. It is expected this road will soon be extended northward through Arkansas, and also into Southeastern Texas, to connect with the narrow gauge road extending from Houston to Moscow.

In Southwestern Texas another narrow gauge road, now known as the Texas Mexican, runs from Corpus Christi to Laredo, 163 miles. At Laredo it connects with roads into the interior of Mexico.

A glance at our map will show how completely Texas is being covered with a net-work of railroads reaching all portions of the State. These roads are introducing a ceaseless tide of immigration—doubling and quadrupling our agricultural products, stimulating commerce and creating scores of thriving cities and villages along their routes.

#### THE NEWLY ELECTED OFFICERS.

NOTE.—At the general election held November 7, 1882, the following gentlemen, regular nominees of the Democratic Convention, were elected:

1. Governor, John Ireland.
2. Lieutenant Governor, Marion Martin.
3. Commissioner of Land Office, William C. Walsh.
4. Comptroller of the Treasury, William J. Swain.
5. Treasurer, Francis R. Lubbock.
6. Attorney General, John D. Templeton.

Chief Justice Supreme Court, Asa H. Willie.

Associates, J. W. Stayton, Charles S. West.

Court of Appeals, James M. Hunt, J. P. White and Samuel A. Wilson.

Members of Congress—First District, Charles Stewart; Second, John H. Reagan; Third, J. H. Jones; Fourth, D. B. Culberson; Fifth, J. W. Throckmorton; Sixth, Olin Welborn; Seventh, Thomas P. Ochiltree\*; Eighth, James F. Miller; Ninth, Roger Q. Mills; Tenth, John Hancock; Eleventh, Samuel Lauham.

\*Mr. Ochiltree ran as an Independent Republican; the other ten as regular nominees of the Democratic party.











WILL BE CHARGED  
IF THIS BOOK IS NOT  
IN THE LIBRARY ON OR  
AFTER THE DATE STAMPED  
RECEIPT OF OVERDUE  
NOT EXEMPT THE  
OVERDUE FEES.

A  
2  
0

A pictorial history of Texas :  
Widener Library 006740277



3 2044 086 414 125